



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

### Usage guidelines

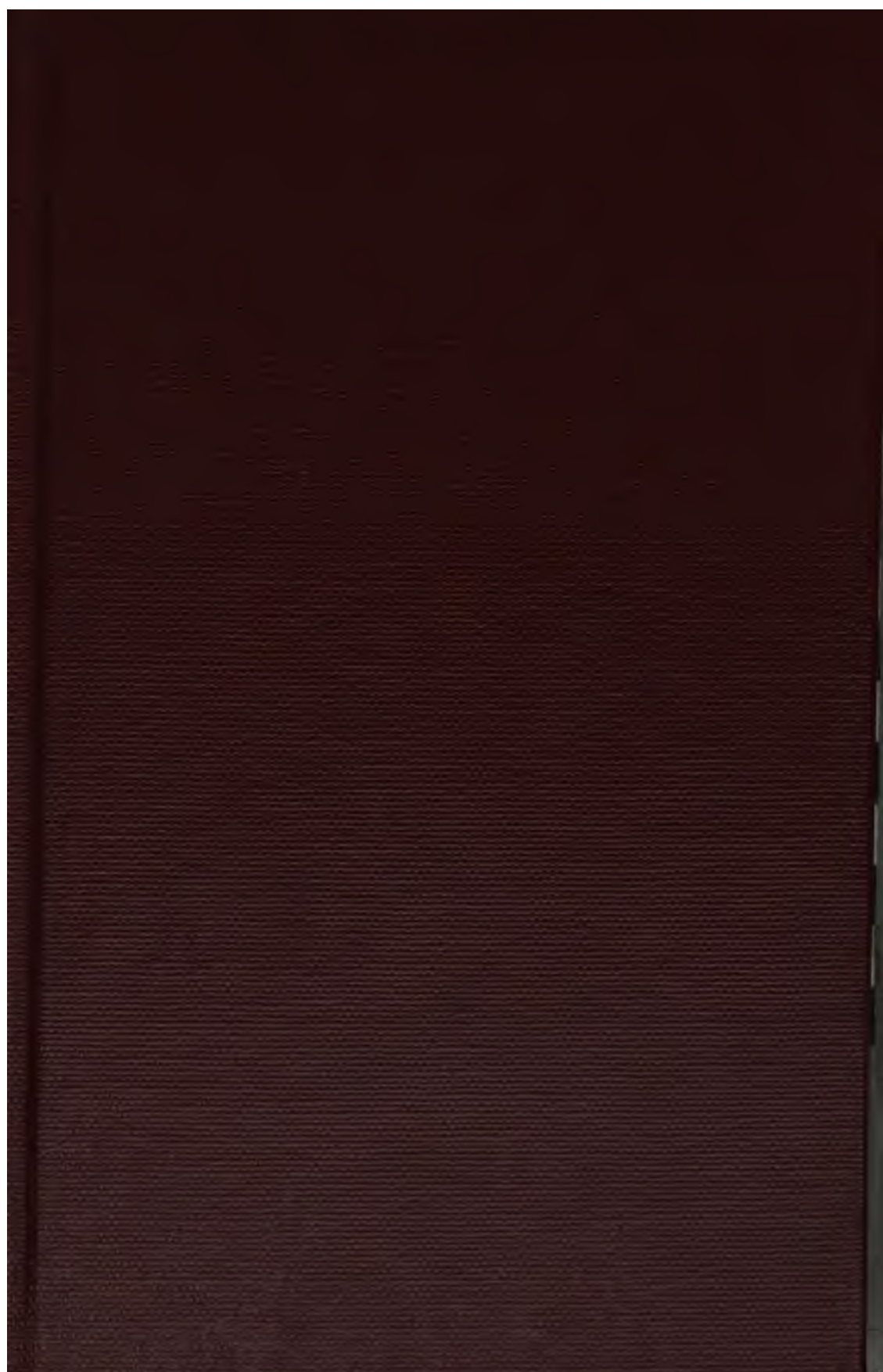
Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

### About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>



US 13437.5.5A



HARVARD  
COLLEGE  
LIBRARY









\_\_\_\_\_



THE  
**"ANNALS OF SALEM,"**

FROM  
  
**ITS FIRST SETTLEMENT.**

---

**BY JOSEPH B. FELT.**

---

*"Nescire quid antea quam natus sis acciderit, id est semper esse puerum."*

---

**Salem.**  
PUBLISHED BY W. & S. B. IVES.....WASHINGTON STREET.

---

Printed at the Observer Office.  
1827.

36.

~~103244.11~~

10513437.5.5



DISTRICT OF MASSACHUSETTS, TO WIT:

*District Clerk's Office.*

BE it remembered, That on the twenty-third day of June, A. D. 1827, in the Fifty-first Year of the Independence of the United States of America, Joseph B. Felt, of the said District, has deposited in this Office the Title of a Book the Right whereof he claims as Proprietor in the Words following, to wit: The Annals of Salem, from its First Settlement. By Joseph B. Felt. "Neciro quid antea quam natus sis acciderit, id est semper esse puerum."

In Conformity to the Act of the Congress of the United States, entitled "An Act for the Encouragement of Learning, by securing the Copies of Maps, Charts and Books, to the Authors and Proprietors of such Copies, during the times therein mentioned;" and also to an Act entitled "An Act supplementary to an Act, entitled, An Act for the Encouragement of Learning, by securing the Copies of Maps, Charts and Books to the Authors and Proprietors of such Copies during the times therein mentioned; and extending the Benefits thereof to the Arts of Designing, Engraving and Etching Historical and other Prints."

JNO. W. DAVIS,  
Clerk of the District of Massachusetts.

## ADVERTISEMENT.

---

THE materials of the following pages have been collected in the course of several years.—One object in gathering them from the extensive ground they occupied, was to afford the writer a particular acquaintance with his own native place. As thus brought together, he has been advised to make them public.—Should they contribute to the amusement and information of any ;—exhibit facts for the correction of errors, and examples for the encouragement of virtue and the restraint of vice ;—his publication of them will not be in vain.

When, in his researches, he saw some authorities differing from others in point of date or fact, he of course sided with those generally deemed most correct.

It would have been gratifying to his feelings, could he, without charge of singularity, have presented dates of the Old Style so as to accord with those of the New,—not only with reference to years, but also to days. He has done the former ; but not the latter.—It will be recollected, as a reason for what in these Annals may seem to be a discrepancy with ancient records,—that Chronology, for three-fourths of a century, has been computed in a manner different from what it was

X NEW STYLE DATES

before. It is well known that formerly the year began the 25th of March; but that in 1752 it commenced the 1st of January; and that the 3d of September of the same year was called the 14th. In compliance with such an arrangement the writer has put down the years as beginning the 1st of January instead of the 25th of March. Should any however be desirous for bringing Old Style to New in respect to days, they can apply the rule of adding ten days to the monthly dates of the 17th century, eleven to those of the 18th, and twelve to those of the present or 19th century.

When giving extracts from ancient letters, the writer has clothed them, for the most part, according to modern orthography. In some instances, he has presented them literally, as specimens of alteration in the same language of different periods.

To exhibit a full view of Salem in its historical concerns, the writer was constrained to adduce legislative proceedings and current events, which had a bearing on its interests as well as on those of other towns. He is aware that the opinion of some on this point, may not coincide with his own. But as disagreement of this kind carries with it no offence to any thing, except doubtful criticism, he does not regard it as an important matter.

To the memory of the dead, whose writings have assisted him; and for the kindness of the living, who have granted him the use of manuscripts;—he would be long and sincerely grateful.

## ANNALS OF SALEM.

---

REFLECTION on the past is essential to a reputable, beneficial and satisfactory guidance of conduct in future. Such an exercise of our mental powers is accompanied both with pleasure and pain. But however attended with mixed experience of this sort, it has stronger claims for being indulged than discouraged. Especially when referring to the spot of our first days, diversions, instructions, and employments,—does it appear with greater lights than shades;—with more on which remembrance fondly dwells, than from which it turns with aversion.—These remarks now bring us to the object in view.

1626.

SALEM was indebted for its first settlement to the failure of a planting, fishing, and trading enterprise at Cape Ann.

It appears that this fruitless attempt was made by a number of gentlemen belonging to Dorchester, in England. Among them the Rev. John White took the principal lead. His heart was strongly set on the establishment of colonies in Massachusetts. His chief



desire and exertion for them were, that they might become places of refuge from the corruptions and oppressions, which prevailed at home under the countenance of James I. He had learned, that some persons of the Plymouth Plantation were obliged with their families to leave and reside at Nantasket. The occasion of such a separation was their siding with the Rev. John Lyford, who was ordered to quit the former place, for his disagreement with most of its inhabitants, on several subjects. Of those thus seceded, Mr. White and his associates chose Roger Conant to take charge of the planting and fishing; John Oldham, (afterwards murdered by the Indians of Block Island,) to superintend the trade with the natives; and Mr. Lyford to officiate as minister.—After a year's trial their prospect of gain was closed. As a consequence they gave up the idea of continuing there. On this failure, Roger Conant, John Woodbury, John Balch, Peter Palfrey, and others, removed to Naunkeag. The most of them, however, were at first dissatisfied with their new abode. The dread of Indian hostilities and present necessities seriously affected them. Besides this, they had an invitation to accompany their late Pastor to Virginia. Being partakers of his trials, and strongly attached to him, several expressed a wish to go with him. But through reasoning and persuasion, they were induced to continue. Mr. Lyford left them for Virginia, where he soon died. In the mean while, Mr. White wrote them,—that he would have the settlement at Naunkeag by no means relinquished. He promised to exert his influence for the speedy supply of their wants. There were also others at home, besides this gentleman, who earnestly seconded his views.

1627.

In reference to them, Governor Dudley writes to the Countess of Lincoln:—"About the year 1627 some

friends being together in Lincolnshire, fell into discourse about New-England and the planting of the Gospel there; and after some deliberation, we imparted our reasons by letters and messengers to some in London and the West Country; where it was likewise deliberately thought upon, and at length with often negotiation so ripened" as to have proposals made for a patent.—Informed by Mr. White of such proceedings, and solicited by him to persevere, Messrs. Conant, Woodbury, Balch, Palfrey, and their associates, confided in his word, and were influenced by his advice. The proof they had received of his virtues, as exhibited for their welfare while at Cape Ann, led them to face the toils, privations and perils which thronged them, and hold the ground which they occupied.—Indeed to the agency of Mr. White, as much as to that of any individual, may be imputed the permanent settlement of Naumkeag.

1628.

Through the endeavours of him and his friends a grant was obtained from the Council, "established at Plymouth, in the County of Devon, for the planting, ruling, ordering and governing of New-England."—This Council by a written document of March 19th, 1627, O. S., but 1628, N. S., conveyed the soil, then demominated Massachusetts Bay, to Sir Henry Roswell, Sir John Young, Knights, John Southcot, John Humphreys, John Endicott, Simon Whetcombe, and their heirs, assigns, and associates.

The territory of this new company extended "three miles to the Northward of Merrimack River, and three miles to the Southward of Charles River, and in length, within the described breadth, from the Atlantic Ocean to the South Sea."—One condition of their grant was.

that a fifth part of all silver and golden ore, discovered within their bounds, should be reserved for the Crown.

Desirous of having a person immediately interested in the plantation, at Naumkeag, they selected Capt. John Endicott. They made known to him their wishes. He accordingly complied. He set sail for the land, where his various talents, attainments and virtues were to be severely tested. He arrived here the 6th of September.

He found that previously to his arrival, an assessment had been laid on this and other plantations to the amount of £12 7. The proportion of this place was £1 10. Such a tax was made a common charge, because it referred to a general concern. This was as follows. It appears that Thomas Morton, afterwards a persevering and influential opposer of New-England policy, had been apprehended by the noted Miles Standish at Mount Wollaston, now in Quincy. The cause assigned for his apprehension was conduct on his part, which threatened to subvert the industry, temperance, peace and welfare of the country. Being thus taken, he was sent home. An account of his proceedings was forwarded to His Majesty's Council in the vessel, by which he was transported. It was dated 9th of June.

Capt. Endicott was accompanied hither by a hundred adventurers. Some of them were actuated by motives of religious liberty, and others by hopes of gain. He brought with him goods of the company, in order to traffic with the natives for beaver, otter, and other furs. For his dwelling, he purchased the materials of a house, which had been located at Cape Ann, and belonged to the Dorchester Company. It was then two stories high. Some remains of it are said to be still contained in the Old Tavern, at the corner of Court and Church Streets. It was the building, in reference to which Mr. Higginson remarked,—“we found a faire house newly built for the Governor.”

Soon after his arrival he commissioned Messrs. Ralph, Richard and William Sprague to explore the country about Mishawum, now Charlestown. Here they met with a tribe of Indians, called Aberginians. By the consent of these they commenced a plantation. They were followed by other respectable colonists the next year.—Capt. Endicott appears to have had special reason for causing this settlement to be made. The reason was, that William Blackstone and William Jeffries were empowered, by the son of Sir Fernando Gorges, to put John Oldham in possession of the territory occupied by the Messrs. Spragues. This seems to be a fact, because it is mentioned in a letter from the Company the following Spring.

They who remained at Naumkeag were called to endure severe afflictions. Their refuge from civil and religious persecution presented a scene of no common calamities. Some had scarcely a suitable place to lay their head, or food to satisfy the cravings of their hunger. A large proportion of them died with the scurvy and other diseases. While sickness was making its ravages among them, they were destitute of medical assistance. That so great and dangerous a deficiency might have a temporary supply, Mr. Endicott wrote to Gov. Bradford of Plymouth.

1629.

Dr. Fuller, having come, in answer to his request, continued a few months, and afforded seasonable relief. This gentleman, while here, preserved the reputation of eminence in medicine, beneficence and piety, which had been previously attributed to him. On his return, Mr. Endicott sent the following letter to Gov. Bradford.

“Right Worshipful Sir,—It is a thing not usual, that servants to one Master, and of the same household, should be strangers; I assure you I desire it not; nay,

to speak more plainly, I cannot be so to you. God's people are all marked with one and the same mark, and sealed with one and the same seal, and have, for the main, one and the same heart, guided by one and the same spirit of truth ; and where this is, there can be no discord ; nay, here must needs be a sweet harmony ; and the same request, with you, I make unto the Lord, that we may, as Christian brethren, be united by a heavenly and unfeigned love, bending all our hearts and forces in furthering a work beyond our strength, with reverence and fear, fastening our eyes always on Him, that is only able to direct and prosper all our ways. I acknowledge myself much bound to you for your kind love and care in sending Mr. Fuller amongst us, and rejoice much that I am by him satisfied, touching your judgment of the outward form of God's worship ; it is, as far as I can yet gather, no other than is warranted by the evidence of truth, and the same which I have professed and maintained ever since the Lord in mercy revealed himself unto me, being far from the common report, that hath been spread of you touching that particular ; but God's children must not look for less here below ; and it is a great mercy of God that he strengtheneth them to go through with it. I shall not need, at this time, to be tedious unto you, for (God willing) I purpose to see your face shortly ; in the mean time I humbly take my leave of you, committing you to the Lord's blessing and protection, and rest your assured friend,

JOHN ENDICOTT.

Neumkeck, May 11th, 1629."

Mr. Endicott in this letter delicately touches on the jealousy which had existed between the supporters of Plymouth and Massachusetts colonies, in reference to ecclesiastical discipline. The former leaned more to what was termed Brownism than the latter. Hence, while those could approve of Mr. Lyford's expulsion from their boundaries, these could encourage him and

his followers with protection and support.—Mr. Endicott, also, refers to the time of his own religious reformation. The instrument of so important an alteration was the Rev. Samuel Skelton, to whom he was ardently attached, and whose society he was soon to enjoy.

He received an interesting communication from Matthew Cradock, Governor of the Company. It was dated February 16th. Some remarks of it will throw light on the progress of the Colony. Mr. Cradock stated, that the company at home had purchased a ship of 200 tons, and hired two more of a similar size, well armed. Their purpose was to have these vessels for traders between the colony and England. He requested Mr. Endicott to provide houses for about 300 persons, who intended to take passage in the ships. He also wished him to prepare, as return cargoes, wood, timber, staves, sassafras, sarsaparilla, sumach, silk grass, two or three hundred firkins of sturgeon, and other fish and beaver. He expressed a satisfaction as to the motives and conduct of Mr. Endicott. He observes—“ We trust you will not be unmindful of the mayne end of our plantation by endeavouringe to *bringe the Indians to the knowledge of the Gospel*, which that it may be the speedier and better effected, the earnest desire of our whole company is that you have diligent and watchful eye over our own people, that they live unblamable and without reproach, and demeane themselves justlye and corteous to the Indians, thereby to draw them to affect our persons and consequentlie our religion; as alsoe to endeavour to gett some of the children to trayne up to reading and consequentlie to religion while they are yonge; herein to yonge or olde to omit no good opportunitys that may bring them out of that woeful state and condition they now are in;—in which case our predecessors in this our land sometymes were, and but for the mercye and goodness of our good God might have continued to this day.”—His

further remarks show that the Rev. Hugh Peters, then in Holland, was destined and expected to settle in the Colony ;—and that two of the clergymen coming hither were to be sent through the approbation of the Rev. Messrs. White and Davenport. It seems from his letter, that Mr. Endicott had complied with solicitations of the Planters, so that they were allowed to cultivate Tobacco. The cultivation of this plant was warmly opposed by the Company, as highly injurious to the health and morals of the emigrants. Mr. Cradock also advised Mr. Endicott to be on his guard against too much confidence in the Indians. He referred him to the sufferings of the English in Virginia as a reason for hearkening to such a caution. The gentleman who forwarded so valuable instructions to Mr. Endicott, was a relative of his through Mrs. Endicott.

While the Agent of the Company was faithfully discharging his duty here, they were averse to a further prosecution of their design under existing circumstances. The Council, superintending the Plantations of New-England, had granted them soil, but no adequate right to administer its government. They wished for a surer claim to their territory, as it had been already disputed by Gorges, and also for an enlargement of their number. The latter they soon obtained. The Company, thus increased, applied for a Charter to the King. He allowed their petition the 4th of March, 1628, O. S., but 1629, N. S. They received the title of Governor and Company of Massachusetts Bay in New-England. Their Seal was in part the representation of an Indian, having a bow in one hand, and an arrow in the other, and a label from his mouth with the Scriptural expression—"Come over and help us."—Emigrants under their patronage were privileged to import and export articles of commerce free from duties for the period of seven years. They were, also, required to keep in view, as a principal object, the dissemination of Christianity among the Aborigines.

While pursuing their laudable object, civil and ecclesiastical restrictions were not slackened by their sovereign, Charles I. He of his own choice and through the influence of Bishop Laud, was opposed to Calvinistic clergymen. He reduced them to the alternative, either to withhold some of their opinions and read in time of public worship the Book of Sports, which encouraged an open profanation of the Sabbath ; or submit to prosecutions, fines, imprisonment, and deposition from the ministry.

The spirit of emigration hither gathered strength from such opposition. A considerable number, of highly respectable character, devised measures for a speedy change of residence. Before, however, they would trust themselves in a new world, they determined on obtaining spiritual guides. They were fully convinced, that, let temporal prosperity be ever so great for a season, still, if unattended with the precepts and sanctions of the Gospel, it would draw in its train abounding corruptions, and become an instrument of ruin to its possessors.

Thus properly impressed, they sought for men worthy to bear the Ark of God. Their choice fell on the Rev. Francis Higginson of Leicester, Rev. Samuel Skelton of Lincolnshire, and Rev. Francis Bright. These persons had been prevented from freely exercising their holy office by the edicts of conformity, which had been promoted by Elizabeth, and rendered more severe by her successors, James and Charles. In reference to them, the Company's letter of April 17th to Mr. Endicott, contains the following observations.

“For that the propagation of the Gospel is the thing we do profess above all to be our aim in settling this Plantation, we have been careful to make plentiful provision of godly ministers, by whose faithful preaching, godly conversation, and exemplary life, we trust not only those of our own nation will be built up in the



knowledge of God, but also the Indians may, in God's appointed time, be reduced to the obedience of the Gospel of Christ ;—one of them is well known to yourself viz. Mr. Skelton, whom we have rather desired to bear a part in this work, for that we are informed yourself hath formerly received much good by his ministry ;—another is Mr. Higginson, a grave man and of worthy commendations. The third is Mr. Bright, sometime trained up under Mr. Davenport. We pray you accommodate them all with necessaries as well as you may ;—and in convenient time let there be houses built them according to agreement we have made with them. For the manner of exercising their ministry and teaching both our own people and the Indians, we leave that to themselves, hoping they will make God's word the rule of their actions and mutually agree in the discharge of their duties ;—and because their doctrine will hardly be well esteemed whose persons are not revered, we desire, that both by your own example and by commanding all others to do the like, our ministers may receive due honour.”

Besides them the Rev. Ralph Smith requested a passage to this country. The same letter remarks of him that he “hath desired passage in our ships, which was granted him before we understood of his difference in judgment in some things from our ministers, but his provisions for his voyage being shipped before notice was taken thereof, through many occasions, where-with those interested with this business have been exemplary, and forasmuch as from hence it is feared there may grow some distractions among you, if the reshould be any siding, though we have a very good opinion of his honesty. We therefore thought fit to give you this order, that unless he will be conformable to our Government, you suffer him not to remain within the limits of our grant.”—It appears that this person, of whom they thus speak, had been solicited by the Church of

Plymouth Colony to become their Pastor. The Company being of the opinion, that this Church were excessively independent, as to their ecclesiastical discipline, and probably understanding that Mr. Smith's views coincided with their's on such a point, it is not matter of surprise, that they should be fearful of the course which he would take if residing within their territory. The Company's caution to Mr. Endicott with respect to him, and circumstances accompanying it, show that they were careful to guard against what they deemed too great a deviation from the Episcopal Establishment, as well as against what they considered its oppressive corruptions. ✓

The four clergymen, already named, set sail in a fleet, which contained as passengers 300 men, 60 women, and 26 children. There were, also, on board 115 neat cattle, some horses, sheep, goats, and 6 cannon with stores suitable for a fort. The emigrants unhappily lost most of their live stock during the voyage. They depended much on them for provisions.—The ship Talbot arrived with Messrs. Higginson and Smith, at Cape Ann, June 27th. There they spent the Sabbath, and came to Naumkeag the 29th.

During the passage the small pox prevailed on board. Two died with this disorder, then far more dreadful than at present. One of them was a daughter of Mr. Higginson, 4 years old. ✓

Previously to embarking for America, the Company contracted with him for his support. They agreed April 8th, to pay him £30 for outfits ; £10 for books ; £30 salary per ann. for 3 years ; to find him a house, food and wood for this period ; to be at the expense of transporting him and family ; and to do the same for them at the end of three years, if they should prefer to return home. They stipulated that should he tarry here such a length of time, they would grant him 100 acres of land for his own ;—and in case of his decease,

while in their service, they would maintain his wife during her widowhood and abode in the country ; and also his children while they remained on the Plantation. The parsonage was to be for his use while living, and at his death to descend to succeeding ministers. The Company further agreed with him,—“ that the milk of two kyne shall bee appointed towards the chardges of diett for him and his family, and half the increase of calves during the said three years : But the said two kyne and the other halfe of the increase to return to the Company at the end of the said three years.” They moreover pledged themselves that should he remain here seven years, they would give him another 100 acres of land.

About the time of his making this contract, he published “ General considerations for the plantation in New-England, with an answer to several objections.” He stated that an object of this sort ought to be pursued ; that the Church would be thus extended and occupy ground, which, if not so possessed, might be sought and settled by Jesuits ; that America might be a refuge from apprehended desolations, such as scourged the churches of Europe ; that England began to be burdened with paupers, who could have ample support here ; that a general corruption had extended to national living and business, to schools of learning and religion, which might be remedied in a new country ; that it was a laudable work to build up the colonial church now in its infancy ; that trials in such an enterprise would manifest purity of motives ; interest the people of God in behalf of the Plantation ; and encourage others to seek it for a residence.

He answered several objections to his reasons for effecting a settlement in New-England. Among them was this :—“ What warrant have we to take the land, which is and hath been of long time possessed of others, the sons of Adam ?” His reply was partly as follows :

“That which is common to all is proper to none. This savage people ruled over many lands without title or property;—for they enclose no ground, neither have they cattle to maintain it, but remove their dwellings as they have occasion, or as they can prevail against their neighbours. And why may not Christians have liberty to go and dwell among them in their waste lands and woods (leaving them such places as they have manured for corn) as lawfully as Abraham did among the Sodomites? For God hath given to the sons of men a two fold right to the earth; there is a natural right and a civil right. The first right was natural when men held the earth in common, every man sowing and feeding where he pleased. Then as men and cattle increased they appropriated some parcels of ground by enclosing and peculiar manurance, and this in time got them a civil right.” He further stated, that there was more land than the English and Indians needed; that the Indians had been swept away by a plague, and left their country void of inhabitants; and that emigrants would have “good leave of the natives.” This question about occupying the land of the Aborigines was afterwards the occasion of much controversy, through Mr. Williams, both at Plymouth and Salem. It was one which received much deliberation from the original proprietors and settlers of New-England. Whatever may have been thought, said, or written of them on this subject, they were evidently willing to satisfy every fair claim of the Indians for the soil, which they possessed. The Company of Massachusetts gave Mr. Endicott instructions to discharge all just demands of the natives for territory within his jurisdiction.

Another principal objection urged against emigration to this country, and which Mr. Higginson answered, was, that “these plantations that have been formerly made succeeded ill.” On this he remarked, that no pub-

lic enterprise was to be condemned or justified by immediate consequences; that the colonists, who had failed, were actuated more by temporal than religious motives, were persons of immorality, and had neglected to choose a suitable form of government, and to these causes the relinquishment of their settlements might be traced.

Indeed, for his moving hither, Mr. Higginson gave ingenious and forcible reasons.

The appearance of the new colonists served to dissipate much of the gloom, which hovered over the minds of those who had preceded them.

Aware of what the Planters had suffered from want of a physician, permanently located with them, the Company provided one. They write;—"We have entertained Lambert Wilson, Chirurgion to remain with you in the service of the Plantation, with whom we are agreed that he shall serve this Company and the other Planters that live in the Plantation for three years, and in that time apply himself to cure not only such as came for the general and particular accounts, but also for the Indians, as from time to time he shall be directed by yourself or your successor, and the rest of the Council. And moreover he is to educate and instruct in his art one or more youths, such as you and the said Council shall appoint, that may be helpful to him, and if occasion serve, succeed him in the Plantation, which youth or youths, fit to learn that profession, let be placed with him, of which Mr. Higginson's son, if his father approve thereof, may be one, the rather because he hath been trained up in Literature, but if not, then such other as you shall judge most fit."

Besides information of this sort, the Company were very particular in their orders to Mr. Endicott, concerning the cultivation and use of Tobacco. They absolutely forbid the colonists, under their immediate controul, ever to use it, "unless upon urgent occasion for

the benefit of health and taken privately." In reference to the first settlers, over whom they had no direct power, they earnestly wished to have them discouraged in their cultivation of Tobacco. As much excitement had been sustained in England for a series of years with respect to this article by Sir Walter Raleigh's first introduction of it into polite circles, and especially by the proclamations, excises, and writings of James against it, as contained in his book, called the Counter Blast, there is no great matter of surprise, that the Company should repeatedly express themselves about Tobacco as they did.—Would it not be well for cleanliness, temperance, and comfort, if some of the Puritanical feelings as to this plant, had come down to the present age, and exerted a restraining influence on the habits of multitudes?

In the last fleet came Messrs. John and Samuel Brown. They were worthy men; but trials awaited them. They brought a recommendation to Mr. Endicott from the Governor and Deputy Governor. It was dated April 21st, and runs thus:—"Through many businesses wee had almost forgotten to recommend unto you two brethren of our Company, Mr. John and Mr. Samuel Browne, who though they be noe adventurers in the generall stock, yet are they men wee doe much respect, being fully perswaded of their sincere affecons to the good of the Plantation;—the one, Mr. John Browne, is sworne an Assistant here and by vs chosen one of the Councell there; a man experienced in the lawes of our Kingdom and such an one as wee are perswaded will worthylie deserve your favour and furtherance, which wee desire he may have, and that in the first division of lands there may be allotted to either of them 200 acres."

Mr. Smith moved to Nantasket, and thence to Plymouth, as the Church there had requested. He served them as minister five or six years.—After this period,

which had not quite elapsed on the departure of Mr. Williams from that Plantation, he took his leave. The occasion appears to have been his own disinclination to stay on account of his burdensome duties, and his people's indifference to his continuance, because they considered him as not possessing competent abilities.— After this separation he officiated at Manchester.

Mr. Bright, in accordance with the instructions of the company, went to Charlestown. They wrote, "That there be no difference arise about the appointing of one to be minister, with those you send to inhabit at Massachusetts Bay, we will have you (in case the ministers cannot agree among themselves who shall undertake that place) to make choice of one of the three by lot, and on whom the lot shall fall, he to go with his family to perform that work." This appears to differ from a highly respectable Biographer, who says, that Mr. Bright left Salem for Charlestown on account of "disagreeing in judgment with his two brethren." He continued there more than a year. When, however, he perceived his congregation inclined to depart more from the Church of England than he deemed expedient, he embarked for home.

Being agreeably reinforced with the last colonists, Mr. Endicott, among his various instructions, was informed that he had been selected as Governor of the Colony. On this subject the executive officers of the Company, when assembled in London, 30th of April, express themselves in the subsequent terms: "Having taken into due consideration the merits, worth, and good desert of Capt. John Endicott and others, lately gone over from hence with purpose to reside and continue there, we have with full consent and authority of this Court, and by erection of hands, chosen and elected the said Capt. John Endicott to the place of present Governor in our said Plantation. Also, by the same power and with the like full and free consent, we have

chosen and elected Mr. Francis Higginson, Mr. Samuel Skelton, Mr. Francis Bright, Mr. John Brown, Mr. Samuel Brown, Mr. Thomas Graves, and Mr. Samuel Sharp, these seven to be the Council, and do hereby give power and authority to the said Governor and those seven to make choice of three others, such as they or the greater number of them in their discretion shall esteem and conceive most fit thereunto, to be also of the said Council. And to the end that the former Planters there may have no just occasion of exception as being excluded out of the privileges of the Company, this Court are content and do order by erection of hands, that such of the said former planters as are willing to live within the limits of our Plantation, shall be enabled, and are hereby authorized, to make choice of two such as they shall think fit to supply and make up the number of twelve of the said Council, one of which twelve is by the Governor and Company, or major part of them to be chosen Deputy to the Governour for the time being."—The Colonial Authorities here specified were empowered to choose a Secretary and other needed officers. One was appointed to administer an oath of fidelity to the Governour; the Governour was then to administer an oath to him, and either of these two was to do the same for members of the Council. The persons composing this body, were to hold their office one year. The whole, or a majority of them, were authorized to fill vacancies, occasioned by death, incompetency, or immorality. The Governour had power to call Courts, and, with the Council, enact needful laws, so far as consonant with the statutes of Parliament, and punish offenders according to their desert. Mr. Endicott took the oath of his office, in compliance with these regulations. In case of his decease, Messrs. Skelton and Sharp were to govern according to order.



It appears that, previously to his becoming formally Governour, he had written to the Company as to the manufacture of salt and the cultivation of vineyards. They remark to him, on these objects of enterprise: "We take notice, that you desire to have Frenchmen sent you that might be experienced in making of salt and planting vines. We have inquired diligently for such, but cannot meet with any of that nation; nevertheless, God hath not left us altogether unprovided of a man, able to undertake that work; for that, we have entertained Mr. Thomas Graves, a man commended to us as well for his honesty as skill in many things very useful." "We pray you take his advice touching the premises, and where you intend to sit down in, to fortify and build a town that it may be qualified for good air and water, according to your first instructions, and may have as much natural help, as may be, whereby it may with the less labour and cost be made to resist an enemy."

They informed him that cloth and *leather* apparel was provided for the colonists.

They counsel Mr. Endicott in reference to the Natives:—"For avoiding the hurt that may follow through our much familiarity with the Indians, we conceive it fit that they be not permitted to come to your Plantation but at certain times and places to be appointed them. *If any of the savages pretend right of inheritance to all or any part of the lands granted in our Patent, we pray you endeavour to purchase their title, that we may avoid the least scruple of intrusion.*"

The Company's advice to Mr. Endicott show how careful they were to have the Lord's day kept holy. They observe, "To the end the Sabbath may be celebrated in a religious manner, we appoint that all that inhabit the Plantation, both for the general and particular employments, may surcease their labour every Saturday throughout the year at 3 o'clock in the afternoon,

and that they spend the rest of that day in chatechizing and preparing for the Sabbath as the ministers shall direct."

They were equally desirous to have family order and religion kept up. On this subject they say : " For the better accommodation of business we have divided the servants belonging to the Company into several families, as we desire and intend they should live together, a copy whereof we send you here enclosed, that you may accordingly appoint each man his charge and duty ; yet it is not our intent to tie you so strictly to this direction, but that in your discretion, as you shall see cause, from time to time, you may alter or displace any as you should think fit. Our earnest desire is that you take special care in settling these families, that the chief in the family (at least some of them) be grounded in religion, whereby morning and evening family duties may be duly performed, and a watchful eye held over all in each family, by one or more in each family to be appointed hereto, that so disorders may be prevented and ill weeds nipt before they take too great a head." Such regulations accord with the principles of sound wisdom and the claims of general welfare, however they may greatly differ from the language of modern custom.

Mr. Endicott forwarded a letter to the Company in London of May 27th. They received it July 28th. In it he related, that some within his jurisdiction paid no regard to the law of 1622 for regulating trade with the Indians. He requested that they would petition for a renewal of the law by proclamation. They complied with his wish ; succeeded in their effort, and sent him power to prevent the sale of ammunition to the natives. He had felt it his duty as superintendant of the Province, to visit Mount Wollaston, where such infractions, as he complained of, were frequently committed. He went thither in the purifying spirit of just au-

thority. He found that Morton had not yet returned from England. He cut down a May pole, to which this person had been in the habit of affixing pieces of satirical composition against those, who opposed his wishes and practices. He, also, rebuked the inhabitants there, and "admonished them to look to it that they walked better."

A letter from the Company to him, of May 28th, touches again on the interesting subject of obtaining a full right to the soil granted them. They say,—"*Whereas in our last we advised you to make composition with such of the savages, as did pretend any title or lay claim to the land within the territories granted us by his Majesty's Charter,—we pray you now be careful to discover and find out all pretenders, and by advice of the Council there, to make such reasonable compensation with them as may free us and yourselves from any sample of intrusion ;—and to this purpose it might be conveniently done, to compound and conclude with them all, or as many as you can at one time not doubting but by your discreet ordering of this business, the natives will be willing to treat and compound with you upon very easy conditions.*" This and similar advice of the Company corrects a mistake in the valuable description of Salem.—In speaking of a quit claim, given by some Indians of Natick and Chelmsford in 1686 to the Selectmen of this town,—the learned and Reverend author of that description says: "The natives had forsaken the spot (Salem) before the English had reached it. On the soil they found no natives, of whom we have any record. *No natives ever claimed it, and the possession was uninterrupted.*"

✓ They furnished him with blank books for a record of the daily employment of every individual, to be made by overseers of the families. These books, written out, he was requested to send home semiannually.

They made arrangements for purchasing the ship Eagle as a trader between London and the Colony. They purchased her and called her name Arabella, in honour of Mrs. Johnson, who afterwards died at Salem.

They authorized Mr. Endicott to build a House of Correction, as a restraint upon the disorderly.

The same communication, which contains these items, speaks of building Shallops for the fishing business, by six shipwrights then here. One of these mechanics, Robert [Moulton], was master workman. It proposed fishing in the harbour or on the Banks. It requested, that if the ships, which had arrived with emigrants, should be sent to fish on the Bank, and not return hither immediately, "the Bark already built in the Country," might be fitted out to bring back the fishermen.—We perceive from this that a vessel had been made, most probably at Naumkeag; and that the Desire, afterwards launched at Marble harbour, was not the first vessel built in the Colony, as some have supposed.—The fishermen, just mentioned, had been employed in England to reside here for teaching and encouraging their business.—A store house was erected for the shipwrights and their provision, by an order of April 17th; and another for fishermen and their stores, by an order of May 23th. Records were to be kept of their stock, provisions, and proceedings.

In the Company's advices to Mr. Endicott, of the last date, they write,—“We may not omit, out of our zeal for the general good, once more to put you in mind to be very circumspect in the infancy of the Plantation, to settle some good orders, whereby all persons, resident upon our Plantation, may apply themselves to one calling or other and *no idle drone be permitted* to live among us; which, if you take care now at the first to establish, will be an undoubted means, through God's assistance, to prevent a world of disorders, and many grievous sins and sinners.” “And among other

sins, we pray you make some good laws for the punishing of *swearers*, whereunto it is to be feared too many are addicted, that are servants, sent over formerly and now. These and other abuses we pray you who are in authority to endeavour seriously to reform, if ever you expect comfort or a blessing from God upon our Plantation."

So consistent were the Company, between their precept and example, they dismissed several persons for their immorality, whom they had hired at considerable expense to emigrate hither. ✓

On the subject of ardent Spirits they say to Mr. Endicott,—“We pray you endeavour, though there be much *Strong Waters* sent for sale, yet so order it as that the Savages may not for our lucre's sake be induced to the excessive use or rather abuse of it, and at any hand take care our people give no ill example, and if any shall exceed in that inordinate kind of drinking as *to become drunk, we hope you will take care his punishment be made exemplary for all others*; let the laws be first published to forbid these disorders and all others you fear may grow up, whereby they may not pretend ignorance of the one, nor privilege to offend, and then fear not to put good laws, made upon good ground and warrant, in due execution.” It will be perceived, that the Company's orders, as to the morals of the Colony, have been drawn on largely. This has been done to show the foundation on which the heritage of our pilgrim fathers was erected. If the view presented, lead their descendants to examine and perform the needful repairs, it will be neither unpleasant nor unprofitable to them.

Soon after the arrival of the last emigrants, 100 of them moved under Mr. Thomas Graves, and joined the Messrs. Spragues at Mishawum. This was done to gratify their desire for better soil, and perpetuate the settlement made there, so as to cut short all pretensions

of Mr. Oldham to the land they occupied. A part of those who helped to people Charlestown, commenced a Plantation the next year at Shawmut.

Now it was deemed expedient to alter the original name of this town. Various opinions were advanced as to the change. Mr. Higginson and the majority were earnest to have it designated by a term, significant of their enjoying of freedom from civil and religious oppression. It therefore received the name of Salem, a Hebrew word meaning peace. Its date of incorporation is from this year.

In order to secure a primary object of their emigration, our fathers took measures for the regular establishment of the Church and ministry among them. July 20th was set apart by Mr. Endicott for choice of the Pastor and Teacher. Of the services on that interesting day, Mr Charles Gott writes to Gov. Bradford of Plymouth. He thus expresses himself :—"The 20th of July, it pleased God to move the heart of our Governor to set it apart for a solemn day of humiliation for the choice of a pastor and teacher ; the former part of the day being spent in praise and teaching ; the latter part was spent about the election, which was after this manner : The persons thought on were demanded concerning their callings. They acknowledged there was a two fold calling, the one inward calling, when the Lord moved the heart of a man to take that calling upon him, and filled him with gifts for the same ; the second was from the people, when a company of believers are joined together in covenant, to walk together in all the ways of God, every member is to have a free voice in the choice of their officers. These two servants clearing all things by their answers, we saw no reason but that we might freely give our voices for their election after this trial. Their choice was after this manner,—every fit member wrote in a note his name whom the Lord moved him to think was fit for a

pastor, and so likewise, whom they would have for a teacher ;—so the most voice was for Mr. Skelton to be pastor and Mr. Higginson to be teacher ; and they accepting the choice, Mr. Higginson, with *three or four more of the gravest members of the church*, laid their hands on Mr. Skelton, using prayers therewith. This being done, then there was imposition of hands on Mr. Higginson. Then there was proceeding in election of elders and deacons ; but they were only named, and laying on of hands deferred, to see if it pleased God to send us more able men over ; but since Thursday is appointed for another solemn day of humiliation for the full choice of elders and deacons and ordaining them ; now, good Sir, I hope, that you and the rest of God's people, with you, will say that here was a right foundation laid, and that these two blessed servants of the Lord came in at the door and not at the window." When the 6th of August came the services in contemplation were performed. A platform of Church government, a confession of doctrines in general and a covenant were adopted. The last was subscribed by thirty persons. To this number many of good report were soon added. One particular contained in their covenant was, that they would endeavour to be clear from being stumbling blocks in the way of the Indians. The Plymouth Church were invited to take part in the ordination, with the understanding that their counsel was to be nothing more than discretionary. Of their delegates was Gov. Bradford. He and his attendants were prevented by adverse winds from being here in the forenoon ; but they arrived seasonably enough to present the right hand of fellowship.

It will be perceived, that there were two ministers placed over the congregation here instead of one. This custom seems not to have been *fully* complied with here in any other instance, excepting that in which Mr. Williams served for a short period with Mr. Skelton.

It was a custom, however, so dear to some of the Colony, they would not interrupt it, lest they should be chargeable with flagrant iniquity ; and those, thus inclined, succeeded to keep it alive over a century.

Instead of being titled Reverend then and a considerable period afterwards, Congregational Ministers were called Elders.

The Ruling Elder selected for the Church here was Mr. Henry Haughton. This office was considered an important one, and continued to be esteemed in the Colonial churches till the middle of the last century. The duty of such officers was to preach occasionally in the absence or on the illness of the ministers, and also to assist in cases of church discipline. When preachers, except their own, served, they were in the habit of remarking, previously to their beginning :—"If ye have any word of exhortation, say on."

The establishment of the Church, not only the first of Salem, but, also, of all Massachusetts Proper, must have filled the hearts of our ancestors with emotions, not easily imagined, much less expressed. In their doctrines they were Calvinists. They called no man master. They resorted to the Bible as the ultimate standard of moral distinctions and religious principles. In their ideas of Ecclesiastical polity, they held a medium between the Brownists and Presbyterians.

During the summer of his ordination, Mr. Higginson wrote home to his friends and connexions an account of the soil, productions, climate, location, natives, and condition of the Colony. He described it in the glowing colours, which his attachment to it, as an adopted country, and the object of his ardent hopes, would naturally present. Though some, induced by his representation to emigrate hither, complained, that they could not find the realities, which he thought he had, still the integrity of his reputation forbids the suspicion, that his motives were in the least deceitful.



A desire to give an original view of this place, will be a sufficient apology for liberal selections from his interesting remarks. He writes :—" At this instant we are setting a brick kiln on work to make bricks and tiles for the building of our houses. There is plenty of marble-stone in such store, that we have great rocks of it and a harbour hard by. Our Plantation is from thence  
 r called Marble-harbour." He speaks of a profitable trade carried on between the colonists and natives by way of the former's exchanging corn for the beaver of the latter. He goes on with his description :—" For  
 √ beasts there are some bears, and they say some *lions* also, for they have been seen at Cape Ann. Also there are several sorts of deer. Also wolves, foxes, beavers, otters, martins, great wild cats, and a great beast called *molke*, as big as an ox. I have seen the skins of all these beasts since I came to this Plantation, except-  
 ing *lions*." Though Mr. Higginson has been thought exceedingly credulous for supposing lions had been discovered in this climate, yet it was not strange, that he, living in a new country, should hear of such animals, and that not having had time to examine for himself, he should put some confidence in the report. The *molke*, mentioned by him, was very probably the moose, or the *cervus alces*. He proceeds :—" The abundance of sea fish are almost beyond believing, and sure I should scarce have believed it, except I had seen it with my own eyes. I saw great store of whales and grampuses, and such abundance of mackerel, that it would astonish one to behold, likewise cod fish in abundance on the coast, and in their season, are plentifully taken. There is a fish called bass, a most sweet and wholesome fish as ever I did eat, it is altogether as good as our fresh salmon, and the season of their coming was begun when we came first to New-England in June, and so continued about three months space. Of this fish our fishers take many hundreds to-

gether, which I have seen lying on the shore to my admiration; yea, their nets ordinarily take more than they are able to haul to land, and for want of boats and men they are constrained to let many go after they have taken them, and yet sometimes they fill two boats at a time with them. And besides bass we take plenty of skate and thornbacks, and abundance of lobsters, and the least boy in the Plantation may both catch and eat what he will of them. Also, there is abundance of herring, turbot, sturgeon, cusks, haddock, mullet, eels, crabs, muscles, and oysters." We perceive from Mr. Higginson's account, that the quantity of all fish in our waters, has considerably diminished, and that some species of them are very scarce, if not entirely disappeared.

Speaking of lights, he observes—"Although New-England has no tallow to make candles of, yet by the abundance of the fish thereof, it can afford oil for lamps. Yea, our pine trees that are the most plentiful of all wood, do allow us plenty of candles, which are very useful in a house. And they are such candles as the Indians commonly use, having no other, and they are nothing else but the wood of the pine tree cloven in two little slices something thin, which are so full of the moisture of turpentine and pitch, that they burn as clear as a torch." What was the best light then, is now the worst, and would hardly be tolerated in a cottage.

Mr. Higginson says—"I will show you a little of the inhabitants and their government. For their governors they have kings, which are called Sagamores, some greater and some less, according to the number of their subjects. The greatest Sagamores about us cannot make (or raise) three hundred men, and other less Sagamores, have not above fifteen subjects, and others near about us but two. Their subjects, above twelve years since, were swept away by a great and grievous

plague that was among them, so that there were very few left to inhabit the country. The Indians are not able to make use of the one fourth part of the land, neither have they any settled places, as towns to dwell in, nor any ground as they challenge for their own possession, but change their habitation from place to place. For their statures, they are a tall and strong limbed people, their colours are tawny; they go naked, save only they are in part covered; their hair is generally black, and cut before, like our gentlewomen, and one lock longer than the rest, much like to our gentlemen, which fashion I think came from hence to England.—For their weapons, they have bows and arrows, some of them headed with bone and some with brass. Their men for the most part live idly, they do nothing but hunt and fish. Their wives set their corn and do all their other work. They have little household stuff, as a kettle and some other vessels like trays, spoons, dishes and baskets. They do generally profess to like well of our coming and planting here; partly because there is abundance of ground that they cannot possess nor make use of, and partly because our being here will be a means both of relief to them when they want, and also a defence from the enemies, wherewith before this plantation began they were often endangered.—For their religion they do worship two gods, a good god and an evil god. The good god they call Tantum, and their evil god, who they fear will do them hurt, they call Squantum. For their dealing with us, we neither fear them nor trust them, for forty of our musketeers will drive five-hundred of them out of the field. We use them kindly; they will come into our houses sometimes by half a dozen or half a score at a time, when we are at victuals, but will ask or take nothing but what we give them. We purpose to learn their language as soon as we can, which will be the means of doing them good.”

is are the Aborigines brought up in sad remembrance before us. The land, once speedily compassed in the chase, will no longer show the traces of steps. The woods once resounding with their singing, will no more echo with its dreadful notes. Planters, once yielding them food, will no more bear on its surface. As snow disappears before the face of a vernal sun, so have they before the influence of a civilized population. They have gone down to the

We can say ; they were, but are not. the condition of the Plantation, Mr. Higginson :—" When we came first to Nehumkek, we found half a score of houses ; we found also abundance of corn planted by them, very good and well liking. We brought with us about two-hundred passengers and servants more, which by common consent of the planters were combined together into one body to be under the same Governor. There are in all of us, old and new planters, about three-hundred, whereof about a hundred of them are settled at Nehumkek, now called Maskegon Bay, beginning to build a town there which we call Cherto, or Charlestown. We that are settled here make what haste we can to build houses ; so that in a short time we shall have a fair town. We have a great ordinance, wherewith we doubt not but we can fortify ourselves in a short time to keep out a powerful adversary. But that which is our greatest commandment means of defence above all others, is, that we here have the true religion and holy ordinances of Almighty God taught among us. Thanks be to God, we have here plenty of preaching and diligent catechising with strict and careful exercise, and good and commendable orders to bring our people into a Christian conversation with whom we have to do withal. And we doubt not but God will be with us, and if God be for us, who can be against us"? Thus wrote a

guardian of this place while in its infancy. Could he appear to our eyes, and meditate on the contrast between his and our day (however shaded with its flitting clouds,) he would say with MENTORIAL friendship, "Fear the Lord, and serve him in truth with all your heart; for consider how great things he hath done for you." There is one thing observable in Mr. Higginson's words, as well as those of his cotemporaries. It is that Charlestown and the land of its immediate vicinity were referred to as within Massachusetts Bay, while Salem and territory to the South of it, were not considered as included in this Bay. Not aware of such a fact, so contrary to present impressions, some have had their thoughts occasionally confused in perusing the early History of our State.

Though a good degree of harmony prevailed among the inhabitants of Salem, yet it was not perfect. The Messrs. Browns, already named, as recommended by the Company, contended for the Episcopal mode of worship. They had followers. They assembled by themselves on the Sabbath. They were reprov'd by the Governor and Ministers as promoters of schism, when the closest union was essential to the welfare of the Colony. They replied to their reprovers:—"that they were Separatists and would soon be Anabaptists; but as for themselves they would hold fast to the forms of the Church established by law." The Governor and Ministers denied and stated, that they only came away from the common prayer and ceremonies, because they judged the imposition of these things to be sinful corruptions of the word of God. Such controversy increased warmth of feeling, and drove the subjects of it further from reconciliation. About the 1st of August, letters were sent from Mr. Endicott and a majority of his Council to the Court of the Company in England with complaints against the Messrs. Browns.

While various changes occurred in the infant settlement here to try its strength, and train it up to the action of manhood, an important alteration was effected by the General Court of the Company at home. Many persons of extensive property and high estimation, who were dissatisfied with the arbitrary proceedings of both Church and State, made a proposal to the Company. This proposal was to emigrate hither, provided the principal seat of colonial government were transferred to New-England. After several deliberations on this subject, an agreement was made on the 29th of August, but was not finally confirmed till the 16th of October, in the following terms:—"Whereby erection of hands it appeared by the general consent of the Company, that the Government and Patent should be settled in New-England, and accordingly an order to be drawn up."

In September, three ships, the *Lion*, *Whelp*, and *Talbot*, freighted with the productions of the Plantation here, arrived in England. Among their cargoes "were clapboards and other wood," and beaver skins. These skins were prized at 20d. per lb. There were five boys, which had been employed here as servants by the Company, sent home in the ships for their refractory conduct.

The Court in London enacted a law, that joint stockholders, who had been at the expense of settling the Plantation, should have the exclusive trade in Furs for the space of seven years. At the end of this period they were to receive a just proportion in the stock and profits, and have a right to dispose of their shares. For the same length of time, they were required to be at one half of the expense of maintaining fortifications, the churches and ministers, and the Colonists were to answer for the other half.

The letters in reference to the Messrs. Browns, were laid before the Court in London the 19th of September, and their conclusion was to have the difficulty com-

mitted to mutual referees. Before this date, the Court had retained letters of Messrs. Browns, which contained strictures unfavourable to the Colony. In a short time after their letters were forwarded to England, the Messrs. Browns were ordered by the government here to leave the Plantation. They were dismissed in compliance with an order of the Company, received a few months before, which ran thus :—"It is often found that some busy persons (led more by their will than any good warrant out of God's Word,) take opportunities by moving needless questions to stir up strife, and by that way to begett a question, and bring men to declare some difference in judgment (most commonly in things indifferent) from which small beginnings great mischiefs have followed, we pray you and the rest of the Councell, that if any disputes should happen amongst you, that you suppress them, and bee carefull to maintain peace and unitie." On account of Messrs. Browns the Company wrote to Messrs. Skelton and Higginson. Their letter follows :—

"Reverend Friends—There are lately arrived here, (being sent from the Governor, Mr. Endicott, as men factious and evil conditioned,) John and Samuel Brown, being brethren, who since their arrival have raised rumours (as we hear) of divers scandalous and intemperate speeches passed from one or both of you in your public sermons or prayers in New-England, as also of some innovations attempted by you ; we have reason to hope that their reports are but slanders ; partly, for that your goodly and quiet conditions are well known to some of us ; as also, for that these men, your accusers, seem to be embittered against you and Capt. Endicott for injuries which they conceive they have received from some of you there ; yet for that we all know that the best advised may overshoot themselves, we have thought good to inform you of what we hear, that if you be innocent you may clear yourselves ; or if

otherwise, you may be ~~int~~treated to look back on your miscarriage with repentance, or at least to take notice that we utterly disallow any such passages, and must and will order for the redress thereof as shall become us ; but hoping, as we said, of your unblameableness herein, we desire that this only may testify to you and others, that we are tender of the least aspersion which either directly or obliquely may be cast upon the State here, to whom we owe so much duty, and from whom we have received so much favour in the Plantation where you now reside. So with our love and due respect to your calling we rest

Your loving friends,

MATT. CRADOCK, *Gov'r.*

JOHN GOFF, *Dep'y.*

GEO. HARWOOD, *Treas'r.*

? THOMAS WINTHROP,

THOMAS ADAMS,

SYMOND W. WHETCOMBE,

WILLIAM VASSAL,

WILLIAM PINCHON,

JOHN REVELL,

FRANCIS WEBB."

*London, Oct. 16th, 1629.*

Under the same date they wrote to Gov. Endicott.

"Sir—As we have written at this time to Mr. Skelton and Mr. Higginson, touching the rumours of John and Samuel Brown, spread by them on their arrival here, concerning some unadvised and scandalous speeches uttered by them in their public sermons or prayers, so have we thought meet to advertise you of what they have reported against you and them, concerning some rash innovations begun and practised in the civil and ecclesiastical government. We do well consider that the Browns are likely to make the worst of any thing they have observed in New-England, by reason of your



sending them back against their wills, for their offensive behaviour, expressed in a general letter from the Company there ; yet for that we likewise do consider that you are in a Government newly founded, and want that assistance which the weight of such business doth require, we have leave to think that it is possible some undigested counsels have too suddenly been put into execution, which may have ill construction with the State here, and make us obnoxious to any adversary. Let it therefore seem good unto you to be very sparing in introducing any laws or commands, which may render yourself or us distrustful to the State here, to which (as we ought) we must and will have an obsequious eye ; and as we make it our main care to have the Plantation so ordered as may be the most for the honour of God, and of our gracious Sovereign, who hath bestowed many large privileges and royal favours on this Company ; so we desire that all such as shall by word or deed do any thing to detract from God's glory, or his Majesty's honour, may be duly corrected for their amendment and the terror of others ; and to that end, if you know any thing which hath been spoken or done either by the ministers (whom the Browns do seem tacitly to blame for some things uttered in their sermons or prayers) or any others, we require you if any such things be, that you form due process against the offenders, and send to us by the first (conveyance,) that we may, as our duty binds us, use means to have them duly punished. So not doubting but we have said enough, we shall repose ourselves upon your wisdom, and do rest your loving friends."

At a session of the Court in London, the 20th of November, the Messrs. Browns complained that their property at Salem had been undervalued by appraisers. Early the year following, measures were adopted, which succeeded in healing the differences between them and the Company. They tarried in England four years,

and then returned hither to fill a sphere of usefulness and respectability. For their being constrained to leave this town, more blame has been laid on Mr. Endicott than he deserved. Others were as active as himself to ensure their departure. For what he did in that affair he had ample authority. But whether it was expedient to exercise his power, as he did, is a question not easily solved. In the part he and his counsellors acted, there is no sufficient ground to suspect, that they were influenced by malicious purposes. The policy they pursued in reference to civil and ecclesiastical affairs, was not peculiar to them. It was common to their successors in the colonial administration, was frequently complained of by the sovereigns of England, and ultimately became the cause of our Independence. ✓

Though the colonists here had reason to be encouraged by movements of the Company at home ; still the signs among themselves were cheerless and depressing. As the winter approached, disease and mortality began their dreadful work. Nearly one half of their number died. Among them was the Ruling Elder, Henry Haughton. Such a repeated event was enough to have driven ordinary adventurers from the shores, which breathed pestilence and death. But the mourning survivors continued firm and hoped for better days. While they looked in imagination to the more healthy residences of England, others were earnestly engaged in preparing to move thence, and become partakers with them in the trials of a new country. ✓

1630.

Under the new modification of the Company, John Winthrop was Governor, and Thomas Dudley, Deputy. These gentlemen, with many others, were about to make their home in Massachusetts. Before leaving their native land, they published, through the Rev. Mr. White, their reasons for such an undertaking. They

expressed themselves with filial, liberal, and patriotic feelings towards the land of their birth and education. To the clergy they remarked—"However your charity may have met with some occasion of discouragement through the misreport of our intentions, or through the disaffection or indiscretion of some of us, or rather among us, for we are not of those that dream of perfection in this world, yet we desire you would be pleased to take notice of the principles and body of our company, as those who esteem it our honour to call the Church of England, from whence we rise, our dear Mother, and cannot part from our native country, where she specially resideth, without much sadness of heart, and many tears in our eyes, ever acknowledging that such hope and part as we have obtained in the common salvation, we have received from her bosom. We shall always rejoice in her good, and unfeignedly grieve for any sorrow that shall betide her, and while we have breath, sincerely desire and endeavour the continuance and abundance of her welfare with the enlargement of her bounds in the Kingdom of Christ Jesus." Thus exhibiting traits of affection, which adorn the character of every nation and period, they embarked in four ships; they left several other vessels, which were to follow them. After a long and perilous passage, the *Arabella* hove in sight of this port the 12th of June. She came to anchor within Baker's Island. She was visited by Capt. Pierce of the ship *Lion*, then in the harbour. He came ashore and carried off Messrs. Endicott, Skelton and Leavit. On the return of these after a few hours, they were accompanied by some of those, just arrived. Speaking of this visit, Gov. Winthrop says:—"We that were of the assistants, and some other gentlemen, and some of the women, and our captain, returned with them to Nehumkeck, where we supped with a good venison pasty and good beer, and at night we returned to our ship, but some of the

women stayed behind." The *Arabella* was warped into the harbour on the 14th. Most of the passengers then left her under a parting salute of five cannons. During several months, more emigrants arrived here than had before in the same space of time. Seven vessels landed their passengers here, and ten others theirs at Nantasket and Charlestown. Thus about fifteen-hundred people came to Massachusetts. They were chiefly from London and the West of England.

On the 17th of June, Gov. Winthrop and others left Salem to look out a settlement. They went by water to Charlestown. On their return they lodged at Mr. Maverick's on Noddle's Island. They got back here the 19th. In their course, they had stopped at Nantasket, and suppressed a dispute between Capt. Squib, of the ship *Mary-and-John*, and his passengers. These complained that instead of landing them on Charles River, as he had agreed, he put them ashore at Nantasket. He was afterwards compelled to pay damages.

While about moving hence to his intended abode, Gov. Winthrop was severely tried. It appears that one of his sons, who intended to accompany him to this country, had been unintentionally left at the Isle of Wight. This son had been lately married to a Miss Fones, who was left in the family of his mother. He followed his father, and arrived at Salem the 1st of July. But while coming ashore the next day, to receive the congratulations of an affectionate parent, he was drowned. In a letter to his wife, a fortnight after so sad an occurrence, Mr. Winthrop writes :—" We have met with many sad and discomfortable things, as thou shalt hear after ; and the Lord's hand hath been heavy upon myself in some very near to me. My son Henry ! my son Henry ! ah ! poor child ! Yet it grieves me more for my dear daughter. The Lord strengthen and comfort her heart, to bear this cross patiently. I know thou wilt not be wanting to her in this distress.

Yet for all these things, (I praise my God,) I am not discouraged ; nor do I see cause to repent or despair of those good days here, which will make amends for all." ✓

✓ The late emigrants found the inhabitants of this town in a wretched condition. They came in season to relieve them from the horrors of approaching famine. Even provision by such a supply was far from being abundant. There was only sufficient for a few weeks. Of one hundred and eighty servants, whom the Company had sent over two years before, the remainder came to the last colonists, and intreated for food. But, however thus addressed, they were constrained to deny them for the most part, lest their own stores should be consumed. The provisions, put up for these suffering servants, had been left behind. The planters, being unable to maintain them, allowed them their freedom, though they had cost the Company from £16 to £20 each.

However surrounded by afflictions, the Colonists were grateful to their Maker for the timely appearance of hundreds, who had lately joined them, and aided to lessen their necessities. For such favour they observed a general Thanksgiving on the 8th of July.

The people here were called to sustain a severe loss in the decease of Mr. Higginson. He died August 6th, aged 43. He was born in England in 1587. He received his education at Emanuel College in Cambridge. He was settled as minister over one of five parishes in Leicester. At first he was a strict Episcopalian. But led to examine the arguments of Hildersham and Hooker, and especially, the impositions in doctrine and ceremonies, forced upon the established Church, he sided with the Dissenters. For this change he was ejected from his living. His people, however, remained sincerely attached to him. They cherished more esteem for his piety and worth, than disregard for the alteration of his

views. They sought and obtained the privilege of hearing him preach one lecture on the Sabbath. The other part of the day he assisted an aged minister. He resided in the diocese of a benevolent bishop, Dr. Williams. This gentleman refused to persecute him, though threatened by ecclesiastical authority for such forbearance. The talents, acquirements, and character of Mr. Higginson, brought him the offer of some of the best livings in England. But his scruples of non-conformity would not suffer him to accept them, while his heart held no sufficient communion with the conditions of their being conferred on him. Thus conscientious, he taught scholars for the maintainance of his family. Some of his pupils honoured his tuition by their subsequent usefulness and respectability. The beneficence he inculcated on others, he endeavoured to practice himself. Particularly were his sympathies excited and his charities drawn forth by the Protestant exiles, who had fled from Bohemia and the Palatinate, already desolated by the French, and taken refuge in England. While thus inclined, Mr. Higginson had cause to fear, that he should be cited to answer for the stand he had taken, before the high Court of Commissioners. When so situated, two men knocked at his door. He heard them say loudly :—"We must see Mr. Higginson." His wife hastened to his room and besought him to conceal himself. He replied that he must stand in his lot and meet the messengers. He accordingly went to them. They presented him with a bundle of papers. They remarked to him, with feigned roughness, We must carry you to London. He answered with fortitude,—This is what I expected. But on opening the package addressed to him, he was agreeably disappointed. He found it contained an invitation for him to embark for New-England, as an asylum from his fears and perils. It seems that the bearers of such news

practised deception to render his joy more intense by contrast. But his correct views of morality could hardly excuse management of this sort, though well intended. The proposal made for his labouring in a new country, received his serious consideration. He regarded it as a call in Providence,—not a forced call, of which we so often hear and read, to gratify his selfish propensities, but one suited to the dictates of obligation. As previously stated, he concluded to make his home in Naumkeag. When embarked and arrived at Land's End, he called up his family and others to the stern of the ship, that they might take a parting look of their native country. He observed to them:—"We will not say, as the Separatists were wont to say at their leaving of England:—Farewell Babylon,—farewell Rome!—but we will say, Farewell dear England!—farewell the Church of God in England, and all christian friends there! We do not go to New-England as Separatists from the Church of England, though we cannot but separate from the corruptions of it; but we go to practice the positive part of Church reformation and propagate the Gospel in America." Such an expression of patriotism, magnanimity, and religion, cannot but accord with the vibrations of every enlightened conscience. He came to Naumkeag in hopes of re-establishing his infirm health, and prolonging his usefulness.—For a time, especially when penning his account of New-England, did he think his expectations would be realized. But a merciful and wise God had purposed otherwise. In the course of abundant exertions to secure the temporal, spiritual, and eternal good of his flock, Mr. Higginson was arrested by the hand of insidious disease. His last public labours were about the middle of June. Before this he had been failing. A consumption threw over his countenance its varied, but too sadly presaging hues. In bearing the burden of his pains and trials, he leaned on the staff of

the Almighty. When a friend observed to him, that he must have the consolations of faithfulness to his charge,—he answered:—"I have been an unprofitable servant, and all my desire is to win Christ and be found in him, not having on my own righteousness." Soon to leave a faithful wife and eight children, without pecuniary resources, he was consoled with the thought, that their necessities would be provided for while resident here, according to his contract with the Company; and especially that the Being, in whom he had long and supremely confided, "preserveth the stranger, and relieveth the fatherless and widow." As he approached the grave he freely remarked:—Although the Lord should call him away, he was persuaded that he would raise up others to carry on the work which was begun, and that there would be many churches in this wilderness. When death came, he left this world with the Scriptural hope of a blessed immortality. So called, he had continued among his people over one year. But in this short period, they so learned his worth as earnestly to desire the long permanence of his labours among them. In his person he was slender and erect, but not tall. In his manners he was courteous and obliging. His talents were of high order. He well cultivated them in the fields of literature and divinity. A primitive writer on New-England, says of him, "a man indued with grace, apt to teach, mighty in the Scriptures, learned in the Tongues, able to convince gainsayers." As a preacher, Mr. Higginson was uncommonly popular. Before his coming hither it was usual for many to assemble from various towns, that they might hear him. In his parochial callings he acted from no time serving policy; but from principle, appointed in heaven, and recorded in the Bible. He suffered no unworthy person to commune with his church. For so sacred a service he required evidence of morality and religion. In his opinion of non-essentials, he was



more candid than some of that day. While he persuaded his people to beware of the corruptions, imposed on the English Church, he would have them esteem its long standing doctrines as worthy of their belief and improvement. The part which he and other counselors of the government here, took in counteracting the ecclesiastical views and proceedings of the Messrs. Browns, brought upon him the censure of these gentlemen. No doubt, on an occasion so trying to his feelings, he endeavoured to pursue the path of duty. Whether his purpose deviated from such a course, is a question, which cannot easily be answered at this late period. Two of Mr. Higginson's children followed his profession. One, whose name was Francis, went to Europe. He resided at Leyden some time, and visited several Universities on the Continent for the improvement of his mind. He settled as minister at Kerby Steven in Westmoreland, England. There he died about 1670 in the fifty-fifth year of his age. He was the first who wrote against the Friends. The other son, named John, was settled over the Congregation of his father thirty years after his decease. Mr. Higginson published the works, already mentioned and quoted. They were reasons for settling New-England and answers to objections; and a description of the Massachusetts Colony. The latter passed through several editions in London. Besides these an interesting account of his voyage to this place has been printed. His last sermon was preached after the landing of the emigrants, who accompanied Gov. Winthrop. The text of it was:—"What went ye out into the wilderness to see."

A Court of Assistants was convened at Charlestown on the 23d of August. It was composed of Gov. Winthrop and eight other members. Mr. Endicott, though of their body, did not sit with them till their session in September. The reason probably was, that, as he had

entered on a second marriage a few days before, his attention was called to domestic arrangements. The Court while in session enacted, that ministers should be maintained, and have houses built at the common charge. From this act Salem and Mattapan, or Dorchester, were exempted. The Court ordered that Justices of the Peace should have power similar to that of such officers in England. It appointed Mr. Endicott as the Justice of this town.

About the last of August, Lady Arabella Johnson died here. She was daughter to the Earl of Lincoln, whose family was highly esteemed, and deeply interested in the welfare of New-England. Two of the Assistants, composing the first Court at Charlestown, had resided in this family. Their names were Bradstreet and Nowell. Mrs. Johnson had a sister married to a son of Sir Fernando Gorges, the proprietor of Maine, and another to Sir John Humphrey, who settled at Saugus. She left the conveniencies of wealth and the attractions of honour for the hardships of a new world. To them with many of her connexions she bade adieu, in order to enjoy civil and religious freedom with a beloved husband, in a land of perils and strangers. She lived but a short time in the country, where she had anticipated many joys as well as trials. She was buried with expressions of general esteem and grief. Her decease was a source of deep affliction to her husband, who survived her only a month. He died in Boston, lamented by its inhabitants, as one in whom they placed strong hopes of future benefit to Massachusetts.

The Court of Assistants sat the 28th of September. They passed a law for this and other Plantations, which forbid any to teach the Indians the use of fire-arms. This order appears to have had its rise principally from the conduct of Thomas Morton. But three weeks before, the Court ordered him to be "set in the Bilboes," sent to England as a prisoner, have his goods

given to the Indians as satisfaction for a canoe of theirs, which he had taken, and his house burnt in their sight, for wrongs which, it was said, he had done them. They appointed John Woodbury to serve as constable of Salem one year. ✓ They required that Master Masons, Joiners, and Carpenters should receive no more than ✓ 16d. per day, and the workmen under them no more than 12d.; and that labourers in general, should have no more than 12d. a day, and 6d. for meat and drink. ✓ They forbid Corn to be sold to any English or Indians, or to be sent out of the Colony, without a license from them. They appointed Capt. Patrick and Capt. Underhill as military instructors, and required them to be maintained at the common charge. They assessed a tax of £50 for this object. Salem out of nine Plantations stood the seventh. Its proportion was £3. It appears that the custom for supporting military commanders was now commenced, and that it continued under different modes for a series of years.

On a jury of fifteen, empannelled to inquire concerning the death of Austin Bratcher, who had died of blows on Cradock's Plantation, Peter Palfrey of Salem was one. They brought in a bill of manslaughter against Walter Palmer, who was ordered to be tried the next month.

October 19th, it was propounded as a matter of general concern, whether the Freeman had not better choose the Assistants, and the Assistants choose the Governor and Deputy Governor, and these with the Assistants make the requisite laws.

Between this date and the 18th of May following, a considerable number of persons proposed themselves to the Court for being acknowledged as freemen. Among them were Samuel Skelton, Samuel Sharpe, Thomas Graves, Roger Conant, ~~Roger Williams~~, John Woodbury, Peter Palfrey, John Balch, and William Trask, of this town. ✓

The wolves were exceedingly hurtful here and in other Plantations. They had killed six calves, owned in this place ; which were then a very serious loss to the inhabitants in their necessitous and precarious condition. To prevent such depredations, the Court of Assistants offered, the 9th of November, a reward of 1d. <sup>5 7 1/2</sup> for every wolf, killed by an Englishman. To promote the interests of the Colony here and elsewhere, they also offered a premium of one farthing for every horse, cow, bullock, swine, or goat, which should be raised to a certain age. They required the people here and in general, to leave the price of beaver discretionary with traders, and not continue it at 6s. per lb. as it had been.

On a jury of twelve, who cleared Walter Palmer, charged with the death of Austin Bratcher, was John Balch of this town.

Dec. 28th, the Court of Assistants, after several consultations about a suitable place for being fortified, and for the seat of Government, agreed to have it at Newton, afterwards Cambridge. All the members, except Mr. T. Sharp and Mr Endicott, agreed to build houses, and move their military stores thither the next Spring. The former person was about returning to England. The latter had so located his property and formed his connexions in Salem, he would have had more difficulty in renewing his abode than the rest. This project of building and settling Newton was relinquished at the end of the next year, to the damage of Mr. Dudley in particular, and to a disturbance of harmony between him and Mr. Winthrop.

Great mortality existed here and in other places. It is computed that from April to December, one hundred of the people of Salem died.

1631.

Deprived of their religious Teacher, our fathers wished for another to supply his place. They heard of Mr.

Roger Williams, who had arrived at Nantasket with his wife the 5th of February. He was accounted a valuable acquisition to the Colony. He was born in ~~Wales 1599~~. He became pious at the early age of ten. He was educated at ~~Oxford~~ under the patronage of Sir Edward Coke. He is represented as having studied law with this eminent jurist. He had been a strict churchman ; but altered his views, when the innovations of Charles and his advisers were made more important, than the weighty matters of religion. The Society here soon invited him to preach, or prophesy, as the term was in reference to candidates not ordained. They invited him to settle as Teacher with Mr. Skelton. He accepted their call. But at this point of their connexion, the Governor and Assistants interfered. These wrote to Mr. Endicott, in April, as one having a principal concern in his proposed settlement. The import of their letter was, that as " Mr. Williams had refused to join with the Congregation at Boston, because they would not make a public declaration of their repentance for having communion with the churches of England, while they lived there ; and, besides, had declared his opinion, that the magistrate might not punish the breach of the Sabbath, nor any other offence, as it was a breach of the first Table ; therefore, they marvelled they should choose him without advising with the Council ; and withal desiring him, that they would forbear to proceed till they had conferred about it."—When such a communication was received, it put a stop to the measures for his ordination. Thus hindered he went to Plymouth. There he assisted Mr. Smith in the ministry about two years, unconscious of the severe trials which awaited him.

Much distress was experienced through the Plantations during winter. The scurvey prevailed. Provisions were alarmingly scarce. Wheat meal was over \$3 ; Corn and Peas were over \$2 per bushel. Many

were forced to live on muscles, clams, acorns, and ground-nuts. A Fast was to have been observed on the 6th of February ; but the Lion, Capt. Peirce, arriving with supplies on the 5th, it was exchanged for Thanksgiving on the 22d.

At a Court of Assistants, March 1st, it was ordered, that all the Colonists who were employing Indians as servants should discharge them ; and that they should hire no more of them, without permission from the Governor.

At this season the abundance of fowl was extraordinary, and must have served as a relief to those, whose provisions were scanty. One writes—"From fair daylight till 8 A. M., fly over all the towns in our Plantations, so many flocks of doves ; each flock containing many thousands ; and some so many that they obscure the light."

On the 15th of March, Mrs. Skelton, wife of the Pastor, died. Her decease was a heavy loss to society. She moved in her difficult sphere with so much discretion as to engage the esteem of her acquaintance. She honoured the profession of her husband and gave effect to his precepts. Her conduct made her life desirable to others, and her death sincerely lamented. ✓

On the 22d, <sup>(March)</sup> the Court of Assistants enacted, that the wages of labourers and mechanics, which had been defined, should be left without legal restrictions ; that all persons should be armed, except magistrates and ministers ; that all cards and dice should be destroyed. ✓

On the 18th of April, they ordered that every Captain should train his company once a week, on Saturday ; and that no person should travel alone from the Plantations to Plymouth, nor any without arms, though several together.—Such precaution appears to have been taken, because a dread existed here, that the Mohawks were about to attack the Colony and the adjacent Indians.

At the same date, the Court instituted an inquiry, concerning a charge of battery against the Assistant from this town, as committed upon Thomas Dexter. The case was decided unfavourably to the former, and he was fined 10s. In reference to this and other matters, Mr. Endicott writes the following letter to Gov. Winthrop :

“ Right Worshipful—I did expect to have been with you in person at the Court, and to that end I put to sea yesterday and was driven back again, the wind being stiff against us. And there being no canoe or boat at Saugus, I must have been constrained to go to Mystic and thence about to Charlestown, which at that time durst not be so bold, my body being at this present in an ill condition to wade or take cold, and therefore I desire you to pardon me. Though otherwise I could much have desired it, by reason of many occasions and businesses. There are at Mr. Hewson’s Plantation five or six kine very ill and in great danger, I fear they will hardly escape it, whereof two are mine, and all I have, which are worse than any of the rest. I left mine there this winter to do Mr. Skelton a pleasure to keep his for him here at Salem, that he might have the benefit of their milk. And I understand by Wincoll, that they have been ill tended, and he saith almost starved.” (Here four lines are omitted.) “I could wish when Manning hath recovered his strength, that you would free him, for he will never do you or Mr. Hewson service, for when he was well he was as negligent as the worst of them. Mr. Skelton, myself, and the rest of the Congregation desire to be thankful to God and yourself for your benevolence to Mr. Haughton’s child, The Lord restore it you. I prevailed with much ado with Sir Richard for an old debt here, which he thought was desperate to contribute it, which I hope I shall make good for the child. I think Mr.

Skelton hath written to you, whom he thinks stand most in need of contribution of such provisions as you will be pleased to give among us of that which was sent over. The eel pots you sent for are made, which I had in my boat, hoping to have brought them with me. I caused him to make but two for the present ; if you like them and his prices (for he worketh for himself) you shall have as many as you desire. He sells them for 4s. a piece. Sir, I desired the rather to have been at Court, because I hear I am much complained of by goodman Dexter for striking him. I acknowledge I was too rash in striking him, understanding since it is not lawful for a justice of peace to strike. But if you had seen the manner of his carriage with such daring of me with his arms akimbo, &c. it would have provoked a very patient man. But I will write no more of it, but leave it till we speak before face to face. Only thus far further, that he hath given out, if I had a purse he would make me empty it, and if he cannot have justice here, he will do wonders in England, and if he cannot prevail there he will try it out with me here at blows. Sir, I desire that you will take all into consideration. If it were lawful to try it at blows, and he a fit man for me to deal with, you should not hear me complain ; but I hope the Lord hath brought me off from that course. I thought good further to write what my judgment is for the dismissing of the Court till corn be set. It will hinder us that are far off exceedingly, and not further you there. Men's labour is precious here in corn setting time, the Plantations being yet so weak. I will be with you, the Lord assisting me, as soon as conveniently I can. In the mean while I commit you to his protection and safeguard, that never fails his children, and rest

Your unfeigned and loving friend to command,  
JO. ENDICOTT."

*Salem, April 12th, 1631.*



This letter goes to show, with known facts, that a common way of going to Court from this part of the country was by water ; and that the land communication was very inconvenient. It indicates that a few cattle were valued above droves at this day ; and attention to raising a harvest was deemed more important than legislation. It presents Mr. Endicott as acknowledging his error in the chastisement of Thomas Dexter. His remarks on this unhappy affair, were more in accordance with the customs of that time, than with those of the present. Next to refraining from wrong, is repentance and confession for its being committed.

May 18th, the Court order, with full consent of the Commons present, that a General Court shall be held at least once a year, at which the Commons may have liberty to propound the persons, whom they would prefer for Assistants, and to exercise a similar right in their removal for misconduct or incompetency. They also, enacted, that, as an indispensable condition to becoming a Freeman, every candidate for such a privilege, must be a reputable member of some regular church. Many, who refused to comply with this statute, were shut out from voting for officers of government and from all places of trust. As might be expected, they made complaint, which reached the throne, and increased prejudices against the Colony. Still the regulation, though nominally abrogated on the accession of Charles II. continued till the discontinuance of the Charter.

May 27th, a pinnacle of 18 tons came to Salem from Virginia, and sold her load of tobacco and corn. The last article went for \$2,22 per bushel.

June 14th, the Court ordered that Philip Radclif, for reproaches against the government and the Church of Salem, should be whipped, have his ears cropped, and be banished. The sentence was executed. This

ransaction was handled in England by himself, Moran, and Gardiner to the great injury of Massachusetts.

July 5th, a levy of £30 was made on the several Plantations for making a Creek from Charles River to Newton. Salem's proportion was £3. It stood the 15th on the list with Roxbury.

In the fore part of August, about one hundred Tarrentines, or Eastern Indians, began hostilities in the vicinity of this place, and produced great alarm. They assaulted the wigwams of the Sagamore at Agawam. They killed seven men and wounded others. They also made an attack in the dark on a guard near Saugus. In the morning expresses were forwarded to the neighbouring towns. The cannon from Salem were discharged in the woods. This was a means of inducing the Tarrentines to flee. These Indians being represented as cannibals, enterprising in their expeditions, and brave in resisting their foes, carried terror wherever they appeared. Before the settlement of Plymouth, they had been such a scourge to the Indians of Massachusetts, these were in dread of fixing on any particular abodes, lest they should be more easily discovered and slain by them.

In September, a small vessel sailed hence for Cape Cod to trade for corn, as another had the year preceding. But forced by the wind to make a harbour at Plymouth, the crew's object became known to Gov. Bradford. He reproved them severely, and forbid them at the peril of their lives to export corn from his jurisdiction. This matter was complained of to Gov. Winthrop on the 6th, and he wrote to Gov. Bradford. The conduct of the latter gentleman may appear inhuman under present circumstances. But then the case was very different. His Colony as well as Massachusetts were in great straits for grain to support life. The Court of Massachusetts had already laid restrictions on the exportation of corn from their territory. Gov. Brad-

ford must have been aware of such a fact. He was probably influenced by it as well as by the dictates of self preservation, to prevent our people's trading with his for such an article. ✓

FRAY Oct. 18th, the Court for some offence not named, ordered Thomas Graves' house at Marbleharbour to be pulled down, and no Englishman to give him entertainment. This person had sustained a reputable character, and came highly recommended by the Company, as a man of uncommon talents and attainments.—They assessed a tax of £60, for making a Palisade about Newton, and made the proportion of Salem £4 10.—They enacted, that on account of the scarcity of money, corn should be taken by creditors for their demands at the usual price, excepting cases in which cash and beaver had been promised. ✓

Oct. 25th, Gov. Winthrop with Capt. Underhill and others, visited this town on foot. Their chief business was with Mr. Endicott. He gave them a polite and friendly reception. The necessities of that period caused the mode of their travelling to be exceedingly different from the mode of similar officers in these days.

About this time, it was customary with the inhabitants here and elsewhere to give the title of Mr. and Mrs. to but very few of either sex. The usual appellations of adults were goodman and goodwife before their respective surnames.

✓

1632.

March 6th, the Court of Assistants enacted, that no person should transport money or beaver from the Colony to England, unless by a permit from the Governor. In case any one violated this regulation, he was liable to forfeit the money and beaver concerned in such a trespass. ✓

May 9th, the General Court required, that each town should choose two persons to confer with them on the

subject of raising a general stock. Salem selected Roger Conant and Peter Palfrey for this business. They agreed to a mode of election different in some degree from previous practice. It was that the Governor and Assistants should be annually chosen by the General Court, and that the Governor should be always from the Assistants. This Court (agreed on the year before) appears to have now commenced the operations of its political existence. It did not supersede the Courts of Assistants, which were to be continued monthly. By having it formed and carried into effect, the people made an advance in power, which appears to have been their right, and which they perseveringly sought.

June 13th, a Thanksgiving, which was appointed the 5th, was observed for the success of Gustavus, the Swedish king, and the Protestant forces in Germany, against the Emperor; and for the safe arrival of vessels, which were anxiously expected over.

July 3d, the elders and brethren of the church here, and of the church at Plymouth, were requested by the church of Boston to give their advice on the following questions:—Can a person be properly a Magistrate and a ruling Elder at the same time? If he may not, then which of the offices should he prefer? Should there be more than one Pastor in the same Congregation? To the first inquiry they returned a decided answer in the negative. In reference to the other two, they did not feel prepared to give a definite reply.

The Court of Assistants granted Mr. Endicott, of their number, 300 acres of land. The Indian name of its location, properly translated, was Birch Wood. It was bounded by Cow House River on the S.; Duck River on the N.; and Wooleston River on the E. The names of the two first Rivers were derived from the Indians. They also granted Mr. Skelton 213 acres of land in several lots. Twelve of them were on the Neck.

August 7th, they enacted, that every company should maintain its captain. Previously such an expense was borne by the colony. This vote was altered in a few years to its first form.

The Summer, having been wet and cold, cut off the hopes of a corn harvest. Such a dispensation of Providence was dreadful to the colonists, whose resources for food were precarious, and who had suffered much from scarcity.

In the course of the Autumn, fears prevailed here and elsewhere of a conspiracy by the Indians. The Narragansets and others appeared to be preparing for an attack on the English. One of their Powaws gave information, that they intended to cut off the Colonists. Indications of their unfriendliness were perceived in their being querulous about their lands, and not visiting the houses of the planters, as they had been accustomed. A false alarm was given at Boston, that they were coming to attack its inhabitants. This alarm reached Salem and other places, and was answered by a telegraphic mode of conveying intelligence. In such a state, watchmen of every town were at their stations both day and night.

October 3d, the Court of Assistants confirm the former instructions of the Company, by ordering that none within Massachusetts should take tobacco publicly, on the penalty of 1d. for every such offence. ✓

November 21st, this and other Plantations were interested in the enterprise of a bark and 20 men, sent by the Governor against a company of pirates, headed by Dixey Bull, at the Eastward. These national outlaws filled the crews of the colonial vessels with dread. Owing to unfavourable weather, the expedition against them failed. But not long afterwards, they were dispersed, and ceased to be feared.

1633. ✓

January, news spread here and at large, that the French had purchased and peopled the Scots Planta-

tion, called Port Royal, near Cape Sable. Fearing that, as Papists, they would be troublesome neighbours, the Governor called together, from different parts of the Colony, the Assistants, Elders, Captains, and other principal men, on the 17<sup>th</sup>, to consult on measures best to be adopted. They advised to the commencement of a fort at Nantasket; the completion of the one begun at Boston; and the settlement of Agawam, as the means of preserving it for tillage and cattle, from the hands of the French.

February 22d, intelligence, deeply interesting to this and other plantations, came by the ship William. It stated, that charges against Massachusetts were exhibited to the Privy Council in England, by Sir Fernando Gorges and Capt. Mason, through the influence of Sir Christopher Gardiner, Thomas Morton, and Philip Radclif. These three persons, for their disorderly conduct, had been severely handled by the authorities of this country.—An additional ground of complaint were some letters, forwarded by Capt. Leavit of this town, who died on his passage to England. These letters, containing remarks against the Established Church, were opened and produced unfavourable feelings in the Lords of the Council.—Such an attempt to injure the government here by strong and partial representations to the Privy Council, failed of success for the present. Mr. Emmanuel Downing, who had married the Governor's sister, and who became a leading inhabitant of Salem, was a principal agent in turning the measures of the colony's foes to confusion.

March, provisions were exceedingly scarce here and elsewhere. Had it not been for the supplies of fish, the general suffering would have been severe. The price of corn was \$2 22 per bushel.

May, information, affecting this and other plantations, was brought, that a renewed attempt had been made by their enemies, to have New-England under

one general government, headed by Capt. Neal. To carry this point, they declared to the King and Council, that his subjects here intended to rebel against him, and be entirely independant of the Church and laws of England. In the discussion of this subject it was advanced, that New-England would be of great benefit to the Crown by furnishing such articles, as masts and cordage, in case the Baltic should be closed upon its commerce. But after the foes and friends of the Colony had been heard, decision was made in its favour.

June 19th, a day of Thanksgiving was observed for deliverance from the plots of enemies and the arrival of friends.

July 2d, the Court of Assistants fine a person at Marbleharbour 30s. for intemperance on the Sabbath. They enact that no one shall sell wine or strong water, without leave from the Governor; nor even give the latter to an Indian in the course of trading with him. They also order, that if a corn fence be not sufficient, according to the opinion of a town, and its owner delay more than two days to repair it, after notice, they shall have it mended, and take the expense out of his corn; that any person may kill swine, which get into his corn, and the owner receive them and pay damages.

Sept. 17th, the ministers and elders of the Church here and through the Colony, were called by the Governor and Council, to advise about the location of the Rev. John Cotton, lately arrived to this country. Considering him the most eminent in talents and attainments of any clergyman, who had emigrated hither, they concluded that he should be partly supported out of the Colonial treasury, and located at Boston. Owing, however, to subsequent and very reasonable objections of members among the Council, his immediate congregation maintained him entirely.

Oct. 3d, the Court of Assistants ordered the 16th to be observed as a day of Thanksgiving. Though op-

ressed with trials, the Colonists did not forget their lessings.—The same Court, having perceived that it was customary to have religious lectures held at *Taverns* in the forenoon, enacted that none should be held here in future before one o'clock.—Of a £400 rate his town was assessed £28 ; and stood the seventh on the list.

Oct. 10th, the ship *James*, Capt. Grant, arrived here from Gravesend, in a passage of fifty six days. She brought twenty passengers for this place, thirty for *Piscataqua*, and thirty for Virginia. She also brought sixty cattle, which were then a very desirable acquisition. A cow was worth from £20 to £26 sterling. An ewe goat was worth from £3 to £4.

Nov. 5th, the Court of Assistants order that Salem, Agawam and Saugus shall pay for three days work, at 1s6d. each for every man, excepting Magistrates and Ministers, towards the fort at Boston. This was done to prevent objections, which Newton had to working on the fort, because the towns, already named, had not performed their part.

As the harvest of corn had been much injured by swine, and a scarcity thereby likely to ensue, they enact that swine should not be fed on corn, if fit "for man's meat ;" and that every Plantation shall agree how many swine each person may keep summer and winter. This act was unpopular, and exertions were used for its repeal the next year. The price of corn at this time was \$1,33.

November, Roger Williams had returned to Salem from Plymouth. While there he perceived some leading members opposed to his particular opinions. One thing by which he gave them offence, was his contending, that the appellation, good-man, should be given only to those, who manifested evidence of piety. But he yielded this point by the advice of Gov. Winthrop, who was on a visit at Plymouth the last year. Still



on account of views, as to other subjects, different from those of some in his Congregation, he requested a dismission, after labouring among them with great acceptance and usefulness. His request was granted. He was followed hither by a part of his people. He again assisted Mr. Skelton. Thus reunited in Gospel labours, they were fearful lest the association of colonial ministers would injure the liberties of the churches, and bring them under Presbyterian order<sup>d</sup>. For this reason they strongly objected to the meeting of clergymen from the Bay and Saugus. It appears that those clergymen met once a fortnight, and discussed questions, deemed most important. They probably gave rise to the various associations of Congregational ministers, which have long existed in New-England. The dread which Messrs: Skelton and Williams entertained of Scottish Presbyterianism, was much lessened among those, who lived to cherish it, in 1638. Then the Presbyterians of Scotland covenanted to maintain the rules of their church against the encroachments of Charles I. Thus they identified themselves with the Puritans, in resisting his abused authority. These two denominations, being so connected, lost sight of many jealousies, which had previously kept them asunder. Union in seasons of peril hides non-essential differences, and chiefly points to impending evil.

Nov. 8th, the Court of Assistants order<sup>d</sup>, that no person shall receive a greater profit on heavy goods than 4d on 1s., excepting cheese, wine, oil and strong water; and on articles, such as linen, not so much profit. They require that traders should have a good conscience in their transactions.

December, great mortality prevailed among the Indians, bordering on Salem, and in other parts of the Colony. James Sagamore and most of his people died at Saugus. They were infected with the small pox.—Such a disease, without its present means of alleviation, spread terror in every direction.

Dec. 27th, the Court of Assistants received a Treatise from Roger Williams, which he had shown to the Governor and Council of Plymouth. He maintained in it, that however the Colonists had received a grant of their soil from the Crown, they could have no just claim to it without the consent of the Aborigines. On this subject he had drawn up a letter, "not without the approbation of some of the chief in New-England, then tender also upon this point before God, directed unto the King himself, humbly acknowledging the evil of that part of the Patent, which respects donation of lands." In the treatise he also charged King James with falsehood, for declaring himself to be the first Christian Prince that had discovered New-England; and him and others with blasphemy for designating Europe by the term, Christendom; and he applied to the reigning King, Charles, three offensive passages from the Apocalypse. The Governor wrote to Mr. Endicott on the subject, and requested him to use his influence with Mr. Williams to retract the opinions of the treatise. Mr. Endicott returned an acceptable answer. Mr. Williams sent an apology to the Governor and Council, stating, that as he had been required to leave a copy with the Governor of Plymouth, he thought proper to have it known to the authorities of Massachusetts; and that he was far from intending to create division by its contents. He also expressed himself as willing, that the book or treatise, he had forwarded to them, might be burnt partially or entirely, just as they should choose.

1634.

Jan. 24th, the Governor and Council, in connexion with the Rev. Messrs. Cotton and Wilson, reconsidered the offensive parts of Mr. Williams' treatise. They agreed that its contents were not so objectionable, as they at first suspected. They came to the conclusion.

that if he would take the oath of allegiance to the King, he should be excused for what had passed.

Feb. 22d, Mr. Allerton employed six fishing boats at Marbleharbour. At the first of the month, he had met with a heavy loss in having the most of his goods consumed, with a house of Mr. Cradock, which he and his men occupied.

March 4th, the Court of Assistants order that no person, without a special license from them, shall purchase land of the Indians.—Mr. Endicott, like other Assistants in their respective towns, was required by the Court to use his influence in Salem for obtaining aid to build a sea and *moveable* fort, twenty-one feet wide and forty feet long.

On the 7th, at a lecture in Boston, a question was discussed as to the ladies' wearing veils. Mr. Cotton, though while in England of an opposite opinion on this subject, maintained that in countries where veils were a sign of submission, they might be properly disused. But Mr. Endicott took different ground, and endeavoured to retain it by the general argument of St. Paul. Mr. Williams sided with his parishioner. Through his and others influence, veils were worn here abundantly. At the time they were most fashionable, Mr. Cotton came to preach for Mr. Skelton. His subject was upon wearing veils. He endeavoured to prove, that this was a custom not to be tolerated. The consequence was, that the ladies became converts to his faith in this particular, and, for a long time, left off an article of dress, which indicated too great a degree of submission to "the lords of creation."

, 34  
OATH  
April 1st, the Court of Assistants ordered every person above twenty years, who had resided, or should be resident in Massachusetts six months, to take an oath of fidelity. They required the constables and four more respectable inhabitants in each town, with the advice of one or more of the next Assistants, to make an

estimate of the houses and lands, and have a record of it, as reference for future inheritances. They sent notice to the General Court, that expediency required Deputies to be chosen from each town, in order to form such a body at its next meeting. ✓

May 14th, the General Court for elections assembled at Newton. Twenty-four of the Colonists appeared as Representatives of the Freemen. They passed several interesting resolutions. They defined the powers of the Legislature. They enacted a law, that no trial for life should take place without a jury. After choosing the Magistrates, they voted that there should be four General Courts in a year; that the *whole body of Freemen* should be present at the Court of Elections for Magistrates; and that their deputies should act fully for them in the three other General Courts. Thus the principal Legislature of Massachusetts underwent an important alteration. The addition of Representatives to the Assistants and Governor was an imitation of the House of Commons in England; and was in accordance with the spirit of liberty then increasing there. Such a change was produced by the freemen, because they believed, that the preceding government was still clothed with too much power. The House of Representatives in this Colony, was the second in America. One had been already formed in Virginia. The Representatives chosen by this town, were Messrs. Holgrave, Roger Conant, and Francis Weston. ✓ The General Court ordered the oath of freemen to be so far altered as to accord with the following form. " I, A. B., being by God's providence an inhabitant and freeman within the jurisdiction of this Commonwealth, do freely acknowledge myself to be subject to the government thereof, and therefore do here swear by the great and dreadful name of the everlasting God, that I will be true and faithful to the same, and will accordingly yield assistance and support thereunto with my

\*

person and estate as in equity I am bound, and I will also truly endeavour to maintain and preserve all the liberties and privileges thereof, submitting myself to the wholesome laws and orders, made and established by the same. And further, that I will not plot nor practise any evil against it, nor consent to any that shall so do, but will truly discover and reveal the same to lawful authority now here established, for the speedy preventing thereof. Moreover I do solemnly bind myself in the sight of God, that when I shall be called to give my voice, touching any such matter of this state, wherein freemen are to deal, I will give my vote and suffrage, as I shall judge in mine own conscience may best conduce and tend to the public weal of the body, without respect of persons or favour of any man, so help me God in the Lord Jesus Christ." This was substantially the same as another, which had been previously administered. It is given as a specimen of ancient custom among the freemen of this and other Plantations.

The Rev Thomas Parker, settled at Agawam, with over a hundred persons, and was joined by some from Salem.

July, Mr. Humphrey and wife, daughter to the Earl of Lincoln, arrived here with ammunition for the Colony. He brought intelligence, that many respectable people intended to follow them, though the Bishop and others of the Royal Council threw obstructions in the way. He had charge of sixteen heifers, as a donation from Richard Andrews of London, to the ministers of this and other towns of the Colony. If any of them remained, after each minister had one, they were to be conferred on the poor. One half of the increase from those heifers, taken by the clergymen, was to be reserved for succeeding clergymen. Mr. Humphrey took up his abode at Saugus, now Lynn. Here he resided till he had lost most of his property, and then he returned

to England. Mr. Andrews, whose benevolence to the Colonists was shown by the donation, just mentioned, continued to manifest a similar disposition. Ten years afterwards, he is named on the records of this town, as having then transported supplies for its poor. His steady benefactions should keep his name from oblivion, and present him as an object of gratitude when the mind turns back on the scenes of our pilgrim fathers.

On the 9th, news, sad to this and every town of Massachusetts, was reported. It was that the King's Council demanded the Colony's Charter. Mr. Cradock, a principal member of the Company, wrote to the Governor and Assistants on the subject. They returned this worthy gentleman an answer, that they could not surrender the Charter themselves, and must lay the matter before the General Court in September.

Aug. 2d, the inhabitants of this place were called to mourn the loss of Mr. Skelton. He had been debilitated a considerable time. No records of his age are known. He was supposed to be older than his colleague, Mr. Higginson. Little was said of him by his cotemporaries, who wrote on the events of our Colonial history. Unhappily for his being mentioned with due attention, he differed about clerical associations and other subjects, from most of the principal persons in Massachusetts. A chief cause for which they were disaffected with him was his approbation of Mr. Williams. He was also the tried friend, and had been the spiritual father of Mr. Endicott, whose opinions on some points, were becoming very unpopular. Thus thinking and connected, his biography has not been handed down with the particularity of those, who were equally meritorious, but no more so. It is compliance with the wishes of the great, and success in combatting for opinions, which often times, independently of real desert, confer upon recorded reputation its best proportions and fairest colours. Of Mr. Skelton's worthiness

no just doubt can be entertained. The confidence which the Company in London placed in him at first, was never forfeited. They appointed him a member of the first Council here, and designated him as one of two to take charge of the Colony, in case of Mr. Endicott's decease. As one of the executive authorities he took a deep interest in the Colonial welfare. While sustaining this office, he was called to act with reference to the case of Messrs. Browns. He with others, approved of their departure, as the most effectual means of restoring peace to this Plantation. They, on their return home represented him, as maintaining speculations against the Church and Crown, and thus doing what was unbecoming his sacred profession. Though their account produced a letter of caution from the Company to him and his colleague ; yet his motives and precepts, which were so offensive to Messrs. Browns, would appear to persons, with different views of ecclesiastical and civil order, not only harmless, but quite justifiable. Frequently a principle or measure, entirely correct in itself, is viewed by the mind, under mistaken impressions, as exceedingly incorrect. As a Pastor, Mr. Skelton was faithful to watch for the safety of his flock, and guide them in the way of duty and happiness. He was ready to reprove deviations from rectitude, and support the principles of truth. He exercised fortitude under severe trials, and stood firmly in his lot. In his manners he was reserved. His talents and attainments were respectable. Johnson says of him :—" A man of gracious speech, full of faith, and furnished by the Lord with gifts from above." In his various relations, he appeared to have acted with a wise reference to the decisions of Heaven. He toiled and expended his life, not for earthly distinction, possessions and happiness, but for the approbation and blessing of God. He was taken from the troubles already gathering over his people, to the world " where the weary

are at rest." As one who ably, benevolently, and faithfully aided to lay the foundation of our present enjoyments, we should ever cherish the recollection of his services with respect and gratitude. We should not measure our esteem of him, by the scantiness of former eulogy, but by his real deeds and virtues. He left affectionate children and many friends to regret his decease.

Aug. 20th, a general Thanksgiving was appointed for the arrival of ships and emigrants, and for the more prosperous appearance of the times. Provisions were considerably plenty. Corn had fallen to 75 cents per bushel.

Sept. 3d, at a General Court at Newton, business was transacted, affecting this and other towns. A prominent question before that body, in which the Assistant and Deputies from Salem took a part, was concerning the removal of the people in Newton to Connecticut, under the Rev. Mr. Hooker. There was a majority of the Representatives for, and a majority of the Assistants against their departure. The reasons for removal were, that there was not sufficient room for cattle, and that the towns in Massachusetts were too far apart; that Connecticut was more productive and convenient, and should be occupied to prevent its settlement by others, especially the Dutch on Hudson River; and that the planters of Newton were strongly inclined to remove. Reasons against removal were, that the oath, which Newton people had taken to seek the good of the Colony, would not allow, and that state policy forbid such an indulgence; that they might be accommodated in Massachusetts, and that the departure of their Church would be a judgment. The Deputies declined to comply with the wish of the Assistants, and great difficulty in the Colony was dreaded. In order for the peaceable adjustment of this question, they both concluded not to proceed any further for the present.



That their minds might look at it with deliberation and principle, a Fast was ordered to be observed on the 18th.

On the 24th, the General Court assembled, and then the Deputies surrendered the negative voice to the Assistants. By this means the inhabitants of Newton did not receive permission to become located in Connecticut. A considerable number of them, however, carried their wishes into effect short of two years afterwards, and, with their Pastor, settled Hartford. ✓

At the Court on the 3d, other subjects were considered. They granted power for the impressment of men to work on the forts. Capt. Trask, of this town, was appointed on a committee of seven, to superintend the fortifications. The public military stores were to be distributed equally among the Plantations. Peter Palfray of this place was chosen on a committee of six to run the boundaries of all towns not yet described. The Court enacted that no keeper of an ordinary should receive more than 6d a meal, and 1d for an ale quart of beer out of meal times, on penalty of 10s. ; nor suffer any tobacco to be taken in his house. They forbid any person to use tobacco publicly on fine of 2s6d. or privately in his own dwelling, or dwelling of another before strangers ; and they also forbid two or more to use it in any place together. They grant Salem the privilege of keeping a weekly market on Wednesday. They ordered that this place should have in addition to its ordnance, and as a proportion of its military stores, "*two old Sakers,*" on condition that it provided carriages for them. Of a £600 rate for fortifications and other objects, the people here were assessed £45. They and Charlestown stood the same, and were the eighth on the list. The following is a record against prevailing fashions :—"The Court taking into consideration the great superfluous and unnecessary expenses, occasioned by reason of some new and inmodest fashions,

as also the ordinary wearing of silver, gold and silk laces, girdles, hat-bands, &c. hath therefore ordered, that no person, either man or woman, shall hereafter make or buy any apparel, either woollen, silk or linen with any lace on it, silver, gold, silk or thread, under the penalty of forfeiture of such clothes, &c. Also, that no person, either man or woman, shall make or buy any slashed clothes, other than one slash in each sleeve and another in the back. Also, all cut works, embroidered or needle worked caps, bands, and rayles are forbidden hereafter to be made and worn, under the aforesaid penalty. Also, all gold or silver girdles, hat-bands, belts, ruffs, beaver hats, are prohibited to be bought and worn hereafter, under the aforesaid penalty. Moreover it is agreed, if any man shall judge the wearing of any of the forenamed particulars, new fashions or long hair, or any thing of the like nature to be uncomely or prejudicial to the common good, and the party offending reform not the same upon notice given him, that then the next Assistant, being informed thereof, shall have power to bind the party so offending, to answer to it at the next Court, if the case so require. Provided and it is the meaning of the Court, that men and women shall have liberty to wear out such apparel as they are now provided of (except the immoderate great sleeves, slash apparel, immoderate great rayles, long wings, &c. This order to take place a fortnight after the publishing thereof."

Sept. 18th, intelligence deeply affecting the interest of people here and through the Colony, arrived by the ship Griffin. It was, that a commission was granted "to the two Arch-Bishops and ten others of the Council," conferring on them the authority to regulate the Plantations of New-England; to establish and maintain the Episcopal Church in this country; to recall its charters; remove its Governors; make its laws; hear and decide its legal cases; and appoint its punishments, even death itself. The intelligence further related, that

a ship was coming secretly with a new Governor for Massachusetts, and with orders calculated to prostrate its civil and ecclesiastical rights. Such news awakened general anxiety, and hastened forward the fortifications, and the assessment of an additional rate of £500 for defence.

Oct. 20th, a sad occurrence took place in reference to some persons of this Plantation. Six of them, being on a fowling party in a canoe, were overset near Kettle Island, and five of them were drowned.

Nov. 7th, the red cross being cut out of the ensign, belonging to the company here, such an act was complained of to the Court of Assistants at Newton. They ordered "that Ensign Danford shall be sent by warrant with command to bring his colours with him to the next Court, as also any other, that hath defaced the said colours."

27th, the Court of Assistants met respecting the defaced colour. They were apprehensive that a deed of this sort would be construed as rebellion in England. They concluded to write Mr. Downing, a friend of the Colony, that he might excuse them from approving such an act. They however expressed themselves with caution. They did not feel prepared to assert, that it was right for the cross to be continued in their national flag. Still they disapproved the manner, in which it had been treated in this town. They promised that those concerned in the deed, should be called to an account. They also considered reports, that Mr. Williams had revived his preaching against the King, Church of England, and the tenure, by which the Colonists held their lands. They charged him with having broken his promise not to declare such things. On this account, they cited him to appear at their next session.

The Congregation here having worshipped from 1629 to the present year in an unfinished building of one story, agreed with Mr. Norton to build a suitable meeting house, which should not exceed the amount of £100.

1635.

January, Mr. Allerton's pinnace went to obtain two men and a quantity of goods, which had been taken by the French, who had come from Machias. But their commander, La Tour, replied to the application for the release of the men and goods, that they were lawfully captured, as being on French territory without a proper license ; and that all persons from New-England would be treated in a similar manner, if presuming to trade east from Pemaquid.

January 19th, the ministers of this and other towns, except Mr. Ward of Ipswich, meet at Boston, and give their opinion on the following questions. What should be done, if the King sent a General Governor for New-England ? Whether it was right to retain the cross in their colours ? As to the first inquiry, they unanimously agreed, that if such a Governor should come, the Colonists ought to resist his authority and maintain their rights. As to the second, they were divided in opinion.

The first records of this town refer to a division of lands. They read, that it was ordered by the inhabitants, that the least family shall have ten acres ; but greater families more, according to their number.—The records in general of that day began the custom of designating the months numerically instead of nominally. This custom lasted many years, and is well known to be practised by the Friends. Still records of that period retained the previous method of reckoning their years, as commencing the 25th of March. It is supposed, that such an alteration was owing to the following reasons :—Through the partiality of Charles I. and Bishop Laud, some forms of the Catholic Church had been imposed on the English Church. Besides, Pope Gregory had long before endeavoured to have his improvement of the Julian style of reckoning time, adopted by Protestant nations. Such an improved style allowed the months to be called by their proper

names, as invented by Romulus and amended by Numa. In order, then, not to denote the months as the Catholics did, whose ecclesiastical corruptions had become more than commonly offensive to the Colonists, because an increased occasion of their being oppressed by the Crown, it is thought that our fathers marked the months by figures and not letters.

February, the town agreed that the Neck should no longer be for the use of goats ; but should be permitted to grow six days so that the cattle might feed on it during the Sabbath.

March 4th, the General Court assembled. Mr. Endicott continued one of its Assistants. John Holgrave, Peter Palfrey, and Charles Gott, were Deputies to it from this town. It fined Salem £10, for not seasonably paying their proportion towards finishing the Castle. Saugus was similarly fined. The fines however were remitted. The demur of these two places was probably occasioned by their supposing, that to take care of their own defences was sufficient. The Court ordered that no person should buy or sell tobacco on penalty of 10s. per lb. after September. That this and other parts of the Colony might be notified as to an approach of enemies, it required a beacon to be placed on Sentry Hill in Boston. It enacted, that brass farthings should be uncurrent, and that *musket bullets* should pass in place of them. It ordered, that all persons who had resided in any plantation for six months, and were above 16 years, should take an oath of fidelity. The occasion of this measure was the report, that some, influenced by the decision of the royal council, were endeavouring to erect Episcopacy and prostrate Congregationalism. The oath, however, was so opposed by Roger Williams, that he dissuaded various persons from taking it, and it therefore failed to be carried into effect. The reason of his objection to it, was, that no oath was proper to be taken by impenitent people. Of

a £300 levy, the Court assessed Salem with the same amount as last year. It ordered, that merchantable beaver at 10s. and corn at 5s. sterl. should be taken for rates. It appointed John Holgrave on a committee of nine to trade with friendly vessels, purchase their cargoes for the country, and dispose of them at 5 per ct. profit. It allowed that the House of Deputies should judge, as to the election of their members, and regulate the business of their own body. It ordered a committee to be raised for considering the laws already enacted, and what more were needed, and report immediately. It requested the brethren and elders of every church, to devise a uniform and scriptural mode of ecclesiastical discipline, and consider how far the magistrates are bound to interfere so as to preserve peace and uniformity in the church. It appointed two grand juries. One of them was to inform the Court of March, and the other, the Court of September, in respect to offences, which should come to their knowledge. It called Mr. Endicott to answer for defacing the cross on the colours of this place. The members of it discussed the charge against him. They differed in opinion. Some thought that he had acted right and others wrong. The question was put over till the next session. So unsettled was the public mind on this subject, the military commissioners ordered that all ensigns, whether with crosses or not, should be laid aside for the present. Of eleven commissioners, appointed by the preceding Court to superintend military affairs, Mr. Endicott was one. The same Court for some objections to Mr. Allerton, an enterprising inhabitant of Marblehead, requested him to move thence.

15th, two from this and other churches in the Colony met at Saugus, and continued there three days, to settle difficulties, which had risen between the pastor, Mr. Batchelor and some of the brethren. These supposed, that, through his irregular proceeding, they were

not a properly organized church, and therefore, they refused to commune with the rest. The council, thus assembled, appointed another meeting in order to hear the disaffected, and a part of them went to attend a lecture at Boston. While there they received information from the Pastor at Saugus, that he was about to proceed against those brethren by way of excommunication, and, on this account, he requested them not to return home. They accordingly came back, and after hearing both parties, they concluded, that though they were not constituted in due order, still they were a true church by having been publicly considered so, and acted under such a name.

April 30th, Mr. Williams was cited before the Governor and Assistants, to answer a complaint of his preaching against the administration of an oath to the impenitent. The reason assigned by him for such a doctrine, was, that it might be a means of preventing the profanation of God's name. He was heard on this subject before all the clergymen.

May 6th, the General Court granted, that there should be a Plantation at Marblehead. They required Salem to grant it land as its inhabitants enlarged. They forbid any to take up an abode there without their leave or of two magistrates. They order that the land, between the "Clifte and Forest River," near Marblehead, should be improved by John Humphrey, Esq. and that if he wanted it, they should sell it to him, provided it did not belong to Salem. ✓

They appointed Mr. Holgrave to *impress* men to unload the salt, which should arrive at different ports.

They gave leave to all the Plantations to transport corn out of the Colony. ✓

They ordered that no pigs of the time, between the last of July and the first of January, should be kept longer than a month, and that no swine should be fed, for the same period, on corn, except refuse, or brought

from other parts. They required this and every town to furnish themselves with peck and bushel measures, and weights, and a "meate" yard, made by the standards at Boston, sealed by James Pen, the Marshal, before their session in September, on penalty of 40s. for every defect. They made a levy of £200. Salem's portion was £16. Charlestown and Saugus were assessed the same. These three towns held the sixth grade.

At the General Court of the preceding date, Mr. Endicott's conduct about cutting out the cross, was formally considered. A committee reported, that he had acted without due authority; that, if believing the cross to be a mark of idolatry, he should have taken measures for its being disused in other towns as well as in his own; that he had implicitly charged other magistrates with permitting idolatry, and had exposed the Colony to the malevolence of England. In view of these charges, they recommended that he should be admonished and left out of office one year. At the same time, they stated their belief to be, that he acted with no evil intentions. In consequence of this, he lost his election as an Assistant. Had most of the principal men, and many others in Massachusetts, been judged according to their opinion, as to retaining the cross in their ensigns, they would have fared no better than Mr. Endicott. They thought as he did on that subject. The difference between them and him was, that he manifested his opinion in deed, and they retained theirs in secret. His openness of action was reported in England, and was construed as rebellion. The General Court were constrained to notice what he had done, and bring in some sentence against him, as an ostensible sign of their loyalty. He was made the victim to pacify the displeasure of His Majesty's Council, for what a large number of the Colonists heartily approved. Had it not been for dread of the Crown,



Mr. Endicott's conduct would have been publicly commended. The spirit of opposition to Popery, in all its signs as well as services, had then spread not only in Massachusetts but also in England. During the discussion of the matter, which turned so hardly on Mr. Endicott, a proposal was made, that the colours should bear a red and white rose, noted indications of the union, which had long before taken place between the Houses of York and Lancaster; and that they should serve instead of the cross. The proposal, however, as circumstances show, was not adopted.

The Deputies from this and other plantations considered, that it was hazardous to have important cases decided at the discretion of the magistrates, who were under the necessity of doing this, because no written code of laws was yet published. They, therefore, proposed that persons should be selected for forming a body of laws, similar to those of the Magna Charta. They, also, proposed that, when such a collection of laws was presented, they should be binding so far as the Elders and General Court should recommend.

On the 21st, a Dutch ship, with 140 tons of salt, and 10,000 lbs. of tobacco, arrived here from Christopher Island, and another, the 7th of June, with passengers.

June 16th, intelligence, deeply affecting the Colonists here and elsewhere, spread through their Plantations. It was, that their adversaries had so far prevailed in London, as to have New-England extend from St. Croix, or Schoodic River to Maryland; be divided into twelve provinces; and superintended by a general Governor and Council. It stated, that a ship had been prepared to transport the Governor and Council hither; but that by an extraordinary event, she was rendered altogether unfit for sea.

July 8th, Mr. Williams was again summoned before the General Court to answer certain charges. Besides

those, already brought against him, there were such as his maintaining it to be wrong to pray with impenitent persons, though the nearest relations; and to render thanks after sacrament or common meals. The church here were also called to an account for receiving him as their teacher, when other churches were about to deal with him for his errors. These subjects were much debated. The opinions of Mr. Williams were disallowed as both erroneous and detrimental. The conduct of the church in receiving him, was construed as a contempt of the Colonial authorities. He and his people were notified either to make satisfaction, or look for punishment by the next General Court. He was also informed, that unless he refrained from delivering and retaining his offensive opinions, he would be removed out of Massachusetts. The inhabitants here petitioned the same Court for land at Marblehead Neck, which they claimed as theirs. They were not heard, because they had neglected to consult the Government about the reception of Mr. Williams.

12th, the people here being much excited, because their late petition to the General Court was rejected, took up the matter according to ecclesiastical usage. Their church wrote to other churches, exhorting them to admonish the magistrates and deputies, who belonged to them, and who had refused to comply with the request of Salem for its own land.

Aug. 15th, a tremendous storm was experienced. It began early in the morning and extended to the East and South of Massachusetts. It was accompanied with an abundance of rain. It injured houses, beat down corn, destroyed many trees, and drove vessels from their anchorage. It raised the tide to an alarming height. The wind was from N. E. and N. W. During this tempest a bark of Mr. Allerton, having twenty three persons on board, was cast away at Cape Ann. They were all lost, except two, Mr. Thatcher and wife.

They were bound from Newbury to Marblehead. The object of their voyage was to settle and form a church there under the Rev. John Avery. This person was loth to quit his residence at Newbury ; but influenced by the advice of his brethren in the ministry and of the magistrates, he consented to leave. The reason these assigned for his removal was, that Marbleharbour was inhabited by people, engaged in the fishery, who were without any convenient privileges of worship, and, through such a deficiency, were becoming dissolute in their morals. Influenced by such motives, Mr. Avery denied his own wishes, commenced his passage, and perished with all his family, consisting of a wife and eight children. Mr. Thatcher and wife got to an Island under circumstances of remarkable preservation. The place where these two were saved, was named Thatcher's Woe, and the rock where the vessel was lost, was called Avery's Fall. These names continue now, and are familiar to our seamen.

16th, Mr. Williams, unable from sickness to address his church verbally, wrote them a letter to the purport, that he was constrained to refuse communication with churches in the Bay, and that he must do the same as to them, unless they united with him in such a refusal. This church, however, did not deem agreement with him on this subject to be either proper or expedient. No doubt Mr. Williams' proposal to them arose from the fact, that the churches of the Bay, to which they had forwarded letters, as to dealing with members of the General Court for refusing the petition of Salem, had declined to take on themselves so responsible a service.

Sept. 2d, the General Court sits at Newton, as it had twice before. Among its Deputies were John Woodbury and William Trask, from Salem. Mr. Endicott was called to answer for the part he had taken in the letters missive from the church, respecting the discipline

of those, who denied the petition for land at Marblehead. He contended that the step, which had been taken for such a purpose, was regular and just. His defence displeased the Court. They "voted by general erection of hands, that Mr. Endicott be committed for his contempt in protesting against the proceedings of the Court." When, however, he made some acknowledgement, they dismissed him. They were no less disaffected with the deputies from this town. They even forbid them to take their seats as members of their body. They ordered them to return to their freemen and bring satisfaction for the letters sent out by their church, "wherein they have exceedingly reproached and vilified the magistrates and deputies of the General Court, or else the arguments of those that will defend the same with subscription of their names." They also voted, that should a majority of the Salem freemen disclaim those letters, they should continue to send deputies to their assembly. They passed the following resolution:—"Whereas Mr. Roger Williams, one of the elders of the church in Salem, hath broached and divulged divers new and dangerous opinions against the authority of the magistrates; as also writ letters of defamation, both of the magistrates and churches here, and that before any conviction, and yet maintaineth the same without any retraction; it is therefore ordered, that the said Mr. Williams shall depart out of this jurisdiction within six weeks now next ensuing; which, if he neglect to perform, it shall be lawful for the Governor and two of the Magistrates to send him to some place out of this jurisdiction, not to return any more without license from the Court." They gave the Ruling Elder the following notice:—"Mr. Samuel Sharp is enjoined to appear at the next particular Court, to answer for the letter that came from the church at Salem, as also to bring the names of those that will justify the same, or else to acknowledge his offence under his

own hand for his own particular." Surely the inhabitants of Salem had reason to fear, lest the vial of legislative wrath would be poured on them to the ruin of their most respectable townsmen. Their affliction was great. If they did not sufficiently consult the General Court about the reception of Mr. Williams, still the Court should have treated their petition with greater respect and magnanimity.

Though the Court refused to let Capt. Trask appear as a deputy from this place, yet they commissioned him to pursue a company of servants who had stolen a boat and other things, and fled to the Eastward. He surprised them at Piscataqua and brought them to Boston. They were fined and severely whipped for their conduct.

The Court required this and other towns to send in money or workmen, for three days labour for each man, who had resided in the country a year, with the exception of magistrates and schoolmasters, to fortify the Castle in Boston harbour. ✓

The Court repealed the acts, relative to wages and prices of goods. They ordered a levy of £200. The portion of Salem was £16. This was the sixth highest of thirteen towns. The Court required that the deputies should be elected by paper votes as the Governor had been. They order that none but freemen shall be legal voters in questions of authority. ✓

The Rev. Mr. Burdet was made a freeman. He had served in the ministry at Dover, in England. But disapproving the Episcopal ceremonies, as then corrupted, he came over to America. He was accounted an able scholar and a popular preacher. He became a member of the church here, and preached for them more than a year. Not falling in with their mode of discipline, he left for Piscataqua. Some over two years after his departure, Gov. Winthrop wrote to him and others, as being too favourable to the persons who had been excluded from Massachusetts. He returned an

answer, which appears not to have been sufficiently respectful.

Oct. 6th, the Rev. Hugh Peters arrives in this country with Rev. Messrs. Wilson, Shepard, Jones, and other clergymen. He soon commenced his Gospel labours both at Boston and Salem. His first sermon here was preached at Enon, now Wenham, but then a part of Salem. The place of his preaching was on a hill, which overlooked a spacious pond. His text was strikingly suited to the localities of the situation. It was—"At Enon, near to Salim because there was much water there."

October, the General Court, accompanied by the ministers of the Colony, called again on Mr. Williams to answer for the letters sent to the churches, and for the one, sent to his own church. He continued to approve the contents of them. The Court offered him a month to prepare for his defence ; but he chose to speak on the spot. They appointed Mr. Hooker, his former friend in England, to discuss the opinions, which he held and maintained. After considerable debate on them, Mr. Williams was unwilling to retract any of his positions. The next morning he was sentenced to be banished from Massachusetts in six weeks. All the ministers, but one, concurred in this decision. At the time of this afflictive sentence, Mr. Williams was dealt with by his own church because he declined communion with them, since they were unwilling to follow his advice, in respect to withdrawing fellowship from churches of the Bay. His church, perceiving that he had gone further than they could, disapproved his opinions, and regretted the part which they had acted in sending out letters, requesting the magistrates and deputies to be disciplined.

Nov. 26th, Mr. Peters exerts his influence both in Old and New-England, to raise a fund for increasing the encouragement of the Fishery, by collecting stores

for this business, at a fair price. He perceived that such an employment had been much lessened by the exorbitant sums, which had been demanded for its supplies. About the same date, a small vessel bound hither with goods of £100 worth, was lost, and afterwards discovered in the hands of Indians at Nawset, now a part of Eastham. These Indians belonged to the tribe, from which a Capt. Hunt, many years before had kidnapped twenty, and sold them for slaves in Spain. His cruelty had greatly incensed them against the English. But finding that their neighbours, though of the same complexion with him, ~~was~~ of a kinder disposition, they were careful to preserve the vessel and cargo, and ready to give them up.

1636.

January, the Governor and Assistants met on the case of Mr. Williams. They had allowed him till the Spring, to get ready for leaving their jurisdiction. They had thus lengthened the period of his continuance among them, on condition that he should abstain from uttering the sentiments, which they had condemned. But being informed, that he did deliver them to people in his own house, and that he had persuaded twenty persons to form a settlement with him about Narraganset Bay; and moreover, being apprehensive, that, if residing in the country, he would exert an influence against Massachusetts, they determined to have him transported in a ship for England. Thus decided, they immediately sent a warrant to apprehend him. His friends waited on them, stating that for him to obey their summons would endanger his life. But resolved to prevent his purpose of remaining in New-England, they commissioned Capt. Underhill to go with a pinnace, take and put him on board of a vessel at Nantasket. When the Captain came to Mr. Williams' house, he found, that he and four friends had already been gone three days.

Thus was Mr. Williams compelled to forsake the residence, where he had fondly hoped to live and die in peace. He had expected, that, when separated from those in England, whose views were essentially opposed to his, and settled with the Colonists, whose opinions mainly agreed with his, there would be little to disturb individual and general harmony. But he found himself sadly disappointed. He perceived, as has often been the fact, that zealous contention is not a sure token of disagreement in the *great* truths of the Gospel. He was indeed constrained to think—"Behold how great a matter a little fire kindleth." It must be acknowledged, that, in reference to him, as well as his opponents, there was a mutual engagedness in carrying their points, which seems to have been untempered with due forbearance. That he was too strenuous in supporting his opinions at the expense of breaking communion with others, who were indisposed to go the whole way with him, few will deny. On the other hand, that his opponents treated him with too great severity, most will acknowledge. True, the circumstance, that they, so far as composing the Rulers of Massachusetts, felt themselves obligated by their oath to prevent any serious infringement on the boundaries of Church and State, as they had described them, should be a weight in mitigating their conduct towards him. And, also, his benevolence towards them, while firmly maintaining his persuasions against their orders, should palliate his declining to comply with their authority.—Both they and he tried an experiment, as to enforcing their sentiments, which time and necessity taught them was better to exist in imagination than practice. He came off from the contest with greater reproach than he would, had not numbers and power been on their side.

As to the course of his flight, he received private advice from Mr. Winthrop, then succeeded, as Governor, by Mr. John Haynes. He was grateful for such kind-



ness. It was like a star in his cloudy prospect. He complied with its suggestion. He settled first at Seekhounk, now Rehoboth. For fourteen weeks he was greatly distressed, as appears from his remark, "in a bitter winter season, not knowing what bread or bed did mean."—He was soon informed by Mr. Winslow, Governor of Plymouth, that Seekhounk was within his jurisdiction, and that it would be well for him to remove. A special reason, assigned by Mr. Winslow for such a suggestion, was, that if he should countenance his residence within the Plymouth lines, it would wear the appearance of endeavouring to nullify the sentence of Massachusetts against him. Mr. Williams accordingly sought another settlement. He went to Mooshausick. He says, in reference to this spot, "having in a sense of God's merciful Providence unto me in my distress, called the place Providence, I desired it might be for a shelter for persons distressed for conscience."

The territory occupied by him, was granted to him by Miantonomo and Canonicus, two Narraganset chiefs, who remained his constant friends. He came into possession of it so as to comply with the opinion, for which he had contended while in Massachusetts. But even with a fair claim to it, he was not free from dread, lest it should be wrested from him. It was falsely claimed by a Sachem in league with the Plymouth Colony. But Gov. Bradford, to whom the claim was referred, generously declared, that let the land be whose it might, Mr. Williams should be no more disturbed. Mr. Williams, thus befriended, was desirous for a church on his own principles. He and his first followers soon formed themselves into such a state. They were shortly joined by others, who were disaffected with the Massachusetts authorities. His church appears to have been Congregational at first; but afterwards most of its members became Baptists. He and his associates required, as a regulation of their civil polity, that all emigrants to their

territory, should make a solemn promise to obey the laws for public good. He was careful to be consistent with his previous declarations, by not demanding of them any oath.

However banished from the Colonies, Mr. Williams suffered no private griefs to withhold him from aiming at their general welfare. In the Pequod war of 1637, he was exceedingly serviceable to their cause. At the earnest request of Massachusetts, he went among the bordering Indians, and succeeded in preventing an alliance, which the Pequods were endeavouring to make with the Mohegans and Narragansets, for the extermination of the English. He brought these two tribes to be friends instead of foes to the Colonists. Such an enterprise he accomplished at the cost of arduous journeys, expense and perils. When the Colonial forces, under General Stoughton, marched upon the Pequods, he entertained him and his officers, and used means for the accommodation of his soldiers. For this detachment, he acted as an interpreter, and transferred letters to and from them for promoting their expedition. Conduct of so benevolent and magnanimous a cast, was not entirely lost on a portion of the principal men, who had voted for his exclusion from Massachusetts. It led Gov. Winthrop and some of the Assistants to propose, that the act of banishment against him should be remitted, and that he should receive some special reward for his ready kindness. But so just and grateful an expression of obligation to him, was opposed by a majority, and prevented from being declared by the mouth of public authority. The beneficence of Mr. Williams was open to every pressing call. Mr. Codrington and others, who defended the principles of Mrs. Hutchinson, were desirous to form a settlement in his neighbourhood. He advised them to select Aquiday, now Rhode Island. He obtained this territory for them of his friend, Miantonomo. They removed to it April

26th, 1638. About this time, Mr. Williams was joined by some of his former supporters from Salem. In March 1639, Mr. Williams professed himself to be a Baptist, and was immersed by a member of his church, Mr. Holliman. Having this rite performed for himself, he then performed it for ten others.—But he soon came to the conclusion, that no baptism was valid, because it had not come down purely from the Apostles. Still the most of his Church continued Baptists; and helped to form the first Baptist Society in Providence. Though he thus differed with them, he agreed with them so far as to deny infant baptism, and the propriety of keeping the ~~eighth~~ <sup>seventh</sup> instead of the seventh day for a Sabbath. His want of fixed views, as to the ordinances of religion, tended to render them disregarded. However thus eccentric for his day, he kept within the circle of general beneficence. He commenced the study of the Indian language, and fitted himself for missionary labours among them. He sought to teach them the improvements of civilization, and particularly the doctrines of the Gospel. For such a labour of love, he visited them once every month. In 1643, he sailed for England to obtain a charter for Providence, Newport and Portsmouth, under one government. In this business he was greatly assisted by his friend, Sir Henry Vane. He obtained a Patent, which provided for freedom in religious opinions and denominations. Such a grant was then considered as a bold experiment, which had never been fairly tested. Mr. Williams arrived with it at Boston the 17th of September 1644. He also brought with him a letter to the Governor and Assistants of Massachusetts, from some of the principal members of Parliament, who were favourable to the Colonies. This letter advised them to treat Mr. Williams with kindness, and remove the obstructions of intercourse between his people and theirs. They, however, declined from coming up fully

to such wishes. They gave him permission to pass through their territory to his own, as a deed of special favour. While the other Colonies were brought under the censure of abetting Uncas, chief of the Mohegans, in murdering the Sachem of the Narragansets, Mr. Williams was careful to keep his Colony unimpeached. Though the Narragansets were compelled to make peace with the Mohegans, August 30th, 1645, by the rulers of those Colonies, yet they never forgave their interference, while they remained friendly to Mr. Williams and his people. In 1647, he served as an Assistant. In 1648, he was diligent in preventing the Indians from commencing hostilities upon the English in his vicinity. His influence this year was extended by being Governor of the Colony. In 1651, he embarked again for England, as agent for the Providence Plantations. One object of his business was to obtain the recall of Mr. Coddington's commission. He tarried there till 1654, and then returned. To his grief he perceived, that contentions prevailed among his former supporters. Their reception of him was dishonourable to themselves, and wounding to his feelings. When, however, they perceived his benevolence towards them, and heard his admonitions, they permitted him to regain his former eminence in their affection. He was soon chosen President, or Governor of the Colony. This office he held three years till 1657. During this period, he addressed the General Court at Boston, November 15th, 1655, on the grievances, to which his people were subject. He complained, that while it refused them passports of safety so as to be protected from hostile savages, it granted them to all others, even strangers and Indians. He stated that the most he asked, was equal rights and mutual kindness. In the same year, he began to be tried with the appearance and sentiments of the Friends. Experience now taught him, that there were bounds of order to be observed by all sects, and

he was constrained to maintain, that the Friends surpassed them. Such disapprobation brought upon him the severest reproaches of some among them. They charged him with gross inconsistency for having professed free toleration to every denomination, and yet set himself against them.

May 12th, 1656, as President of his Colony, he was invited to visit Boston and settle the complaints, he had justly alleged against Massachusetts. He succeeded to his satisfaction.

April, 1671, he and a Mr. Brown became hostages to King Philip's subjects, to answer for the safety of this Chief, while he held a consultation with Commissioners from Plymouth and Massachusetts. Such readiness to serve his countrymen, who still held him under the bans of banishment, was the means of preventing a war four years longer.

In July, 1672, he drew up fourteen 'propositions on the opinions of the Friends, and forwarded them to George Fox, then in Rhode Island. But Mr. Fox sailed for Europe and did not answer them. Mr. Williams had met with this person to confer on their difference in religious principles. But as one and another of the assembly with them, supposed themselves moved to sing, or pray, or exhort, he could not proceed with regularity and satisfaction. It was on this account, that he wrote to Mr Fox. Though he did not have an opportunity to argue with him, yet he met other eminent preachers of the Friends, and held a public dispute with them three days at Newport, and one at Providence.

In 1675, his feelings were tried by the ascendancy of the Friends, who had gotten the government of the Colony into their hands. He saw that they failed to comply with their doctrine of non-resistance in reference to the Indians; and that they resorted to the usual military mode of defence against them. The retorts of



inconsistency, which part of them had made on him, now reacted on themselves. He perceived by them, as well as himself, that some speculations were easy in words, but hard in practice. Tradition relates, that when a body of Indians had come against Providence in 1676, Mr. Williams resolved to visit and strive to pacify them. Accordingly he took his staff and went towards them. Some old Indians recognized and solicited him to return, lest the young warriors, unacquainted with his person, should injure and kill him. He came back to his townsmen, disappointed that he could not aid them on so trying an occasion.

January 15th, 1680, he was selected as a magistrate to assist the public with his long tried experience. He declined the trust on account of his advanced age. Still he wrote them excellent advice on the absolute need of the governments being punctually supported by its subjects. The opposite to this he perceived to be a prevailing evil of many, who cherished the ruinous persuasion, that true freedom was a surrender of all public taxes, was to do what they would, and not what they ought.

January 16th, 1683, was the last public act of Roger Williams. It was the adjustment of a long controversy about Pawtuxet lands, in which he was concerned as a proprietor. In this, as well as in other instances of the kind, he manifested more regard for the general interest than for his own. Soon after this, he died, in the eighty fourth year of his age, and was buried with demonstrations of public respect.

Thus departed a man, who was ardent in pursuing the object of what he deemed right, whether over plains or mountains, through flowers or thorns. There was a noble fortitude, exhibited in his actions, which showed that he was formed for perilous scenes. His talents and attainments were of a high order. His views of civil policy were uncommonly liberal. A sorrowful

lesson had taught him, that it was precious to enjoy equal, social rights, whatever might be the difference of religious opinions. Though charged with not fully complying with that lesson, when interfering with his individual impressions, yet he did practise it more than any other legislator before his day. He found difficulties attending such policy; and that it needed limits, beyond which no subject should pass. He perceived, to his sorrow, that however pleasant the theory might be, which contends, that the support of government, schools, and the Gospel should depend entirely on voluntary contributions, it was most dreadful in experiment, because public virtue was not sufficiently elevated to give it full effect. How far the limits, which he saw to be needed, should exactly go so as to infringe on none of the community, neither he nor any other man, has ever been able to demonstrate in example. Such a desideratum in politics and religion will never be manifested, until the universal renovation of human nature.

The religious opinions of Mr. Williams were connected with singularities, which cost him and others more suffering, than they ought. It is to be feared, that some of them tended more to break down the barriers of order, knowledge, and piety, than build them up. He, however, would have been one of the last persons to have held them, had he at first discerned them to have such a tendency. Though he differed from his friends in moral speculations, he treated them with respect and affection. Though he was undisguised and firm in arguing against their persuasions, yet he discovered towards them no degrading spirit of revenge. True, most of the writers in New-England, were unfriendly to his sentiments, and allowed themselves to speak very diminutively of his merits. But they beheld him through a perspective of dislike for his tenets, and thought him destitute of comeliness. Could they now examine him through a perspective, corrected by the

hand of reflection and experience, they would perceive many desirable traits in his character. Had he been able to stand his ground against the prostrating arm of civil authority, they would have handed down his name with far less detraction. In the main doctrines of Revelation, he appears to have been correct, and to have inculcated them for the improvement of multitudes. As a man he was open hearted, beloved and esteemed by many of his acquaintance. His benevolence flowed to all around him. The property he had, was always ready for the relief of public or private misery. He scorned to have his soul bound to the earth with the heavy shackles of covetousness. No man who ever set foot in America, more adorned the Gospel precept of forgiveness to enemies, than Roger Williams. The Colonies, which closed on him the avenues of friendly and uninterrupted intercourse, were frequently spared, through his toils from many a suffering, intended to have been inflicted on them by enraged savages. He often claimed to be put on an equal footing with them and was as often denied. True there were some noble exceptions of persons among them, who would have gladly broken the restrictions upon him, and granted him the restoration of his former privileges. But there were more to prevent the accomplishment of their wish. Still he did not turn away from the Colonies, and assume the attitude of an opponent. He continued to do them good, though they delayed to render him an equitable return. The reason assigned by them for keeping in force the sentence of his exile, was that if they should remove the censure against him, while he maintained his opinions, disorder and impiety would increasingly prevail in their territories. This reason, though deserving weight, was hardly sufficient to atone for their severity towards him. As a ruler, Mr. Williams showed himself kind to his subjects. As a husband, he was remarkably affectionate and faithful.



As a father, he was kind and dignified. As a minister, he perseveringly and laboriously sought the good of souls. He was unusually popular in the pulpit, and successful in leading many to the Saviour. His wife, whose name was Mary, came with him from England. She appears to have been a worthy woman, and a consolation to him in his troubles. He had six children.

His publications are various. They are as follow : In 1643, a Key to the Tongue of the New-England Indians. In 1644, a dialogue between truth and peace, which maintained that interference of magistrates in religion, was a bloody tenet. In 1652, an answer to Mr. Cotton on this subject, whose book was called "the bloody tenet washed in the blood of the Lamb." The answer was "the bloody tenet, yet more bloody by Mr. Cotton's endeavour to wash it white in the blood of the Lamb." To this reply was added a letter to his former friend, Mr. Endicott. In the same year, the "hireling ministry, none of Christ's, or a discourse on the propagation of the Gospel of Christ Jesus ; experiments of spiritual life and health, and their preservatives." In 1672, a treatise against the principles of the Friends, and particularly against Fox and Burrows, styled "George Fox digged out of his burrows." This called forth a reply from Mr. Fox, entitled "A New-England fire brand quenched." Besides such works of Mr. Williams, some valuable letters of his have been published.

35/6 January, Mr. Peters visited different towns of the Colony, to excite a spirit of enterprise in the Fishery. Thus he continued his exertions for an important branch of business, not only in this country, but also in England.

The Church at Saugus were anxious to obtain Mr. Peters for their pastor. In order to effect their wishes, a majority of them had granted a dismission to Mr. Batchelor and six or seven of their brethren. They

did this on condition, that these should leave the place. But as Mr. Batchelor and his associates formed a new church, their previous difficulties broke out afresh. The Magistrates took up the subject, and prevailed on Mr. Batchelor to agree, that he would move in three months. But however the ground was about to be cleared for Mr. Peters, he preferred a settlement at Salem.

18th, Messrs. Peters and Vane procured a meeting of the principal laymen and elders of the Colony at Boston. The object of it was to suppress a factious spirit, which seemed to prevail among the people. Some cleaved to Mr. Winthrop and others to Mr. Dudley, and thus composed two parties. These gentlemen gave the assembly to understand, that they had settled the differences, which may have subsisted between them. They also requested that none would show any partiality for either of them at the expense of public harmony. At the same time arrangements were made to rectify supposed faults in the past administration of the Colonial affairs.

Feb. 1st, the Military Commissioners, appointed the last General Court, to order colours for the companies here and elsewhere, did so by leaving out the cross, about which there had been much commotion. On the ensigns of Castle Island, they put the King's arms instead of the cross.

11th, the custom here of granting a house lot and ten acres of land, for the encouragement of worthy settlers, was found difficult and revoked. 1

25th, a general fast was appointed by suggestion of ministers and ruling elders, on account of difficulties in the Church here and at Saugus, and a scarcity of corn. 2

March, potatoes were so scarce as to sell for 2d. sterl. per lb.

3d, at the session of the General Court, William Trask, Thomas Scruggs, and probably Townsend Bishop, took their seats from Salem. The Court al-

lowed, that Marblehead Neck was the property of this town. That was the land which had been a source of abundant difficulty between the Colonial Authorities and Salem. It was a principal means of hastening Mr. Williams' expulsion. Our fathers must have experienced a satisfaction in having their right acknowledged, and perceiving the triumph of equity over prejudice. Of a £300 rate Salem was assessed £24, and stood the seventh. It was agreed that the Court for electing magistrates, should be held in Boston, and that Salem, Ipswich, Newbury, Saugus, Weymouth and Hingham should have liberty to retain at home, on such an occasion, as many freemen, as the safety of such towns required; and that those so detained, as a guard, should send their votes by proxy. It will be remembered, that the Spring before, all the freemen of the Colony had been required to collect in one place, and give their votes for magistrates. The alteration, made in this manner of election, was proposed, not only on account of general safety, but also for the scarcity of provisions where the freemen assembled, and the great inconvenience of their being accommodated with food. While the Court took steps for securing the towns mentioned, they also required that nearer towns should individually send to their place of session, ten men, completely armed. Precautions of this kind ~~was~~ taken because of apprehended hostilities from the Indians. It was enacted, that no person here or elsewhere, who had purchased provision out of trading vessels, should dispose of it beyond the limits of Massachusetts.

A change in the government, highly interesting to this and other Plantations, was proposed. It was that part of the magistrates should hold their office for life. The proposition was, that, in May next, the General Court "shall elect a certain number of magistrates *for the term of their lives*, as a standing Council not to be removed but upon conviction of crime, insufficiency, or

for some other weighty cause. The Governor for the time being to be always President of this Council, and to have such further power out of Court, as the General Court shall from time to time endue them withal." This subject had been much discussed, and was a prominent topic of the day.—Rev. Mr. Cotton had been much in favour of it, and had highly recommended it in a letter to Lord Say. It appears to have been designed for the purpose of attracting some principal men from England, whose views were more aristocratic, than the Colonial administration had countenanced. Such policy would find no quarter now, where it was once advocated. To gratify individual ambition, at the hazard of impairing public liberty, though in the hope of temporary advantage, was not then, and never can be either safe or equitable. The contemplated experiment, however, was tried. Messrs. Winthrop, Dudley and Vane were chosen as the perpetual council. This branch of government soon became unpopular, and in three years ceased to exist.

At the same Court restraints upon tavern charges were repealed. Each miller here and elsewhere was required to take no more than 1-16th of the corn, which he should grind. Quarterly Courts were instituted. A part of them were to be held at Salem in connexion with Säugus. They were to consist of one Magistrate and three or four Assistants, chosen out of the freemen. This and every town were empowered to regulate their own affairs so as not to interfere with the Colonial laws. Their Representatives were ordered to attend only two sessions of the General Court in a year. This alteration was not immediately carried into effect.

April, the troubles concerning Mr. Williams' opinions, still continued in the First Church. Three men and eight women of their number, contended, as he had, that it was wrong for any one to worship in the assem-

blies of England. They asserted, that the Episcopal Church was upon a wrong foundation ; and that, consequently, none should commune with its members. Two of the brethren here were deputed to go with a letter to the elders of other churches, for advice on three questions. Whether to satisfy Mr. Williams' friends, the others should refuse to hear preaching in English churches. Whether if the dissatisfied did not become peaceable, they might be regularly dismissed. Or if they should withdraw, whether they should be excommunicated. The two first questions were answered negatively. The last was answered affirmatively with the advice, that if the dissatisfied would walk orderly, their particular opinions should be tolerated.

1636

May 3d, at a town meeting the question was considered as to dividing Marblehead Neck into lots. A portion of this land appears, from Mr. Endicott's argument on the occasion, to have been reserved *for the erection of a College*. In order that this might be done, a motion was made, that John Humphrey, who was interested in the land, should have another lot, beyond Forest River, as an equivalent. Such an arrangement for the promotion of literature, though not brought to pass, is creditable to the extended and correct views of our fathers, and to their wish for the welfare of posterity.

May 25th, this town sent, as their Deputies to General Court, William Trask, and, probably, Townsend Bishop.

June 27th, the first Quarterly Court was held in Salem. It was to have been composed of Mr. Endicott, Magistrate, and Nathaniel Turner, Townsend Bishop, and Thomas Scruggs, as Assistants. The first person was absent. The others took their oath of office, and proceeded to business. The principal case they had, was fining Thomas Stanley, constable of Saugus, for absence from Court.

July 4th, the same Court sat, and ordered the oak wood, which was for sale, to be brought from beyond the North and South Rivers, and deposited in appointed landing places, to be viewed by five surveyors. They also ordered, that the watchmen, who had been warned, should meet a half hour after sunset to receive instructions, and not return home in the morning without particular leave.

9th, this town were favoured with a visit from the new Governor, Sir Henry Vane. He had been educated at Oxford. He had travelled through Geneva, and there become a non-conformist. For this the Bishop of London was displeased with him. The consequence was his coming to this country the last year. Though but twenty-four years old, yet he was exceedingly popular. But taking a part in Mrs. Hutchinson's controversy, and advocating her doctrines, he lost his election as Governor, the next year. He soon returned to England, and sided with the Parliament against the King, though he was opposed to Cromwell's usurpation. While there he was friendly to the Colonists and did them several kindnesses. On the accession of Charles II to the throne, he was tried for high treason, and beheaded June 14th, 1662, aged 50 years.

Aug. 8th, John Higginson of this place, Lieut. Edward Gibbons of Boston, and Cutshamekin, Sagamore of Massachusetts, were commissioned to wait on Canonicus, a chief of the Narragansets, concerning the murder of John Oldham, while on a trading voyage at Block Island. They were kindly received by Canonicus. He gave them all the information, and offered the Colony all the prudent assistance in his power. The consequence of this and other atrocious murders was a declaration of war against the Pequods.

25th, ninety volunteers engaged to go against the Pequods for no other compensation than provisions. They were divided into four companies ; one of which

was commanded by Ensign Davenport of this place. The whole body were under Mr Endicott. They arrived to the enemy's territory. They had several skirmishes, but no decisive battle. They destroyed considerable corn, and many wigwams of the Indians. They returned about the 14th of September. They lost two killed, and had some wounded. The Pequods are stated to have had thirteen killed and forty wounded. All appeared to be done by the commander and men, which prudence and courage could do for accomplishing the object of their expedition. Then, as at all other times, when the public expectation of brilliant success is not realized, unfavourable suspicions and reflections were expressed.

About this time, some enterprising inhabitants here united and built a vessel of 120 tons at Marbleharbour. She was called the Desire. Her commander was William Pierce, a noted and respectable mariner.

September 8th, this town sent for their Deputies to General Court, Wm. Trask, Thomas Scruggs, and probably Townsend Bishop. It was assessed its proportion of £1200, a sum larger than usual. The amount was so great, as it included £200, which were paid for the expedition to the Pequod country and for the fortifications. The Court adopted a means to lessen the burden of taxes, by ordering that the trade of beaver and wampom should be let to the highest bidders, and that others should be restrained from trafficking in those articles.

The latter part of September, a water mill was erected in this town. Though now an occurrence hardly noticed, then it was generally observed. Such a mill was not probably the first one. For seven years before, the Company in England requested Mr. Endicott, for the sake of Mr. White, to encourage Francis Webb in setting up a saw-mill.

October, a house here of Mr. Jackson, with goods to a considerable amount, was consumed by fire. This was a trial to the inhabitants, who needed more than they had to render themselves comfortable.

A controversy now began, which threatened the peace and prosperity of the whole Colony. It took its rise from Mrs. Ann Hutchinson, who came, this year, from Lincolnshire in England to Boston. She maintained, that the people of God were personally united with the Holy Ghost; that the Scriptural injunction for mankind to work out their salvation, applied only to those, who were under a Covenant of works; that Sanctification was no evidence of Justification; and that she herself was endued with a spirit of prophecy. The principal persons of Massachusetts became involved in the agitation of these questions. Mr. Peters was actively engaged in opposition to them. The result was very unfavourable to Mrs. Hutchinson and her friends. The Theological names of parties then were Legalists and Antinomians. The former term was applied to her opponents, and the latter to her advocates. The advancement of her principles, produced the year following, the first Synod, which sat in the country. After this Synod an act of banishment was passed against her at the Court, which began its session the 2d of November. The sentence, however, was delayed in its execution, on account of the unsuitable season for her removal to a new abode. When the weather was fit, she was ordered to depart. She accompanied her husband to Rhode Island, where he died a respectable and useful man. In 1642, she settled among the Dutch. But in about a year, she and sixteen persons of her family were killed, and a daughter of hers was carried away captive by the Indians. Thus sadly terminated her sojourn in the land, where she had hoped to find rest.



November, cattle continued high here and in other parts of the Colony. Good cows were from £25 to £30 each, and a pair of oxen were £40 sterling.

December 7th, at the General Court, Mr. Endicott was one of the magistrates as usual, and Wm. Hathorne, Wm. Trask, and Thomas Scruggs as Deputies, from this place. It was ordered that a guard be kept in this as well as other towns at suitable places; and, also, a ward to be kept on the Lord's day. No person was to travel without arms where the houses were scarce. Every town was required to provide a watch house before the last of July. Military officers were selected. Those designated for Salem were William Trask, Captain, Richard Davenport, Lieutenant, and Thomas Beade, Ensign. The Court took such steps to prevent the people from being surprised by the Indians.

December 21st, Mr. Peters having preached to great acceptance with the Congregation, here, became their pastor. No preacher's influence or labours in the Colony, were now greater than his. He was even more popular than Mr. Cotton, owing in some degree to his being of the Legalists, and the latter of the Antinomians.

26th, for the accommodation of travellers, a Ferry was established between the Neck and Cape Ann.

## ANNALS OF SALEM.



IN commencing this Number, there may be propriety in the remark, that no reasonable exertions have been spared to have it correct in point of facts. Still the writer expects, that mistakes will be discovered in the course of its contents. Even the occurrences of our day have their different judges and representations. Not less, certainly, should they be looked for, when the attention turns back on the speculations, events, and transactions of other ages. Whoever shall perceive errors in the following pages, or a deficiency of pertinent information, with which they are acquainted, will confer a favour on the writer by letting him know.

When noting the proceedings of the General and Assistant Courts, he has been able, for the most part, only to give the date when their sessions began. Hence, various acts of theirs appear as of the same day, when, in truth, they are of some other successive days. As there was no certainty, when they were passed, it was thought best to locate them as they are.

It has been deemed expedient to use some abbreviations, in regard to references. T. R. stand for Town Records of Salem; and 1st Ch. R. for the first Church Records of Salem. When these abbreviations apply to other places, the names of these places are prefixed. Qt. Ct. R. indicate the Records of the Quarterly Court, held in Salem; Col. R., the Colony Records; Haz. Coll., Hazard's Collections; Hutch., Hutchinson's History of Mass.; Win., Winthrop's Journal; Sav., Savage's notes and collection of letters as contained in Winthrop.—When different dates and subjects appear without a marginal reference, they are to be understood as belonging to the last mentioned, excepting when an authority is otherwise referred to.



1637.

Jan. 2d, for the encouragement of fishermen at Marblehead, Salem granted them a tract of land. 16th, the sale and transportation of boards and timber were restricted by the town.\* 19th, a Fast was observed.

\* Town Records.

It was appointed Dec. 7th.† The reasons for it were as follow : The distressed state of the Protestants in Germany, whose allies had been defeated by the Imperialists—The sufferings of the clergymen in England, who had refused to read the book of sports, which were to be practised on the Sabbath, as ordered by the Star Chamber ; and who declined to conform with the religious ceremonies, introduced by Bishop Laud, and which they considered as forms of Popery—The troubles occasioned by Indians, and dissensions in some churches of the Colony.‡

23d, Samuel Sharp, ruling Elder, was allowed 300 acres of land. 27th, the wood and timber of the common lands by Darbie (now Derby) fort side, were to be reserved for the use of the town. February 7th, John Pickering was admitted to the privileges of an inhabitant. 17th, Auditors of the Treasurer's accounts were appointed. Mr. William Hathorne had a grant of 200 acres of land where he had built, on condition, that he be regularly dismissed from Dorchester church to the one here.§ The person here mentioned had been a deputy at one session of the General Court at Newton nearly two years before. He was about to take a distinguished part in Colonial affairs. Thomas Goldthwait was allowed ten acres of land on the Neck, if he should have a suitable recommendation to the church. Such facts as these, which seem to have been common, show that our ancestors granted land to new settlers, and were exact as to their qualifications of character.

April 6th, at an ordination in Concord the church here was represented. One of its delegates proposed a question, which led to the adoption of the following opinions. Such as were clergymen in England by the call of their people, were to be respected as having there legally sustained the office of ministers. But for

† Col. R.

‡ Neal's Puritans.

§ T. R.

accepting the call of the Bishop, they ought to humble themselves and repent. Having come to this country, they should not consider themselves regular ministers until called by another church. When thus elected they were to be accounted as ministers, even before ordination.\* These conclusions show, that the Churches of the Colony were much opposed to the persecutions of the Puritans in England, under the corruptions of Episcopacy, and that they were zealously resolved to prevent the introduction of such an establishment upon their shores.

April 10th, the General Court commences.† William Trask, Richard Davenport, and Robert Moulton were deputies. Mr. Endicott was chosen a Magistrate, and was thus continued till 1641, when he became Deputy Governor. The Court issue an order, in compliance with an application from Connecticut, for raising 160 men, as the proportion of Massachusetts against the Pequods.‡ This number was some enlarged. The quota of Salem, including its district of Marblehead, were 28. Capt. Trask and Lieut. Davenport were among the officers of the whole body, commanded in chief by Capt. Stoughton. Before they marched, the enemy had been severely defeated, on the 27th of May, by the Colonists of Connecticut and friendly Indians, led on by the heroic Mason. They pressed forward to the scene of warfare. They were informed, that a remnant of the Pequods had fled to a large swamp, within the bounds of Fairfield. On the 15th of July, they invested the place of their retreat on every side. A small division under Lieut. Davenport, of this town, bravely entered the swamp, with the expectation of being supported, and commenced an attack, but were repulsed. He stated to Increase Mather, when recounting the events of this action, that with two or three Englishmen, he engaged 30 Indians; had seventeen arrows

\* Win.

† Col. R.

‡ Hubbard—Heyt.

shot into his "coat of mail," and only one wounded him where he was not defended. He further related to him, that he rescued a soldier from two of the enemy, who were carrying him away as a captive on their shoulders ; and that, as the Pequods observed the Colonists did not slay the captured squaws, some of their large boys, when in danger of being taken, would cry out, "I squaw, I squaw,"—thereby hoping to be saved. As to the enemy, the English proposed to them terms of surrender. They were accepted by about 100 aged men, women and children, principally belonging to the adjacent country. The Pequods determined to cut through the Colonists or perish. When night approached, the Colonists opened a narrow passage into the swamp, and kept up a scattering fire till morning. At day-break they were enveloped with a dense fog. The Pequods took advantage of this, and made a fierce attack at one point upon their assailants. They succeeded in breaking the line of the English, and 60 or 70 of them escaped ; 20 of them were slain, and 180 taken prisoners. (Sassacus,) their brave chief, with a few of his faithful adherents, fled to the Mohawks. These, at the solicitation of the Narragansets, perfidiously slew the most of them, and sent his scalp to Connecticut. His territory became the possession of the English, and the survivors of his people their tributaries. It appears that he foresaw the dissolution of the Aborigines, by the continuance of the Colonists in the country, and he therefore determined to strive for their expulsion, or perish in the attempt. The latter was his portion. The courage, hardships, and self-devotedness, with which he conducted his fatal enterprise, showed, that however his policy was imprudent, his patriotism was of high order. His motives, prowess and deeds among any nation, favored with poets and historians, would have come down to us in strains of eloquence, enough to excite emotions of admiration. Fame is not the pe-

culiar right of those, to whom it has been attributed. Its laurels might have justly encircled the brows of multitudes more, which for the want of some recording hand, have been suffered to wither and die.

The soldiers of this and other towns, engaged in the expedition against the Pequods, returned the 26th of August. They had none slain. Some of them were wounded. Fire arms gave them great superiority over the Indians. When these approached near enough to do execution with their bows and arrows, they were sure to loose many of their number. A consequence of the Pequods' overthrow was, that the Indians were more fearful of the Colonists, and less disposed to provoke their displeasure.

It was required by thirteen select men, as agents for the town, that the common marsh and meadow lands should be surveyed, and an account of them produced in the course of the week. When this was done the seven men ordered it on the 25th of December, to be divided among the heads of families. Some difficulty occurring, they ordered it to be remeasured the 24th of February following. It contained 157 1-2 acres, according to the divisions. A family of less than four received 1-2 acre; of four and five, 3-4; of six and more, one acre. From the census of the inhabitants on this occasion they were about 900.\* Salem then included, besides its present limits, Danvers, Beverly, Manchester, Wenham, part of Topsfield, and small parts of Lynn and Middleton, and also Marblehead Neck. Marblehead, as mentioned previously, was a distinct Plantation, though not incorporated as a town.

April 17th, it was agreed by the town, that in case Richard Hutchinson "set up ploughing," he should have 20 acres of land added within two years to his previous share. This business seems not to have been generally understood by the planters. There were but thirty-seven ploughs at this date in all Massachusetts.†

\* Town Records.

† Graham.

May 17th, General Court sits at Newton. William Trask, Richard Davenport and Edmund Batter were deputies.\* At this session there were transactions, which excited deep feeling through the Colony. Two parties, Legalists and Antinomians, were arrayed against each other. They had a warm contest in the selection of rulers. The former were likely to be defeated by the late permission for freemen, at a distance, to send in their votes by proxy. The latter were most numerous near Newton, and especially in Boston, where their leader, Mrs. Hutchinson, had resided and defended her doctrines. They were on the spot to plan and prosecute measures for electing members of the Legislature favourable to their sentiments. But notwithstanding such an advantage, they were foiled, and the Legalists prevailed. Gov. Vane, the principal supporter of the Antinomians, lost his office. Mr. Winthrop succeeded him, and was thus restored to his previous station. Mr. Endicott, the constant friend of Mr. Winthrop, was increasingly restored to public favour, and was added to the standing council.—At this session matters were carried to such an extreme, that harsh language and laying hold of each other were resorted to by the most violent.† The electors, on this occasion formed an assembly, like one of our modern town meetings, when party feelings have run so high, as to banish from its proceedings reason, patriotism and decorum.

June 3d, news came from England, unfavourable to the hopes and interests of Massachusetts. It reported, that the King had forbidden the emigration of his subjects to this Colony, unless they should take an oath of allegiance, and comply with the usages of the Episcopal Church.‡ Besides a measure so trying as this to the Colonists, he ordered some of the Magistrates to govern Massachusetts till they had heard from him, because he considered its charter as void. The next month after

\* Col R. † Win. ‡ Win.

such an order, he appointed Sir Ferdinando Gorges, Gov. General of New-England. But he had neither time nor ability to execute his purpose. His difficulties, at home, prevented him from imposing on the Colonies a system of ecclesiastical and political government, less congenial with their habits and wishes, but more so with his own. The increase of his perplexities was a welcome diminution of theirs.\*

June 15th, a day of general thanksgiving was observed for victory over the Pequods. 23d, Gov. Winthrop visited his friends here. He was treated with much respect. He was escorted by armed men as far as Ipswich, and on his return to Saugus. This was done to prevent surprise from the Pequods, who were reported to be lurking in the vicinity.† v 27th, Dorothy Talby, for beating her husband, was sentenced to be bound and chained to a post till her reformation.‡ On Sept. 25th, of the following year, she was ordered to be severely whipped for misdemeanours towards him. She was the unhappy woman who was afterwards hung. An appearance of the insanity, which proved her end, was visible in the two preceeding cases. Had she been taken care of as deranged, rather than judged as a rational person, it would have cast no reproach on the sagacity and charity of those, who had authority over her.

July, Capt. Pierce, of the ship Desire, belonging to this port, was commissioned to transport 15 boys and two women, of the captive Pequods to Bermuda, and sell them as slaves. He was obliged, however, to make for Providence Island. There he disposed of the Indians. He returned from Tortugas the 26th of February following, with a cargo of cotton, tobacco, salt, and *negroes*.§ Such traffic in human beings manifests, that, in this respect, erroneous views of true liberty and righteous government, were lamentably indulged.—

\* Chalmers's Annals. † Win. ‡ Qt. Ct. R. § Win. and Morton.



There is cause of joy, that it would find no countenance from the enlightened spirit of freedom, which now pervades New-England.

August 1st, an assessment of £400 was ordered. Salem was to pay £45 12, and stood second.\* 14th, to accommodate strangers, a license was granted for keeping tavern. The keeper of it was appointed by the Selectmen.† Such an establishment was particularly needed at this time. The reason was, that the General Court had, in obedience to Royal command, enacted on heavy penalties, that no inhabitant should entertain strangers without permission of one among the standing Council, or of two Assistants.

Aug. 30th, the first Synod, assembled in America, began its session at Newton.‡ The Church here in common with other churches, appears to have taken part in its deliberations. The object of it was to consider the opinions of the day, and devise measures to suppress the animosity, which existed between the advocates and opposers of Mrs. Hutchinson. After three weeks they agreed to censure and publish eighty-two prevailing errors.

Sept. 19th, John Williams, for the murder of John Hoddy, near "the great pond," (most likely in Wenham,) was sentenced to be hung.§ He was executed at Boston. The event excited general attention. The more seldom atrocity appears, the more repulsive and striking it is to the mind.

26th, at a session of the General Court, Wm. Hathorne and Thomas Gardner were deputies. Oct. 12th, Thanksgiving was observed for the complete triumph over the Pequods—for favourable news from Protestants in Germany—and for the decisions of the late Synod. In regard to the last, the Legislature expected better effects, than they subsequently realized. Nov. 2d, the General Court sat. Townsend Bishop, Edmund Bat-

\* Col. R. † T. R. ‡ Win. § Col. R.

ter, and Wm. Hathorne were deputies. With others, they seem to have been called to act on the alarming difficulties between the Legalists and Antinomians. As previously related, the Court banished Mrs. Hutchinson. Before her sentence there was a long colloquy between her and members of the Court and witnesses. \* Messrs. Endicott as an assistant, and Peters and Bartholomew as evidences from this town, took parts in the discourse. Mr. Peters testified with other clergymen, that she had declared, that they were not preachers of the true Gospel as Mr. Cotton was. Mr. Bartholomew related that she had visited at his house in London, came passenger in the same ship with him, and had expressed herself as receiving revelations from heaven. The Court disfranchised her brother-in-law, Rev. John Wheelright, and required him to leave Massachusetts in 14 days. The cause of his sentence was similar to that of his sister. Some, who petitioned in his favour, were deprived of their offices and other social privileges. The Court enacted that Antinomians in several towns should be disarmed by the 30th instant, lest they might be induced to commit violence, as the Anabaptists had in Germany. They were to be excepted, who should confess before two Magistrates, that they had erred in subscribing the petition. The persons thus proscribed in Salem, were Thomas Scruggs, Mr. Alfoot, (probably Wm. Alford,) Wm. Cummings, Robert Moulton and Wm. King. They were ordered to leave their arms with Lieut. Danforth.

Besides this business of an aspect so threatening to public tranquillity, the Court attend to other subjects. They require that no "Sack or Strong Water," should be vended at an Ordinary, because it had been abused. They estimated corn at 3s. per bushel for rates. They forbid any person to buy Vension except by leave of his town. They voted Mr. Endicott 40 or 50 acres of

\* Hutch.

meadow wherever such a tract would injure no plantation. They authorize him to retain goods of the Indians near Mr. Hathorne's farm, until they would discover those of them who had shot one of his cows. They made a large assesment of £1000. Salem stood next to Boston and paid £120. Ipswich, though in the previous rate placed the 5th, was now taxed as much as Salem. It must have received a considerable accession of settlers and property in a short time to have thus risen. The Court instructed each military company to train eight times a year. They appointed Mr. Peters of this town an overseer of the College.

With respect to this Institution, their records of October, the preceding year, say: "The Court agree to give £400 toward a School or College; whereof £200 to be paid the next year, and £200 when the work is finished, and the next Court to appoint where and what building." As in the second year after this agreement, the Rev. John Harvard of Charlestown, left the College £779 17 2, the Court called it after his name.

\* At the session of the preceding Court, Mr. John Fisk, lately arrived in the Colony, was made a freeman. He was born in the parish of St. James in the County of Suffolk, England, about 1601. He was educated and took his degree at Emanuel College in Cambridge. He began to preach in his native country; but hindered by the restraints of conformity, he studied physick and was regularly licensed to practice. On the decease of his father, he resolved to make New-England his abode, that he might freely engage in the ministry. Thus disposed he put his purpose into execution. † He came with a large property for those days. He loaned considerable of it to the Colony. He first taught a school at Newton. Thence he moved to Salem, assisted Mr. Peters in preaching, and instructed scholars nearly three years. ‡ Dec. 4th, for the proper management of town affairs, it was voted, that Bye-Laws should be transcribed from the Court Book.

\* History of Chelmsford.

† Bentley.

‡ T. B.

1638.

\* March 12th, General Court commences. John Woodbury and Edward Batter were deputies. The Court designate suitable persons to keep and sell "strong water." One of them was Mr. Gott of Salem. The Court order, that the Colonial laws should be collected and revised by a Committee of Magistrates, Ministers, and others. On this Committee they appoint Messrs. Peters and Hathorne. They require a considerable number of persons to quit Massachusetts, who were Antinomians, and considered as occasioning religious difficulties. There were four such from Salem. They were Francis Weston, Richard Waterman, Thomas Olney, and Stukely Westcoat. † They resorted to the territory of Roger Williams. ‡ Ezekiel Holliman of this town was arraigned before the Court for not attending the Congregational Assembly. They requested the Elders to deal with him, that he might rectify his errors. Such a measure appears not to have availed any thing. The next year he rebaptized Mr. Williams, and was of the twelve, who established the first Baptist Church of Providence and the first of America.

The Court laid a larger tax than common. It was £1500, and was agreed on by a committee, of which was John Woodbury. Salem stood third and paid £172 10. Ipswich had so exceeded this town in prosperity as to assume its place, as second to Boston.

15th, the Court deputed Messrs. Endicott and John Winthrop, jr. to administer the oath of freedom to Emanuel Downing, who had settled at Salem. They allowed Lieut. Davenport £3 8 for charges on account of superintending the "slaves, which when they have earned it, he is to pay." It appears that persons, here denominated slaves, were culprits, condemned to lose their liberty for a time, proportioned to their offences.

The records of the Court say ; " Mr. Endicott was

\* Col. R.

† Backus.

‡ Col. R.

willed to send three men to view Cape-Ann whether it may be cut through, and certify how they find it."

\*This seems to have been preparatory to the re-establishment of a "Fishing Plantation," which took place the following year.

† April 12th a general Fast was appointed "to entreat help of God in the weighty matters, which are in hand, and to divert any evil plots, which may be intended, and prepare the way of friends, which we hope may be upon coming to us." May 2d, General Court of elections sits. William Hathorne and Edward Batter appear as deputies.

‡ June 1st, a severe Earthquake was felt through the Colony. The ground so shook as to render it difficult for people to stand. Household furniture was thrown down. It passed from the Westward to the Eastward. Slight shocks were experienced 20 days afterwards. The day of this Earthquake was a remarkable era. "So long after the Earthquake" was a common remark in New-England. § 5th, the Assistants order the wife of Francis Weston to be set in "the Bilboes," two hours at Boston and two at Salem on a lecture day. Probably her imputed offence was holding to the opinions, which occasioned the banishment of her husband. V || 25th, John Winthrop, jr. had liberty to set up a salt house at Ryal side; to have wood enough for his business, and common sufficient to pasture two cows. This person was undoubtedly a son of the Governor. He had science and enterprise to aid him in such undertakings for public benefit. ¶ Some time afterwards he set up large salt works in the Pequod country with great privileges. Oldmixon informs us, that he became a member of the Royal Society, and sent it several "curious things," probably valuable dissertations; and that he gained the favour of Charles II, by presenting him a ring, which Charles I had, on some occasion, given to his grandmother.

↓ \* Win. † Col. R. ‡ Hutch. Jernslyn. § Col. R. || T. R. ¶ Col. R.

\*Sept. 6th, the General Court, now moved from Newton to Boston, commences. William Hathorne, John Woodbury, and Jacob Barney were deputies. The Court pass the following resolve. "Whereas Emanuel Downing, Esq. hath brought over at his great charges all things fitting for taking wild Fowl by way of Duck Coy, this Court being desirous to encourage him and others in such designs as tend to public good, do give him full liberty to place the same Duck Coy in some convenient place within the bounds of Salem, as the town and he can agree, and that it shall not be lawful, for any person to shoot in any gun within a half mile of the pond where such Duck Coy shall be placed, nor shall use any other means for disturbance of the Fowl there." It appears by a Salem Record, under the same date, which heads the foregoing order, that Mr. Downing bought of John Humphrey, two ponds, and high ground about them, sufficient to have the Duck Coy free of disturbance from "plowmen, husbandmen, or any others passing that way." He was allowed to enclose the ground provided it was no more than 50 acres of upland. The two ponds, which he purchased appear to have been Coy and Deep ponds, which discharge themselves at the foot of Legge's hill. The Court granted to others of different towns liberty similar to Mr. Downing's.

† Mr. Stephen Batchelor who had been pastor at Saugus, and made an ineffectual attempt to settle Mattakeese, now Yarmouth, in the spring, received permission with some persons from Salem and others, to commence a Plantation at Winnacunet, which next year, was called Hampton. ‡ The Court allowed two Fairs to be held in this town (probably in the course of a year.) They set apart the last Thursday of the 8th month for Thanksgiving because many ships had arrived safely, which had been detained by the King. § Through such

\* Col. R.

† Win.

‡ Col. R.

§ Lempriora.

restraint Oliver Cromwell, afterwards Protector of Great Britain, Sir Arthur Hazlerig, John Hambden and others of similar opinions, were hindered from coming to this country. His Majesty little suspected, that the apprehended evil, prevented by their not being allowed to embark, would react upon him a hundred fold by their being permanently kept at home.

\* The Court enact, that as some excommunicated persons were careless of being restored, they should amend and endeavour to regain a regular standing in their respective churches. They were called to act on an important subject. † It was concerning an order, issued by the Lords' Commissioners for Foreign Plantations the 4th of April, and demanding the surrender of Massachusetts Charter. Various false as well true reports in England against the Colony were the occasion of measures so hard to its inhabitants. Archbishop Laud, whose unfavourable views of the Colonists led him to place too much stress on objections made to them, was informed by Mr. Burdet of Piscataqua, that "it was not new discipline, which was aimed at in New-England, but sovereignty; and that it was accounted perjury and treason in their General Court to speak of appeals to the King." Declarations of this kind led him to use his undue influence for annulling the Charter. ‡ The General Court, however saddened by an event so threatening, were not easily terrified from what they considered their rights. § They resolved that the Charter should not be relinquished. They forwarded to the Commissioners of the Crown an able petition, in which they stated, that to give up their Charter would be highly injurious to his Majesty's dominions in this country, and that they hoped he would protect them as his faithful subjects. ¶ They anxiously expected his answer. || But an insurrection in Scotland and general opposition in England to his policy, absorbed his attention and interposed as a

\* Col. R. † Haz. Coll. ‡ Hutch. § Col. R. || Graham.

shield to the devoted colonists. \* September 25th, the Court of Assistants requested the aid of Clergymen for suppressing "costliness of apparel and following new fashions."

† Nov. 12th, to assist in the support of Mr. Peters the town granted him 230 acres of land. ‡ 13th, the Governor Mr. Winthrop, came hither by water. On his return by land six officers here were selected to guard him with carbines as far as Boston. § Dec. 6th, Dorothy Talby was hung in Boston. She belonged to Salem and was a member of the church, whence she was excommunicated. Under an impression, that she was ordered from heaven to kill her husband, children, and herself, she tried to act on it, but only succeeded in killing a child. On this charge she was condemned by the Jury of a Quarterly Court in Boston. For her appearance before the tribunal of this Court, her husband became bound, Sept. 24th, at a Court in Salem for the sum of £20. At her execution Mr. Peters addressed the spectators on the dreadful effects of complying with supposed revelations. As before remarked, she deserved to be treated as one impaired in mind, rather than as a murdereress.

At the same Court, Mary, the wife of Thomas Oliver, belonging to this place, was ordered to be imprisoned. She was accused of disturbing the Church here, at one of their communions, because they declined to receive her, unless she regularly owned their Covenant. On confessing her fault, she was released. She appears to have desired that the Gospel ordinances might not be guarded so strictly as they were. She seems to have indulged the opinion, that living in a community, professing the Christian religion, was qualification enough to participate in all such ordinances. With these views, she maintained, that "if Paul were at Salem, he would call all the inhabitants saints." || September, 1639, she

\* Win. † T. R. ‡ Win. § Col. R. Win. || Qu. Ct. R.



was punished for slander. Jan. 1642, she was presented for neglect of public worship. Feb. 1644, she was sentenced to be publicly whipped for reproaching the Magistrates. Mr. Winthrop says; "She stood without tying and bore her punishment with a masculine spirit, glorying in her suffering." He tells us that for slander-  
ing the Elders, Aug. 1646, she had a *cleft stick put on her tongue* for a half hour. \*Nov. 1648, she was presented for living from her husband. July 1649, she was arraigned for the same offence. She was tried for two other misdemeanours. Feb. 28, 1650, she requested of the Quarterly Court in Salem, that two fines one 22s. 6d. and the other £5, standing against her, might be remitted, to aid in the transportation of herself and children. They granted her one half of them, if she would leave the jurisdiction in three weeks, if not they should order the Marshal to collect the whole of them. The probability is, that she complied with their proposal. Mr. Winthrop informs us, that she excelled Mrs. Hutchinson in zeal and eloquence. It is evident, that her troubles originated in having different religious views from those of the town and colonial authorities. Whether all of them were causeless or not, is hard for us to determine. The longer she bore up under the burden of litigation,—the harder were the accusations against her. So much did her opinions vary from the customs of that day, and so watched was her conduct by the eye of prejudice, it was no difficult matter to keep her on the rack of prosecution. No doubt, were the reasons of her conduct handed down by her own relation, she would appear in a less unfavourable light, than she now does.

† 13th, a public Fast was observed on account of prevailing fevers, the small pox, and low state of religion in the churches. ‡ 25th, Jane Verin was complained of for neglecting public worship. She was released by re-

\* Q. C. R.

† Win.

‡ Q. C. R.

quest of Mr. Peters for further conference. She was probably influenced, as others began to be, in abstaining from the Congregation, by scruples about baptism.

\* A Village was granted to Mr. Philips and company. This was probably a part of Danvers, long called Salem Village. It is not unlikely, that the Mr. Philips here mentioned, was a clergyman, who returned to England in 1642. The town having ordered rates to be made and levied the last year, now choose persons to value estates, and assess them proportionably.

1639.

✓

Feb. 4th. An agreement, as follows, was made between the town and John Pickering. "First he is to build a meeting house of 25 feet long, the breadth of the old building with a gallery answerable to the former: One catted chimney of 12 feet long and 4 feet in height above the top of the building. The back whereof is to be of brick or stone. This building is to have 6 sufficient windows, 2 on each side and 2 at the end and a pair of stairs to ascend the galleries suitable to the former. This building is to be covered with 1 1-2 inch plank and with board upon that to meet close. And all this to be sufficientlie finished with daubings and glasse and underpinning with stone or brick with cariage and all things necessary by the said Jno. Pickering. In consideration whereof the said John is to have 63lb. in money to be paid at three payments. And the said John doth covenant to finish by the 15th of the 4th mo. next ensuing the date hereof. In witness whereof both parties have subscribed hereunto.

JOHN PICKERING.

JO. ENDICOTT,  
JN. WOODBURY,  
WM. HATHORNE,  
LAWRENCE LEECH,  
ROGER CONANT."

\* T. R.

✓

\* Feb. 26th. Deputies chosen for the General Court, which sat the 13th of March, to try Mr. Lenthall for embracing some of Mrs. Hutchinson's opinions, were John Holgrave, John Woodbury, and Jeffry Massey. The person thus arraigned was about to be settled as minister at Weymouth, but the Court prevented his ordination.

March. As a public concern, a Printing Press was set up at Cambridge. † The second work printed there was an Almanack, in which the year began with March, by William Pierce, captain of the ship Desire, belonging to this port. ‡ 16th, a greater gale was experienced by the Colonists than had been since their arrival. It was S. S. E. and S. It prostrated fences and houses. It so terrified many people, they fled from their houses. It was accompanied with abundance of rain.

§ April 17th. "John Gardner pays 5s. per acre for upland as goodman Lord hath done." This shows the low price of land in those days. It appears from a contract made with the keepers of Goats, that these animals were used as commonly then as cows are now.

|| May 22d. General Court sits. William Trask and William Hathorne were deputies. The Court for the encouragement of the Fishery exempted the stock, employed in it, from taxes. They forbid Cod and Bass Fish to be used for manure. This was a general custom of the Indians, so far as they cultivated land, and no doubt was derived from them. The Court requested Mr. Peters to write to Holland, as he was acquainted there, for £500 worth of Salt Petre, £40 worth of Match, on account of the country. They ordered a levy of £1000. Salem's proportion was £111 13 11 It stood third. £250 of this sum were for expenses on Castle Island. One of the committee for laying it was William Hathorne. The Court granted Mr. Peters 500, Mr. Endicott 500, William Hathorne 250, William

\* T. R. Win. † Thomas. ‡ Win. § T. R. || Col. R.

Trask, "in regard for his much service" 250, William Peirce 200, and Richard Davenport 150 acres of land. They gave leave for a Fishing Plantation to be commenced at Cape Ann by Merrice Thomson, merchant, and others. They instruct Messrs. Endicott and Humphrey, John Winthrop, jr., William Pierce, and Joseph Grafton to fix its boundaries, and that none settle there without their consent. They ordered persons here and through the Colony, who owned estates in England to be taxed for them. They instructed Messrs. Endicott, Downing and Hathorne to dispose of a house, bought by Mr. Peters, to the best advantage, and appropriate the money for the College. \* At this session jealousy was manifested, lest the Governor should use influence enough to make his office perpetual. One reason was, that he proposed Mr. Downing, his brother-in-law, as candidate for an Assistant. The Deputies maintained, that, in accordance with the Charter, the Magistrates, who had served on the standing Council should be chosen as Magistrates, every year. Mr. Endicott, who was of the Council, and had also held the office of Magistrate or Assistant without annual election, was ready to meet the desire of the community. The people were anxious to suppress every appearance of Aristocracy.

June. The public mind here and through the Colony was relieved by news, that the apprehended non-intercourse with England, because the Charter was withheld from the King's Commissioners, was not to take effect. † 25th, Hope, an Indian servant of Mr. Peters, was sentenced to be whipped for running away, and drunkenness. The practice of employing Indians in the Colonists' families was common in that period. ‡ July 1st, Mr. Peters wrote the following letter to the Church at Dorchester.

"Reverend and dearly beloved in the Lord,—We

\* Win.

† Qt. Ct. R.

‡ Hutch.

thought it our bounden duty to acquaint you with the names of such persons as have had the great censure passed upon them in this our church, with the reasons thereof, beseeching you in the Lord not only to read their names in public to yours, but also to give us the like notice of any dealt with in like manner by you, that so we may walk towards them accordingly; for some of us here had communion ignorantly with some of other churches. 2 Thes. 3 ch. 14 verse. We can do no less than have such noted as disobey the truth. Roger Williams and his wife, John Throgmorton and his wife, Thomas Olney and his wife, Stukely Wescot and his wife, Mary Holliman and Widow Reeves—These wholly refused to hear the church, denying the churches in the Bay to be true churches, and (except two) are all rebaptized. John Elford for obstinacy, after divers sins he stood guilty of, and proved by witness. William James for pride and divers other evils, in which he remained obstinate. John Talby for much pride and unnaturalness to his wife, who was lately executed for murdering her child. William Walcot for refusing to bring his children to the ordinance, neglecting willingly family duties, &c. Thus wishing the continued enjoyment of both the staves, beauty and bands, and that your souls may flourish as watered gardens.

HUGH PETERS,

By Church's order and in their name.

For the Church in Dorchester."

\* Aug. 8th. It was voted, that the resolves of any town meeting regularly warned and consisting of a number above six persons, should be binding, provided they had been together one hour after the time specified. About this date, land was set off to Philemon Dickerson, as a place for tan pits and dressing goat skins and hides. In case it was not thus occupied, it was to be returned. † Sept. 3d. John Kempe was sentenced by the Quarterly Court

in Boston for lewdness, to be whipped there, at Roxbury, and Salem, and be committed to Lieut. Davenport for a *slave*. ✓

4th. General Court commences. Messrs. Downing and Hathorne appeared as deputies. The Court repeal the law in reference to excommunicated persons. They forbid *healths to be drank* on penalty of 12d. for each offence. They pass a sumptuary act. It allowed no lace nor points on their clothing; no garment to be made with short sleeves so as to expose the arms. It required short sleeves to be lengthened so as to reach the wrists; and that no sleeve should be more than 1-2 Ell in the widest place as a common measure; but to be larger or smaller according to the size of its wearer. It called for reformation in "immoderate great breeches, knotts of ribbon, broad shoulder bands and rayles, silk rases, double ruffs and cuffs."

The Court order that no unlawful marriages should take place; that persons proposing to be married, should be published three times on lecture days or town meetings, or, in places where there were no lectures, "then the same intention be set up in writing upon some post standing in public view, and used for such purpose only, and there to stand so as it may easily be read by the space of 14 days." They grant Emanuel Downing 600 acres of land. They order "that there be Records kept of all wills, administrations, and inventories, as also of the days of each marriage, birth, and death of every person within this jurisdiction." They require a general appraisement of houses and lands. They instruct, that proceedings in reference to these two regulations shall be handed into them annually on fine of 40s. The Colony Recorder chosen at this time was Stephen Winthrop, son of the Governor. ✓ He went to England in about six years, was member of Parliament from Scotland in Cromwell's time, and died before 1659.

\* Nov. 5th. Messrs. Dudley, Gibbons, and Downing

were selected to treat with a Committee of three from Dover, on the Piscataqua, about conditions on which the people, there, would come under the jurisdiction of Massachusetts. It was agreed, that if Dover assumed such a relation, they should be privileged with Quarter Courts, as Ipswich and Salem were. They, however, deferred coming into such a contract till 1641, \* when Strawbury Bank, now Portsmouth, united with them in submitting to the Massachusetts government.

† 8th. Winter Island, used for curing Fish, was ordered to be enclosed with a fence. ‡ 28th, the General Court require the freemen to meet and choose the Governor and other officers the last Wednesday of Easter Term. This alteration was in compliance with the Charter of 1629. They grant Mr. Endicott 550 acres of land on Ipswich River. In connexion with this grant was another to Mr. Bellingham "on the head of Salem to the N. W. there being in it a hill with an Indian Plantation." The Court permit, that the persons, who had been disarmed two years before, and had conducted peaceably, should receive their arms. They order, that the laws, handed in by Messrs. Cotton and Ward, should be examined by a Committee and forwarded to each town and to the Elders for examination. § This measure was promoted by the people, who were apprehensive, that too much power rested in the hands of the Magistrates. || The Court pass the following: "Whereas the inhabitants of Salem have agreed to plant a Village near the River, which runs to Ipswich; it is ordered, that all the land near their bounds, between Salem and the said river, not belonging to any other town or person by any former grant, shall belong to the said Village." This appears to have been what is now called ~~Topsfield~~. DANVERS.

For instituting the only Post Office in the Colony, they resolve as follows: "For preventing the miscar-

\* Hutch.

† T. R.

‡ Col. R.

§ Win.

|| Col. R.

riage of letters, it is ordered, that notice be given, that Richard Fairbanks, his house in Boston is the place, appointed for all letters, which are brought from beyond the seas, or are to be sent thither, are to be brought unto him, and he is to take care that they be delivered or sent according to their directions, and he is allowed for every such letter 1d. and must answer all miscarriages through his own neglect in this kind, provided, that no man shall be compelled to bring his letters, thither, except he please." Two original letters, one dated 1690 and the other 1691, to Increase Mather from Anthony Wood, author of *Athens Oxoniensis*, now bear the post mark, 1d, according to this regulation. □

\* Dec. 3d. Great excitement prevailed through the Colony, because General Court undertook to rectify what they deemed unusual hours for religious lectures. The ministers and churches urged, that such interference was a violation of their Charter rights. The conclusion of the controversy was, that every worshipping assembly should break up seasonably enough to reach home before dark. ✓

† At a Quarterly Court in Boston, Marmaduke Perry, of this town, was retried for the death of his apprentice, who died with a fracture in the head. As the evidence was not sufficiently against him, he was cleared. At the same session, Salem was fined 10s. for neglect in keeping Watch.

‡ The same month, a voluntary contribution was ordered to be taken up each quarter for maintaining the ministry. "The note thereof remaineth with the Deacons." Such a mode of support appears to have lasted here about 18 years. However, not of so long continuance as its promoters might have wished and expected, still its operation was not shorter than a close observer of human nature would have predicted. § It appears to have been adopted in a con-

\* Win.

† Col. R.

‡ T. R.

§ Win.



siderable degree through the influence of Mr. Cotton. He had preached some months before, that ministers should be maintained by free will offerings, and not by lands, revenues, and tithes. This theory was more pleasing in anticipation than beneficial in experiment.

Wood, in New-England's Prospect, gave the following description of this town as it was during ~~this~~ <sup>1633</sup> year. "Salem stands on the middle of a necke of land very pleasantly, having a South river on the one side and a North river on the other side. Upon this necke *where most of the houses stand*, is very bad and sandie ground, yet for seaven years together it hath brought forth exceeding good corne, by being *fished*, but every third year. In some places is very good ground and good timber, and divers springs hard by the sea side. There likewise is store of fish, as Basses, Eels, Lobsters, Clammes, &c. Although their land be none of the best, yet beyond these rivers is a very good soyle, where they have taken farms, and get their hay, and plant their corne; there they crosse these rivers with small Cannowes, which were made of whole pine trees, being about two foote and a halfe over, and twenty foote long. In these likewise they goe a fowling, sometimes two leagues at sea. There be more cannowes in this towne, than in all the whole Patent, every household having a *water horse* or two. This Town wants an Alewife river, which is a great inconvenience. It hath two good harbours, the one being called Winter and the other Summer harbours, which lieth within Derbins Fort, which place, if it were well fortified, might keepe shippes from landing forces in any of those two places."

\* The ferry at North Point, formerly John Stone's, was granted to John Dixy for three years. "He is to keep a horse boat; to have for a stranger's passage 2d, for townsmen 1d; for meeres, horses, and other great beasts 6d; for goats, calves, and swine 2d."

1640.

January. After perusing the orders of the General Court, the town order "that Ralph Fogg receive such goods as none doe owne and send a note of them to the Marshall att Boston." Edward Norris, son of the Elder, was chosen to instruct the Grammar School. 21st, Roger Conant, son of him who was among the first settlers here, was granted 20 acres of land, "being the first born child in Salem." \* March 18th, Edward Norris was ordained as colleague with Mr. Peters. The occasion drew together most of the Elders in the Colony and many people. 21st, an account was received, that the Desire of this port had made a passage to Gravesend, England, in 23 days. † 30th, Capt. Trask was permitted to set up a tide mill on the North River, if he should make a passage for shallops from half to full tide. It was voted, that the decisions of a majority of the seven men should be binding. Swine keepers were appointed.

‡ May 13th. General Court sat. William Hathorne and Townsend Bishop were deputies. As the inhabitants here petitioned "for some of their church to have Jeffries Creek, and land to erect a village there for Mr. William Walton, John Black, William Allen, Samuel Orchard (probably Archer,) George Newton, and others' Company," the Court granted "what land and enlargement may be convenient, and is not granted to any other Plantation," and they referred it to "Mr. John Winthrop, jr. and Mr. Simon Bradstreet, to settle the bounds of said village."

The Court finding their act, restricting the time of lectures, to be very unpopular, caused it to be repealed. They appointed Messrs. Downing and Hathorne, with two more out of town, to assist "the Magistrates of Salem in keeping their Court." They requested the towns and elders to make up their minds

\* Win.

† T. R.

‡ Col. R.

about the laws, forwarded to them for consideration, by their next session in the 8th month. They instructed the deputies to obtain the votes for Magistrates of their respective towns, and bring them to the Legislature, who were to ascertain the candidates, having the majority. Then they required the deputies to return the highest candidates to the freemen, who were to choose them or not as they pleased, and to bring back the result to them at their session for Elections, giving it to be understood, that no magistrate was duly chosen unless thus nominated. They ordered the constables in time of peace, to set "watches and wards," and, in time of danger, military officers to superintend such concerns. They required all men to watch, except officers of churches, schoolmasters, students, captains, lieutenants and ensigns. They agreed upon a rate of £1200, of which Salem was to pay £115, and stood third. They put corn at 5s., wheat 7s., rye 6s. 8d. per bushel, for taxes. They deputed a committee to value country produce and cattle, among which were goats. Of them were John Woodbury, Jeffrey Massey, and Thomas Lathrop.

\* June 30th. The first will, proved before the Court here, was put on file. It was Bethiah Cartwright's. † July 1st, Auditors of town accounts were chosen. A reward of 40s. was offered for every wolf's head.

Sept. 14th. William Lord was sworn as constable, and intrusted with the care of the weights and measures. ‡ 29th and 30th, several persons were fined from 1-2 to 10 bushels of corn, and costs of Court, for not making a fence on Darbie fort side.

✓ Oct. 7th. ✓ General Court commenced. Messrs. Hathorne and Downing were deputies. The Court estimated four of white wampom at 1d, and 8 and not above 12 of blue, at 1d. Such currency served all the purpose of gold and silver among the Indians. It helped them

to pay their tribute to the Colonists, and also passed among them as money. The trade in wampom and beaver the Court had ordered to be let out four years before. The former was manufactured chiefly by the Block and Long Island Indians, \* from "wilk shells."

† The Court offered a premium for the manufacture of linen at the rate of 3d. for 1s. worth. They intended this to last three years; but the year after, for lessening public expense, they rendered it void. They ordered, that no man shall be compelled to pay cash, but such goods as he has. The reason, assigned for so inconvenient a measure, was the dulness of trade and commerce and scarcity of money. ‡ The origin of such depression was, that much provision had come from Eng-

land and Ireland with but few emigrants, and the Colony had been drained of its money by European merchants.

§ Out of ten magistrates propounded to the Court, Mr. Downing stood third and Mr. Hathorne eighth.

|| A request of magistrates and elders was presented to the Court, that they would define the boundaries between Church and State. The subject was put over for further consideration.

¶ 1 Nov. 11th. The land reserved for cattle on Forrest River was prohibited from being sold.

\*\* Dec. 1st. The Quarterly Court, at Boston, ordered Salem Meeting-House to be used for a Watch-House. The same was to be done as to other places of worship in different towns.

†† 15th. News arrived that the Scotch had commenced hostilities against the king and entered England; that he had convoked the Parliament, and that hope of his treating the non-conformists more leniently was cherished. The consequence of such information was a desire on the part of some to revisit England. At the same time, others, fearing lest they should not be able to advance their interest in Massachusetts, wished

\* Gookin. † Col. R. ‡ Win. § Col. R. || Win. ¶ T. R. \*\* Col. R. †† Win.

to move farther South. Such inclinations greatly reduced the price of lands, and other property. Corn fell to 3s. and good cows to about £6. An estate valued three months before at £1000, would not bring £200.

## 1641.

\* Feb. 2d. As emigration had greatly lessened, and shipping was needed, a spirit for building vessels was promoted. Mr. Peters was active in prevailing on some here to build a ship of 300 tons. She was finished in June. One of the workmen on her, named Baker, was killed.

Friends in England to the government of Massachusetts advised, that Agents should be sent over to intercede with Parliament. The Court of Assistants, having consulted with some of the elders, proposed for such a service, Messrs. Welde of Roxbury, Hibbins of Boston, and Peters of Salem. The Governor and most of the magistrates wrote to the Church here on the subject of releasing their pastor. Mr. Endicott, one of its members, argued against granting the request, and Mr. Humphrey, another member, took a stand in opposition to him. The Church returned an answer, that they could not spare Mr. Peters.

Much difficulty had existed between two parties at Piscataqua, one of which adhered to the Rev. Mr. Knolles and the other to the Rev. Mr. Larkham. A committee of Messrs. Bradstreet, Dalton, and Peters were sent to reconcile them. They succeeded in their object. Messrs. Dalton and Peters lost their way while on such business, wandered two days and a night in snow without food, and came near perishing.

† June 2d. The General Court of Elections commences. Mr. Endicott was chosen Deputy Governor. Messrs. Downing and Hathorne were deputies. There being a prospect, that foreign cloths would be scarce

\* Win.

† Col. B.

the next winter, the Court require heads of families to  
 employ their children and servants in the manufacture 8  
 of *wild hemp*, which was plentiful all over the country.  
 They took measures to form a company for trading 9  
 with the Indians so as to increase their revenue. For  
 this object they appointed three persons to receive one  
 into their number from every town, except Boston  
 and Charlestown, the former of which was to have  
 three or four, and the latter two. They agreed that the  
 company should be privileged for three years to sell  
 every commodity, except ammunition, to the Indians,  
 for wampom and peltry, provided they should pay into  
 the Treasury 1-20th of all their furs, and purchase the  
 wampom of the College, if not exceeding £25. 14th.  
 They grant the Quarter Courts of Salem and Ipswich Q  
 shall take cognizance of civil and criminal cases, except  
 those of life, limb, or banishment, which were to be  
 tried before the Court of Assistants at Boston. They  
 allow appeals from the former Courts to the latter.  
 They order, that, as money was scarce, corn, cattle, and  
 other produce were low, servants and labourers should 10  
 take their pay in articles of the country. They held  
 out encouragement for persons in every town to search  
 for mines. They desired the Elders to make a Cate- 11  
 chism for youth in the grounds of religion. They re-  
 peal the law for taxing estates in England. They re- 12  
 quire that farms within the boundaries of each town  
 should belong to it, except Medford. Here it may be  
 remarked, that farms appear to have been taxed as se-  
 parate plantations, as in the assessments to defray the  
 expense for sending Mr. Morton to England. "The  
 Court doth entreat leave of the Church of Salem for  
 Mr. Peters to go for England." They propose that  
 the principal men should meet with the Elders to de-  
 liberate on public affairs. William Hathorne was to be  
 one of their number. As the freemen were becoming  
 too numerous to assemble in one place for electing the

Governor, Deputy, and Assistants, and as proxies were liable to be lost, the Court received a motion to be discussed at their next session, that every tenth freeman be chosen as an elector, and act for the rest.

\* July 27th. Mr. Peters in a power of Attorney to his two deacons, Charles Gott and John Horn, says: "If the Lord continue my life, then I hereby do authorize them to do all my affairs, as if myself were present, as in looking into my house, to dispose of my ground, *mill*, and other things, as in wisdom they shall see meet."

↓ † Aug. 3d. Hugh Peters and the other two Agents depart for England, by way of Newfoundland. Here we will take a parting view of him. † He was born at Foy in Cornwall of England 1599. He was of respectable parentage. § The ancestors of his father had been driven from Antwerp for their favouring of the reformation. His mother's surname was Treffey. He entered Trinity College at 14. At this time he had a brother in Oxford. At 17 he received his first degree, and at 23 his second. While residing at the University he gave to his mother, who was reduced from affluence, an estate, which fell to him by an uncle. On going thence, he visited London. Here he received impressions of religion, which resulted in his profession of christianity. In this alteration of his views and motives, he was assisted by the counsels of Thomas Hooker, minister of Chelmsford in Essex, who afterwards fled to Holland, and thence came to this country. While residing at Chelmsford, Mr. Peters began to preach, and married his first wife, the memory of whose virtues he long cherished. He soon removed to London for the object of improving in his Theological studies. As he had already been licensed by Bishop Montain, his friends urged him to recommence his preaching before he had intended. He complied. He

K. Wood

\* Q. Ct. R.

† Win.

‡ Life of Peters.

§ Legacy.

officiated in London. A young man who went to hear him, was so satisfied with his performances, as to become a principal means of procuring for him the lectureship of St. Sepulchre, and to pay £20 a year towards his salary. Here he taught the Gospel once a month. His audience was over 6000. Through his ministry many were turned to the Redeemer. \* His popularity excited envy, and his success anger. The Act of conformity drove him to the Continent. This occurred about 1629. † He took up his abode in Rotterdam, as colleague with the celebrated Dr. William Ames, over an Independent church. Here he became an intimate friend of John Forbes, who had been forced by the Covenanters to leave a Divinity Professorship at Aberdeen. ‡ In reference to this connexion, he wrote : “ I lived near that famous Scotsman, Mr. John Forbes, with whom I travelled into Germany, and enjoyed his society in much love and sweetness constantly, from whom I received nothing but encouragement, though we differed in the way of our churches.” He also gained the strong affection of Amesius, who gave up a Professorship in Friesland for the sake of being united with him as co-pastor after Dr. Ames’ decease. § Of such a friend Mr. Peters observed : “ The learned Amesius breathed his last into my bosom.” While in Holland his labours were blessed, and he evidently shared in the esteem of the worthy. Still his heart was with the home of the Puritans. For a number of years he had engaged to some of them, that he would embark for New England. He was deeply interested in the welfare of its inhabitants, and in evangelizing the Indians. For such objects he was as strongly desirous as his particular friends, Bishop Lake and Mr. White of Dorchester. || So disposed he arrived at Boston Oct. 6, 1635. The transactions which he performed while here, and which have been recorded of him, manifest, that as he

\* Ludlow.

† Harris.

‡ Monthly Repertory.

§ Legacy.

Win



came highly respected for his intellectual powers and attainments, moral affections and character, so he continued. True, he was earnest for the discipline of Roger Williams and followers, as appears from his communication to the Dorchester church. No doubt he regretted the occasion of such a course. Ecclesiastical rules had been broken, though by a sort of necessity, and he felt himself bound to show his disapproval. He struck a blow at what the Anabaptists had been in Germany,—what he feared they might be at Providence,—but not at what they have been for many years. The occurrence did not sever the bonds of friendship between these two eminent men.—It is equally true that he took a decided stand against the opinions of Mrs. Hutchinson. \* He was a witness on her trial, who laid open her views and was instrumental in occasioning her banishment. Still he appeared to be influenced by as commendable motives, as any of the principal actors in that deplorable scene. They all with the best intentions for general good, came short of the toleration, which we enjoy in these days, and which, thus far, has been followed with less evils and greater benefits, than its opposite policy. If those connected with him are esteemed, though thus mistaken, he in this respect; should be allowed to fare as well as they. In candidly putting down his deeds, while here, and balancing the account, we cannot perceive, but that it stands as fair as the account of any in the Colony, whose merits are generally remembered with respect and gratitude. Had he not sustained such a reputation, he would not have been relinquished so unwillingly as he was by his people, nor been elected at so critical a juncture by the Legislature to fill the office of Agent to England.—† In this capacity, he with his associates, was instructed to congratulate Parliament on their success; to petition them for a repeal of imposts; but not

\* Hutch.

† Col. R.

to receive any privilege of them so as to commit the Colony as an ally to them in every event. They were also desired to inform the creditors of the Colonists, that a reason, why they had delayed to forward payment, was the embarrassment of trade among them. \* 1642, Aug. Linen, woollen, and other goods, as a charitable present to the Colony, valued at £500, arrived from Mr. Peters and colleagues. Sept. letters came from him and Mr. Weld with advice to the clergymen, who had been invited by members of Parliament to attend a Synod in London for settling the doctrine, liturgy, and discipline of the churches. They counselled them not to cross the Atlantic, till there was a better prospect. They were hearkened to, and thus the Colonists came not to be represented in the Westminster Assembly, which convened July 1, 1643. † Mr. Peters was unable to execute his commission so soon as he wished. In the mean while, it was his purpose to return hither. Soon after the communication about the Synod, he appears to have gone and resided in the western part of Ireland. Here he preached to Protestants and was compensated by Parliament. While thus employed, his sympathy was much excited for many, who were suffering from a civil war, which had existed between them and the Catholics. About 1643, he hastened to Holland, the sphere of his former usefulness and respectability, to obtain relief for them. ‡ By eloquence, influence, and activity he collected nearly £30,000. With this sum, so unusually large, as a charitable benefaction, for that period, he returned, and distributed it among the miserable, for whom he so magnanimously acted the part of a good Samaritan. § He came back to England. He was persuaded by the Earl of Warwick, to prolong his stay. Thus he failed of revisiting his home here, for which he had strong desires, true affection, and kind wishes.—In London he found an un-

\* Win.

† Legacy.

‡ Ludlow.

§ Legacy.

*The Earl of Warwick's name  
was Robert Rich.*

tried channel for his benevolence. \* He attended Mr. Chaloner with the precepts and consolations of the Gospel, during his confinement and at his execution, for being concerned in the Waller plot. † 1644, Jan. 2d, he performed a similar service for Sir John Hotham, who rendered him public thanks for his attention. ‡ June, being one of the Chaplains to the forces of Parliament, he came to London and related to the House the military proceedings of the Earl of Warwick. § July, Bishop Laud, having been condemned for the influence he had exerted in the civil and ecclesiastical concerns of England, Mr. Peters strove to save him. At his request, a motion was made in the Commons to release the Bishop and send him to some part of America. His exertion was ineffectual; but it fully showed, that whatever may have been his own sufferings in consequence of Laud's measures,—he had no desire for his blood as the satisfaction of revenge. || After the execution of the Bishop, the Parliament granted Mr. Peters his private library, valued at £140, which the latter designed for New England. Among the contents of this Library was a manuscript of the three last books of Hooker's Ecclesiastical Polity, which had not been published. Wood, in his *Athenæ Oxonienses*, charges Mr. Peters with altering them so as to suit the views and purposes of Parliament. But Mr. Baxter, of better information and greater candour on this point, explicitly states, that they had undergone no such alteration. 1645, April 2d, Mr. Peters preached a Thanksgiving sermon before Parliament and the Assembly of Divines. It was entitled, "God's doings and man's duty." Its occasion was the success of the Parliamentary arms. It is replete with original, sound, and profitable remarks. Though it shows him as a supporter of rational liberty, yet it presents no proof of his rudely trampling on Royalty, with which he was afterwards charg-

\* Life of Peters. † Clarendon. ‡ Whitlock. § Monthly Repository. || Legary

ed. In one of its dedications to the Lord Mayor and Aldermen of London, he makes a remark, which shows that the tide of slander, subsequently overwhelming him, had commenced its course. The remark is : " How I have been represented unto you and others by printing or otherwise shall not fill up this paper." Men, however worthy, who are eminently active in seasons of political or religious excitement,—are made a mark for the shafts of detraction. Candor can judge them by their real deserts, but not by the clouds of missiles, continually aimed at them. It is a frailty of human nature, in such contentions, not to spare where equity requires, but to prostrate by every possible method. \* June 25th, news reached London that Bridgewater was stormed, and that Messrs. Peters and Bolles, the sabbath before, exhorted the soldiers to do their duty. July 26th, Mr. Peters brought letters from Sir Thomas Fairfax to the House, and described to them the fall of Bridgewater. They voted him £100 " for his unwearied services." Sept. 9th, he was invited before the House to describe the siege of Bristol. He pressed the desire of Sir Thomas Fairfax for more troops. Oct. 17th, he came to them with dispatches from Cromwell, concerning the capture of Winchester. They called on him for a verbal relation of its surrender. They ordered him £50. 23d, he appeared before them with information, that Dartmouth was taken. † Oct. 4th, he and Mr. Weld were recalled from England by General Court. As the result shows, they preferred to tarry there according to their right. By the advice of Mr. Weld, they had appointed other agents to succeed him and Mr. Peters the fore part of the year. ‡ 1646, Feb. 28th, Mr. Peters preached in the Market place of Torrington and persuaded many to favour the cause of Parliament. He and Mr. J. C. Berry were commissioned to treat with the Governor of Plymouth.

\* Witlock.

† Col. R.

‡ Witlock.

March 21st, he narrated to the House the capture of St. Maw's fort. They voted £100 to be settled on him and his heirs from the Earl of Worcester's estate. July 23d, the town of Worcester, having been taken, its principal inhabitants received passes of security from his hands. He desired a promise of them that they would not "bear arms against Parliament." Aug. 5th, the Government settled £200 per annum on him, and Oct. 5th, they grant him £200 more \* In this month, his wife arrived at Boston, better of her derangement. She soon visited Salem. † During this year, Mr. Peters published the last Reports of the English Wars. ‡ He with Mr. Winslow prevented the charges made by non-freemen of Massachusetts against its rulers from having their intended effect. § 1647, June 19th, he had much conversation with the King at Newmarket. His Majesty observed to him, that he did not expect to perceive such solidity in him as he had; and that he would have more conversation with him. || This year he published a pamphlet called "A word for the Army and two words for the kingdom." Dec., Henry Somerset, Marquis of Worcester, died in the custody of Parliament. Mr. Peters had been active for his relief. The Marchioness, his wife, gave him a certificate when about to be tried as a Regicide: It was "I do hereby testify that in all the sufferings of my husband, Mr. Peters was my great friend." Some part of this year, he addressed the King on the subject of abolishing Hierarchy, as a means of reconciliation between him and the Parliament. His Majesty agreed to his proposal, and signed a treaty to such an import. But it was prevented from being accomplished by the Parliament's falling under the power of the army. ¶ Near this time, Sir John Denham with letters from the Queen gained access to the King through the kindness of Mr. Peters. \*\* 1648, March 8th, a letter remarked: "yesterday

\* Win. † Life of Peters. ‡ Graham. § Rushworth. || L. of Peters. ¶ Mo. Rep. \*\* Ormond.

Mr. Peters' presenting the King's petition to the Speaker, made many believe, that the King would escape." \* Sept. 7th, he with Messrs. Marshall and Caryl, was requested to perform religious service before the House on the succeeding day, which was Fast. † Dec. 20th, he was desired to officiate before the same body, on the Friday following in St. Margaret's Church. His performance on this occasion appears to have been much misrepresented when he was brought to trial. 1649, January, he accompanied the King to London, who was carried thither as a prisoner. His opponents afterwards construed his attendance on this occasion, as triumphing over the fallen monarch, while he evidently did it in kindness. ‡ 20th, Mr. Peters presented the King's request to the House, that he might have one of his own chaplains to advise him on some questions of conscience. Dr. Juxon was accordingly allowed to be with his Majesty till his execution on the 30th. § 21st, Mr. Peters preached before the High Court, and on the 28th in St. James Chapel. The sermons he delivered on these days were afterwards unfavourably exaggerated at the time of his trial. From the manner, in which the witnesses were encouraged by the Court to speak of such sermons, and from their impression, as royalists, that treason was in every word and act, which were opposed to the oppressive conduct of a King, they must have described them far from the whole truth. There can be little doubt but that he spoke freely against the Monarchy which was above the reach of law. He was no manager behind the curtain. He strove to embrace no principles, which he should be ashamed to declare in the ears of the world. If in the circumstances, with which he was surrounded, he should not have expressed himself so as to offend the friends of Royalty,—it would have been extraordinary. Could he have had a fair

\* Trial of Regicides. † Echard. ‡ Ruthworth. § Trial of Regicides.

hearing, and been allowed to produce witnesses of the Parliamentary party, his words would not have come down to us with the distortions, which now disfigure them. It is granted that he may have drawn comparisons and let fall epithets, which would bear hard on the royal cause. \* He himself lamented that he had errors. He however declares, that he did not knowingly cherish them. † March 8th, Lord George Goring was condemned for waging war in favour of the Crown; but he was soon reprieved through the intercession of Mr. Peters. 9th, James, Marquis of Hamilton, was executed for contending against Parliament. Mr. Peters strove to have him spared; but his compassionate endeavours were fruitless. ‡ Sept. 27th, letters came from Mr. Peters to the Council, which stated that their fleet had sailed for Ireland. § It appears that he had gone thither with Cromwell. || 27th, the Council received another communication from him, respecting the success of Cromwell's forces. Whitlock remarks of him, that "he had a Brigade against the rebels, and came off with honour and victory, and the like was not expected from him." It may appear strange to some, that Mr. Peters should have so united the military with the clerical character. This is the only time he is known to have stepped so far out of his professional course. True, he had much to do as a reporter to Parliament, concerning the operations of their army and navy. Still his chaplainship kept him from leading soldiers to battle, with the exception mentioned. To look at the case properly, we should reflect, that it was the custom, when he acted as a commander, for Cromwell and his officers to preach and fight. ¶ On this point the Protector wrote to Col. Hacker under date of Dec. 25th, 1650: "Truly I think he that prays and preaches best will fight best. I bless God to see any in this army able and willing to impart the knowl-

\* Legacy. † Month. Repository. ‡ Witlock. § Trial of Regicides. || Witlock. ¶ Ellis' letters.

edge they have for the good of others. I expect it will be encouraged by all chief officers in this army especially." Mr. Peters did no more than has been done by others of his profession. Clergymen in our own nation have occasionally headed detachments to repel an enemy, and have been much applauded for such a manifestation of their patriotism. The very historians who reproached Mr. Peters for the deed under consideration, praised the Rev. Dr. Walker for defending Londonderry against James II. Dr. Williams, Archbishop of York, for ably defending Conway castle against the forces of Parliament, and Chillingworth, the noted Divine, for bearing arms to support Charles I. and acting as an engineer at the siege of Gloucester. Let not these remarks be understood to plead the expediency of preachers' becoming soldiers; but to show, that if others are approved for acting a part similar to the part of Mr. Peters, his reputation should not be drowned with a millstone of prejudice, while theirs is crowned with the commendation of favour. \* Returning from Ireland, Mr. Peters fell dangerously ill. He was left under the care of Dr. Young ten weeks. This physician was instrumental in restoring him. He was a staunch royalist. He however pretended to be on the side of Mr. Peters. Thus he acted as a spy. His own relation was: "I observed in him (Peters) that he had some secret thoughts, that I could not well discover, neither well understand; whereupon I thought it might tend to my security, that I should so much sympathize with him to get within him to know his intentions." Capable of such management, he was a chief witness against Mr. Peters when on trial. Representations from a person of his cast would not be generally accounted candid and correct. The bias and purpose of his mind in reference to Mr. Peters, while supposing himself protected by a friend, were calculated to give him unfavourable

\* Trial of Regicides.



vourable impressions of his sick guest. \* 1650, March 25th, Mr. Peters made a proposal to the inhabitants of Milford about "taking of the Ingagement." This was undoubtedly a declaration of faithfulness to Parliament. † 1651, he published "A good work for a good Magistrate." ‡ 1652, Jan. 20th, the Parliament selected 21 persons to consider the abuses of the national laws and report accordingly. Mr. Peters was one of their number. Though he spoke of himself very modestly as to such an office, yet others, capable of judging, believed him to be sufficient for its duties. § May 20th, in a letter to his agents of this town he says: "I wish you all good, and pray you to sell my mill house, or what you will that may be parted with." His agents evidently had difficulty in making his estate productive enough for paying its taxes. || In the fore part of 1653, the Dutch, having their navy almost destroyed by the British fleet under Admiral Blake, sent ambassadors to England for a compromise of differences. To accomplish their object, the ambassadors applied for aid to Mr. Peters, who was noted and honoured in their own country. They empowered him to offer £300,000 for peace. His effort in their behalf was not then successful. ¶ July 11th, an intercepted letter of this date for Holland says: "Mr. Peters prays and preaches for peace. On last Thanksgiving day he told them, that God Almighty had punished them long enough for their sins, especially for their pride, covetousness, ambition, discord, ingratitude, and unmercifulness to the poor, which are sins, that do reign to some purpose in this nation." Such a discourse shows Mr. Peters to have been no time-server even among his best friends. Sept. 26th, a letter from Holland states: Mr. "Peters (who I believe is an honest man) doth correspond at Amsterdam with Mrs. Grace Crisp concerning State affairs, which letters are communicated to

\* Witlock. † Life of Peters. ‡ Witlock. § Qt. Ct. R. || Monthly Repertory. ¶ Thurlow.

Mr. John Webster, a profest malignant ; great mischief can be done to the Commonwealth." However the writer of this extract disapproved of Mr. Peters' correspondence, lest it should be turned to a bad account, yet he could not but compliment him with a trait of character, which eminently belonged to him. Nov. 21st, a letter from Jongestall to Frederic, Count de Nassau, remarks : " Mr. Peters hath written a letter to the Queen (of Sweden) by Lord Whetlocke, wherein he relates the reasons why they put their King to death, and dissolved this last Parliament." 1654, Feb. 18th, a letter of this date was forwarded to the Commissioners of the United Colonies by Mr. Steel, President of the Society for propagating the Gospel among the Indians of New England. In it he represents Mr. Peters as being one of a committee to collect funds for the Society in the Army ; as being doubtful about its success ; and as not active for its promotion. Mr. Steel then observes : " We have otherwise charitable thoughts of Mr. Peters." There is reason to believe, from Mr. Peters' own declaration and from his readiness for beneficent enterprise, that he sincerely wished that the Indians of this country might be evangelized. Though he mistook in the supposition, that then was not a suitable time to prosecute so commendable a work, yet there is no conclusive proof, that he was unfriendly to its success. \* The Dutch, having met with another naval defeat from the English, renewed their application to Mr. Peters, that he would intercede for them so that they might have peace. He accordingly obtained their wish from Cromwell May 2d. Stubbs, in his account of the Dutch war, had an engraved representation of the ambassadors, offering their petition to Hugh Peters. † March 20th, Cromwell appointed a number of persons to license candidates for the ministry. They were called Friers. Mr. Peters was one of

\* Monthly Repertory.

† Neal's Puritans

them. Mr. Baxter relates : " They did abundance of good to the Church." \* July 12th, Roger Williams wrote to John Winthrop, jr., that he had visited his father in law, Peters, at his lodgings in Whitehall. He proceeds to observe : " His wife lives from him ; not wholly but much distracted. He tells me he had but £200 a year, and he allowed her £80 per annum of it. He told me that his affliction from his wife stirred him to action abroad, and when success tempted him to pride, the bitterness of his bosom comforts was a cooler and a bridle to him." † At the commencement of 1655, Mr. Peters was deeply interested for the relief of the persecuted Protestants in Switzerland. For the £38,000 contributed in England and forwarded to them by Cromwell, he was an earnest and successful solicitor. ‡ July 1, Lockhart writes to Secretary Thurloe : " Mr. Peters is arrived and hath acquainted me with some things that he saith your Lordship hath been fully acquainted with. I shall pray that his proposals may prosper and be acceptable to all good men." § 8th, Mr. Peters related to the Government what had occurred at Mardike and Dunkirk. He had accompanied Col. Lockhart's forces to the latter place, which had been lately surrendered by the French to the English. That officer wrote to Secretary Thurloe under date of July 8th. Among his remarks he says : " I would not suffer our worthy friend Mr. Peters to come away from Dunkirk without a testimony of the great benefits we have all received from him in this place." He concludes : " It were superfluous to tell your Lordship the story of our present condition either as to the civil government or the works of the soldiery. He (Peters) who hath studied all these more than any I know here, can certainly give the best account of them." In a P. S. he stated that Mr. Peters had visited Berg, and conversed three or four times with Cardinal Mazarinc.

\* Sav. † Ludlow. Monthly Repertory. ‡ Thurloe. § Witlock.

X H. PETER AT WINDSOR ON JULY 12th 1655  
 Wrote to John Winthrop, jr. that he had visited his

These interviews were most likely on national affairs.

\* 1660, Feb. 6th, news having reached this country, that Mr. Peters was deceased, Roger Williams wrote to John Winthrop jr. : " Sir, you were not long since the son of two noble fathers, Mr. John Winthrop and Mr. H. Peters. It is said they are both extinguished. Surely, I did ever, from my soul, honour and love them, even when their judgments led them to afflict me."

This direct testimony as to Mr. Peters ought to have more weight than all the epithets of scandal charged upon him by the mouths and pens of his political foes.

\* Oct. 13th, Charles II. having come to the throne and imprisoned Mr. Peters and others, ordered them to be tried on the charge of compassing the death of his father. The tribunal before which he stood was plainly partial. The Lord Chief Justice Baron and the Solicitor, treated him as guilty before his cause was through. Their remarks upon him were calculated to mislead the Jury, who were habitually prejudiced against every anti-loyalist. They encouraged the witnesses to make the strongest representations, unfavourable to him, from the impression, that nothing could be too severe for one, who had dared speak and act in opposition to a King. His accusers weighed him in the balance of royalty, and described him as greatly wanting. With views of government, almost entirely different from his, they would of course testify against him. There was even an attempt to prove that Mr. Peters beheaded the King with his own hand. But by the only witness, whom he summoned, and who lived with him when Charles I. was put to death, but who was now in the national service, he showed that he was confined to his bed with sickness the very hours before, at, and after his Majesty's execution. When inquired of if he heard an accusation against him, he answered : " Some part I did, but it is impossible for me to bear down many witnesses.

\* Sav.

† Trial of Regicides.

Indeed, my Lord, I say this, they are *marvelously uncharitable, and speak many false things.*" Taking into consideration all the circumstances of his trial, there is cause to believe, that he acted with as upright motives in taking side with Parliament, as the best of our country's patriots did in the Revolution. The same Court which were inveterate against him, would have been equally so against them, if held in their day, and possessing authority over them. His opinions of civil liberty were essentially the same with those of the most eminent men in Massachusetts and other colonies, who were his cotemporaries. But here a question presents itself, about which there have been various impressions. It is :—Was he immediately concerned in the King's execution? In looking over the course he pursued, there is cause to answer negatively. Consider how earnest and unwearied he was to save the condemned friends of his Majesty. Reflect how he strove to bring about a reconciliation between him and Parliament, and which would have been effected, had not the army prevented his benevolent purpose. Think how he petitioned for his life to Parliament, after a motion had been made in this body for bringing him to the block. Take into view his own words : "I had so much respect to his Majesty, particularly at Windsor, that I propounded to his Majesty my own thoughts three ways to prevent himself from danger, which were good as he was pleased to think, though they did not succeed." Especially take into the account what he wrote, in the advice he left for his daughter, when no misrepresentation could benefit him, and death was to be his speedy portion : "I never had hand in contriving or acting his (the King's) death, as I am scandalized, but the contrary. I was never in any cabal. I hated it, thinking all governments should lie open to all." \* He was neither of the 70 commission-

\* Rushworth.

ers, appointed to try his Majesty, nor of the 59 who signed his death warrant. Dr. Barwick asserts, that the charge of being a Regicide could not be proved against him. Oldmixon, in his impartial history of the Stuarts, declares, that Mr. Peters "was not at all concerned in the King's death." These considerations are enough to convince every impartial mind, that he had no concern in taking away the life of Charles I. The Chief Baron remarked to him, that were he innocent as to his Majesty's death yet his siding with Parliament, was enough to bring him in guilty as a traitor. This was evidently the most, which could with justice be charged upon him. Had he taken the stand of Milton, the immortal poet, who wrote to justify the execution of Charles I., there would have been greater propriety in his being regarded as a regicide, than there really is. As to the part which he did act, he felt himself as much justified, as our fathers did when declaring themselves opposed to George II. In reference to it, he remarks : \* "I confess I did what I did strenuously ; was never angry with any for being of the King's party ; and thought the authority of Parliament lawful." In such openness and energy he was careful to avoid extremes. He observes, with respect to his friend, Lord Grey : "I advised him against the spirit of *levelling*." But notwithstanding his case was as here represented, verdict was brought in for his condemnation. The account of his trial shows, that he was candid to acknowledge what he had done and deny what he had not. It exhibits him as possessing a dignity and heroism, founded on religious principle, which raised him above the purposes and misrepresentation of opponents, though subjecting him to the death of the body. The next day, being Sabbath, after sentence was pronounced on him, he preached to his associates in suffering in Newgate Chapel. His text was 42d Psalm, 11 verse. The doc-

\* Legacy.

trine drawn from it was : "The best of God's people are apt to be desponding." The substance of his discourse indicates, that piety was his source of consolation and support. While confined in the Tower, he had written advice to his daughter, which was delivered to her a short time before his execution. This little book contains much good sense, sound religion, and beneficial counsel. Wherein it differs from the style of the present age, it mainly agreed with the style of its own age. A night or two before he suffered, two clergymen, reported to have been chaplains of Charles II., waited on him, and encouraged him to confess that he had done wrong in advocating the cause of Parliament, by the offer of pardon. But he replied, that he could make no such recantation. On the 16th he was drawn upon a sledge to Charing Cross, and placed so as to see the execution of his worthy friend, Mr. Cook, Solicitor General. While there a person came and reviled him with compassing the King's death. He answered : " Friend, you do not well to trample on a dying man ; you are greatly mistaken ; I had nothing to do in the death of the King." When Mr. Cook was taken down and about to be quartered, the sheriff brought Mr. Peters to look at him. The hangman rubbed his bloody hands before him and asked : " How do you like this Mr. Peters ?" He firmly replied : " Thank God, I am not terrified ; do your worst." He bent a piece of gold, and desired a byestander to carry it to his daughter and inform her that he was at peace and should be with God before it reached her. When on the ladder he observed to the executioner ; " You meant to terrify me by the slaughter of one servant of God ; but it has been divinely ordered for mine encouragement." When about to die, he said : " This is a good day ; He is come, that I have long looked for, and I shall be with him in glory," and " so smiled when he went away." His body was quartered, and his head

placed on London Bridge. Thus died Hugh Peters, aged 61. Speaking of him and his companions in suffering, Goldsmith observes: "They bore the scorn of the multitude and the cruelty of the executioner not simply with fortitude, but with the spirit and confidence of Martyrs, who suffered for having done their duty."—Here it becomes us to examine, in a short compass, the general character of Hugh Peters. Will it shine brighter, the harder it is rubbed by the hand of truth? It will. True, it has been greatly tarnished by historians, who wished to find it blackened, because they regarded Charles I. as the Counsellors of Cambyzes did him, when they said: "Though there be a written law, the Persian Kings may do what they please." Let his reputation be brought into contact with facts and correct principles, and there is no need to fear, that it will suffer. Look at him from his youth to his tragic end. The threadbare story of his being whipped and expelled from College is absolutely disproved by his having taken two degrees at regular intervals. The report of his having been a Stage Player has no countenance from his pursuits, which can be traced from his early days to the close of his life. When in the Tower he was accused of unchastity. To a friend, conversing with him on such a charge, he said with every appearance of truth, that he blessed the Lord, he was wholly clear from every iniquity of this kind. The single reflection that while in England, Holland, America and Ireland he was beloved by the best of men; that for nearly 19 years he was highly esteemed by the Parliamentary and Cromwell administrations, which, however charged with fanaticism, were careful to encourage no vicious person, shows that he must have been a man of more than common integrity. As to the strictures, made on him for declining the office of collector for missionary funds, and acting as a Brigade General on one occasion, what has been already stated, should place him on as



good a footing as others are, who have acted similarly and still are remembered with esteem. There certainly can be no sufficient folly and crime in them to overshadow the light of his good name. Even in our own land he has been considered by worthy men as fiery, cruel, weak, and ignorant. If the first trait means, that he was unusually passionate and rash, it finds no authority from his real actions. As to the second, it is equally unsupported. In genuine, active and untiring benevolence to those of other parties and other nations, as well as his own, he stood pre-eminent. To pronounce such a person weak and ignorant, who was greatly esteemed by some of the most worthy on both sides of the Atlantic, who had great opportunities for improving his mind, who was closely allied in friendship with superior scholars, and long entrusted with offices, requiring extensive knowledge, prudence, and abilities, is contrary to past experience, and to what any would suppose, who deliberately examined his life. Such charges can only be accounted for on the supposition, that they were set down with the memory fixed on the mistatements of his adversaries, and not on his real character. In his domestic relations, he was worthy of imitation. In his clerical connexions, he was faithful, able, eloquent, affectionate, and successful. Speaking of his labours in Salem, he observes : \* “ I had a flock to whom I was ordained, who were worthy of my life and labours.” In his social concerns, public good was a chief object of his wishes, plans, purposes and endeavours. On this subject he remarks : † “ I looked after three things. One was that there might be sound religion. The second was, that learning and laws might be maintained. The third that the poor might be cared for. I must confess that I have spent much of my time in these things.” On an impartial review of the preceding facts and remarks, there is

\* Legacy.

† Trial of Regicides.

reason to acknowledge that the character of Mr. Hugh Peters stands forth in the bold relief of excellence. There is no intention to assert, that it is perfect in every minute proportion, and beautiful in every tint. This would be to claim more for him than falls to the lot of mortals. But there is a sincere belief, that he was as far removed from faults, and possessed as many virtues, as the most of his day, whose reputation we cherish with more than ordinary respect and esteem. The tribute rendered to these, should not be withheld from him.—As to his person, he was above the common stature, thin, erect and muscular. His countenance was open, energetic, independent, benevolent and striking. His miniature likeness appears, according to the custom of his age, with a grown beard on the upper lip, and part of one on the chin. He left a second wife and a daughter in London, who soon came to Massachusetts. They were kindly received by his brother William, in Boston. The former lived to an advanced age. The latter was married to a respectable gentleman of Newport, R. I. He also had a daughter who was married to Gov. Winthrop of Connecticut. He had another brother Thomas, who was in the ministry and \*commenced a Plantation, 1646, with his son in law Winthrop, at Pequod River. ↑

† Sept. 2d. Thanksgiving was observed for the success of Parliament. ‡ This body had so taken their measures as to gain concessions from the King in reference to an amendment of his past policy. They were resisted by a party, called Cavaliers, who were faithful to him; and who designated his opposers by the epithet, Round-heads, because they wore short cropt hair.

§ Oct. 7th. General Court assembles. Messrs. Downing and Hathorne were deputies. The court request every town to have one of its inhabitants write Capt. Gibbons by the 21st, how much wheat can be ready by

\* Win.

† Win.

‡ Russell's Europe.

§ Col. R.

March 1st, as an adventure to England for purchasing needed commodities. With respect to this subject, they remark, that wheat was likely to become the staple commodity of Massachusetts. They forbid it to be used in bread or malt. They probably took such a step to secure a load for the ship of Capt. Gibbons. They issue strict orders for vessels to be built with proper form, materials and faithfulness. They appoint Messrs. Endicott, Downing and Hathorne to "dispose of all lands and other things at Cape Ann." Nov. 4th. The Court appoint a day of fasting for the necessities of the Colony and the perils of England. They agree that a proposition for Deputies to be chosen annually, should be laid before the freemen of every town. In connexion with this matter remarks were made, which show, that there were certainly *three* Regiments. Under date of May 6th, 1639, Winthrop records, "*two* Regiments in the Bay were mustered at Boston, to the number of 1000 soldiers." Referring to this statement, the American Annals give an incorrect impression, that there were only such a number of regiments and soldiers in all Massachusetts. The mistake appears to have arisen from supposing, that the phrase, "in the Bay," comprised all parts of the Colony, when in fact, it excluded the towns in Essex. There can be little doubt but that the military forces of Massachusetts, were, at least, one third more than stated in those valuable Annals. The Court designate the Governor and William Hathorne to obtain of Mr. Ward a copy of Liberties and Capital Laws, in order that they might be laid before every town. They voted "that if the town of Salem lend the Glass men £30, they shall be allowed it again out of their next rate. And the Glass men to repay it, if the work succeed, when they are able." It seems from this, and several references in the Town Records, that a Factory for glass had been set up in this place. The Court author-

ize Messrs. Endicott, Downing and Hathorne, to get 19 copies of the Laws, Liberties, and Forms of Oaths, written off, and to subscribe them with their own hands; and resolved that no copies should be authentic, which were without the signature of those three. They require the copies to be prepared in six weeks, and the constable of every town to pay 10s. for one of them. They appoint Ralph Fogg to grant summons and attachments in civil actions for Salem. \* Dec. To save the Colony expense in civil actions, the General Court order that either the plaintiff or defendant shall pay costs, as he shall be in fault. They leave it optional with each town about sending one Deputy next session. They dismiss William Hathorne till they should request his presence. † A censure of this sort seems to have been occasioned by his proposing to other Deputies the expediency "of leaving out two of their most ancient Magistrates." This proposition was severely handled by Mr. Cotton the next lecture day.

About this time, John Woodbury died. He was one of the first settlers. He left the world in the course of usefulness. Hubbard informs us, that before Mr. Endicott's arrival, he went as agent to England for supplies. He seems to have returned soon. Jan. 4th, 1636, the town granted him 200 acres of land on Bass River, where he took up his residence. He was continually selected to transact business for the town, as selectman, surveyor, and in other capacities. He served several sessions as Deputy. He was on committees of the Colony. He and his wife Agnes were both members of the First Church. The Planters Marsh, by Shallop Cove, is supposed to have been so called after him and his associates. From the active part he took in the settlement and transactions of the Colony, Mr. Woodbury was an energetic, faithful and worthy man. He lived to see that his perils, sufferings, and toils had

\* Win. Col. R.

† Win.

contributed to prepare a refuge for his countrymen. Though his deeds are not gilded with the splendor of false estimation, yet, for their object and results, they deserve our sincere regard and approbation.

## 1642.

\* April 14th. A Fast was observed for difficulties in England and Ireland and the necessities of the Colony.

† May 2d. A fine of 20s. was to be imposed on all who cut trees, within this town, except on their own land, and for buildings, fences, or ships.

‡ 18th. General Court of Elections met. They choose Mr. Endicott Deputy Governor. Messrs. Hathorne and Batter were deputies.

§ One Fairfield, for aggravated unchastity, was sentenced to be severely whipped at Boston and Salem; to have his nostrils slit and seared; to wear a halter visibly about his neck for life; and to be scourged and fined every time he should be seen without it; and be confined at Boston neck on pain of death, if attempting to escape. Some years afterwards, he and his wife and children were permitted to leave the Colony.

|| June 14th. ✓ General Court order that the Selectmen of each Town oversee the parents and masters, who fail to take suitable care of their families and property; and have the children of such persons instructed and employed in working on hemp and flax. ✓ They appoint Mr. Batter on a committee to lay a tax of £800. Salem stood third and was assessed £75. The Court designate the 20th of July as a Fast for the difficulties of the colonies, foul sins broken out among the people, and distractions of England, Ireland, Holland and other kingdoms of Europe. As preparation for foes, they require every town to have one large or several small houses prepared within 6 months for the manufacture

\* Win.

† T. R.

‡ Col. R.

§ Win.

|| Col. R.

of salt petre. They enact, that a Book, introduced to members of their body last session by Wm. Hathorne, written by Richard Saltonstall, and containing arguments against the Standing Council, should be submitted to the Elders for advice. They require each town to send one or two delegates to Salem the 4th of February, for nominating Magistrates to be chosen next Court of Elections.

\* Aug. The profit on merchandize from London to Massachusetts was 16 per. cent.

† Sept. 8th. General Court sits. Messrs. Hathorne and Batter were Deputies. As they understood that there was a conspiracy among the Indians against the colonies, they pass an order to seize the powder and arms of those, who traded with the Indians. They enact that soldiers, disobeying their officers, shall not only be fined, but also be set in the bilboes, or stocks, or be whipped. In view of the continual dangers to which the people were exposed from Indian plots, they make regulations as to alarms, and order "that every town provide a sufficient place for retreat for their wives and children to repair to as likewise to keep safe the ammunition thereof;" that arms be repaired and watches kept from sun set to sun rise. They grant four barrels of powder to Salem. They set wheat and barley at 4s., rye and peas 3s. 4d., and Indian corn 2s. 6d. a bushel, for rates. They clear Mr. Hathorne from further accountability for introducing Mr. Saltonstall's book. Mr. Norris of this place wrote against it, and vindicated the continuance of the Standing Council. The Court say as "oft occasions of trading with the Hollanders at Dutch plantations, the Holland ducatoon at three guilders shall pass current at 6s.; rix dollars at 2 1-2, guilders at 5s. and the rial of 8 at 5s." They designate Mr. Garford to see that each family or several families together in Salem make salt petre at a fair price for pub-

\* Win.

† Col. R.

lic use. They constitute Mr. Endicott and other Magistrates, with the teaching Elders of the six next adjoining towns, the Corporation of Harvard College. They raise a committee to meet in Salem the 3d of January to nominate Magistrates. They appoint the Magistrates and Deputies in and around Boston as a committee to treat with similar bodies from Plymouth, New-Haven, and Connecticut, on the subject of combining against the Indians. \* The Deputies, contrary to custom and wishes of the Magistrates, chose Mr. Rogers of Rowley to preach the Election sermon. An alarm reached this place that the Indians were near Boston. It proved false. On the first of this month the Magistrates had ordered the Indians in the Colony to be disarmed.

1647 Sept. 22d. Fast was appointed because of contention between the King and Parliament, and plots of the Indians. So gloomy were the prospects of the country at this time, many sought other abodes. Some went to the Dutch on Long Island, and others to the West-Indies and England. John Humphrey, who had been a magistrate, and † had united with the Church here Jan. 16th, 1638, was among them. He embarked for England.

‡ Oct. 9th. Among the first class of graduates from Cambridge College, was George, the son of Emanuel Downing. He had been fitted for College by Rev. John Fisk.

§ At this date a vessel of 200 tons, which had been built here during the Summer, appears to have sailed with pipe staves and other commodities for Fayal.

18th. The Elders of this and other towns convened at Ipswich, with reference to Mr. Saltonstall's book. They decided, that it deserved no censure as ill timed, or hurtful, but well intended.

\* Win.

† Col. R.

‡ Holmes.

§ Win.

Dec. 12th. News arrived, that a civil war had commenced between the King and Parliament.

\* In the course of this year, Mr. John Fisk moved to Enon, a part of this place, but afterwards Wenham. He gathered a church, which, on a second trial, were regularly constituted Oct. 8th, 1644. He had a salary not above £40. He gave the congregation ten acres of land. In 1656, he removed to Chelmsford with a majority of his church. † There he was active as a preacher and physician. At the earnest request of his people, he wrote a Catechism for their children. 1671, Feb. 14th, he was called to part with an excellent wife, to whom he had been married in England. So great was her acquaintance with the Bible, she was called "the Concordance." He was remarried to Mrs. Elizabeth Hinchman, the widow of his early friend and countryman, in 1672. After being the guide of his last Congregation for twenty years, he was called to rest from his labours, Jan. 14th, 1676, aged about 75. Gen. John Fisk, of Salem, was his great grandson. He not only seemed, but was an ornament of the religion he taught.

### 1643.

‡ February. On account of civil war in England a Fast was ordered. v

§ 27th. As the General Court had lent £8 to the poor of Salem, it promised to refund the sum "the next Indian corn harvest." 27th. The boundaries were agreed on by committees between Salem and Ipswich. Among the committee for the latter town was Wm. Hubbard, father of the New-England historian.

|| May 3d. General Court assembles. Mr. Endicott was re-elected Deputy Governor. William Hathorne and Edmund Batter were deputies. Dispatches from Parliament gave the Court welcome information,

\* Wenham Ch. R. † History of Chelmsford. ‡ Win. § T. R. || Col. R.



that Colonial vessels might trade with England free of duties. This liberal policy had its intended effect to win the Colonists over to the side of Parliament. The Court choose William Hathorne on a committee of six to meet similar bodies from New-Haven, Connecticut and Plymouth. \* The two first and Massachusetts adopted articles of confederation the 19th. Plymouth did the same Sept. 7th. † Rhode Island was not admitted, because she declined to come under the jurisdiction of Plymouth. They which joined in the confederacy were called United Colonies of New-England. They imitated the Union among the Dutch Provinces in Europe. They were to have their individual jurisdictions distinct and entire. In all matters, whether in peace or war, which related to their general good, they agreed to be governed by the decision of the majority of the commissioners, whom they should choose. Such a coalition had been agitated five years before. It proved useful. It continued till 1686. ‡ The Court require each town to give an account of its males from 16 to 60, commencing the first of August. They order churches to deal with their members who neglect to *become freemen*. ¶ They order that military officers in each town, shall designate the arms, which must be brought to the house of worship on the Sabbath or other seasons of meeting. They grant Enon to be separated from Salem, be called Wenham, and privileged to send a Deputy. They divide Massachusetts into four shires or counties instead of three. The new county, they called Norfolk, which was taken from Essex, and comprised Salisbury, Hampton, Haverhill, Exeter, Dover, Strawberry Bank or Portsmouth. Salisbury became the chief town of Norfolk at the General Court, commencing May 2d, 1649. The towns still constituting Essex were Salem, Lynn, Wenham, Ipswich, Rowley, Newbury, Gloucester, and Chochichawick or

\* Trumbull.

† Chalmers.

‡ Col. R.

**Andover.** The two other counties were Middlesex and Suffolk. The Court appoint June 1st, as a day of humiliation for the sad condition of England. Members of the Court and the Elders were desired to give their views about the *negative vote*, which was confirmed in 1634. Such a vote was exercised by the magistrates with respect to a case, concerning a *sow*, in 1636. The consequence was, that by this year the whole Colony was in a ferment. The deputies and people were earnest for the negative voice of the magistrates to be done away. Those in opposition to them contended, that if they gained their object, the government would become a democracy. To allay the violence of public feeling, the opinion of such, as have been mentioned, was requested. The Court decided, that this part of the Magistrate's oath, "You shall bear true faith and allegiance to our Sovereign Lord, King Charles," should be omitted. The cause assigned, for such a conclusion was, that Charles "had violated the privileges of Parliament and made war upon them, and thereby had lost much of his kingdom and many of his subjects." This shows that Massachusetts and Parliament harmonized in political views. It was, however, to be visited with the scourge of restored Royalty. The Court order, that in the election of Assistants, *Indian Beans* should be used instead of paper, the white to be affirmative and the black negative votes. Among articles for general defence, they require the "*pike and corslet*." They receive a proposal for the choice of Deputies once a year. They renew liberty to settle a village near Ipswich, as granted Sept. 4th, 1639. They make the grant to Messrs. Endicott, Bradstreet, Symonds, Whittingham, William Pain, Robert Pain and others, both of Salem and Ipswich. The village was undoubtedly Topsfield. By remarks, in connexion with the grant, it appears that preaching had been maintained there for two years. The Court assent

that regulations about planting, sowing and "feeding corn fields," shall be amended. They require deputies from Essex and Norfolk, to assemble in Salem to agree on a Serjeant Major General of Massachusetts, and a Serjeant Major for every "Shire or Regiment," and report to the freemen of their respective towns. They order a similar step to be taken in the other two counties. The officers mentioned, were to be chosen at the Court of Elections.

\* June 12th. Lady Deborah Moody, who had purchased Mr. Humphrey's plantation, was admonished by the Church here, († of which she became a member April 5th, 1640,) for denying infant baptism. She held to her opinion. To avoid further difficulty she moved to the Dutch on Long Island, where she exerted considerable influence. She was afterwards excommunicated by the Salem Church. Many others, embracing her ideas on baptism, removed from the Colony and followed her. 53

‡ 19th. Mr. Endicott wrote to Gov. Winthrop, that it was well for La Tour to receive no public aid, until he had cleared up the matter of capturing the pinnace and goods of Mr. Allerton; and that the men with him ought not to examine the fortifications, as they had done. After July 14th, when the principal men of Ipswich wrote so as to grieve Gov. Winthrop, because he was in favour of assisting La Tour, for the object of weakening D'Aulnay, Mr. Endicott sent him a consolatory letter; and in it excuses himself from "coming to Boston about the Dutch business." This business appears to have been in reference to an answer, which Wm. Kieft, the Dutch Governor, requested about some persons from New-Haven, with whom he had difficulty.

§ Sept. 4th. Fifty Elders and some ruling Elders assemble at Cambridge. They sat in the College.

\* Win. Wood. † 1st Ch. R. ‡ Haz. Coll. § Win.

Their chief object was to prevent the introduction of Presbyterianism, especially at Newbury.

\* Oct. 9th. At General Towne Meeting—"It is agreed that Jno. Moore shall have 1-2 peck of corne from every family, and all such as are at their own homes, and such as are better able to bestow more according as God shall enable them. And that Mr. Garford, Mr. Gardner, Thos. Edwards and Hen. Bartholomew, shall receive it here in towne, and Jno. Balch for the Basse river, and Wm. Woodbury for the Mackerel Cove, and Capt. Trask to receive it from the farmers; and all of them to bring in the names of such as have paid and what they have paid, and the corne to be brought in within six weeks; and Mr. Batchelder for Enon."

† Nov. 3d. Samuel Gorton and eight of his followers, who had been brought from their territory near Providence, were condemned for alleged errors of belief and conduct. They were to wear irons, work, and be confined in different towns. If propagating their doctrines or attempting to escape, they were to suffer death. Francis Weston, formerly of this place, was among them. He was confined at Dorchester. Randal Holden, another of them, was confined in this town. As they were found to spread their opinions, they were allowed, March 7th, 1644, to leave the Colony in fourteen days. ‡ Sept. 13, 1646, they came from England, and, by an order from Parliament, were permitted to pass through Massachusetts, and resume their former estates.

§ About the date of their trial, a Lucy Peas, of Salem, was arraigned before the General Court, on the charge of having embraced the sentiments of Gorton. She renounced them and was dismissed.

|| Dec. 1st. Mr. Endicott wrote to Gov. Winthrop, about the exertions he had made to bring Mr. Griffin's

\* T. R.      † Col. R.      ‡ Win.      § Col. R.      || Haz. Col.

men, who were at work on a vessel at Cape Ann, to justice, for immoral conduct. He stated, that he had written to the Rev. Mr. Blinman of that place, on the subject. Among his remarks, he says—"I want much to hear from your son's iron and steel." These articles he was expecting, most probably, from factories of a company, mentioned in the Colony Records, March 7th, 1644, as endowed with great privileges and evidently headed by John Winthrop, jun.

## 1644.

\* January. "The seaven men chosen for the yeare ensuing," were John Endicott, William Hathorne, William Lord, Jeffrey Massey, Peter Palfrey, Thomas Gardner, Henry Bartholomew. They agree, that if any one of them be absent from their meetings, without good excuse, he shall pay 4s.

† March 7th. General Court convenes. Messrs. Downing and Hathorne were Deputies. The Court agree that the Magistrates and Deputies shall have sessions apart; that each body may present its bills and orders to the other; that an act of one, dissented to by the other, shall be void; and that if a bill be accepted by both it shall be engrossed, and, on the last day of the session, be read deliberately and receive a full concurrence. They allow Marblehead to fortify itself, and grant it two guns and ammunition.

‡ 25th. Every inhabitant is required to provide himself with a house ladder. About this date, "it is ordered that whosoever shall take any wolfe by trapes or falls, within the lymits of Salem, shall have for every such wolfe so taken, 30s.; and for every wolfe, that is killed by gunnes or pceeces, there shall be 15s. paid." 30th. The votes for Sergeant Major of the County were ordered to be forwarded for Ipswich.

§ May 29th. General Court sits. Mr. Endicott

\* T. R.

† Col. R.

‡ T. R.

§ Col. R.

was chosen Governor. Messrs. Hathorne and Downing were Deputies. William Hathorne was elected Speaker of the Deputies. Such an office appears to have now commenced. The Legislature appoint Messrs. Downing and Hathorne, of this place, and Robert Bridges, of Lynn, associates for the Quarterly Court. They choose, as successors to Messrs. Winthrop and Dudley, Messrs. Bradstreet and Hathorne, commissioners, to meet with those of the other Colonies, at Hartford, 5th of September. As divisions were taking place in reference to the King and Parliament, the Court state, that the Parliament were only "against the malignant papists and delinquents," of England, but not the King, and, therefore, they forbid any to declare themselves for the King against the Parliament. \* There was a strong party among the Deputies to make Essex the seat of government, instead of Suffolk. They were defeated by the Assistants. The Deputies exerted themselves to choose a Board for transacting public business in the recess of General Court, and thus assign to them the duties, which had been performed by the Magistrates. But in this they were also foiled.

About June 1st, an adjourned meeting of Magistrates and Elders took place in Salem, in reference to La Tour. They were much disposed to favour him; but concluded to request some explanations of his rival D'Aulnay, before they should decide. There are few more romantic portions of history than that which relates the enmity, stratagems, combats and adventures of these two French chiefs. Another case of general interest before the Magistrates and Elders, was the capture of a vessel, in Boston harbour, from Bristol, a port in favour of the King, by Capt. Stagg, in a ship of 24 guns, from London, commissioned by Parliament. A majority of them decided that he might retain his

\* Win.

prize. ✓ They pass sentence of death on one Franklin, of Roxbury, for being the means of a charity boy's death, who had come from England last year. He was executed, though he had his case, at a previous trial, put over till another Quarter Court of Assistants. ✓  
 28th. At a special General Court, measures were adopted to lessen the perilous misunderstanding, which existed between the Magistrates and Deputies, about the former's right to act as they had done in Colonial affairs, when the latter were not in session.

\* July 7th. "Ordered, that twoe be appointed every Lord's day to walk forth in time of God's worshippe, to take notice of such as either lye about the meeting house, without attending to the word or ordinances, or that lye at home or in the fields without giving good account thereof, and to take the names of such persons, and to present them to the magistrate, whereby they may be accordingly proceeded against."

† Aug. 27th. An order was issued that the house, formerly occupied by Mr. Skelton, should be taken down, lest it should fall on the children and cattle. Joseph Belknap was presented for not permitting his child to be baptized, and ordered to be imprisoned in Boston. The same person, Nov. 30th, 1651, was presented for leaving the meeting house in time of baptism.

‡ Sept. 30th. ✓ "Ordered that a note be published on next Lecture day, that such as have children to be kept at school would bring in their names and what they will give for one whole year, and also that if any poore body hath children or a childe, to be put to schoole, and not able to pay for their schooling, that the towne will pay it by a rate. ✓"

§ Oct. 13th. Richard Davenport was chosen commander of the Castle in Boston Harbour. His commission was made out by General Court, July, 1645. 30th. General Court made Salem the shire town of

Essex. They order the County Courts to have the Indians taught the knowledge and worship of God and to be civilized. They pass a law against the Anabaptists, which required them to be banished, unless they renounced their opinions. \*The Assistants had enacted a similar law previously. †As suggested by the Commissioners of the United Colonies, the Court request the Deputies and Elders to use their influence, that every family allow one peck of corn or 12d. in money, or other commodity, to be sent into the Treasurer of Cambridge College, or where in Boston or Charlestown, he shall appoint. ✓Salem, being one of the twelve towns, which had not received their share of Mr. Andrews' donation, the Court order for it £5 or a cow. They require that Mr. Downing be credited for money paid into the Treasury, and that he give an account of the children taken into the ship and their names, and also where they were landed and to whom they were delivered. It appears by this, that he was agent for the benevolent individuals of London, ‡who in 1643 sent over twenty poor children and were going to transport more by means of money contributed for such a purpose. ✓§ He was appointed to obtain charges from England against Thomas Morton, who had returned to Massachusetts, and been tried for his conduct while absent. This person was imprisoned about a year, fined £100, which he was unable to pay, and then released. He went to Agamenticus in Maine, and there died in obscurity. Replies from the Elders to questions about the power of Magistrates and Deputies, were read before the Court. They were approved. They became a means of calming the violence of animosity, which had prevailed, and of affording to the government greater definiteness and strength.

\* Win.

† Col. R.

‡ Win.

§ Col. R.



1645.

\* Feb. 3d. Commoners were raised concerning the ground and marsh on Winter Island. ✓ "Ordered and agreed, that all such as God firres up their hearts to contribute to the advancement of learning, for the maintayning of poore skollers at the Colledge, at Cambridge, that they bringe into Mr. Price, within one month, what they please to give, and to enter their names with Mr. Fogge, and what they give or contribute." Salem gave land in Marblehead to aid the College. ✓

† April. Mr. Downing, being in England and his family at meeting on the Sabbath, had a house and its contents consumed. This building was on his farm. The loss was £200.

‡ 7th. Wm. Clark chosen to keep the Town Ordinary.

§ 13th. Governor and Assistants received intelligence, that D'Aulnay had taken a vessel from this place, commanded by Joseph Grafton, because she was bound with provisions to the fort of La Tour; that he had turned her crew upon an Island, kept them there ten days, when the snow was deep, destitute of fire, and only covered with an old wigwam; that he then sent them away in a shallop, without gun or compass. The next day, after leaving the Island, they were pursued by hostile Indians. The Governor and Assistants sent a request to D'Aulnay to give up the vessel and cargo. They agreed to relinquish Mr. Norris from preaching the Election sermon, lest greater difficulty should be made between them and the Deputies, who had chosen Mr. Norton for such a service. They concluded to give up their negative voice, on condition that the Deputies did not exceed them in number, and that the Deputies were "prime men of the country." This matter was laid before the towns. It was reject-

\* T. R.

† Win.

‡ T. R.

§ Win.

ed by most of them. An objection of the Magistrates to the present number of Deputies was, that they uselessly prolonged the General Courts, and had made the public expense for one session over £200. ✓

\* May 3d. General Court assemble. Mr. Endicott was succeeded as Governor by Mr. Dudley. He was chosen an Assistant and Serjeant Major General of the Colony. William Hathorne and Henry Bartholomew were Deputies. The Court order, that youth, from 10 to 16 years old, shall be trained by an officer of each company on muster days, in the use of small guns, half pikes, and also of *bows* and *arrows*, lest the Colony should be destitute of powder. They invited individuals of every town to purchase shares in an Iron Work Company, commenced two years before with funds from England, brought over by John Winthrop, jun. They enact, that any person, making and publishing false reports, shall be fined 10s. or put in the stocks; and for the second offence have the fine doubled or be whipped. As woollen cloth was scarce on account of the European wars, and many had suffered for want of it, the Court require each town to preserve and increase its sheep; and that friends of the Colony, who should be coming from England, be written to, and desired to bring over all the sheep they could. For tonnage or anchorage of foreign vessels, they assess 6d. a ton. Winthrop tells us, that this regulation was soon altered, as to vessels under the Parliament's flag, because they had taken all imposts from the Colony's vessels. The Court allow Jeffrey's Creek to be called Manchester. They raised County committees for drawing up a body of laws and presenting them for consideration next session. The Essex committee were six, of whom was William Hathorne. The Court chose six commissioners to see about "the French business." Mr. Hathorne was one of them. The Court received a petition

\* Col. R.

from Messrs. Endicott, Hathorne, Lothrop, Dixy and Clark, of this town, and others of Lynn, to form a company for promoting the "military art." They were similarly petitioned from other towns. They laid a rate of £616 15. Salem's part was £45, and it stood fourth. They allow the tax to be paid in cattle, beaver, money, or wheat at 4s., barley 4s6. rye and peas 3s6, corn 2s8 a bushel. It appears from their records, that Mr. Endicott's salary, as Governor, for the last year was £100.

\* About this time, as there was more encouragement abroad than at home for young men of education, Francis, son of Mr. Higginson, and George, son of Mr. Downing, leave Salem. ✓ The former, † who had united with the Church here, April 14th, 1639, ‡ went to England, Holland, East Indies, and thence back to Europe. He settled as minister at Kirby Steven, of England. The latter person, who was born in London, and about 20, departed by way of Newfoundland, to several ports in the West-Indies. After preaching in these places and receiving several calls, he went to England; there he was soon employed as chaplain to the regiment of Col. Okey. Entering on a career, attended with many circumstances to try his talents, attainments and principles, George Downing may receive the following notice. § 1653, Sept., he was Commissary General. 1654, he was married to Miss Howard, of very honourable connexions. 1655, Aug. as Secretary to John Thurloe, who was Secretary to Cromwell, he visited the French King on public business and communicated his instructions in Latin. 1656, he was a member of Parliament from Scotland. || 1657, Dec., Cromwell highly recommended him as an ambassador to Holland. ¶ 1658, his exertions were many, various, great and influential as ambassador in Netherlands. De Thou, minister from France, had

Win. † 1st Ch. R. ‡ Win. § Thurloe. || Milton's works. ¶ Thurloe.

much to do with him, and respected his diplomatic abilities. July 12, Downing writes to his government, that De Thou was anxious to have the picture of Cromwell as a special favour. 19th, he had endeavoured to prevent the English at the Hague from praying for Charles Stuart. This so displeased the Queen of Bohemia, she said, that she would worship no more with them. It, also, like to have cost him his life; for three of his own countrymen watched to kill him one evening, but they were unsuccessful. Aug. 9th, he writes, that he had warm debates with De Witt concerning the English ships, captured by the Dutch in the India seas. Sept. 20th, he greatly deplores in a letter to Thurloe, the death of Cromwell. Oct. 25th, he writes from the Hague that the friends of Charles expected that he would come to the crown of England. He had continually watched and made known to his government the plans of the Royalists on the Continent. 1660, Feb. 21st, he appears at the Hague as Envoy extraordinary from Richard Cromwell. He was employed in bringing about a peace between Denmark and Sweden; and in ascertaining the views and proceedings of the friends to Charles II. \* May 22d, Mr. Downing was made a Knight. 1661, May 8th, he assembles with Parliament from Morpeth of Northumberland. About this time, he was sent with a Royal commission as ambassador to Holland. † 1662, March, he procured the arrest of Okey, Corbet and Barkstead, at Delft, and sent them as prisoners to England, that they might be tried as Regicides. The first of these was commander of the regiment, in which Downing was chaplain, and was said to have been his friend; and all three had co-operated with him in the cause of Parliament. ‡ 1663, July, he was created a Baronet. 1667, May 27th, Pepys informs us, that Mr. Downing was chosen Secretary of the Treasury Commissioners.

\* Pepys Ath. Oxonienses.

† Pepys,

‡ Ath. Oxonienses.

1668, Dec. 27th, the same writer states, that Mr. Downing discoursed about having given advice to Charles II. for prosecuting the Dutch War, but that his Majesty had harkened to other counsellors and thus subjected the Nation to loss. \* 1672, March 4th, a letter of this date stated, that Mr. Downing, having returned from Holland before called, was imprisoned in the Tower. He appears to have been freed and restored to Royal favour. In the difficulties, which the Colonies had with Charles II., about 1680, Mr. Downing is represented as having been very friendly to them. He died in 1684, aged about 59. He was brother in law to Gov. Bradstreet, and corresponded with him. He was evidently a person of respectable talents. The responsible trusts committed to him under different administrations, show that he was no ordinary statesman. Whatever government he served, whether of Parliament, the Cromwells, or Charles II. he did it with faithfulness. The deed of his apprehending those, who had fought for the same cause with him, is a dark spot on his reputation. Could his own defence of this affair be read, he would probably state, that it was a command of his Majesty and he must obey him, though at the cost of ruin to his friends. But still it would have been far more for his fame, had he said : Sire, spare me in this thing, though at the expense of all my honors and treasures, yea, my life itself. In reference to his serving diligently the various governments under which he fell, there is no conclusive proof, that he was a greater friend to tyranny than freedom. Nor should such a fact be used so severely against him, as it appears to have been. Because the hand may be prevented by the head from reaching the gem, for which it has striven, it is not, therefore, expected to cease its endeavours for the benefit of the body.

↑ July 3d. The General Court, being informed that

\* Hutch.

† Col. R.

Salem had no drum to give an alarm, and thus lives were endangered, order that they should get two good ones within eight weeks on penalty of £5.

\* 8th. Townsend Bishop was presented for turning his back on the ordinance of baptism. He was referred to the Elders for conviction of his errors. This person appears to have been a useful townsman. He had been a Commissioner of the Quarterly Court, Deputy to General Court several times, and sustained other respectable offices. He was undoubtedly a sufferer for his opinions about the subjects and mode of baptism. † He appears to have left Salem soon after this prosecution; for Messrs. Moulton and Shafin, his agents, sold off his estate 1646.

‡ Aug. 12th. General Court require a military guard to be kept in every town against the surprise of Indians. As war had been declared by the Commissioners against the Narragansets, the Court order the constables of each town to see, that the harvests of those, impressed to serve in the war, are carefully preserved. They appoint the 28th as a Fast for prevailing sins, contentions in England, and a blessing on the troops sent and going against the Indians. The soldiers here referred to had no occasion for fighting, because the Narragansets submitted to terms of peace by the 30th. Oct. 4th. At an adjournment of General Court, they, considering Salem as exposed to sudden attacks on the sea board, and that William Trask, Captain of the company, resided at too great a distance, appointed William Hathorne his successor, and William Clark, Lieutenant, and William Dixy, Ensign. At the same time, they highly commended Capt. Trask for his services to the country. They request the Elders of every shire to use means for the civilization and christian knowledge of the Indians. They excuse the Village on Ipswich River, called New Meadows, from paying taxes, because they

\* Qt. Ct. R.

† Reg. Rec.

‡ Col. R.

supported preaching, though not formed into a Church. They received a petition of seven persons, among whom was William Hathorne, for a "company of adventurers." The petitioners requested that the proprietors might be enlarged as need should be; that whatever trade they might discover in three years should be for their sole advantage twenty years; that they might have letters with the public seal to the French or others, as occasion should demand; have a *Caravan* advanced up the country as far as they desired; have no other trading house within twenty miles from theirs; and place their establishment fifty miles or more from every English Plantation. 18th. General Court, in order to lessen the Colony's expense, recommend each town to pay its own Deputies, and each Shire the charges of its own Magistrates; and that the General Court be held in every shire town.

\* 28th. Robert Gotta was voted the first £5, given by Mr. Andrews, for purchasing a cow or heifer; and 29th, the second £5, for the same object, to John Batchelder.

Nov. 16th. The town voted, "that half a dozen or four beeches or hounds, shall be brought out of England and the chardges come by the towne."

#### 1646.

† Jan. 26th. "Ordered and agreed, that all the towne's men and freemen shall meet everie second day for four weeks together, now following, to consider of the public good of the towne."

‡ Feb. 12th. William Clark was fined for keeping a shuffling board in his ordinary. There were various cases of different dates in reference to playing on such a board. 18th. John Wood was presented for holding the doctrine of the Anabaptists, and for withholding his children from baptism.

\* T. R.

† T. R.

‡ Q. Ct. R.

\* March 5th. Elders of the United Colonies met at Cambridge. Their object was to consider answers to many publications, sent over from England in favour of Anabaptism and Presbyterianism.

† May 6th. General Court convenes. Messrs. Bartholomew and Hathorne were Deputies. The latter was chosen Speaker, and served till October. Mr. Endicott, continued an Assistant, was again elected Serjeant Major-General, and also one of the United Commissioners. ‡ These persons who had been chosen by the Legislature, were now elected by the freemen. Mr. Norris preached the Election sermon. § The Court allow John Bourn to set up a cook shop here, but not to sell beer above 1d. a quart. They enact, that no more than a member and his *horse* shall be maintained. It seems from this, that members of their body may have had, while in session, some of their families boarded and lodged at the public expense. 15th. The Court, in accordance with advice from England and for having settled views of baptism in the Colony, call an assembly of Elders and Magistrates to convene at Cambridge 1st of September. They order, that the Body of Laws, presented by the Committee, should be transcribed and each of the committee look over another's copy, and meet at Salem or Ipswich by the 10th of August, so as to prepare a report for next session. Three commissioners, one of them Mr. Hathorne, were appointed to treat with D'Aulnay about his complaints. Instructions were to be drawn up for these commissioners by a committee of five, among whom was Mr. Endicott. || During this session, Mr. Downing of Salem, and others, petitioned for a relaxation of the laws respecting Anabaptists and the conditions of freemanship. As a law in reference to the last subject was under consideration, they were not heard. The

• Win.    † Col. R.    ‡ Win.    § Col. R.    || Win.



substance of their request was sent over to Parliament by its supporters.

\* June 29th. "Ordered that there shall be no burial within the towne but that there shall be word given to the keep of the meeting house to ring the bell whereby notice may be given to the town thereof a litle before the burial. And the said keep to have 3d. for his paynes." Weights and measures were required to be brought to the Marshal for being sealed.

† Aug. 4th. Thomas Dexter was charged with sleeping at meeting, and slighting the ordinance of baptism. He was fined. The wife of Mr. Bowditch was presented for withdrawing from the ordinance of Baptism. Her name was probably Sarah, ‡ who joined the Church May 10th, 1640, and was excommunicated (most likely for being an Anabaptist.) § Sept. 1st. The Synod being assembled, it appeared, that the churches of Boston, Salem, and a few other towns, had declined to be represented. The chief reason of their absence was that they did not approve of the manner, in which the Synod had been called. This ecclesiastical body sat fourteen days and adjourned to the 8th of June.

|| 24th. Mr. Endicott, as one of the Commissioners, signed a reply to the complaints of the Dutch Governor, and a recommendation that "poor scholars" be employed in the country, that they might be encouraged to live at home.

¶ Oct. 26th. "Ordered, that William Woodbridge, Richard Brackenbury, Ensign Dixy, Mr. Conant, Lieut. Lothrop, shall forthwith lay out a way between the ferry at Salem and the head of Jeffreys Creek, and that it be such a way as men may travel on horseback or drive cattle; or if such a way may not be formed, then to take speedy course to sett up a bridge at Mackerel Cove."

\* T. R. † Qt. Ct. R. ‡ 1st Ch. Rec. § Win. || Haz. Coll. ¶ T. R.

\*Nov. 4th. General Court convenes. They order a fast on Dec. 24th, for the hazardous state of England, and condition of the Bermuda Church, and difficulties of Church and State among themselves, both of which, say they, some strive to undermine. They recommend to every society, having but one minister, to employ a poor student, that he may improve his gifts and prepare for usefulness. ✓ They <sup>pass a law</sup> pass a law against man-tealing, and order that two Africans, forcibly brought into the Colony, shall be sent home at the public expense. ✓ To manifest "utter disaffection to arbitrary government," they appoint a committee to revise the body of laws, handed in from the county committees. They require men of good report and ability to be selected as retailers of liquor. They license Wm. Clark to keep an ordinary for £15. † About Dec. he was arraigned before the Court of Assistants, for having been very active in obtaining subscribers for a petition to his Majesty's Commissioners in England, against some of the Colony's laws. He was bound to answer at the next General Court. He must have died before May 27th, 1647, as his widow was then allowed to keep his ordinary. ✓ The Court tax estates at 1d. on 20s. They lay the poll tax at 20d, and require every mechanic, able to earn 18d. a day, to pay 20d. and also 4s. a year. They excused the lame and sick from rates. ✓ They forbid any to swear on the penalty of 10s. or any Indian to powaw. They enact, that every person denying the doctrines of the Gospel, shall pay 20s. in six months; and, if endeavouring to propagate views contrary to such doctrines, shall be fined £5. They enact, that any person unnecessarily absent from worship on the Sabbath shall pay 5s., and if renouncing the Church, state, ministry, and ordinances, on pretence of being spiritually illuminated, shall be fined 10s. a month. They order that if any interrupt and

\* Col. R.

† Win.

oppose a preacher in season of worship, they shall be reproved by a Magistrate on lecture day; and for a repetition of their offence, shall pay £5, or stand two hours on a block four feet high, with the following inscription in capitals on his breast: "A wanton Gospeller." They enact, that children above 16 years, which shall curse their orderly parents, shall be put to death, and that a rebellious son shall suffer a similar punishment. They order that gamesters forfeit treble of what they play. They instruct the Elders to choose, at the Court of Elections, two ministers annually for the purpose of instructing the Indians. In connexion with this it may be well to state, that the Court at their session, commencing 26th of the following May, allowed John Elliot £10 for having taught the Indians in religion, from the £20, granted by Lady Armine for so worthy an object.

## 1647.

\* January. By the middle of this month, the vessels at Marblehead had caught, for the season of their fares, about £1,000 worth of fish. About the latter part of March, a barn with corn and hay, was consumed in Salem by lightning.

† May 17th. The births, marriages and deaths were required to be noticed in the Town Records. This order was imperfectly complied with.

‡ May 26th. General Court assembles. Thomas Lothrop and Jacob Barney were Deputies. As the game of shuffle board was very prevalent and hurtful, the Court order it to be discontinued on fine of 20s. for keeper and 5s. for player. They enact, that persons who should take horses to ride without liberty, a custom oppressively common, should pay treble damages.

§ June. An epidemic spread through the whole country. It seems to have been the catarrhus a conta-

\* Win.

† T. R.

‡ Col. R.

§ Win.

gio, or influenza of our day. About this date, an order was issued for commercial towns, and Salem was among them, to see that vessels coming from ports in the West Indies, infected with a plague, rode quarantine.

\* September 30th. "Mr. George Corwin and William Lord have undertaken to provide stone and clay for repairs of the meeting house, and to bring it or cause it to be brought in place the next week. Mr. Corwin hath promised to provide speedily for covering of the meeting house five *hundred nails*, and is promised to be paid for them to his content." The seven men promise to pay £5 for the transportation of Margaret Page to England, in Mr. Willoughby's ship or some other. This woman had given the town considerable trouble.

† October 27. General Court sits. As Thomas Lothrop, Deputy from this place, was bound to sea, they excused him. They allowed the people at Mackerel Cove to be free from watching at Salem, except in seasons of danger. At their session, in October, they requested the Synod to draw up a confession of faith. To comply with this request, the Synod chose a committee of seven, among whom was Mr Norris. His being thus chosen shows, that however the Church here delayed at first to take part in the Synod, they did afterwards. The Court order every town, consisting of fifty householders, to have a school for reading and writing, and of one hundred families, to have a Grammar School, so as to fit scholars for College. They enact, that if any young man attempt to address a young woman, without consent of her parents, or, in case of their absence, of the *County Court*, he shall be fined £5, for the first offence, £10 for the second, and imprisonment for the third. They require that members of Churches, who decline to take the oath of

\* T. R.

† Col. R.

Freemen, lest they might be called on to perform public service, shall not be excused from such service, and if refusing to discharge an office appointed them, shall be fined not above 20s. They suspend the law which had been passed, but not enforced, for having one Deputy from a town instead of two. They order that weights and measures shall be of the same standard throughout the Colony. They enact, that wives who have husbands and husbands who have wives in England, should go home on account of some irregularities. As respectable gentlemen had sent many of their dissipated children to this country to be reformed among their friends, and as these children, by being credited, indulged their evil propensities, the Court forbid any person, under 21 years of age, to be trusted. They state that wheat at 4s6. barley 4s. rye and peas 3s6. Indian corn 3s. a bushel, may be taken for rates.

\* In the course of this year the Town Bridge from Boston was built.

## 1648.

† March 23d. An order from the Colony Treasurer, Richard Russel, to the Constable of Salem, was recorded. It required that the people here should choose freemen the next August, to be united with the Selectmen, for taking a list of the males above 16, and a valuation of estates.

‡ May 10th. General Court assembles. Messrs Downing and Hathorne were Deputies. Mr. Endicott was continued an Assistant, Serjeant Major General, and a Commissioner of the Colony. As grain was exceedingly scarce, being only enough for two months, the Court forbid its transportation. § The price of it, however, did not rise more than 12d. The reason of its being so scarce was that it had been plentifully transported to the West Indies, Portuguese and Spanish

\* Bentley.

† T. R.

‡ Col. R.

§ Win.

**Islands.** \* As Mr. Downing's farm, on the road between Lynn and Ipswich, was a convenient place for an ordinary, his servant was allowed to keep one. After considering the method of discovering Witches in England, the Court<sup>\*</sup> inquired for the best method in the Colony. † This appears to have been with reference to the lamentable fact, that they had arraigned and condemned Margaret Jones of Charlestown, for witchcraft. This unhappy woman was accordingly executed. ‡ The Court order, that if a dog kill a sheep, it shall be hanged and its owner pay double damages. They allow the village at New Meadows to be called Topsfield. They grant 550 acres of land to Mr. Endicott, 250 to Mr. Hathorne, and 250 to Captain Trask. They require that both black and white peag or wampom, in order to be current, shall be free from fractures and spots, and be on strings.

About this time, John Balch, another of the original planters, died. He came from Bridgewater, Somersetshire, in England. He had two wives. § The former Margaret, with himself, is recorded among the first members of the Church. The latter was Agnes. || 1636, January 25th, he was granted 200 acres of land at the head of Bass River. This land was cultivated by him and was the place of his death. He sustained various trusts of the town, such as selectman and surveyor. He appears to have possessed the qualifications of resolution, perseverance, integrity and intelligence, necessary to the founders and guides of a new community. He left three sons, ¶ on one of them, named John, an inquest was required to be held June 24, 1662, who according to creditable tradition, was drowned in crossing the Ferry to what is now Beverly, during a violent storm. An inquest was ordered at the same time on Henry Bartholomew (most likely for the same reason.)

\* Col. R. † Win. ‡ Col. R. § 1st Ch. R. || Town Grants. ¶ Qt. Ct. R.

\* September 30. A letter from Gov. Winthrop to his son John, informs him that his uncle Downing, of this place, was beginning to *distil*; that Mr. Endicott had discovered a *copper* mine on his own land, which had been tested by Mr. Leader, overseer of the Iron works at Lynn.

† Dec. 10th. A Clerk of the Market was chosen.

‡ This year a bridge was made across Forrest River, above Gardner's mills.

## 1649.

§ February 1st. Salem voted that Marblehead, by consent of General Court, might become a separate town. The former reserved the right of regulating the Ferry and Ferry-men. At this date, Marblehead had || 44 families. Mr. Walton was then preaching for them. He was with them ¶ November 14, 1638, when he was granted eight acres of land "on the maine. \*\*He continued in the ministry with them till his decease, 1668. A few weeks before his death, Mr. Cheever preached for them and continued so to do till his ordination, August 13, 1684, and afterwards till May 29, 1724; when he died, aged 85. †† The territory of Marblehead was once inhabited by George Saggamore, a Sachem, and according to an ancient custom of the Indians, the fee was in him; which by deed, from his relations, of July 16, 1684, was vested in Marblehead.

‡‡ 23d. Thomas Rowell was fined 5s. and 2s6. court fees, for neglecting to attend worship on *lecture* day. Richard Window was presented for living from his wife. He was dismissed because he had sent for her.

§§ May 2d. General Court sits. The lamented and worthy Winthrop, having died March 26th, Mr Endicott succeeded him as Governor. Messrs Hathorne and Bartholomew were Deputies. The Court allowed

\* Win. † T. R. ‡ Bentley. § T. R. || Marblehead T. R. ¶ Salem Grants.

\*\* Marblehead T. R. †† Natick Records. ‡‡ Qt. Ct. R. §§ Col. R.

the people here to alter a highway and landing from the head of Bass River to Draper's Point. They permit Marblehead to become a town. They appoint William Hathorne and Emanuel Downing, Associate Judges of the Quarterly Court. They forbid peag to be received for rates. They order the selectmen of each town, to provide powder and bullets for the soldiers. They require the result of the Synod to be laid before the churches, for examination. \* 10th. The Governor, Deputy, and Assistants, declare themselves against wearing long hair, and call on the Elders to use means for its not being worn by members of their churches. This regulation was considered by them as a matter of some importance because required by an Apostle. Mr. Rogers, of Rowley, when preaching before the Synod and the General Court, June 9, 1646, took their side. An act, under September 3, 1634, forbid the wearing of long hair. In England, 1641, the favourers of Parliament, were called Roundheads, because they wore short hair. The principal reason for such views, on both sides of the Atlantic, was a literal adherence to the Scriptures in many particulars. In accordance with such use, there can be no wonder, that Mr. Endicott and his associates should have done as they did. Not a few writers, in our land, mention the protest against long hair as having originated with him, when in fact the views it expressed, had been for years prevailing, and were not only cherished in the Colony but also in England.

† September 11th. Matthew Stanley was tried for drawing the affections of John Tarbox's daughter, without the consent of her parents. He was fined £5, fees 2s6. and 6s. for three days' attendance by her parents. In this month, three married women, were fined 5s. a piece for *scolding*.

\* Hutch.

\* Qt. Ct. R.



\* November 26th. The town agree that 200 acres of upland, which had been taken from Mr. Downing's farm, should be restored to him, in consideration of his pains for transcribing the Town Records, for the use of posterity, so that the said farm should be 500 acres according to his former grant.

## 1650.

† February 10th. Members of the Church here, who lived on Bass River, or Cape Ann side, requested of the other brethren, that they might have preaching among themselves. The reason they assigned for such an application, was crossing the water at the ferry and other inconveniences.

‡ 26th, Henry Bartholomew was chosen Clerk of the Quarterly Court at £5 a year, and Samuel Archer, Marshal, at the same compensation.

§ May 22d. General Court convenes. Mr. Endicott was elected Deputy Governor. Hutchinson states, that he was chosen Governor. Many respectable authors have followed his mistake. Messrs. Bartholomew and Hathorne were Deputies. The latter was speaker till October. June 22d. The Court request that the Platform of Church Discipline may be reconsidered by every Church.

|| Sept. 22d. The brethren on Bass River renewed their request. Oct. 2d. They received liberty to "look out some able and approved teacher," to serve them in the ministry, but still to commune with the Salem Church.

¶ Oct. 16th. A majority of General Court order a book, lately imported from England, and composed by William Pinchon, of Springfield, on Redemption and Justification, to be burnt in Boston Market, and its author be called to an account. The Deputies from Salem and four others dissented. The Court allow

· T. R. † Beverly Ch. R. ‡ Qt. Ct. R. § Col. R. || Beverly Ch. R. ¶ Col. R.

Topsfield to become a town. \* Mr. Knight was their first preacher. Creditable tradition informs us, that his successor was William Perkins, † who was born in England 1607, and died at Topsfield, May 21st, 1682, aged 75. He appears to have ceased preaching here before the ordination of his successor, Mr. Thomas Gilbert, in 1664. This person was in the ministry at Topsfield, as late as September 1671. ‡ He died at Charlestown, October 28th, 1673.

1651.

§ May 7th. General Court sat. Mr. Endicott was chosen Governor. Messrs. Hathorne and Bartholomew were Deputies. The Court forbid dancing at taverns, on penalty of 5s. In compliance with an act of Parliament, passed October 3d, 1650, they forbid trade with Barbadoes, Bermudas, Virginia and Ontego, which had declared for the King. In their address to Parliament the following session, they state, that this measure was greatly to their detriment. They fine Mr. Mathews for preaching error and settling at Malden, without approbation from them and the Elders, £10, as he gave no satisfaction for such acts. They also require the Church there to answer for receiving Mr. Mathews as their minister. The Deputies from Salem and thirteen others dissented in these two cases. In addition, the Malden Church were fined £50, Oct. 14th. The Court grant William Hathorne, for his public services, 400 acres of land near the 600 allowed Mr. Downing, between Hampton and the mouth of Piscataqua River, for £50, which the Country owed him. Richard Leader was tried for defaming Mr. Endicott and the Church at Lynn. He acknowledged his error and was fined £50. William Hathorne and three others dissented in this matter. Mr. Leader had his fine remitted, Oct. 14th. This person was spoken

\* Mather. † Qt. Ct. R. ‡ Mather. § Col. R.

highly of by Governor Winthrop as superindendant of the Lynn Iron Works. The Court tried Mary Parsons, of Springfield, for being a *Witch*, and murdering her child. They had not evidence sufficient for the first charge. On the second they condemned her to death. As Mr. Pinchon had conferred with Messrs. Norris, Cotton, and Norton, and confessed to the Court, that he was wrong in some opinions of his book, they allowed him to return to his family; but required him to appear before them, Oct. 14th, when Mr. Norton's reply to his statements was to be ready.

• This reply was presented next session and ordered for England to be printed. The Court appointed June 18th, as a fast for the prevalence of *Witchcraft*, erroneous opinions in the Colony, and of distractions in England. They required objections to the Church discipline of the Synod to be left with Mr. Cotton; and him to lay them before the Elders and Churches, that they might be cleared up by the next session.

\* June 24th. William Wake was presented for living away from his wife, who was in England. John Williams was ordered to return to his wife by September, on penalty of £20. Such cases as these were not unfrequent.

† July 20th. Obadiah Holmes, for attending a Baptist meeting at Lynn on Sunday, was apprehended, with John Clark, from Rhode Island. He was tried by the Assistant Court and fined £30. For declining to pay this, he was publicly whipped in Boston. He had resided in Salem. ‡ January, 1638, one acre of land near the glass house was granted him. § March 24, 1640, he joined the Church here, whence he was excommunicated, evidently for joining the baptists.

|| Oct. 14th. General Court approve the Confession of Faith and Church Discipline, as amended after their formation by the Synod. They were plainly not

\* Qt. Ct. R.    † Allen.    ‡ T. R.    § 1st Church R.    || Col. R.

so soon completed as writers of our early history represent. The Court allow commerce with the prohibited ports, on condition that Sir George Ayscue succeed in capturing them, with Parliamentary forces. ✓ They enact, that if any males, of less property than £200, wear gold or silver lace or buttons, or points at their knees, or walk in *great boots* (because leather is scarce) ; and any females, not possessed of £200, wear silk or tiffany hoods or scarfs ; they shall be prosecuted and fined. ✓ They petition Parliament that they might be excused from taking out a new Patent, as the latter had proposed, and be allowed to act under their old one. They address Cromwell, and requested him not to press his invitation, for some of the Colonists to move and settle in Ireland. They inform him that their trade consisted in corn, beef, pork, masts, clapboards, pipe staves, fish, beaver, otter, and other commodities.

\* Nov. 15th. The person, having the care of the meeting house, was instructed to give notice of the meetings by ringing the bell.

† 27th. William Witter was presented, for neglecting public ordinances and being rebaptized.

## 1652.

‡ Jan. 16th. " William Lord, of Salem, cutler, hath given and granted unto Edward Norris, Emanuel Downing, Captain Hathorne, Henry Bartholomew, Robert Turner, Joseph Grafton and John Brown, forever, his dwelling house, with the barn and backhouses thereunto belonging, for and to the use of the Church of Salem, after the death of his wife or second marriage, which shall first happen."

April 17th. Ned, an Indian of Ipswich, mortgages to Henry Bartholomew, for £30, all his land, about eight miles square on the further side of Merrimack

\* T. R.

† Qt. Ct. R.

‡ Registry Rec.

River, lying about 8 or ten miles from Andover. This Indian appears to have been involved in debt, years afterwards, from cases in the records of Ipswich Quarterly Court.

\* May 26th. General Court convenes. Mr. Endicott was elected Governor. Messrs. Hathorne and Bartholemew were Deputies. The Court order, that a denial of the Scriptures to be the Word of God, shall be punished with a fine of £50, or with whipping; and a second offence of the kind, with punishment of death. They require, because the government had been greatly abused, that all settled inhabitants should take an oath of fidelity, and that strangers "keep the peace." They repeal the law of the magistrate's negative vote, and agree that a majority of both houses shall decide any question before them. ✓ To prevent deception in money, they order that after September none of it shall be current (except the receiver consent,) unless it be 12d, 6d, and 3d pieces, coined in the mint house, which is to be located in Boston. They grant liberty for all bullion, plate or Spanish coin, to be brought into the mint, and there be melted and brought to the alloy of sterling silver by John Hull. The pieces prepared by him are to have N. E. on one side and XII, VI, III, according to their value, on the other. The mint master was to have 1-20 of all he stamped. ✓ The Court pay Mr. Endicott 100 marks for serving as Governor last year. If these were English marks, each of them was 13s. 4d. sterling. They would make but a small salary, compared with the compensation now allowed for such an office.

June 11th. John Leverett, Messrs. Hathorne and Bartholemew, were appointed Commissioners to visit Maine and declare it to be under Massachusetts. † This they did July 9th. At the same time, there was a protest by some against this step. ‡ The most of

\* Col. R.

† T. R.

‡ Hutch.

Maine this year, and soon all of it, became a County of Massachusetts, called Yorkshire, and sent Deputies to the Legislature in Boston.

\* Oct. 19th. General Court assemble. In order to raise up men suitable for Rulers and Elders, they order, that a proper person in every town solicit subscriptions to assist charity scholars at Cambridge. ✓ They enact, that the land in possession of any Indian should be considered as his own; that if any Indians become civilized and settled among the English, they should have equal privileges; or that they might settle towns by themselves, when there was no occupancy of the Colonists. This order appears to have been taken as an encouragement to Mr. Eliot's exertions among the Indians. He had already gathered a settlement and Church of them at Natick. The Court decide, that the English had a good right to the land, which they had settled. To prevent the washing or clipping of the Colony Coins, they order a double ring, a central tree, and Massachusetts to be put on one side of them, and New England and the year of their being stamped on the other. They designate Nov. 10th, as a fast for destructive storms; lack of suitable persons for Church and State; excess of worldly mindedness; war between England and Holland; and for calling on the Lord that he would give the Colony favour with Parliament and supply the necessities of the people in this country. They order two letters, one for Cromwell and the other for Parliament. They had cause to fear the latter, because they seemed resolved to render the Colonies more dependant on them than they had been.

† Nov. 30th. Two men were fined for excess in dress. Three men and one woman were each fined 10s. and 2s6d. fees for wearing silver lace. A woman was fined the same for wearing broad bone lace; another for wearing tiffany, and another for wearing a

\* Col. R.

† Qt. Ct. R.

silk hood. Alice Flint was presented for wearing a silk hood, but proving herself to be worth £200, she was excused. Jonas Fairbanks was charged with wearing *great boots*. But he was cleared, as the law did not strictly apply to his case. Other similar prosecutions took place at different times. Could judicious sumptuary regulations be enforced, they would no doubt produce good. But when running into an extreme, they are more contemned than respected, and more provoke than reform. ✓

## 1653.

✓ \* April 30th. For the relief of Richard Stackhouse's family, he was allowed to have the profit of the Ferry towards Ipswich, if he should find boat and men.

† May 2d. William Hathorne, as among the Commissioners of the United Colonies, took part in ordering 500 men to be raised against the Dutch at New-Netherlands, who were reported as engaged in fomenting a war between the Indians and the English.

‡ As Massachusetts was benefitted by commerce with the Dutch, she was unwilling to have war, and thus the league between her and the other Colonies liked to have been broken. § 3d. Mr. Norris wrote an interesting letter to the Commissioners, in which he gave several reasons why war should be waged with the Dutch.

|| 18th. General Court sat. Mr. Endicott was elected Governor. Thomas Lothrop and Jacob Barney were Deputies. The Court forbid provision to be carried among the French and Dutch of America. They order that no person shall begin to preach or prophecy, without the approbation of Elders belonging to the four next churches or *County Court*. They appear to have adopted this measure on account of the difficulty, which they experienced the previous session with respect to Mr. Powell, who had received a call

from the new Church in Boston, but to whose ordination they were opposed, because they considered him not qualified for such a station. In the October session of next year they recommended Mr. Reyner to the same Church.

\* June 30th. Theophilus Salter was sentenced to pay £5, the witness and fees, for endeavouring to marry Mary Smith without her friends consent. There were other cases of this sort.

† Aug. 30th. General Court enact, that a profanation of the Sabbath shall be followed with admonition for first offence, 5s. for second, and 10s. or whipping, not above five stripes, for the third offence.

‡ Sept. 20th. William Hathorne and the other Commissioners resolve on a war with Ninnigret, the Niantick Sachem, because he had taken and slain some of the Long Island Indians, who were allies to the Colonies. 24th. They recommend the education of six pious Indians at the College. They encourage Mr. Elliot's printing an Indian Catechism, and Thomas Stanton to assist him.

#### 1654.

§ Before this year, the persons, chosen to conduct the business of the town, having been called, for the most part, the seven-men, began to have the title of select-men, which has continued ever since.

|| May 3d. General Court convenes. Mr. Endicott was chosen Deputy Governor. William Brown and Henry Bartholomew were Deputies. The Court resolve that no instructors, who were of unsound principles and immoral conduct, should be allowed to teach school.

¶ 27th. An order was passed that any townsmen, duly warned, and declining to take part in public meetings, either in person or by *proxy*, should be fined 18d.

\* Qt. Ct. R. † Col. R. ‡ Haz. Col. § T. R. || Col. R. ¶ T. R.



\* June 9th. William Hathorne was on a committee of four to draft an answer for Cromwell, who had written a request for the Colonies to commence war with the Dutch. Their reply was accepted by the Court at their next session, and was dated August 24th.

† 28th. William Bartholomew was chosen County Treasurer, as appeared by votes in the hands of the Commissioners from the several towns.

‡ August 22d. √ General Court convenes. They order that no person shall carry out of Massachusetts more than 20s. in coin, to pay his expenses. They appointed searchers, who were authorized to enforce such a regulation. They designated Samuel Archer for Salem in reference to this business. They forbid sheep to be transported, and any, under two years old, to be killed. √ They require that honourable support shall be granted to ministers; and that the County Courts, when acquainted with deficiencies in this respect, shall specify a proper salary, and issue a warrant to the selectmen for its collection. They forbid any to retain books, lately imported from England, under the names of John Reeves and Lodowick Muggleton, who pretended to be the two last witnesses, spoken of in the Apocalypse. They order a thanksgiving to be observed the 7th of September, for peace between England and Holland; hopeful establishment of government in the mother country; good harvest; and prevention of an impending war with New Netherlands. Oct. 18th. The Court command the productions of Reeves and Muggleton to be consumed by an executioner in Boston Market. They enact that no man shall be Deputy, unless he be correct in the main doctrines of religion. They set wheat and barley at 5s., rye and peas 4s., and corn at 3s., for rates. § 20th. The Court were petitioned by William Hathorne and five others to protect the English in Acadie, which had lately fallen into the hands of Cromwell.

\* Col. R.

† Qt. Ct. R.

‡ Col. R.

§ Haz. Col.

\* Nov. The Court agree that, for the despatch of business, the Deputies shall eat, and especially dine together in the Court House chamber. Lieut. Philips was to supply each of them with breakfast, dinner and supper, and a cup of wine or beer with the two last meals, and fire and bed for 3s. a day. He was to furnish a Deputy with dinner and wine or beer for 18d.

1655.

† May 17th. The town agreed that Winter Island should be appropriated for the use of the Fort; and that this should be finished with all convenient dispatch. They appear to have agreed on a burial place at the hill above Francis Low's house.

‡ 23d. General Court assemble. Mr. Endicott was elected Governor. He held this office till his decease. Edmund Batter was Deputy. ✓ The Court order a house of correction to be in every county. ✓ They request that whoever should be Governor would reside in Boston, or within 4 or five miles "out of respect to strangers." They desired Mr. Endicott to comply with their wish "as much as his own necessary occasion will permit." They order the regiment of Essex and of other counties to be paraded. ✓ They appointed Edmund Batter, on a committee of four, to contract with some merchants for supplying the Colony with salt. In June of the next year, they granted John Winthrop the sole privilege of manufacturing salt in the Pequod country for 21 years. ✓ They order a Council of twelve churches, of which was the one here, to convene at Ipswich June 3d, for the purpose of endeavoring to settle a difference between the Church of Ipswich and one of Boston, about Mr. Norton's leaving the former to become pastor of the latter. This subject had been agitated over two years, and produced a general excitement. The Court grant to Gov. Endicott and his

Col R.

† T. R.

‡ Col. R.

subject for their consideration was the baptism of children. 24th. As a matter of public concern, the General Court reply to Cromwell's proposal about having some of the Colonists emigrate to Jamaica, which had been lately captured by his arms; and excuse themselves from having any direct agency in the matter.—During this year, Samuel Sharp appears to have died. He evidently took a deep interest in the prosperity of the Colonies. \* Oct. 26th, 1627, he as one among the proprietors of New-Plymouth, sold his right to Gov. Bradford and others, through Isaac Allerton. April 30th, 1629, he was chosen in London to be of Mr. Endicott's Council. He was also designated, with Mr. Skelton, to rule the Colony in case of the Governor's decease. He seems to have come over in the fleet, which brought Mr. Higginson. He succeeded Mr. Haughton, who died in the year of his ordination, as Ruling Elder. A principal event of his life was being cited to appear before the Legislature, which commenced their session Sept. 2, 1635, in reference to the letter, that the Church here, then under Roger Williams, forwarded to other churches, on the subject of disciplining the members of General Court. † The next year, when a general division of land took place, the town granted him 300 acres, afterwards designated to join Mr. Skelton's farm on the head of North River. In accordance with the Ecclesiastical usage of his day, his office excluded him from all secular trusts. Hence, he was not engaged in transactions, fitted to render him prominent to the reflective view of posterity. But there is reason to believe, that he has long ago experienced, that devotedness to the service of God, loses nothing of its heavenly worth by earthly forgetfulness. His wife was named Alice, and her name is among the first church members. ‡ He left her and a family of children to mourn his death and struggle with the privations of poverty.

\* Hist. Col. v. 3. p. 46.

† Town Grants.

1657.

\* Jan. 16th. The town vote to repair the meeting house.

March 1st. "The bell-ringer is to digge the grave to inter the dead, and to have for his paynes 8d. per grave."

† 23d. The members of the Church here, who resided on Bass River side, requested to worship by themselves. They had permission. They proceeded to build a meeting house. Mr. Josiah Hubbard preached for them.

‡ April 23d. Measures were taken to erect stocks and a whipping post.

§ May 6th. General Court convenes. William Hathorne was Deputy. He was chosen Speaker. As difficulties existed about legal matters, because Magistrates lived remotely, the Court appoint persons to supply the deficiency. They designate William Hathorne among them to act for Salem, Lynn, Marblehead and Manchester. For £75 paid by Mr. Endicott and his wife, they grant him 1000 acres of land on Ipswich River. They allow Mr. Hathorne, for his services at the Eastward, 300 acres.

|| June 8th. An order was taken that the seats at the meeting house be distributed; and that foreigners be not entertained in town. The latter was evidently done to prevent the entrance of the Friends.

Aug. 10th. Provision was made for Mr. Whiting's support. This person was employed to assist Mr. Norris in preaching.

¶ Sept. 21st. Christopher Holder and John Copeland, of the Friends' denomination, being at Salem, the former attempted to address the people after the minister had done. They were both secured till the next day and then sent to Boston, where they received 30 stripes apiece, and were imprisoned nine weeks. As Samuel

\* T. R. † Bev. Ch. R. ‡ T. R. § Col. R. || T. R. (¶ Bishop.) 204

Shattock, of this town, interfered at the apprehension of Holder, he was imprisoned in Boston, \*until he gave bonds for £20 to appear at the next Court and not attend any meeting of the Friends. † He had joined the Church May 15, 1642, and is noted as excommunicated. ‡ Lawrence Southwick and his wife were to be sent to Boston and confined, for entertaining Holder and Copeland. He was released to be dealt with by the Church. She was kept prisoner seven weeks and fined 40s. for approving the written opinions of her guests.

§ Oct. 12th. An assessment was laid on the inhabitants for assisting the College.

|| 14th. Court of Assistants assemble. They confirm the fine of £100 for bringing any one of the Friends into the Colony. They order, that for an hour's entertainment or concealment of any one of them, 40s. shall be paid. They enact, that each male of the Friends, if returning after the law has been executed on him, shall have one of his ears cut off, work in the house of correction till he can be sent away at his own charge; for the second return, he shall have the other ear cut off and kept at the house of correction. They enact, that each female so doing should be whipped and kept in the house of correction. They also enact, that if either sex of them come back a third time, they shall have their tongues bored through with a hot iron, and be employed in the house of correction till sent away at their own cost. They order that those of the Colonists who side with the denomination of Friends, shall be treated with equal severity. The punishment of boring the tongue with a hot iron, which was not executed in Massachusetts, † was evidently imitated from what was done to James Naylor, an English Friend, by order of Parliament, December 1656.

\*\* Dec. 9th. Mr. Norris made his will, which was

\* Sewall. † 1st. Ch. R. ‡ Bishop. § T. R. || Col. R. ¶ Lempriere. \*\* Qt. Ct. R.

proved after his decease. By it he left his house, land and books to his son, teacher of the school. He requested John Horn and Richard Prince, his deacons, to assist his son in being executors of the will.

1658.

\* Feb. 3d. Lawrence and Cassandra Southwick and their son Josiah, having been called before William Hathorne, were confined in the house of correction and fined £4 13 for absence from meeting.

† 17th. £80 were voted to Mr. Norris and £70 to Mr. Whiting, and wood to both for the ensuing year.

‡ March. John Small, Josiah Southwick, and John Burton, belonging to this place, and to the Friends, were apprehended in Dedham, on their way to Rhode Island, to provide a place for themselves and families. They were carried before the Governor in Boston, who allowed them to pursue their way by paying costs.

§ 30th Hilliard Verin was chosen Clerk of writs.

|| May 19th. General Court assembles. William Hathorne and Henry Bartholomew were deputies. The Court, in addition to other laws, order that every person attending an assembly of the Friends shall pay 10s. and £5, for speaking where it may be held. They forbid any person to preach or be ordained in a place, when two organized churches near it, or the Council of the Colony, or General Court are dissatisfied with his doctrines and qualifications.

¶ June 29th. The Court being informed of a Friends' meeting, held at the house of Nicholas Phelps last Sabbath, called those there to an account. Among them were William Brend and William Leddra, who had come from England. They escaped to Newbury; but were brought back and sentenced to the house of correction in Boston. Nicholas Phelps, Lawrence Southwick and his wife, with their sons John, Josiah,

\* Bishop. † T. R. ‡ Bishop. § Ipswich Qt. Ct. R. || Col. R. ¶ Qt. Ct. R.

Colonial Commissioners, took part with them in requiring the "Montackett" Sachem to allow the Pequods, their allies, to get shells for making wampom as before.

\* 28th. Samuel Shattock, Nicholas Phelps and Joshua Buffum were together fined £3 15s. for attending their meetings. For adherence to this practice, they were sentenced to be committed to the house of correction, and kept there till they should give security to renounce their opinions, or move out of the jurisdiction.

† Oct. 19th. The Court of Assistants assemble. Finding that the Friends increased, they order them to be banished on pain of death. They request Mr. Norton to write against their opinions. They order Lawrence Southwick and wife, and son Josiah, Samuel Shattock, Nicholas Phelps, and Joshua Buffum, who were brought before them, (the last three from the house of correction at Ipswich,) to depart from Massachusetts before the next Court of Elections; and that, if refusing so to do, they shall be banished on pain of death. They designate the 2d. of 4th week in November, as a Fast day for divisions in the Churches, and open opposers to the truth. They appoint William Hathorne to act in criminal cases and to give oaths in civil matters. They decide that the bounds of Salem, towards Topsfield, shall "run 6 miles into the woods," and that lands within Topsfield line by Salem shall belong to the proprietors. They put wheat at 5s., rye, peas, barley and barley malt at 4s., and corn 2s. 8. a bushel for country rates. They grant Captain Trask 400 acres of land in the Pequod country. To John Endicott "for his great service," Richard Bellingham, Daniel Dennison, "for his great pains in transcribing the laws," and to William Hathorne, if giving up 700

\* Ipswich Qt. Ct. R.

† Col. R.

acres before allowed him, the Court grant Block Island, so that each of them have one quarter.

\* Nov. 21st. "It is ordered, that the house and ground that Mr. Whiting liveth on be now given him and his heirs, provided he lives in town three years more after this."

## 1659.

† March 29th. Samuel Gaskin, on his presentment at Salem, for 32 days absence from meeting, was fined £8, and also to pay fees and witnesses. Edward Wharton, for 20 days absence, was fined £5, and 10s. for not aiding the constables, and fees for both cases. Dec. 23d. Rev. Edward Norris died. From the age of his son, he appears to have been nearly 70 at his decease. Before his arrival in this country, which was probably in 1639, he had been a clergyman in England. He united with the Church Dec. 29th of the same year. He was ordained, as previously stated, March 18th, 1640. On the 13th of May following he was admitted a freeman. He was colleague with the eminent Peters, who separated from him in August, 1641. In 1642, he wrote in favour of the standing Council, against a publication of Mr. Saltonstall, one of the Assistants. The part he took on this occasion secured him more popularity among the Magistrates, than among the Deputies. A few years afterwards, there seems to have been trouble in his Church, because some of them took the stand of Anabaptists. Townsend Bishop, a very respectable man, who had joined the Church before 1636, was prosecuted at Court and was to be dealt with by the Elders, July 8, 1645, for siding with that denomination. Sarah Bowdish, who united with the Church, Dec. 3d, 1640, was prosecuted on a similar charge, and stands with the note of excommunication. Had the records of Mr.

\* T. R.

† Ipswich Qt. Ct. R.



Norris been spared, we might know more particularly of his feelings and doings at this period. No doubt, like every pastor, who believes that his people can have the bread of life at his own hands, without seeking for it elsewhere, in non-essential differences, he regretted the disorder, which was not unfrequently made in his congregation, by contempt, exhibited towards the ordinance of baptism. As a sample how his plea for the Standing Council, was received by the Deputies, \* they chose Mr. Norton to preach the Election sermon in 1645, though the Magistrates preferred, selected and notified him for such a performance. But at the next Court of Elections, his friends prevailed so as to have him officiate. At this time, as well as when the question of war with the Dutch Colony was agitated, one party seem to have sided with Mr. Norton and the other with Mr. Norris. Though at the session of the Synod in Sept. 1646, he did not appear; yet his absence was not owing to any opinionated persuasion, that he needed no counsel; but to the impression, which his Church had gathered as to the illegality of such a body's being called by the Legislature. In this respect there was an alteration of views, † for he represented his Church in the Synod at its session, Oct. 1647. Then he was on a committee of seven to draw up the system of Ecclesiastical Discipline, substantially contained in the Cambridge Platform. ‡ May 3, 1653, Mr. Norris wrote his letter to the Commissioners of the United Colonies. In it he expressed his opinion that New-Haven, which had suffered from intrigues and abuses of the Dutch, had, as one of the United Colonies, a fair claim on Massachusetts, her stronger ally, for immediate help against them. He also disapproved of the interested policy, which he thought his own Colony had manifested. Mr. Hathorne of his Church, who was one of

\* Win.

† Col. R.

‡ Haz. Col.

the Commissioners, strove to have his precepts carried into effect. \* As his Church was one of the Churches requested by the General Court to be of the Council at Ipswich, June 3d, 1655. concerning the difficulty of Mr. Norton's removal to Boston, it is most likely that Mr. Norris exercised his judicious experience in aiding to compose dissensions as to this subject, which had long and extensively prevailed. At the Synodical meeting of Elders in Boston, June 5th, 1656, with respect to the baptism of children, he was required to be present by General Court. Before his decease he was called to experience the trials of having his Church and Congregation much disturbed by the introduction of sentiments maintained by the Friends. However, these deemed themselves justified in addressing his people and prevailing on many of them to leave his pastoral care, yet he must have regarded such events with anxiety and regret. From the facts, which have come to us relative to his talents, acquirements and character, we have cause to believe that the two first were more than common, and the last worthy of our high esteem. His worth was an honour to the town, and its salutary influence must have been long experienced. As there is no name of his wife among the Church members, it is likely, that she died before he came to America. He left one son, Edward, teacher of the school, and bequeathed to him all his property.

† March 8th. "Ordered, that the Selectmen, together with the Deacons and Mr. Gedney, are desired before the next Church meeting, to treat with Mr. Whiting to know his mind about staying with us."

‡ 11th. General Court convenes. William Hathorne and William Brown were Deputies. The former was chosen Reserve Commissioner. The Court order that as Daniel and Provided Southwick had not property to pay the fines assessed against them by the

\* Col. R.

† T. R.

‡ Col. R.

Courts of Salem and Ipswich, to be sold to any of the English belonging to Virginia or Barbadoes by the County Treasurer. \* Edmund Batter, the Treasurer, took some steps to execute this order, but it entirely failed. ✓ † The Court command Lawrence and Cassandra Southwick and their son Josiah, Samuel Shattock, Nicholas Phelps, Joshua Buffum, to depart from Massachusetts, on pain of death, by the 8th of June. ‡ In four days Shattock, Phelps, and Josiah Southwick, departed for England, by way of Barbadoes. Lawrence and Cassandra were sent to Shelter Island (near the East end of Long Island) where they shortly died within three days of each other. Buffum went to Rhode Island. § The Court enact that such festivals as *Christmas* shall not be observed, on penalty of 5s. As damage had accrued to merchants, by having no measurer of salt, they require every seaport to have such an officer. They appoint the 15th of June as a Fast for the unsettled state of England; for "the great thoughts in heart," both of the Country and Parliament, now in session; for a good issue of their deliberations; for divisions in the Churches of the Colony, for its sensuality; the "sad face" of its rising generation; "threats of evil this Spring;" and to implore "God's favourable presence yet to abide with our dear native country and with us his poor people and Churches in these ends of the earth and with our seed after us." In appointing such a season, the Court evinced that a deep concern was taken here in the proceedings which were then in England. They must have heard that Cromwell had died the preceeding Sept. 3d, and that intrigues were in operation to put down his son Richard. They well knew that a change in favour of Charles II. would bring on them his heavy displeasure for their evident partiality to the Revolution which overthrew his father. There was a petition

\* Bishop.

† Col. R.

‡ Bishop.

§ Col. R.

handed into General Court, signed by William Hathorne, William Brown, George Curwin, Walter Price, of Salem, and seven others. They desired that a Plantation, of ten miles square, might be granted them, 40 or 50 miles from Springfield to the westward, two thirds of the way to Awrania, if commenced within 18 months. From another record of Oct. 16th, 1660, such a plantation was intended as a trading establishment on Hudson River, to have a Governor and authority to repel attacks from Indians and to be under the protection of Massachusetts. Since we have no evidence that this enterprise was carried into operation, it is most likely, that the changes, which soon took place in the mother country, were the means of its being prevented. The inhabitants of the part of Salem, called Bass River, desired to become a town. The Court recommend them to apply to Salem and this town to give them a speedy hearing.

Oct. 18th. The Court of Assistants convene. They appoint the 8th of December as a day of Thanksgiving for protections against errorists, the enjoyment of liberty, and a good harvest. They arraign several Friends of this place, who had gone to be present at the trial of Robinson and Stevenson, and Mary Dyar. They were Hannah Phelps, who was admonished, and William King, who was sentenced to receive 15 lashes. These two were also banished on pain of death. Margaret Smith and son, Provided Southwick and son, were ordered to be dealt with as the law directed. Bishop says, that Mary Trask, from this town, was confined with them. He states, that, on the 31st, Edward Wharton, for expressing himself as though his two acquaintances, Robinson and Stevenson, who had been very lately hung for returning from banishment, were unjustly treated, was apprehended in Salem, and Nov, 3d, was whipped 20 lashes and fined £20 in Boston. For passing sentence of death on the persons

here mentioned, the Court of Assistants published a defence.

\* November. Liberty was granted to Messrs Curwin, Price, and William Brown, to build a grist mill on South River, above Mr. Ruck's house, where it might be convenient. This permission was not immediately improved. ✓ "Joseph Miles being convicted for entertayning of a stranger, a Scotch, several weeks according to an ordinance made 20th of 4th month, 1657, wee have fined him 20s. to cleare the towne of him." John Southwick having brought into town the wife of Joseph Nicholson, about March 18th, was fined 20s. a week from this date till she departs. Thomas Spooner fined 10s. for entertaining "a strange woman." ✓

† Nov. 29th. A number of the Friends, who have been named, were prosecuted. William King and James Smith, being of their persuasion, were presented; but were respited, on motion of Messrs Higginson and Brown. Samuel Gaskin had half of an £8 fine, laid on him by Ipswich Court, remitted, and his son set at liberty. Frances Simpson, who appears to have lately joined the Friends, was fined 10s. and fees.

#### 1660.

‡ March 9th. On a second invitation to Mr. John Higginson for settling with them, the town offer him a salary of £160. § The Church had concurred in the two invitations of the town. Mr. Higginson answered them, that it was his desire to labour and die among them as his father had done. When his answer was given, he had preached for them nearly a year. On his coming hither, it appears that Mr. Whiting had declined becoming their minister and left them. Mather informs us, that Mr. Higginson had taught school in Hartford, officiated as chaplain at Saybrook fort, and been colleague with his father in law, Whit-

• T. R.

† Qt. Ct. R.

‡ T. R.

§ 1st Church R.

field, at Guilford, before he came to Salem. When visiting this town, he purposed to follow Mr. Whitfield to England.

\* May 18th. Provided Southwick, of the Friends, was fined 40s. for disturbing the peace at Salem. He was ordered to be imprisoned till this and another fine were paid, or to be *sold*. Henry Bachellor, of the same denomination, was fined for absence from meeting.

† 30th. General Court sits. Mr. Endicott was chosen Governor. William Hathorne was appointed a Reserve Commissioner. He and Henry Bartholomew were deputies. The Court require County Courts to have a care that there be an able ministry and that it be well supported. They appoint a Fast for the deplorable condition of England, for the prospect of its "good beginnings turning out bad;" for decline in religious affections, neglect of ordinances, and viciousness of the rising generation. They decline to grant the petition of Salem for a propriety in the Misery and Baker's Island. But Oct. 16th, they allow their request, on condition that the two Islands be used for curing fish. John Endicott, jun. desired the Court that a deed of lands given him by old William, an Indian, might be confirmed. The Court thought it not suitable for them to take such power on themselves. They, however, remark, "considering the many kindnesses that were shown to the Indians by our honoured Governor (Endicott) in the infancy of these plantations, for pacifying the Indians, tending to the common good of the first planters; in consideration whereof the Indians were moved to such a gratuity unto his son, do judge meet to give the petitioner 400 acres of land.

‡ June 1st. Mary Dyar, of the Friends, who had been reprieved from death, was hung. Margaret Smith, of Salem, who was her companion in Boston, spoke against the laws of the Colony.

\* Ips. Qt. R.    † Col. R.    ‡ Sewall.

\* 26th. Those of the Friends, who have been mentioned before as prosecuted, were fined from £2 10s. to £5. The wife of Edmund Nicholson was admonished and fined Court fees for absence from meeting. James Smith and Samuel Salmon were similarly dealt with.

† July 8th. Mr. John Brown was informed that he had been chosen Ruling Elder. He accepted this office, on condition that he might attend to his business in Virginia the following winter. He was selected at the special request of Mr. Higginson in his answer to the call of the Church. Under the same date, Mr. Higginson's ordination (or more properly, installation) is mentioned. The Churches of Lynn, Ipswich, Reading and Boston, were represented by their Elders and Messengers on this occasion. William Hathorne and the two deacons imposed hands on the Ruling Elder, who must have been Mr. Brown, and not Mr. Higginson, as a number of printed accounts incorrectly represent. The sermon was from 1st Cor. 3c. 7vs. Mr Norton of Boston gave the right hand of fellowship to both Elders. ‡ John Smith, of the Friends, for disturbance and crying out at the installation of Mr. Higginson, "What you are going about to set up, our God is pulling down," was committed to prison.

§ Sept. 10th. It was voted, that Mr. Cotton's Catechism should be used in families for teaching children, so that they might be prepared for public catechising in the Congregation. It was agreed that the Lord's supper should be once a month.

¶ 27th. News came that Charles II was proclaimed King. This was information calculated to put the public mind on considering the probable results. The Colonists had not laid up much stock of loyalty, on which they might draw to purchase the favour of his Majesty, when he should feel sufficiently confirmed to deal with them for their past expressions and policy.

\* Ql. Ct. R. † 1st Ch. R. ‡ Hutch. § 1st Ch. R. ¶ Hutch.

\* Oct. 16th. The Court of Assistants sit. They enact, that the last impression of the laws shall be in force after 30 days. √As suicide was prevailing, they order, that the body of every person, who had killed himself, should be denied burial, except in some high way, as the selectmen shall direct, and that a cart load of stones should be laid on the grave, as a mark of infamy and warning. √They require that those of the Friends should be tried by a Jury of 12. They release Margaret Smith and Mary Trask, of this denomination, and belonging to Salem, for the sake of their husbands. They granted liberty for the Friends in prison to embark for England, if they chose. Among them were Joseph Nicholson and his wife. The last had resided in this town for a short time.

† Nov. 27th. A number of Friends were fined from 5s. to £7 10s. each. The wife of Robert Stone was fined Court fees. John Burton was presented and dismissed.

‡ Dec. 19th. A special General Court assembles. William Hathorne and Edmund Batter were deputies. The former was speaker. The main objects of the Court were to address the King and Parliament. They desire of both the continuance of their Charter privileges, and not to be condemned for accusations before they shall be fairly heard. They excuse themselves to his Majesty for their treatment to the Friends. § Their address to him on this subject was answered by Edward Burroughs, in England, who presented his reply to the King. ¶ The Court also instruct their agents in London to strive for preventing measures, which would require the Colonists to make appeals to the Crown; to justify their decisions in reference to the Iron works in Massachusetts; and to oppose permission for the Friends to reside within their jurisdiction.

\* Col. R.

† Qt. Ct. R.

‡ Col. R.

§ Sewall.

¶ Col. R.



## ERRATA, &c.

The references on the first eight pages of this Number are placed at the end of what they refer to, instead of the beginning. For respected read reputed, page 104. For Edward r. Edmund, p. 113, 114. For husbandmen r. herdsmen. p. 115. For 230 acres r. 220, p. 117. For daubings r. daubinge, p. 119. For John r. Thomas, p. 120. For Merrice r. Maurice, p. 121. For Strawberry r. Strawberry, p. 124. For Perry r. Percy, p. 125.

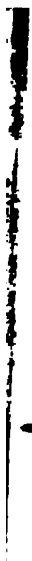
Wood's description of Salem on p. 126, was published in 1639; but he was here in 1633. It is very likely, that his description shows Salem to have been as it was in 1633.

For Newton r. Norton, p. 127. For proved (in reference to Mrs. Cartwright's will) r. presented, p. 128.

The range for Cattle, mentioned on p. 129; was at Forrest River head "up to Mr. Humphrey's farm, and from thence to the pond and so about to Brooksbye."

For Ruthworth r. Rushworth, p. 139. For May r. April, p. 142. For Friers r. Triers, p. 143. For Geo. II. read Geo. III., p. 147. For firres r. stirres, p. 166. For Gotta r. Cotta, p. 172. For beaches r. braches, an old French word, signifying female hunting hounds, p. 172. For Woodbridge read Woodbury, p. 174. For June 24th r. January 16th, p. 179. Strike out about the inquest on Henry Bartholomew, p. 179. Land was *laid out* and *not granted* to Mr. Walton at the date mentioned, p. 180. Mr Walton lived at Marblehead in 1636. For 1638 r. 1639, p. 184. For Low's r. Lawe's, p. 191. For Cota r. Cotta, p. 192. Sam. Sharpe probably died at the close of 1657 instead of 1656, p. 194. For Hannett r. Harnett, p. 198.

\* *Kingham*



## ANNALS OF SALEM.



THE circumstances of issuing this work, will not allow of Biographies, in the following numbers, so full as some, given in the preceeding numbers.—When some authorities, not adduced before, are refered to, they will follow their abbreviations in a parenthesis, at the bottom of the page, and afterwards be denoted by such abbreviations.



1661.

\* Jan. 19th. Thomas Venner, made free 1638, and united to Salem Church 1640, was hanged, drawn and quartered in London. † He was a cooper by trade. He, while in this town, endeavoured to persuade others to leave Massachusetts and move to Providence, one of the Bahama Islands. In England, he was denominat-ed a fifth monarchy man. ‡ With others of his opinions, he opposed the administration of Cromwell. After Charles II. ascended the throne, Venner “persuaded his followers, that if they would take arms, Jesus would come to put himself at their head.” They complied with his suggestion. Being sixty persons, they were mostly slain in fighting with a body of the troops, sent to suppress them. Venner and a few of his adherents were taken and he suffered as already stated. He, like many of various ages, was an unhappy example of the effects, which result from allowing the imagination to controul reason, conscience and revelation ; and to put forth its distempered conclusions in the violation of laws both human and divine.

\* Josselyn. † Oldmixon. √ ‡ Goldsmith.

\* March 3d. Richard Prince was chosen a Commissioner to meet other Commissioners, and hand in the votes of Salem for Magistrates, Associates and County Treasurer.—† 6th. A Fast was observed here for the general sickness of the past winter ; for the prevalence of seducers ; and for renewal of covenant ; and adding to it a clause, of which the following is the conclusion :—" Therefore we do covenant by the help of Jesus Christ to take heed and beware of the leaven of the doctrine of the Quakers." The fact, here presented, shows that whatever may have been the merits of the controversy between the Friends and Congregationalists, it certainly excited deep concern, and was among the most prominent causes, which called forth the expressions and endeavours of our fathers. After the foregoing clause was put to the Covenant, Elder Brown rendered thanks to God before the Congregation for being returned home after suffering ship-wreck, having lost the vessel and cargo, and been in great danger from Indians. It appears that he had been on a voyage to Virginia.—‡ 14th. Edward Wharton was at the execution of William Leddra in Boston ;—took leave of him, and protested against Leddra's not being permitted to speak with his friends. When the body of Leddra was cut down, Wharton and others caught it in their arms and gave it burial. At this time Wharton was under sentence of banishment, and seems to have defied its execution.

§ April 22d. The Selectmen agreed to meet once a month, and fine any one of their number, needlessly absent, 2s.—23d. The Town voted that £10 should be paid to Maj. Wm. Hathorne, the ensuing year, for training the foot company.

|| May 22d. General Court sat. Wm. Hathorne and Edmund Batter were Deputies. The former was chosen first reserve Commissioner for the Colony. The Court order "that Quakers," when discovered, shall be made bare from the middle upwards, tied to a

\* T. R. † 1st Ch. R. ‡ Sewall. § T. R. || Col. R.

cart, and whipped through the town towards the boundary of Massachusetts ; and, if returning, that they shall be similarly punished, with the addition, that some of them shall be branded with an R. on their left shoulder ; and, if coming back a third time, that they shall be banished on pain of death. The Christian Commonwealth, a book, written by John Elliot, of Roxbury, Missionary among the Indians, was censured by the Court, as opposed to Royal government. They required his acknowledgement to be transcribed and posted up in Salem and four other towns. They mainly agreed with him in political opinions, though their oath of allegiance required them to disapprove of his publishing these opinions. Bray Wilkins and Jno. Gingle, both of Lynn, who had purchased a farm, called Will-Hill, of Mr. Richard Bellingham, desired that it might belong to Salem. The Court granted their petition. William King, of this place, having returned from his banishment and renounced his adherence to the Friends, was pardoned by the Court. Hog Island, about a league from Falmouth, was granted to Gov. Endicott in lieu of 1000 acres assigned him in 1657. Mr. Higginson, minister of Salem, was allowed 700 acres for his services, as Scribe to the Synod in 1637. He had petitioned for such compensation in 1643, while at Guildford. The Court voted 500 acres to William Hathorne for his services, as Magistrate, several years in Salem and Marblehead, and "otherwise to the great hindrance of his personal occasions and the diminution of his estate." They designated July 7th as a day of Thanksgiving for "the gracious answer" of the King ; for health, promising appearance of vegetation ; and for privileges of Government and of the Gospel. In reference to the first reason for thankfulness, it appears that Charles II. had given a very favourable reply to an address of General Court. But, as subsequent circumstances prove, he was only waiting for an opportunity to show the Colony, that he had not been a negligent observer of their course, nor forgetful of their prefer-

ence to democracy. It is a painful reflection upon human nature, that state-policy too often discourses in words of friendship, till a convenient season arrives to perform deeds of enormity. The General Court raised a Committee of 12, among whom was Wm. Hathorne, to consider their "patent, laws, privileges and duty to his Majesty," and to present their result the next session.

June 10th. The Committee, last mentioned, reported. Another Committee of 6, among whom was Mr. Hathorne, were instructed to draft a letter to the King. \*25th. John Hathorne of Salem was confirmed, as Quarter Master of the "three County troop."—28th. The Friends belonging to this town, were fined about £40. Among them was the wife of Nicholas Phelps. She was sentenced to pay £5, or be whipped, for asserting that Mr. Higginson "sent abroad his wolves and blood hounds among the sheep and lambs."

† July 30th. A vote was passed, that the children of persons, who had been covenant children, should be entitled to baptism.

‡ Aug. 2d. A few of the Friends were fined £10, for absence from the Congregational meeting on the Sabbath.—§7th. The Governor calls a special Court. William Hathorne and Edmund Batter were deputies. The reason for such a session was, that a vessel was to sail immediately for England, and that expediency required, that she should carry tidings of the King's being proclaimed. The Court accordingly order, that Charles II. shall be proclaimed as King the next day in Boston, after the lecture, by Secretary Rawson. They recommend the Governor, Collector Temple, Deputy Governor, Magistrates, Elders and people, four foot companies, one troop of horse, and masters of ships in the harbour, to be in attendance on this occasion. They also voted an address to his Majesty.

|| Sept. 9th. The Court of Assistants order Josiah Southwick, who had returned from banishment, to be

\* Qt. Ct. R. † 1 Ch. R. ‡ Qt. Ct. R. § Col. R. || Bishop.

stripped from his girdle upward, tied to a cart's tail, and whipped ten stripes in each of the towns, Boston, Rocksbury, and Dedham. Thus ordered out of Massachusetts, he came back the next day, but one, to his house in Salem.

\* It was concluded, that the children of Church members here, should be under the watch of the Church.

October. Six persons of the Church were recorded as absenting themselves from its ordinances. They had a preference for the Friends. The Church voted to comply with the recommendation of other churches to keep a Fast December 23d for seeking divine aid in a prevalent sickness. Mr. John Blackleach and wife, Elizabeth, were recommended to Hartford Church. They afterwards resided in Boston. He became a freeman 1635;—member of the Church here before 1636;—and was granted 300 acres of land by this town, 1637. He represented Salem at the General Court 1636. He appears to have been a respectable man.

†Nov. 27th. General Court are convened to consider a letter from the King, which required them to cease from proceedings against "the Quakers," and to send such of them, as were already apprehended, over to England for trial. They vote to comply with his instructions. These were brought by Samuel Shattock of Salem from London, whither he had gone, after being banished. The Court appoint Jan. 2d as a Fast-day, for the ignorance and dissipation of youth, neglect of domestic government, pride and excess in apparel; for complaints of enemies to the King, and for the combination of Antichrist to crush piety in the world.

‡Dec. 10th. "It is ordered that the bridge or causeway at the western end of Salem be sufficiently repaired and a stone walk to be built against the side thereof upon the County's charge." Those of the Friends' society were fined as usual from £1 to £10 each. John Burton, of their number, declared to the

\*Ch. R.

† Col. R.

‡ Qt. Ct. R.

Justices, that they were robbers and destroyers of the widows and fatherless, and that their Priests divined for money, and that their worship was not the worship of God. Being commanded silence, he commanded the Court to be silent. He continued speaking in this manner, till he was ordered to the stocks. \* 31st. Special Court of Assistants assemble. They designate Simon Bradstreet of Andover, and John Norton of Boston, as agents to England; who, though loath to go, sailed Feb. 10th. No embassy had been watched with greater closeness and anxiety by the Colonists, than this was because of the difficulties, which it had to encounter in England. The Court order a Synod, composed of Elders and messengers of the Churches, to assemble in Boston 2d Tuesday of 1st month. The questions to be laid before the Synod were:—Who are the subjects of Baptism? Should there be, according to the Scriptures, a consociation of Churches? and, if so, what should be its form?

## 1662.

† Feb. 19th. Three persons were excommunicated for not attending worship. Three more were to be admonished, who were excommunicated the 26th. All six were thus dealt with for adhering to the Friends.— 26th. The Synod met in Boston. Messrs. Higginson, Hathorne and Bartholomew attended it, as representatives of the Salem Church. It continued a fortnight. As the members of the Synod perceived that the questions before them, were likely to be followed with important consequences, and that some of their number could tarry no longer, they adjourned to June 10th.

† March 3d. At Town meeting, it was “ordered that the Selectmen, with those masters of vessels, that are then in town to join with them, to advise with such as have lands granted at the burying point, how they may accommodate them so as that there may be

\* Col. R. † 1st Ch. R. ‡ T. R.



a place left for graving of vessels, and that all further proceedings be suspended until this be done."—\*25th. Doct. Wm. Woodcock, of Salem, an Apothecary, was licensed to distil strong waters for a year and "sell by retail."

† May 7th. General Court sits. Messrs. Hathorne and Bartholomew were Deputies. The Court forbid children and servants to be extravagantly clothed. They offer a reward of 40s. for every wolf killed. Such were the wants of the inhabitants and of strangers coming from England, and such the supplies needed for the fishery, the Court prohibited the exportation of wheat and flour after the 25th. A Fast was appointed to be observed June 5th, on account of sickness, disunion, drought, the unsettled state of great troubles, and to seek the divine blessing on the Agents in London, and on the Synod about to renew their session. The Court divided the cavalry of Essex County. They continued those of Salem, River-head, Manchester and Lynn, under the officers then over them. They had excused the people of Gloucester and Marblehead from military service, because of their engagements in fishing. They instruct Mr. Hull, the mint master, to coin half of the silver bullion, coming to his hands the first year, into 2*d.* pieces, and 1-5 of such bullion, as should be lodged with him for seven years afterwards, into the same currency. They grant Edmund Batter 250 acres of land "in the wilderness on the North side of Merrimack River and West of Beaver Creek."

‡ June 4th. It was voted that a Bier be provided for carrying the dead.—§ 10th. The Synod met and adjourned to Sept. 10th.—|| 24th. Lawrence Leach died lately *Æ.* 83. He was proposed for a freeman 1630;—was a member of the Church here before 1636,—when the town granted him 100 acres of land. He left a widow, Elizabeth, and two sons. Of these Clement, the eldest, was married and lived in England.

\*Qt. Ct. R.    † Col. R.    ‡ T. R.    § 1st Ch. R.    || Qt. Ct. R.

The other was Capt. Richard Leach who died 1647, and left a son, John, who inherited his grandfather Leach's farm at Rial side. Mr. Leach had held various offices in town. He was one of the 13 men. His useful life rendered him respected.—26th. Daniel Rea had recently deceased. From his son's age, he was not less than 60 at death. His wife and children survived him. The last were Joshua, Bethiah wife of Capt. Thomas Lathrop, Rebeckah and Sarah. He had been one of the 13 men. He sustained a reputation, which secured him the confidence of others.

July 7th. Thomas Lathrop was allowed to take command of the foot company on "Cape Ann or Ipswich side."

\* Oct. 8th. General Court assemble. They order all judicial concerns to be transacted in the King's name. They appoint Nov. 5th for Thanksgiving, because enough had been spared to sustain man and beast; the Agents had safely returned from England; and peace, liberty and the Gospel were still enjoyed. They set barley at 5s., malt 5s. 6d., peas and rye 4s. 6d., and corn 3s. for rates. They designate Dec. 5th for a Fast on account of the low state of religion in the world; prevalence of Antichrist in reformed churches "beyond the seas," and public rebukes at home. They revive an order against the Friends, because some of their denomination had appeared in the eastern parts. They accepted the result of the Synod and ordered it to be printed. The Court "as an acknowledgement of the great pains of Col. Wm. Brown (of Salem) in behalf of this country when he was in England, judges meet to grant him 500 acres of land." They confirm George Curwin, Capt. Thomas Putnam, Lieutenant, and Walter Price, Cornet, of the troop, belonging to Salem and vicinity.

† Nov. 7th. Elias Stileman sen'r had recently died Æ. not less than 70. He left a wife, and a son, Elias, who moved to Portsmouth, and became an emi-

nent man. He was made freeman 1633, a member of the Church here before 1636, when he received 100 acres of land from the town. He was one of the 13 men 1637. He was a valuable member of the community.—\* 12th. The Pastor and Henry Bartholomew attended the ordination of John Brock at Reading. Mr. Brock had preached at Rowley and the Isle of Shoals. He graduated at Harvard 1646, and died June 18, 1688, Æ. 68.—† 25th. The wife of Robert Wilson, for going through Salem, without any clothes on, as a sign of spiritual nakedness in town and colony, was sentenced to be tied to a cart's tail, uncovered to her waist, and be whipped from Mr. Gédney's gate to her own house, not exceeding 30 stripes. Her mother Buffum and sister Smith, being abettors of her conduct, were sentenced to be tied on each side of her, with nothing on to their waists but an under garb, and to accompany her the distance mentioned. From instances of discipline, found on the first records of the Friends in Salem, they, no doubt, as a body, disapproved of the preceding persons' conduct. Before any new denomination becomes consolidated, some of its members will show more zeal than knowledge, more violence than discretion. No body of people should have an ill name for the errors, which a few of them commit.—28th. Fines to the amount of £169 10 were laid on the Friends for absence from Congregational worship.

## 1668.

‡ Jan. 12th. The printed result of the late Synod came recommended by General Court to the Church. 24th. A house and an acre of ground were provided by the town for Mr. Higginson, their minister, which were to be the property of him and his heirs.—§ 26th. "At the shutting in of the evening, there was a great earthquake in N. England, and the same night another something less than the former."

\* 1st Ch. R.

† Qt. Ct. R.

‡ 1st Ch. R.

§ Morton

\* May 11th. Voted, that the Deputies, who shall be at next General Court, shall petition for an enlargement of liberty to those, who were not Church members. Such an alteration had been strongly required by the King.—† 27th. General Court convened. Wm. Hathorne was elected one of the Assistants for the first time. He sustained this office annually, except 1673, till 1680. Messrs. Batter and Bartholomew were Deputies. Mr. Higginson preached the election sermon. His text was 1 Kings, 8 c. 57—8 and 9 vs. His subject was the cause of God and his people in N. England. In recommending his sermon, Rev. Messrs. Wilson, sen'r of Boston, and Whiting of Lynn, remark, "The sermon when preached was acceptable to all and found general approbation among all the wise hearted and godly so far as we have heard." The Court raise a committee of 13, who were Elders and Magistrates. Among them were Rev. Mr. Higginson and Henry Bartholomew. Their business was to draft an answer to the King's letter, which demanded greater liberty in the colonial elections and an amendment of the laws and charter. The Court invite persons, who are inclined to give their advice on these subjects, to forward it to the committee.

‡ June 30th. Col. Thomas Read had died abroad before this date. He became freeman 1634; joined Salem Church before 1636; and granted 300 acres of land 1637. He left a second wife, and two sons, the younger of whom was Abraham. He appears to have served under Cromwell and commanded a Regiment in England 1660, at the Restoration of Charles II.

§ July 4th. Edward Wharton was condemned by the Court at Dover, whither he had gone to pronounce a woe on the Justices for their proceedings against the Friends,—to be whipped in three towns at the cart's tail and brought to his house in Salem. Not long afterwards he received 14 lashes for testifying against the sentence for punishing John Liddal and Thomas

\* T. R.

† Col. R.

‡ Qt. Ct. R.

§ Bishop.

Newhouse, who were apprehended in this town. He afterwards visited the house of worship at Dover with others on the Sabbath ; for which he and they were imprisoned a short time.—\* 10th. Wm. Hollingworth, merchant, of this town, agrees to send 100 hhds. of Virginia tobacco in the ship Visitation of Boston, Capt. Zech. Gellum, to England and Holland for a market, at £7 sterling a tun. Mr. Hollingworth was to pay the duties.—† 15th. Peter Palfrey died at Reading. He held the interesting relation to Salem of being among its first founders. He was often chosen a selectman. He was a prominent Deputy to General Court. He and his first wife Erdith were among the earliest members of the Church. He was made freeman 1631. He was granted 200 acres of land 1636. For his second wife, he married Elizabeth, the widow of John Fairfield, who died 1647, and left two children. He appears to have moved from this place before 1653. So worthy were his exertions to promote the welfare of Salem, he deserves to live in the remembrance of its inhabitants. ‡ Philip Veren, of the Friends, was sentenced to be severely whipped for saying, “ that we had murdered the dear saints and servants of God, and that he saw one of them murdered at Boston himself.” “ There are £50 allowed to build a prison at Salem out of the lands, already seized, which were the Quaker lands.”

§ Oct. 6th. The Pastor and Messrs. Lathrop and Allen, attended an ordination of John Emerson, at Gloucester. Mr. Emerson was son of Thomas Emerson of Ipswich. He graduated at Harvard 1656. He married Ruth, daughter of Samuel Symonds, Deputy Governor. He died at Gloucester 1700, Æ. about 74. || 26th. Court of Assistants convene. They pass the following regulations :—The magistrates and deputies shall meet together in the Court Chamber at 7 o'clock, A. M. and then commence business. No freeman shall assemble at the Court of Elections, but send their prox-

\* Reg Rec. † Middlesex Qt. Ct. R. ‡ Qt. Ct. R. § 1st Ch. R. || Col. R.

ies. Here, it seems, the inconvenient custom for freemen to collect from every part of the colony, to vote for Governor and magistrates was discontinued. The alteration of such a practice was so unpopular, the practice was revived the next year, Oct. 10th The Court appoint Custom-house officers. Among them was Hilliard Veren, of this place, for the ports of Salem, Marblehead, and Gloucester. Such an appointment accorded with his Majesty's letter of June 24th, on the subject of navigation. The Court, considering the Friends as opposed to Civil and Ecclesiastical government, and knowing them as set against bearing arms, forbid them to vote with regard to public concerns. They permit the inhabitants of Salem to settle a plantation, 6 miles square at Pennicook, if getting 20 families on it within three years.

\* Nov. 9th. The Pastor and Mr. Porter were designated to attend the gathering of a Church and ordaining Thomas Gilbert at Topsfield. Mr. Gilbert was a Scotsman. He and his wife came over 1661. He had been minister at Chedlie, Cheshire, and also at Edling, in England. He was made freeman 1664. He preached at Topsfield till after 1671. He died at Charlestown 1673, *Æ.* 63.—† 29th. Twenty-five of the Friends were fined £125. Samuel Shattock was one of them. For charging the Court and Country with shedding innocent blood,—he was sentenced to pay £5 or be whipped. Joshua Buffum was ordered to be put in the stocks one hour for affronting the Court about his marriage. Philip Veren was sentenced to be put by the heels into the stocks one hour for denying the country's power to compel any to attend Congregational worship.

‡ Dec. 8th. Salem was assessed £6 12s. as its proportion of the Colonial rate, for supporting the President and Fellows of the College.—§ The Pastor and Messrs. Conant and Lathrop were appointed to attend the ordination of Antipas Newman, at Wenham. Mr. New-

\* 1st Ch. R. † Ql. Ct. R. ‡ T. R. § 1st Ch. R.

man began to preach at Wenham 1657. He is supposed to have been a son of Rev. Samuel Newman, of Rehoboth. He married Elizabeth, daughter of Governor Winthrop, 1658. He died Oct. 15th 1672. His wife and five children survived him. At the ordination of Mr. Newman, Charles Gott and wife, Sarah, and son Charles, were recommended by Salem Church to the Church at Wenham, where they had a farm. He was the person who wrote to Gov. Bradford about the gathering of the Salem Church, 1629, in which he was a deacon many years before his dismissal. He became freeman 1632. He was granted 75 acres of land 1636. He served as selectman and Deputy to General Court while an inhabitant here. His wife died 1665, and he died Jan. 15th 1668. He was an intelligent, useful and esteemed member of the community. The Salem Church set apart one day for humiliation and prayer in each of the four following months, "for mercy with respect to the great affliction and reproach, which have come on so many thousands of ministers and christians (in England) in these times, by means of Episcopal usurpation ; also, with respect to dangers threatening ourselves." This extract shows, that our fathers were anxiously awake to the public welfare, which they perceived greatly threatened by late acts of the King.

1664.

\* May 4th. Edward Wharton, who was actively engaged in spreading the doctrines of the Friends, was apprehended in Boston and ordered by the Governor to be whipped and carried to his house at Salem.—† 18th. General Court sit. Messrs. Batter and Lathrop were Deputies. The Court appoint 15th June as a Fast day for troubles and distractions of the colony. They decide in reference to a difficulty between Salem and Topsfield about their boundaries. Their decision was, that these boundaries should be according to an agree-

\* Bishop.

† Col. R.

ment of 1659. Although this was done, yet, for many years after, there was a controversy between these two towns concerning the same matter.

\* June 5th. Elder Brown requested a dismissal from his office in the Church, because his trading to Virginia (whence he had lately returned) prevented him from attending to its duties as he desired.—† 28th. A few of the Friends were fined and others convicted for absence from worship.—‡ 30th. Edward Wharton having gone from Salem to Boston with Whenlock Christison to see Mary Tomkins, who was sick and had just returned from a mission to Virginia, was ordered to receive 30 lashes and be conducted to his house.

§ Aug. 3d. General Court assembles to consider communications from his Majesty's Commissioners, whose appearance in N. England, filled them with strong fears as to their liberties. They so altered the conditions of becoming Freemen, as that certificates from any regular Clergyman, representing persons to be correct in sentiment and conduct, would entitle them to such a privilege. This alteration, which made it unnecessary for men to be professors of religion in order to become members of the Legislature, was calculated to break the bond of union, which had existed between the Church and State for more than thirty years. The Court resolve to be loyal, but still to maintain their Charter rights. They order an address to his Majesty, which, under date of Oct. 25th, says, "Let our government live, our Patent live, our Magistrates live, our laws and liberties live, our religious enjoyments live, so shall we all yet have further cause to say, Let the King live forever." They appoint Sept. 1st as a Fast day for scanty crops and the threatening aspect of public affairs. They vote to comply with the request of his Majesty's Commissioners for troops to assist in reducing the Dutch at New Amsterdam. As we peruse the proceedings of our ancestors at this time, we perceive, that

\* 1st Ct. R.

† Qt. Ct. R.

‡ Bishop.

§ Col. R.



they considered themselves as very critically situated ; as on the verge of having the features of their government, which, as they believed, its strength, beauty and attraction, were marred and destroyed by the power of Royalty. As imagination brings them before us, we note them as anxious and grieved, and yet, like men worthy of any age or nation, resolved to make every noble effort to keep their heritage from desolation and reproach.

Oct. 19th. General Court assemble. For the first time they vote an address to the Governor. They designate Nov. 16th as a Fast day "for frowns of greater evils." They confirm the choice of Walter Price, Capt., George Gardner, Lieut., and Zerubabel Endicott, Ensign, of the Salem company. They permit no other printing press than that of Cambridge, nor any thing to be printed, except by the consent of supervisors. They estimate wheat 5s., corn 3s., barley and barley malt 4s. 6d., peas and rye 4s., corn 3s. a bushel for rates.

\* Nov. 6th. Mrs. Lydia Banks, who had been absent 22 years, desired a dismission to the Church in London under Rev. Mr. Nye. Her request was granted. She was united with the Church here 1637. She had owned Playne's farm of 400 acres, which was sold about 1655. The Church records say, "The desire of our honoured Governor and wife for dismission to a Boston Church, was granted." † A Comet was seen in N. England. It was thought to portend "great calamities and notable changes." ‡ It continued from Nov. 17th to Feb. 4th.

### 1665.

§ March 15th. Governor John Endicott died. He had scarcely moved from Salem, when he was called to his perpetual abode. He came from Dorchester in Dorsetshire, England. He was brother-in-law to Roger Ludlow, Deputy Governor. The consideration, that

\* 1st Ch. R. † Morton. ‡ Hutch. § Dan. (Danforth.)

he was selected by the company, who fostered the settlement of Massachusetts to carry their plans into effect, is enough to show, that he stood high in the estimation of discerning and deserving men in his native country. Their recorded commendation of him coincided with their real opinion. \* An English writer, in speaking of him, 1630, remarks: "a man well known to divers persons of good note." The merits of his character, as possessed by him when coming to this country, were not diminished, but greatly increased, by his long employment in public service. True, the individuals and denominations, against whom he deemed it his duty to act, would not allow him to be so estimable a person. They cherished opinions and commended an administration of the laws, which he did not approve; and, therefore, they considered him wrong so far, as he differed from them. They measured his reputation by the rule of prejudice in favour of their own cause, for which rule impartial observers always make many allowances. After all the severe reflections cast upon him, he appears, in the eye of candour, to have diligently enforced a policy of government, which was approved by many of the best among his co-temporaries; but which was found, by his successors, to need, in some respects, the correcting hand of experience. In his private and public relations, he was a man of unshaken integrity. For my country and my God,—was the motto inscribed upon his motives, purposes and deeds. That he had his imperfections, there is no doubt. But that he exhibited as few of them under his multiplied and trying duties, as the most excellent of men would in his situation, is equally correct. His many exertions for the prosperity of Salem, and his ardent attachment to it, should impress his name and worth on the hearts of its inhabitants as long as its existence continues. His first wife was Ann Gour, who came with him from England, and lived but a short time after her arrival hither. His second wife was Elizabeth Gibson, who

\* *Planter's Plea.* RIV. J. N. WHITE

survived him. He left two sons, John and Zerubabel. He was in his 77th year at his decease.

\* May 3d. General Court convene. Edmund Batter and Walter Price were Deputies. The Court set apart June 22d for a Fast on account of caterpillars, salmon worm, and impending judgments. In compliance with the King's order, through his commissioners, the Court order a map of the Colony to be drawn. Wm. Hathorne acknowledges before the Court, that he had spoken unadvisely against his Majesty's commissioners. The Court agree that their declaration of allegiance to the King shall be published by Mr. Oliver Purchase on horse back, by sound of trumpets; and that Thomas Bleigh Treasurer, and Marshal Richard Wait accompany him; and that in the close there shall be audibly said: "God save the King." In this and other instances of paying homage to Kings, the rulers of Massachusetts acted more to avert threatened evils, than to please themselves. At the present time, the Commissioners of his Majesty were continually reminding them of their short-comings in loyalty, and menacing them with the scourge of his displeasure, unless they were more pliant to his views. General Court, to conciliate the King, voted him £500 worth of the commodity best suited for his navy. The committee raised to obtain this commodity, were nine, of whom were Wm. Brown and George Curwin.—† 24th. The King's Commissioners proposed to the General Court, that the Colony should abolish their coining establishment, as contrary to royal prerogative; should allow Episcopalians to be exempted from fine for not attending Congregational worship, and, also, to be freemen as well as others; should permit the Friends to go about their lawful business; should observe Nov. 5th as a day of Thanksgiving, because the King and country had been preserved from gun-powder treason; and keep May 29th in a similar manner, to commemorate the birth and restoration of Charles II.; and observe

\* Col. R. † Dan.

9 7. Jan. 20th in fasting and prayer, "that God would avert his judgments for that most barbarous and execrable murder of our late sovereign, Charles I." These proposals appear to have been complied with. The last of them must have been exceedingly repugnant to the wishes of the colonists. \* As General Court publicly proclaimed against the interference of his Majesty's Commissioners in the cases of two persons, who had violated the laws, they broke off all conference with each other. † One of the two persons, mentioned, was John Porter, jr. of Salem, who, more than a year past, was confined in Boston jail for mal-treatment to his father. ‡ An order from the Legislature came to the Church here for a Fast, on account "of difficulties with his Majesty's Commissioners, and for the Lord to incline the ear of his Majesty." § In May, Edward Wharton was apprehended in Boston with others of his denomination. He was sentenced to receive 15 lashes and be imprisoned a month.

|| Oct. 11th. Court of Assistants sit. They appoint Nov. 8th for Thanksgiving because of comfortable food, the Dutch fleet's being diverted from the coast, and of peace and liberty. Clap informs us that a report reached Massachusetts in July, that De Ruyter was in the West Indies and intended to come hither; that the Castle was prepared to resist him; and that, driven from our coast by contrary winds, he went to Newfoundland and "did great spoil there." The Court, also, designate Nov. 22d for a Fast on account of the plague in London and many other places of England.

¶ Nov. 28th. The Friends here were fined £56 10. John Hathorne was confirmed as Quarter Master.— Robert Moulton, sen'r, had died recently. His children, surviving him, were Robert, Abigail, Samuel, Hannah, John, Joseph, Meriam and Mary. He was a ship builder and lived in Salem as early as 1629. He became freeman 1631. He resided a short time at Charlestown, which he represented in General Court

\* Col. R. † Qt. Ct. R. ‡ 1 Ch. R. § Bishop. || Col. R. ¶ Qt. Ct. R.

1635. The town granted him 100 acres of land 1636. He held the chief offices of Salem and served as one of its Deputies to General Court. He sustained a reputable character.

1666.

\* May 18th. Capt. Wm. Trask sen'r having died, the town make arrangements for his burial with military honours. He left a widow, Sarah, and children, William, Susan, Mary and John. He was among the first Church members. He became freeman 1630. He was granted 200 acres of land 1636. He sustained various offices in town,—was a Deputy to General Court, and several times served against the Indians. He was a brave man; a useful and respected member of society.—† 23d. General Court assemble. Wm. Brown and George Curwin were Deputies. The Court, considering the town and harbour of Salem much exposed, order it to be fortified. They encourage the people here, by an abatement of taxes, to build a battery in some suitable place. They instruct George Curwin to exert himself for finishing such defence. They require Marblehead to raise a company, to be trained by Maj. Wm. Hathorne of this place and Samuel Ward as serjeant of that place.—‡ 27th. The farmers, (living where Danvers now is) propose, that as the distance for them to attend meeting is great, they may be helped by the Congregation here to hire a minister, or that they may employ one themselves. Their petition was not yet granted.

§ June 18th. All males, above 16, were required to aid in making the fort on Winter Island.—|| 26th. Some of the Friends were fined £10. Josiah and Daniel Southwick and John Blevin, refusing to pay a fine of £1 apiece, were ordered to be whipped. Henry Skerry of Salem was chosen Marshal of the Court at £5 a year.

\* T. R. † Col. R. ‡ 1st Ch. R. § T. R. || Qt. Ct. R.

\* Sept. 10th. A house belonging to Capt. Savage was burnt in this town. The incendiary, a woman, was ordered to Boston prison for trial.—† 11th. General Court convened. Some of the Elders met with them as advisers. Their object was to answer a letter of his Majesty dated 10th April. This letter stated that he had recalled his commissioners, and that he required the Governor and Council to choose four or five persons for meeting him in London, on the subject of existing difficulties, and that Wm. Hathorne must be of the number.—‡ 14th. Petitions were handed into the Court from several towns. One of them was from Salem, signed by 33 persons, composing a respectable minority. This minority thought, that the King's instructions to his Commissioners were paramount to the Charter; and that they, whom he had commanded to meet him in England, should go and endeavour to clear the Colony from charges of disloyalty.--17th. The Court, in answering his Majesty's order for agents to wait on him, decline a compliance with it, because they believed their case would be no better understood, even if a delegation from the colony were to visit him. By such a reply they gave him to understand, that they regarded their Charter, as the dernier resort in Colonial questions of difficulty, and not his absolute pleasure. At the same time, they inform him, that, however they deem an invasion of Canada inexpedient for want of forces, still they had proclaimed his declaration of war against the French by sound of trumpet; that the French had taken some of their Vessels; that they had granted commissions, under which some of the enemy's fishing ships had been captured.

§ Oct. 11th. The Court of Assistants assemble. They set apart Nov. 8th as Thanksgiving day, for continuance of civil and religious privileges; for preservation from invasion by the common enemy, and for sustenance through a drought. They also designate Nov. 20th for a Fast, because of sins, blastings, mildew,

\* Qt. Ct. R.    † Col. R.    ‡ Dan.    § Col. R.

drought, grass-hoppers, caterpillars, and small-pox in Massachusetts; and wars and pestilence in England; and to pray that their liberties might be continued, country kept from invasion, and the fleet, lately sailed, have a prosperous passage.

\* Nov. 27th. Some of the Friends are fined £7. "The Court do order that the wreck that was lately secured by the worshipful Maj. Wm. Hathorne, and left by him in the hands of John Devorix, all those goods or wreck shall be remanded by the said Maj. Hathorne and by him made use of for erecting a *Cage* in Salem and to be accountable for the remainder." It was the practice to punish some offenders by confining them in a cage, and exposing them to public view on lecture days. In the course of this year Richard, son of Thomas Gardner, moved to Nantucket. He married Sarah Shattock about 1652. She was cut off from the Church here 1662, for having attached herself to the Friends' Society, and, as one of them, was often prosecuted. It is likely these things induced them to leave Salem.

#### 1667.

† Feb. 28th. The Church kept a Fast in reference to a motion for the brethren on Bass River to be a Church by themselves and settle John Hale as their minister.

April 2d. A Fast was observed here on account of the small pox in the Bay, and the burning of London.

‡ May 7th. The highway from Salem to Andover was laid out according to a previous plan of Gov. Endicott.—§15th. General Court assemble. George Curwin and Henry Bartholomew were Deputies. The Court order that foreign vessels, above 2 tons, shall pay 1-2 lb. of gunpowder, or an equivalent, for each ton. They appoint Wm. Hathorne to receive such powder for forts of Salem and Marblehead. They enact that, as enemies were by sea and land, there

\* Qt. Ct. R. †1st. Ch. R. ‡T. R. §Col. R.

should be a military committee in every town to superintend the preparation of defences, so that they might serve as refuges to women, children, and aged people in time of danger, and thereby the soldiers be more at liberty to repel invaders. They designate a Committee of 5, among whom was George Curwin, to obtain an allowance on the charge, made by John Hull and Robert Sanders for coining, in consideration of the country's expense on the mint house. They grant the petition of Salem for two or three barrels of powder and two or three (large) guns.

\* June 25th. A few of the Friends were fined.

† July 4th. The Church vote to use the Bay Psalm Book with Ainsworth. They consent that their brethren at Bass River shall become a distinct Church. ‡ This permission was put over for confirmation at a fuller meeting on Sacrament day, the latter part of the month. The number of persons, petitioning for the separation here contemplated, were about 74 of both sexes

§ Aug. 9th. By order of General Court, George Curwin, Wm. Brown and Walter Price were to receive contributions in Salem for his Majesty's fleet at Caribbee Islands.

|| Sept. 20th. The Church were invited to attend the ordination of Mr. John Hale. They concluded it best to have as many of their number attend as could. ¶ The separated members entered into covenant. Mr. Hale, being dismissed from Charlestown Church, was received into their fellowship. Including him there were 50 males and females, who signed the covenant. He was ordained by laying on of hands by Mr. Higginson of Salem, Mr. Thomas Cobbit of Ipswich, and Mr. Antipas Newman of Wenham. Then these ministers and their delegates owned the persons, who had just covenanted, to be a regular church. Mr. Hale preached for his people 3 years before his ordination. He

\* Ql. Ct. R.  
† 1st Ch. R.

‡ Beverly R.  
§ Col. P. (Papers.)

|| 1st Ch. R.  
¶ Bev. R.



was preceded in preaching for them by Joshua and Jeremiah Hobart. These two were sons of Rev. Peter Hobart of Hingham. Joshua became minister of Southhold, L. I. Jeremiah, who married Dorothy, daughter of Rev. Samuel Whiting of Lynn, became minister of Topsfield, then of Hemstead, L. I., and then of Haddam, Connecticut, where he died 1715, in his 85th year. He was grandfather to David Brainard, the noted Missionary. Both of the Messrs. Hobarts graduated at Harvard 1650. The salary of Mr. Hale varied from £64 to £85 and 30 cords of wood. This article, as drawn for him, was estimated at 6s. a cord. He was son of Robert and Rebeckah Hale of Charlestown. He was married thrice. He died May 15th 1700, in his 64th year.

\* Sept. 25th. Mrs. Alice Sharp, widow of the Ruling Elder, had died recently. She left children, viz. Nathaniel and Hannah, and three other daughters, married to Thomas Jeggles, Christopher Phelps, and John Norton. Her name is among the first Church members. She lived and died respected. ✓

† Oct. 9th. Court of Assistants convene. They appoint 5 persons, of whom was George Curwin, to superintend the building of vessels, because some had been built, which, in materials and models, were calculated to injure the colony's commerce. They propose, that any person who would build a dry dock for ships of 300 tons within 12 months should have the income of it, and no other dock should be made for 15 years. They set wheat at 5s., rye, barley, barley malt 4s., peas 3s. and corn 2s. 8d. a bushel for rates. They appoint Nov. 5th as a Thanksgiving day, for continuance of liberty, preservation from common enemy and a good harvest. They designate 1st Wednesday of Dec. for Fast day on account of troubles in Churches of all parts, particularly England, terrible tempests and the capture of vessels.

\*Nov. 26th. As many in Salem had not taken the oath of fidelity, they were required to do it before Judge Hathorne. Josiah Southwick was sentenced to pay 10s. "for contempt of authority by keeping on his hat after he was required to put it off." Others of the Friends were fined £14. If refusing to pay or give security, they were to be confined a week in the House of Correction at Ipswich at their own cost, and the Marshal was to impress carts and horses for their safe conveyance.—Messrs Higginson and Hathorne were desired to consult with persons of Marblehead about a petition, which these persons had presented for liberty to call and settle some one to assist Mr. Walton in the ministry.

## 1668.

†Jan. 14th. A day of Thanksgiving was kept by vote of the Church, for the preservation of liberty and for news of peace between England and Holland, which had arrived months before.

‡March 8th. Governor and Council request the ministers of all the towns to go, in imitation of Congregational ministers in England, and converse from house to house with young and old within the bounds of their parishes. Compliance with this advice was attended with good effects.

§April 15th. Robert Tufton Mason, proprietor of the Province of New-Hampshire, grants Wm. Trask of Salem the improvement of his house and land, except mines, for 15s. a year. Mr. Mason appears to have revived the claim, of which his grandfather, John Mason, had granted him by Plymouth Council in England, 1635, as to lands from Naumkeag, or North River of Salem, to Piscataqua River.—The claim which Wm. Trask allowed, was disputed strenuously by inhabitants of Ipswich, Gloucester and Beverly, in 1681. According to the testimony of Richard Brackenbury, William Dixy, and Humphrey Woodbury, in

\* Qt. Ct. R.    † 1st Ch. R.    ‡ Col. R.    § Qt. Ct. R.

1681, the ground for opposing Mason's claim was, that the Massachusetts Company purchased the right to land on the North side of Naumkeag River of the Dorchester Company, before Gov. Endicott came from England.

\*29th. General Court sit. Edmund Batter and John Porter were Deputies. The Court instructed Messrs. Batter and Bartholomew, as assessors, to estimate the merchandize in the Salem warehouses, and give a report of it to the County Commissioners. They require this and other towns to have a contribution, as a mark of their loyalty, for the paying of freight on masts, which had been, and were to be transported for his Majesty's navy. They order several Baptists of Boston to leave the Colony, unless they renounced their opinions. † This accorded with an able protest of the Congregational ministers, assembled in Boston, which was dated April 30th, and was particularly aimed against an assembly of Baptists, lately set up in Boston.

‡ June 30th. Ordered that £20 of a county rate be paid towards erecting a prison at Salem. ✓ Some of the Friends were fined £9 5. Edward Wharton, though uncalled for, repeatedly entered the Court "in an un-reverent manner with his hat on," and declared that the Government had shed innocent blood. He was asked, if he did not wickedly by thus expressing himself. He replied, "God forbid I should own that to be wicked, which God requires of me." He was fined £50 and ordered to be imprisoned till his fine was paid.

§ July 8th. As the inhabitants at North Neck were fearful of Indians, who resided thereabouts, they had leave for a watch to be set.

Sept. 10th. Mr. Nathaniel Pickman died. He had come from Bristol, England, to this town with his family 1666. His wife was Tabitha, and children, Nathaniel, John, Benjamin, William, Samuel, and Bethiah. 15th. Mrs. Elizabeth, wife of Mr. George Curwin died. She was the widow of Mr. John White before

\* Col. R. † Rowley Ch. R. ‡ Qt. Ct. R. § T. R.

she came to this country and married Mr. Curwin. She had some property by her first husband, which her second husband greatly increased. She united with the Church here 1640. Besides her children by Mr. Curwin, she had two daughters by Mr. White, one, Mary, married to Samuel Gardner, and the other to Samuel Andrew. She was a worthy woman.

\* Oct. 14th. Court of Assistants convene. They pass a law against travelling to improper places on the Sabbath. They enact that no persons, except church members in full communion, shall have liberty to choose and call a minister. † "The people at Cape Ann side received permission from General Court to be a Township, called Beverly." Beverly originally belonged to Sagamore John of Agawam, who granted it to the Colonists. Three of his grand children requested something for it; and, to satisfy them, though having no equitable claim, the inhabitants of Beverly paid them £6 6 8 in 1700. Among the useful persons set off from Salem to Beverly, were Richard Brackenbury, Roger Conant and Thomas Lathrop. Mr. Brackenbury came over with Governor Endicott. He was among the original church members. He became freeman 1630. He was granted 75 acres of land 1636. He died 1685 in his 85th year. He left descendants. Mr. Conant was an estimable man. He was at the head of the Planters, who came from Cape Ann and first settled in Salem. He was among the first church members. He became freeman 1631. He was granted 200 acres of land at the head of Bass River 1636. He, while an inhabitant of this town, held its principal offices and represented it at General Court. He petitioned General Court for land, "as an ancient planter," in 1671, and they granted him 200 acres. He came to this country from Budleigh in England. He died Nov. 19th 1679, in his 89th year. He left children. Capt. Lathrop was an active, intelligent and useful man. He, while within the limits of Salem, often held its

\* Col. R.

† Bev. T. R.

chief offices, and was a member of the church here before 1636. He was made freeman 1634. He was granted 30 acres of land 1636. He was an active and brave officer; and as such, was in several contests with the Indians and French. About 1654 he was a Captain under Major Sedgwick at the taking of St. Johns. He then desired the Major, that he would grant the bell, which was there, for Bass River meeting house. The Major answered, that this bell was promised, but that he would give him the next one taken. Port Royal was soon captured and Capt. Lathrop renewed his request. The Major accordingly ordered the bell, in the "New Friary" of Port Royal, to be put into the hands of the Captain, who had it transported to Bass River, (afterwards Beverly) and placed there in the meeting house. Capt. Lathrop was slain in a deadly battle with the Indians 1675. He came from England where he left a brother. He brought over a sister, Ellen, who became the second wife of Ezekiel Cheever, the noted school-master. He left a widow, Bethiah, daughter of Joshua Rea, and afterwards wife of Joseph Grafton. He had no children.

\* Nov. 24th. Salem is allowed £6 13 4 towards building a bridge over Ipswich River for the new road to Andover. Some of the Friends were fined £8 10. Samuel Shattock, John Blevin, Josiah Southwick and Joshua Buffum were committed to prison one month for not paying their fines. Nathaniel Hadlock was admonished for attending a meeting of the Friends; fined 40s. for refusing to assist a constable; and to be severely whipped for declaring, that he could receive no profit from Mr. Higginson's preaching, and that the government were guilty of innocent blood. He was also to give bonds for £20 that he would keep the peace.

1669.

† March 9th. "Jonathan Pickering is allowed to build shipping next beyond the causeway, provided he

\* Ql. Ct. R. † T. R.

do hinder no highway, nor cattle from coming to salt water.—10th.” The Governor and Council advise the Clergymen of all towns “to chatechize and instruct all people (especially youth) in the sound principles of the Christian Religion, and that not only in public, but privately from house to house, or at least three, four or more families meeting together as time and strength may permit; taking to your assistance such godly and grave persons as to you may seem expedient.”—26th. Messrs. Higginson of Salem, and Thatcher of Boston, recommend to the public Morton’s Memorial.

\* April 3d. A letter was received by the Church here from dissenting brethren of the first Church in Boston. † These brethren, being 28, were opposed to the settlement of John Davenport over their society in 1667, particularly because he had objected to the result of the Synod in 1662, and because his Church of New Haven did not consent to his leaving of them. They had tried for a dismission, but had not succeeded. ‡ For this purpose they desired the Salem Church to credit no evil reports against them, and to send their Elder and messengers to meet with others in Boston on the 13th, to advise them. The Pastor and Capt. Price were designated to attend this Council.—30th. The Pastor reported, that messengers from 13 other churches, besides those of Salem and Lynn, had met in Boston. He stated, that members of the Council applied to the Elders of the first Boston Church twice and then to both Elders and the brethren by way to pacification, but were denied any conference. He represented, that after these steps, the Council approved of advice, given to the aggrieved brethren by a former Council, and advised them to form another Church by themselves.

§ May 3d. Thomas Maul, of the Friends, was sentenced to be whipped 10 stripes for saying, that Mr. Higginson preached lies, and that his instruction was “the doctrine of devils.”—||16th. A letter from the

\* 1st. Ch. R. † Rowley Ch. R. ‡ 1st Ch. R. § Qt. Ct. R. || 1st Ch. R.

Elders of the first Church in Boston was read before the Church here, which requested, that they would not think uncharitably of them. The Pastor observed, that, as the dissenting brethren had been formed into a Church at Charlestown by representatives from five Churches, according to advice of two Councils, he saw no necessity of doing any thing about the letter. The Church thus formed at Charlestown became the third Church of Boston, and is called the Old South.—\* 19th. General Court assemble. George Curwin and Henry Bartholomew are Deputies. For carrying the law into effect against exporting coined money, the Court appoint searchers for it in different towns. They commission Edmund Batter to act in this business at Salem. As the Imitation of Christ by Thomas a Kempis, a Catholic Priest, was about to be printed, they order it to be revised by the Licensers. They instruct George Curwin to see that the Salem Fort is finished, and the Selectmen to assess taxes for meeting the expense

† June 29th. By an account allowed, it appears that the Colony had been answerable for the expenses, which the Magistrates and Deputies were at in passing to and from General Court. Benjamin Felton was appointed to keep the Salem prison. He accepted the trust for one year, having as much as Mr. Wilson, the keeper of Ipswich prison had. Some of the Friends were fined £9 10. John Blevin and Robert Gray of them were imprisoned for not giving security. As usual the Judges allow the servants where they boarded some compensation for attendance. Tamson, the widow of Robert Buffum, was appointed administrator of his estate; but as Gertrude Pope and Elizabeth Kitchen, of the Friends, and witnesses to his will, *would only testify and not swear to its correctness, it was not allowed to remain on file.*

‡ Oct. 18th. From the appointment of a Thanksgiving to be Nov. 17th, it appears that a famine threatened the Colony.

\* Col. R.

† Qt. Ct. R.

‡ Col. R.

\* Nov. 3d. Messrs. Hathorne and Price, as messengers from the Church here, met with a Council in Newbury concerning difficulties between the Pastor and people there. The Council adjourned to April 19th, when Mr. Higginson attended and brought a favourable report as to a settlement of the contention. This contention was renewed and occasioned another Council in about a year.

## 1670.

† April 5th. Wm. Brown sen. Edmund Batter, Henry Bartholomew and George Curwin, were appointed to agree with carpenters for building a meeting house not to exceed £1000. This building was to be 20 feet stud and set at the West end of the old meeting house towards the prison. The town gave land to set it on.

‡ May 11th. General Court assembles. George Curwin and Edmund Batter are Deputies. The Court say, "Whereas by the blessing of God, the trade of Fishing hath been advantageous to this country, which is likely to be much impaired by the use of Tortuga salt which leaves spots upon the Fish, by reason of shells and trash in it;" and they forbid such fish to be accounted merchantable. They appoint June 16th as a Fast-day for neglect of the young, and of maintaining the ministry in some places, and other transgressions. They choose a committee to report what had been the cause of divine displeasure against the land. The Committee after stating such things, "as a subversion of Gospel order," to be the occasion of judgments, speak against the formation of the 8d Church of Boston as irregular. The question, whether a man may marry the sister of his deceased wife, is decided by the Court in the negative.

§ June 18th. Daniel Epes was hired to keep the school. He was from Ipswich. Mr. Norrice, who was his predecessor, was still kept in part pay. || 27th. Mr. Thomas Ruck had died lately. He and his wife,


\* 1st Ch. R. † T. R. ‡ Col. R. § T. R. || Qt. Ct. R.



Elizabeth, joined the Church here 1640. He was made freeman the same year. He left a widow and children, among whom was John Ruck. He appears to have sustained a respectable standing in society.—

\* This month, it was agreed, that candidates for the Church should be admitted P.M. at the close of the sermon.—It was customary for such candidates to stand propounded a month before admission.—†28th. A fine of £6 was laid on some of the Friends. Attachments were to be laid on the property of others, that they might be compelled to appear at Court.

Nov. 29th. Mr. John Croad, merchant, had recently deceased. He had married Elizabeth, daughter of Mr. Walter Price. She and their children survived him. He had held the office of Marshal, and seems to have possessed a reputable character.

Dec. 2d. William Hathorne, Judge, Æ 63, testifies, that Lady Moody came over about 30 years ago, and paid Mr. Humphrey for his estate £1100. 

### 1671.

‡ March 3d. Capt. John Smith allowed 40s. for entertaining sick people at Castle hill.

§ May 31st. General Court sit. Messrs Batter and Bartholomew are Deputies. Clergymen are freed from country, county and church rates. They are also freed from town rates, except a contrary agreement is made. As the property of Governor Endicott's widow was not sufficient for her support, she was granted an annuity of £30 during her widowhood. This act was an indication of public respect both for her and her deceased husband. Fifteen ministers who counselled the 3d Church of Boston to form a Society by themselves, present an address to the Court, requesting, that, as their committee the last year reported them as disorganizers for giving such counsel, they may have a hearing either before the Court or a Convention of Churches. The Court consider their address, and apologize to

\* 1st Ch. R. † Q. Ct. R. ‡ T. R. § Col. R.

them for improper terms, applied to them by their committee. Of the clergymen so concerned was Mr. Higginson.

\* June 25th. Elias Stileman was recommended to the Church at Portsmouth, where he was a useful and eminent man.—† 30th. Pasco Foot had died lately. He became a member of the Church 1652. He left children, Pasco, Elizabeth, Mary, Samuel, and Abigail. He was an enterprising merchant.

‡ July 17th. For £160 salary voted to Mr. Higginson, and understood to be payable in country produce, he agreed to take £120 in cash. This shows that discount on contracts for produce, when paid in money, was occasionally 1-4 part.

§ October. About this time, James Bailey, of Newbury, began to preach for the people of Salem Village. —

#### 1672.

|| March 22d. Permission was granted to the farmers to have a minister by themselves.—¶ 22d. Two persons who had been covenant children of the Church were publicly censured and admonished for ill-conduct. This shows that an immediate watch was kept by the Church members over those, who had been baptized in infancy. An example of this kind is now worth imitating.

\*\* May 1st. As complaint was made against racing horses to the danger of people's lives, and against riding fast to and from meeting on the Sabbath, such practices were forbidden on penalty of 40s.—†† 6th. The town by consent of Mr. Higginson and Church, request Charles Nicholet to preach for them a year on trial for settlement. They also desire him to preach a lecture once every week. Mr. Nicholet came from Virginia and had preached several times before he was invited to continue his labours.—8th. The Selectmen publicly forbid 12 persons to spend their time and es-

\* 1st Ch. R.  
† Qt. Ct. R.

‡ T. R.  
§ Col. P.

|| T. R.  
¶ 1st Ch. R.

\*\* Qt. Ct. R.  
†† T. R.

tates at the two ordinaries of Salem in drinking.—\*15th. General Court sit. George Curwin and Henry Bartholomew are Deputies. The Court agree to observe the 22d as a Fast day in the Court House. Several ministers are designated to perform the religious services. June 13th is appointed for a Fast day, because of the involved state of England, and threatening wars of Europe. The Court order, that scolds and railers shall be gagged or set in a ducking stool and dipped over head and ears three times. They forbid persons to give their workmen wine or strong liquors on fine of 20s. except in cases of need. It appears by the repeal of a law, that none but tanners had been allowed to trade in hides. Wm. Hathorne and another are designated to make diligent inquiry concerning memorable events, and particularly "what hath been collected by John Winthrop sen. Thomas Dudley, John Wilson sen. and Edmund Johnson, or any other, that so matter being prepared, some meet person may be appointed by this Court to put the same into form, that so after perusal, it may be sent to the press." Joseph Gardner is appointed Lieutenant of the company under Capt. Walter Price.—† 28th. War was proclaimed in Boston against the Dutch, as had already been done in England.

‡ June 25th. Not long before this, Mr. Theodore Price was lost at sea. He was son of Walter Price. He married Ann Wood 1667. He left her with two daughters. His widow married Dudley Bradstreet, of Andover, son to the Governor, 1673.

§ Aug. 11th. Mr. Nicholet was admitted a member of the Church here.—|| 17th. It was voted, that the Old Meeting House should be pulled down on the 19th, and that 30 men a day be employed for this business. It was agreed that "the old pulpit and the Deacon's seat be given to the Farmers."—19th. It was voted, that of the meeting house materials a school house and watch house should be built.

\* Col. R. † Hutch. ‡ Qt. Ct. R. § 1st Ch. R. || T. R.

\* Sept. 5th. As New-Haven and Connecticut had become one Colony, articles of confederation were renewed with some alteration, by Commissioners of Plymouth, Connecticut and Massachusetts. Wm. Hathorne was one of them.

† Oct. 8th. Court of Assistants convene. Fast is appointed to be Dec. 24th, for unusual sickness the latter part of the summer and its continuance in some towns; for hay hurt by rains; for England's being greatly concerned in the Protestant wars of Europe. The inhabitants of Salem village are allowed to raise money for the support of the ministry and erection of a meeting house. Wm. Hathorne is allowed land of a mile square at or near Pennicook, for 500 acres granted him 1661, provided it should not hinder the town already granted. Henry Bartholomew and Joseph Gardner are appointed a Committee for Essex to settle the accounts of what was received for the relief of his Majesty's fleet at Caribee Islands; and, also, to collect the back contributions.

‡ Nov. 11th. Mr. Bailey was voted £40 for his first year's preaching.—§ 29th. Mr. John Norman had died lately. He was one of the persons, employed by the Dorchester Company and was at Salem with his father, when Governor Endicott arrived. His age was about 60. He left a wife, Arabella, and children. She joined the Church here 1636.

|| Dec. 26th. The people of Salem village agree to build a meeting house, 16 feet stud, 28 broad, and 34 long.

## 1673.

¶ Jan. 14th. Mr. Wm. Lord, sen. Cutler, died, Æ. about 89. His relict was Abigail. He united with the Church here 1639. He had been selectman and sustained other offices in town. He was a benevolent and useful member of society.

\* Haz. Coll.  
† Col. R.

‡ Dan. (Danvers) R.  
§ Qt. Ct. R.

|| Dan. R.  
¶ Qt. Ct. R.

\* March 2d. Fast day by agreement of the Church here for "the afflicted state of God's people abroad, and also the signs and fears of approaching judgments towards ourselves." The services were performed by Messrs. Hale, Nicholet, and Higginson.—† 6th. Voted by those of Salem village, that 1-5 of the rate for building a meeting house, shall be paid in money or butter at 5*d* per pound.

‡ April 14th. The town, contrary to Mr. Higginson's wish, requested Mr. Nicholet to preach for them another year after the first shall have ended.—21st. A Committee were chosen to build a school house, which was to serve as a watch and town house, of the timber, that was in the old meeting house.—26th. Among the services of the sexton, he was to call at Mr. Higginson's house for him, in the morning and afternoon of every Sabbath.

§ May 7th. General Court assemble. Henry Bartholomew was Deputy. Wm. Brown sen. had been chosen with him by the town, but he seems not to have appeared at the first of the session. Wm. Brown sen., George Curwin and two others, are requested to import, on account of the Colony, 60 great guns, and a proportion of shot, from Bilboa, where they traded.

|| June 24th. Mr. Jacob Barney had died recently, *Æ*. 73. He became freeman 1634, and a member of the Church here, about the same time. He had a grant of land 1636. He was often selectman and Deputy to General Court. He was an intelligent merchant. He left a wife, Elizabeth, and children, Jacob, and a daughter, married to John Cromwell. The loss of such men as Mr. Barney is not easily supplied. Rev. Mr. Nicholet took the oath of freeman.

¶ Aug. 4th. General Denison, of Ipswich, orders the Salem Fort be repaired.

\*\* Oct. 15th. General Court sit. They designate Nov. 28th for Thanksgiving because of a good harvest

\* 1st Ch. R.    ‡ T. R.    || Qt. Ct. R.    \*\* Col. R.  
† Dan. R.    § Col. R.    ¶ T. R.

and preservation from enemies on neighboring coasts. The enemies here referred to were the Dutch, in a squadron from Holland, who had destroyed the commerce of Virginia and re-captured New-York. The Court order 100 militia men, and 30 troopers to be impressed from Essex Regiment. They having been informed, "that there is one Robert Stone, master of a vessel, lately come from New-York and arrived at Salem, do judge it necessary in order to the present affair under consideration, that said Stone together with Mr. Hollingsworth, who was lately taken by the Dutch, be forthwith sent for;" that the Court "may receive such information as they can give." Persons, not members of Churches in full communion, and desiring to become freemen were henceforth to hand in their names at the Court of Election, and have them read over some day of the session, and the vote, for their being admitted freemen, was not to be taken till next Court of Election. As sheep had been set too high in country rates, the Court order them to be valued at £5 a score. As piracy was prevailing, an act is passed, that it shall be punishable with death. \* One occasion of this law was that an English crew had taken their ship from the captain and put him with some of his officers into the long boat. He arrived at Boston, whither the mutineers soon came with his vessel. They were executed in Boston.

† Nov. 7th. Those of Salem village voted Mr. Bailey £47 and 40 cords of wood for his second year. They, also, voted to build a house for the Ministry, 13 feet stud, 20 wide, and 28 long, and a "leantoo of 11 feet at the end."

‡ Dec. The selectmen, knowing that some persons neglected to have their children instructed and brought up to useful employment, advertize the children of five such persons, as ready for being bound out to service.

\* Mather.

† Dan. R.

‡ T. R.

1674.

\* Jan. 6th. General Court grant Richard Hollingsworth 500 acres of land. They order that every postman, on public service, shall have 3d. a mile, and that no inn-holder shall charge him more than 2s. a bushel for oats, and 4d. for hay during day and night.

† Feb. 19th. Mr. Higginson, knowing that a majority of his people were about to invite Mr. Nicholet to preach a third year, which would begin June 14th, called a Church meeting, and stated that he was decidedly opposed to Mr. N's. staying any longer. The reasons of his objection were, that Mr. N. did not preach sound doctrine ; that his continuance was calculated to increase difficulty ; and that he was no help to him. Mr. H. laid these reasons before the Church, that Mr. N. might have reasonable notice to provide for himself elsewhere. Much debate ensued. Mr. H. was inclined to take a vote on the subject, but the principal of the brethren advised him to delay, lest a minority of them should join the town and have Mr. N. at all events. Mr. H. complied, and observed, that he felt satisfied with having done his duty. In the beginning of March, the town desired Mr. H. to attend their meeting ; and asked his reasons for objecting to Mr. N's preaching for them. He answered, You know. When they stated that they wished for Mr. N. to abide with them another year, Mr. H. said, that he would be passive but not concur.

‡ March 31st. John Ruck, and John Putnam, of Salem, were part of a company who owned iron works at Rowley village.

§ May 27th. General Court assemble. George Curwin and Henry Bartholomew are Deputies. The Court order, that Salem Company shall be divided into two ; that Joseph Gardner be captain of one, and John Curwin captain of the other.

|| June 5th. Capt. Walter Price died *Æ.* 61. His wife was Elizabeth, who deceased the succeeding Nov.

\* Col. R. † 1st. Ch. R. ‡ Qt. Ct. R. § Col. R. || T. R.

11th, Æ. 73. They were married in Bristol, England. They appear to have come to Salem 1641. They united with the church here 1642, and he became freeman the same year. He left children, Elizabeth, married to her second husband, John Ruck, and Hannah, wife of Hilliard Veren, jun. and two sons, John and William. He was a respectable merchant. His estate was over £2058. His offices were various. He was often one of the Selectmen and of the Deputies to General Court. He was an estimable member of the community.—

\* 30th. A person, for slandering Mr. Higginson, was sentenced to make an acknowledgement before the Assembly on Lecture day, and audibly crave his pardon, or be whipped 15 stripes and imprisoned till bonds be given for £5. Mr. Thomas Gardner had died recently. He was son of Thomas Gardner, who came from Scotland, and who was an overseer of the Plantation at Gloucester 1624, and moved thence to Salem. He, and his first wife, Margaret Frier, united with the church here 1639. He became freeman 1641. His last wife, Damaris Shattock, connected herself with the Friends, and for this was often fined. She survived him. His children were Sarah Balch, Seeth Grafton, Thomas, George, John, Samuel, Joseph, and Richard. He had lost a daughter, Miriam Hill. According to the custom of his time, he left his son, Thomas, a double portion. He was selectman and held other offices of the town. He was a respectable merchant.

† September. Mr. Nicholet began to preach nine farewell sermons, as if he were about leaving Salem.

October. The town, to prevent Mr. Nicholet's departure, gave him a call to continue with them for life. The lecture day following he accepted their invitation. Not long after this, some persons, none of whom belonged to the Church, attempted to gather another Church in Salem.

Nov. 30. Mr. Higginson acquainted his Church, that the Deputy Governor and Major General had been ap-



plied to, by individuals, for permission to form a Church at Lynn on Dec. 8th, but that they did not grant them permission. The Church voted to send the Pastor, and brethren, Wm. Brown, Edmund Batter and Samuel Gardner, to oppose the gathering of the proposed Church. He and two of these brethren appeared at Lynn Dec. 8th, and with messengers from Ipswich, Rowley, and Beverly, voted against the organizing of the Church. Messengers from other churches thought, on examination of the persons intending to become a Church, that they had better delay being so organized. Chief Justice Sewall informs us, in his diary, that the object of forming such a Church was to get Mr. Nicholet for its minister.

It appears, that as Mr. Nicholet's friends were defeated in having a Church organized in Salem, they tried for the same object at Lynn. Had they succeeded, they would, in all probability, have had the Church so gathered, returned to this town, and called the second Church of Salem.

#### 1675.

\* Jan. 10th. The Church here was invited to attend the ordination of Joseph Gerrish at Wenham on the 13th. Edmund Batter and Henry Skerry were chosen to go with the Pastor. Mr. Gerrish was son to Mr. Wm. Gerrish, of Newbury. He was born March 23, 1651. He graduated at Harvard 1669. He married Anna, daughter of Maj. Richard Waldron of Dover. He began to preach at Wenham 1673. He died there Jan. 6th, 1720, in his 70th year. He left four sons and three daughters. He was an intelligent and estimable minister.—18th. A letter from the Governor and Council was read to the Church. It proposed the expediency of asking advice from churches about the difficulties, occasioned by the continuance of Mr. Nicholet. The Pastor and Hon. Wm. Hathorne and most of the brethren thought best to comply. The Church

agreed on Feb. 18th for a day of Humiliation to seek divine guidance, when Messrs. Higginson and Nicholet perform the services.

Feb. 19th. The Pastor excepted against Mr. Nicholet's doctrine and practice. Mr. N. made some explanation and concessions ; and his acknowledgement was accepted as satisfactory. Mr. Joseph Brown was dismissed to Charlestown Church for which he preached. He was son of Hon. Wm. Brown. He graduated at Harvard 1666. He married Mehitable Brenton, who died Sept. 14th, 1676. He died at Charlestown 1678.

[On Harvard Catalogue the name of Mr. Brown is not printed in Italics, which, at first sight, would seem to denote, that he was not a preacher. But the fact is, that the names of preachers not ordained were printed as his is. In his day it was customary to preach three, six or more years for a society, before ordination over ]  
[them. This spring a majority of the town and many of the Church attempted to build a Meeting House, which they carried forward so far as to raise the roof of it on the Common. They petitioned General Court that Mr. Nicholet might become their minister.

\* May 12th. General Court sit. Samuel Brown and Edmund Batter are Deputies. The Court direct letters to every town clerk, requesting ministers to stir up the inhabitants to pay what contributions were due and to contribute more to finish the new building for the college. They confirm John Pierce as Lieutenant, and John Higginson, Ensign, of the company under Capt. Joseph Gardner ; and Richard Leach as Lieutenant, John Pickering, Ensign, of the company under Capt. John Curwin. They order that a person be appointed in every sea-port to prevent the exportation of sheep, wool, and racoon furs. They require Constables to carry their *black staves* as before, except when in pursuit of delinquents, and then do as convenient. On account of the petitions and remonstrances from Salem about Mr. Nicholet, the Court designate the Governor,

Deputy Governor, and eight more, as a committee to meet here and endeavour to make an amicable adjustment of difficulties.

\* June 8th. The Committee, last mentioned, came hither and were in session three days. Their report was dated the 10th. They regret the contention. They declare the manner of calling and settling Mr. Nicholet, by a promiscuous vote of the town, very irregular and contrary to all known wholesome laws of the Colony, and of a tendency dangerous both to Church and State. They advise that the church and town observe a day of Fasting and Prayer and settle their differences; that the ministry be carried on by Messrs. Higginson and Nicholet together; and that when another society should be formed, it should be done with harmony. "At the same time the committee were in session, news came that Philip and the Indians had begun war with the English."

† June 29th. Fast day on account of Indian troubles.

‡ July 9th. Edmund Batter and Wm. Brown appeared as Deputies at General Court, which voted, that the charge for an expedition against the Indians shall be laid on the whole colony.—§ 20th. ✓ Richard Prince died recently, *Æ*. 61. He joined the Church 1642, and became freeman the same year. He was long Deacon of the Church here. He was a tailor by occupation. He was frequently one of the selectmen. He was an active, influential and worthy man. ✓ 26th. Governor Winslow of Plymouth writes to Mr. Leveret, "my person, I hear, has been much threatened by Indians. I have about twenty men at my house; have sent away my wife and children to Salem, that I may be less incumbered; have flanked my house and resolve to maintain it as long as a man will stand by me."

|| Aug. 1st. The church here agree to try the Bay Psalm Book six months.

\* 1st Ch. R. † Mather. ‡ Col. R. § Q. Ct. R. || 1st Ch. R.

\* Sept. 18th. Seventy men, the most of whom were from Essex, under Capt. Thomas Lathrop, of Beverly, were killed with him while fighting against the Indians at Muddy Brook. Some of the slain were from Salem.

† Oct. 8th. £10 18 were distributed to persons in and out of Salem, who had suffered by the Indians.—

‡ 13th. Court of Assistants convene. They require the Military Committee to see that every town is guarded against invasion. Owing to the pressing charge on account of the Indian War, they order seven single country rates; each of which was to be for Boston £300, Salem £180, Charlestown £80, and Ipswich £70. The single rate of all Essex was £474 10 11; Middlesex £465 8 6, and Suffolk £613 6 11. ✓

Nov. 3d. The General Court publish what they consider twelve evils, which brought on the country the burning and depopulating of several hopeful Plantations, and the murdering of many people by the Indians. One of these evils is thus expressed: "Long hair, like woman's hair, is worn by some men, either their own or others hair made into perewigs; and by some women wearing borders of hair, and their cutting, curling and immodest laying out their hair, which practice doth prevail and increase especially among the younger sort." Another evil, as described by the Court was, "Pride in apparel, both for costliness in the poorer sort, and vain new strange fashions both in poor and rich, with naked breasts and arms, or as it were pinioned with the addition of superfluous ribbons both on hair and apparel." The Court revive their laws against the meetings of the Friends and their being brought into the Colony. Lest the Indian war should make provision scarce, they prohibit the exportation of wheat, biscuit, and flour. They consider some reflections made on them and the Maj. General in presence of Capt. George Curwin by Capt. Haskett of Salem; whom they require to apologize to Capt. Curwin here on a lecture day, and pay £50. They appoint Dec.

\* Col. P.

† 1st Ch. R.

‡ Col. R.

2d for a Fast because of the sad condition of N. England \* According to notice from General Court, Mr. Higginson revives his attention to the children of his Congregation. He proposed to chatechize them every second week on the 5th and 6th days as formerly. ✓

† Oct. 23d. General Denison sends to Capt. George Curwin for eight of his best horsemen.

‡ Nov. 4th. Mr. Higginson attended a Council at Rowley, to advise the church there, to settle their difficulties about Mr. Shepard's preaching for them.—§25th. Eleven men were impressed for the country's service, some of whom belonged here.

Dec. 1st. Thirty-one men were impressed from the Salem companies. They appear to have been selected for an expedition against the Narragansets. They marched with other troops from Boston the 8th. On the 15th, two men of this town were killed, and one more wounded by Indians. Capt. Joseph Gardner, of this town, and others, went out immediately and killed an Indian, who had slain one of the Salem troops and had his cap on.—19th. The forces of Plymouth, Connecticut and Massachusetts attacked the Narragansets in a Swamp. After a warmly contested battle of three hours, the English took the enemy's place and fired their wigwams. One thousand of the Indians perished. Eighty-five of the English were killed or died of their wounds, and one hundred and forty-five others wounded. Among the killed were Capt. Gardner and six of his company, besides eleven more of them wounded.

|| "Maj. Church espying Capt. Gardner amidst the wigwams in the east end of the Fort made towards him; but on a sudden, while looking at each other, Capt. Gardner settled down. The Major stepped to him and seeing the blood run down his cheek, lifted up his cap and called him by name. He looked up but spoke not a word, being mortally wounded, shot through the head, and observing the wound the Major ordered care to be taken of him." Thus fell an inhabitant of

\*1st Ch. R. †Col. P. ‡Rowley Ch. R. § Col. P. || Church's History.

Salem in the camp of his enemies. The loss of him and others of his townsmen in so bloody a contest, must have occasioned here, when related, general emotions of regret. Capt. Gardner was son of Thomas Gardner. He appears to have followed the seas as a commander. He had married Ann, daughter of Emanuel Downing, before 1657. He left no children. His widow married Governor Bradstreet about 1680. By his patriotic devotedness, he honoured both his town and country.

\* Dec. 21st. A question arose among the Friends here as to the propriety of the hat's being worn in time of prayer. The greater part of them decided this question in the negative.

## 1676.

† Jan. 11th. A considerable number of persons had fled to Salem for protection. The record as to them is, they "being driven from their habitations by the barbarous heathen, are added as inhabitants of the town, though most of them affirming they have provision for themselves and families a year." Some of them had emigrated from Salem. Many towns were thus resorted to by those, who escaped from places, exposed to the Indians.

‡ Feb. 21st. General Court order 20 foot soldiers and ten troopers to be impressed out of Essex. They grant commissions to Lieut. John Peirce and Ensign John Higginson, of the company, lately under Capt. Joseph Gardner. As there were many Indians skulking about the Colony, the Court offer £3 for every one of them killed or taken prisoner.

§ March 15th. A Committee were to see that Essex was fortified. Salem was mentioned with other towns, as preparing, besides its Fort, several garrisons to secure the people of its farm houses.—27th. A letter from Maj. Wm. Hathorne, then commander at Wells, stated, that the people there were much distress-

\* Friends' R. † T. R. ‡ Col. R. § Col. P.

ed ; that the forces at Winter Harbour could not hold out, unless re-inforced ; and that many of his soldiers were sick.

April 8th. Major Wm. Hathorne writes to the Governor again from Wells, that the Indians had burnt Cape "Nettiok," killed 6 or 7 persons, besides two of Wells.—\* 20th. Mr. Nicholet preached his farewell sermons. Being bound on a voyage to England, he removed to Boston. The Church here recommend him to the Churches of London and elsewhere. Thus closed the ministry of Mr. N. at Salem. It was unfavourable to the peace of himself and the congregation, that he was not approved of by Mr. Higginson, a majority of the Church, and a minority of the town. Though charged with offences in doctrine and conduct, yet he was conciliatory, and considered by most respectable men as fit to be colleague with Mr. Higginson. No doubt his conclusion to leave the country was more prudent, than if it had been to continue. The extremes of attachment and dislike, in circumstances like his, are more apt to converge to a happy medium, by the occasion of such extremes being removed, than by its being retained.

† May 3d. General Court convene. George Curwin and Henry Bartholomew are Deputies. As Salem found it difficult to have Constables stand, when chosen, the Court impose a fine of £10 on any one, refusing to serve as such, when elected. The Court require Essex to impress its proportion of men for service. To adjust demands against the Colony for carrying on the war, a committee was appointed in each county. There were three on the Essex committee, of whom was Henry Bartholomew. Capt. George Curwin was called by the Court to answer for a misunderstanding between him and Capt. Henchman, commander-in-chief of the forces, then out against the enemy. Capt. Curwin was required to give up the command of his cavalry and pay the country £100. But at the Sept. session, the

\* 1st Ch. R.

† Col. R.

Court grant the petition of the Salem and Lynn troopers for him, to be restored to his command over them.

\* June 19th. "Agreed with John Marston to move the prison into Benjamin Holten's garden."—† 29th. Thanksgiving for the prospect of subduing the Indians.

‡ July 18th. Josiah Southwick was presented for bringing the wife of John Smith to address the people, on the Sabbath to their great annoyance. He was fined 10s. and ordered to bring the wife of said Smith before the Court to-morrow or pay 30s. The wife of Henry Trask was fined 5s. for disturbing the congregation, as they came out of meeting. John Robinson was fined 10s. for being twice at the Friends' meeting. Six others were arraigned for absence from congregational worship. Thus the Friends, after a few years' respite, began to feel the severities of law.

§ Aug. 6th. From a letter of Gen. Denison great alarm existed in this quarter because the enemy had passed the Merrimack.—12th. King Philip, the powerful foe of the English, was killed at Mount Hope Neck, R. I. He was the youngest son of Massasoit, and succeeded his brother Alexander 1657, as Sachem of Pokanoket. He had professed friendship for the Colonists. But he perceived that their extending settlements would demand either the removal of the Aborigines, or the obliteration of their name as a separate and independant people. Besides his apprehensions on this subject, he cherished a prejudice against all his civilized neighbours for injuries, which he or some of his subjects had received from a few of them. By expecting too much from the English, he arrived to the state of feeling, wherein he was satisfied with nothing at their hands. Thus unhappily inclined, he strove, for several years, to foment a spirit of jealousy and revenge in various tribes against the Colonists. His measures for this object were planned with much ability and executed with much adroitness. Thus intent, he resolved to make a mighty effort to rid the land of the English.

\*T. R. † Mather. ‡ Qt. Ct. R. § Col. P.



In 1675 he and his allies began their work of destruction. They were more powerful and more successful, than the Colonists supposed they could be. They spread desolation, terror and lamentation wherever they came. At length their tide of success began to ebb. Philip, their chief, was pursued with some followers, to the place of his death. The tidings of his fall spread joy through N. England. Could courage, enterprize, hardships, sagacity and patriotism, give victory, he would have succeeded. But well for his opponents, their superiority in discipline proved his overthrow. For the sufferings he brought upon them, they accounted him as the worst of his species. Still could some historians of his own nation have described the principles of his policy, and the traits of his character, they would have presented him before us as one of the greatest heroes of his age. Thus it is that adverse parties have always allowed themselves to cherish opposite views of the same motives, actions, and persons.

\* Sept. 3d. A letter was received from Rev. John Wheelwright, of Salisbury, requesting messengers to attend a Council there Sept. 19th, with respect to Maj. Pike's ex-communication. Edmund Batter and John Hathorne were designated to attend. They reported that the Council advised Salisbury Church to repeal the vote for the cutting off of Maj. Pike. Mr. Wheelwright, who sent the said letter, was the one banished from Massachusetts 1638. After changing the place of his ministry several times, he settled at Salisbury, where he died Nov. 15th, 1679, at an advanced age.—  
† 6th. Maj. Wm. Hathorne, and other commanders, with their troops, surprised 400 Indians at Quecheco. Two hundred of these Indians were found to have been perfidious and were sent to Boston. Seven or eight of them were sentenced to immediate death and the rest were sent away and sold as slaves. Mr. John Porter died recently, *Æ.* about 80. He was made freeman 1633. He united with the Church here

\* 1 Ch. R.

† Hob.

1677]

1649. He was afterwards concerned in transacting business of the town. He was frequently Selectman. He was Deputy to General Court. He left children. He was worthy of the confidence, which was largely placed in him.

\* Nov. 6th. Jeffrey Massey's will was dated, and he died soon after,  $\text{\AA}$  about 84. He left a wife, Ellen, and a son, John. He was among the first Church members. He was often employed as Surveyor and also, on the board of Selectmen. He held these and other offices with honor to himself and usefulness to others. The question whether John Massey or Roger Conant was the first child, born in Salem, formerly received considerable attention from some. Jan, 1640, Roger Conant had land as the first born child of this town. John Massey petitions, March 1686, for the Ferry, as "the oldest man *now living in Salem*, that was born here." March 1704, the Church voted John Massey an old Bible, "he being considered the first town born child." The truth appears to be that Roger Conant was the first child born in Salem. But as he and his father were set off to Beverly years before Massey's petition, Massey, when petitioning for the Ferry, was the oldest man *then living* in Salem, who had been born here. The phrase in the Church Records, which represents Massey as the first born of this town, seems to have been either a misconstruction of the words in his petition, or a mistake of tradition respecting him.

1677.

† March 1st. Fast was observed by order of Court on account of the war.—March 6th. At the Court of Assistants, John Flint of Salem, was tried for being the means of Eliezer Coates' death. The verdict against him was manslaughter. He was fined £20, and required to pay £20 more to the father of the deceased.

‡ April 3d. 1000 "claboards" are mentioned for the

\* Q1 Ct. R.

† 1st. h. R.

‡ T. R.

town house at £4.—It is noticeable that what are now called clapboards, are written on old Records “clayboards” or “clayboards.” Clayboards appears to be more correct orthography than clapboards,—because such kind of lumber (perhaps of a larger size than at present, though of the same form) was formerly used to cover the clay, daubed upon the bricks, which were put in the sides of a house, as may be seen in some ancient, decaying buildings.

\* May 6th. <sup>1</sup>It was agreed that the Lord’s supper be every month.—† 23d. General Court sit. Edmund Batter was Deputy. Thomas Greaves is put down as another Deputy from Salem, but he belonged to Charlestown. The Court enact that the laws against profaning the Sabbath be read by each minister before his congregation twice every year, viz. in March and September. They order that tithing men be appointed, each of whom, in the various towns, shall have the care of ten families, so that Sabbath breakers be restrained. As, on the 11th of June, twenty-five tithing men were chosen by Salem to superintend its families, there were about 250 families here. If reckoning 5 2-3 to a family, as in England, there were 1416 inhabitants, besides a fraction, in this town. The Court require *Cages* to be set up in the market place of Boston and such other towns as the County Courts shall specify, for confining violators of the Sabbath. They empower Constables to make diligent search for the Friends on the Lord’s day, if suspected of being met together, and, if the constables be denied admittance where the Friends are, to break open the doors and apprehend them. As horses had been rated at the price of £5 each, but had fallen, the Court order, that from three years old and upward they shall be set at £3 apiece, between two and three years at £2, between one and two years at £1.

‡ June 11th. The Selectmen agreed that each of them would take turns and accompany the Constables,

A. M. and P. M., morning and evening, of the Sabbath, to prevent its being violated.

\* July 8th. A vessel arrived at Salem, which took Capt. Ephraim How, of New-Haven, the only survivor of his crew, from a desolate Island near Cape Sables, where, for eight months, he endured severe suffering from cold and hunger.—† 16th. A part of the principal men of Salem write to the Council: "Some of us have met with considerable loss by Indians lately taking our vessels. Some vessels, lately come in, say that the Indians purposed to pursue four more of our Ketches, we therefore desire that a vessel with forty or fifty men may be immediately sent to protect them and retake those and the poor captives already taken." They also state that the enemy were at Cape Sables. The Council granted their request. It appears by Mr. Higginson's account, that a Ketch was fitted out against the enemy and was successful.—‡ 25th. "The Lord having allowed the Indians to take no less than thirteen Ketches of Salem and captivate the men (though divers of them cleared themselves and came home) it struck great consternation into all people here, and it was agreed, that the Lecture day should be kept as a Fast." The services were performed by the Pastor, Messrs. Hale, Cheever and Gerish. "The Lord was pleased to send in some of the Ketches on the Fast day, which was looked on as a gracious smile of Providence; also 19 wounded men had been sent to Salem a little while before. Also a Ketch with 40 men was sent out of Salem as a man of war to recover the rest of the Ketches. The Lord gave them success."

§ Aug. 4th. The Friends have a monthly meeting of men and women at the house of Josiah Southwick.

|| Sept. 6th. Mrs. Elizabeth, widow of Rev. Antipus Newman, of Wenham, claimed a tract of land at Ryal's side, granted to her brother, Gov. John Winthrop, jr. by Salem, for Salt Works. The town settled her claim.

\* Mather. † Col. R. ‡ 1st. Ch. R. § Friends' R. || T. R.

\* Oct. 7th. Samuel Cheever, minister of Marblehead, was admitted to the Church here, recommended by Ipswich Church. He was son of Ezekiel Cheever, the School master. It appears that he and the professors of religion, who heard him, still held their connexion with Salem Church.—† 10th. Court of Assistants convene. They appoint Nov. 15th as Thanksgiving day for plentiful harvest and the diminution of the enemy's rage. They order three rates, two of them to be paid in the money and one in produce, which, if paid in money, was to have *one third part discounted*. They instruct the Treasurer to send his Majesty "10 barrels Cranberries, 2 hhd. of special good Samp, and 300 Cod Fish." The men of Salem village petition for leave to form a Company. The Court allow, that those of them on west of Ipswich road, may be free from Capt. John Curwin's company and be exercised at home by Lt. Richard Leach, leaving it to Salem militia to limit their two companies. As attempts had been made to fire Boston and other towns, the Court instruct the Selectmen, Tithingmen, and Constables of every town, to make a census of its inhabitants once in three months, that all may be known, who had not taken the oath of Fidelity, and be required to take such an oath. As his Majesty had sent instructions for his acts of trade to be observed, the Court order that all vessels going from Ports in the Colony, or coming to them, shall comply with these acts. To effect this object, they institute a Naval Office (probably at Boston) for *all the vessels in Massachusetts*.

Oct. 28th. The Court allow, that, as Mr. Bailey is recommended by Salem Church and others, he may become the minister of Salem village, where he had preached about six years. ✓

† Nov. 18th. The Pastor read a vote of the town, dated 9th, that a contribution be taken for the poor every Sabbath, and that those, unable to give money, may put on paper what they will otherwise give.

\* Col. R.

† Ch. R.

Dec. 3d. Mr. James Bailey, minister of the village, was admitted to the first Church here by recommendation from Newbury Church.—\* 28th. Council meet. They address letters to the ministers and selectmen of towns about bringing in the remainder of subscriptions, for the College brick building. As letters had been thrown on Exchange (in Boston) so that any body might take them and thus had been lost, the Council appoint John Haywood *Post Master for the whole Colony*.

✓

1678.

† Feb. 19th. Baker's Island was leased to John Turner for £3 a year. Great and Little Misery together were leased to George Curwin at the same rate. The paving stones and ballast on these three Islands were to be free for the people of Salem. Neither wood nor timber was to be sold from them except to said people. The income of these Islands was appropriated towards the support of the Grammar School. ✓ † 21st. Fast was observed by order of Council for Small Pox in some towns ; fears of further trouble with the Indians, and on account of the Agents gone to England. These Agents were employed to settle the claims of the heirs to Gorges and Mason.

March 3d. Mrs. Mary Higginson was received into the Church by recommendation from a Boston Church. She was the Pastor's second wife, whom he appears to have married recently. § Edward Wharton had died lately. He had a brother George in London. He had done and suffered much to promote the doctrines of the Friends here and elsewhere. He appears to have been an intelligent and worthy man.

|| May 8th. General Court sit. Edmund Batter and Bartholomew Gedney are Deputies. Wm. Hathorne, who still continued an Assistant and Judge of Essex Court, is appointed to keep the Norfolk Court this year.

\* Col. R.    † T. R.    † 1st Ch. R.    § Qt. Ct. R.    || Col. R.

\* Aug. 4th. Mrs. Baldin, a French lady, from the Isle of Jersey, who had testimonials from French ministers and had resided here some years, read a confession of faith in her own language, which was translated into English by Mr. Croad, and then read by the Pastor. She was admitted to the Church. At the same time Mrs. Endicott, formerly Newman, but now wife of Zerubabel Endicott, was admitted to the Church by recommendation from Wenham Church.—22d. Governor and Council recommend contributions to meet the expenses of redeeming captives in Canada, who had been taken by Indians from Hatfield. Salem contributed £5 8.—† 23d. There were 300 heads or male persons taxed in Salem. In reference to them the selectmen say: "We do desire that the commissioners would please to consider this town in abating what may be, our town being much impoverished by the Indian War." The Commissioners here referred to were Wm. Brown, Edmund Batter and Bartholomew Gedney. They had been chosen by the Freemen of Salem, and confirmed the November preceding by County Court.

Sept. 2d. The Selectmen desire Wm. Hathorne to inform General Court, that the reason why they wished him to deliver in an appeal against some of Salem village, and did not do it themselves, was, that the Small Pox was at Boston and some of them aged, not able to travel.

‡ Oct. 8th. Court of Assistants convene. They require all the males of every town, above sixteen years, to take an oath of allegiance to the King. The number in Salem, who had not taken such an oath, were 160. Among the clauses of this oath is the following: "I do from my heart abhor, detest and abjure as impious and heretical this doctrine, that Princes, which be excommunicated by the Pope, may be deposed or murdered by their subjects." The Court also enact that treason against the King shall be punishable with death. This law and the oath were occasioned

\* 1st Ch. R.

† T. R.

‡ Col. R.

by what was called the Popish Plot to take the life of King Charles. But such a plot, which excited deep and general anxiety, appears to have been all a farce, played off by men in England to promote their own political interests. The Court repeal the law of 1675, which prohibited the exportation of provisions. They order that fifty seamen and fishermen, living in east part of Salem, below the meeting house and belonging to Capt. Peirce's company, to join Capt. John Curwin's company. They appoint Wm. Brown, sen., an associate Judge. They designate Nov. 21st as Fast day, to seek divine aid in their endeavours to gain the favour of the King and the continuance of charter privileges.—\* 11th. Small Pox appears in Salem and spreads some. It excited alarm. † This year, Wm. Bowditch of Salem and Company, agreed for the erection of a Wind-mill at Marblehead on Rhodes' Hill. ‡ Edward Randolph came again this year from England to watch the conduct of the Colonists. He had power to act as Inspector of the Customs. He brought a commission for the Council and others, empowering them to administer an oath to the Governor, that he would faithfully execute the Royal Act of Trade. Gov. Leverett declined taking such an oath. Among those thus commissioned was George Curwin, sen. of this place.

## 1679.

§ March 29th. Capt. John Curwin was among the persons, designated to march in Boston before the hearse, which bore the body of Governor Leverett who died 16th.

|| April 21st. As a division had existed at Salem village about Mr. Bailey's preaching there, the Church here advise his hearers to be governed by the opinion of the majority, who were for his continuance.

¶ May 28th. General Court assemble. John Curwin and John Price were Deputies. The Court keep

\* T. R. † Q. O. R. ‡ Hutch. § Hist. Coll. || 1st Ch. R. ¶ Col. R.



the day as a Fast for mortal sickness in many towns; for the decease of many Pastors and principal men; and for time of "doubtful expectation as to great concerns." They order that a Synod, according to petition of Elders, be held the 2d Wednesday of September in Boston, for a revision of the Church Platform, so that schisms, heresies and profaneness be prevented and Gospel order established. They require the expense of the Synod to be borne by the Churches. They assess four single rates to pay the Colony's debts, and allow *one half of the rates to be discounted if cash be paid*. They forbid all liquor, except beer at 1d. a quart, to be sold where soldiers are mustered, because many English and Indians get intoxicated. As attempts had been made in several towns, where divisions existed, to erect meeting houses, the Court enact, that no such houses shall be built without a vote of the Freemen and license from County Court, or without permission from General Court. This law referred to the beginning of a meeting house here, for Mr. Nicholet, and to another recently built at Chebacco Parish of Ipswich.

\* Aug. 13th. Indlans required to leave this town by sun set and not return till sun rise. The Selectmen and two more were to have full power to manage at fires, to blow up houses or pull them down as need may be. Hooks and other instruments for fires are to be procured. Two or three dozen of cedar buckets are to be gotten till leather ones can be obtained.—† 31st. The Pastor, Wm. Brown and Joseph Brown sen. are chosen to attend the Synod Sept. 10th.

‡ Sept. 11th. The people of Salem Village vote Mr. Bailey £55 for his salary; and that if he have a call to any other place, they will get another minister.—§17th. The Pastor relates to the Church that the Synod approved the substance of the Platform, and the remedies for provoking evils, and that they had appointed a Committee to draw up a Confession of Faith. He

\* T. R.    † 1st Ch. R.    ‡ Dan. R.    § 1st. Ch. R.

states, that the Synod had adjourned till the week before the next Court of Elections. Mather informs us, that the question, whether laymen, as messengers from Churches, with their Pastors, might be members of the Synod, was decided in the affirmative.

\* Oct. 15th. The Council meet. They require the Church of Salem and other Churches to meet 2d Wednesday of November, at Rowley, and endeavour to settle the Church difficulties there. Mr. Cheever, minister of Marblehead, and Mr. Bailey, minister of Salem Village, both belonging to the Church here, were its delegates to Rowley. They reported that the difficulties at Rowley were adjusted. Thirty house-holders of Salem Village petition, that Mr. Bailey may be ordained over them. Their petition is granted. The Council instruct the inhabitants here to repair their fortification and promise, that General Court will make a suitable allowance. They order that the night alarm shall be as usual, and the day alarm shall be the cry of *Arm, Arm*. They commission Hilliard Veren sen., as Collector for Salem and Marblehead, to require 12d. a tun for all vessels, except those of Confederate Colonies, towards the maintainance of public fortifications. Similar instructions were given to other Collectors.

† Nov. 13th. Ship Hannah & Elizabeth arrived at Salem from Dartmouth, with 47 passengers, among whom was Dr. John Barton, who had previously practised his profession here.

V 1680.

‡ Jan. 9th. John Bullock, who had been made a cripple in fighting against the Indians, is allowed to keep a victualling shop. ¶ 12th. The answers of the Synod to the two questions,—first, What is the occasion of divine judgments against New-England; second, What are the remedies for such evils, were read before the Church and considered. As John Horn was enfeebled with age, having been Deacon of the Church

above fifty years, two more Deacons were chosen, viz. Hilliard Veren and John Hathorne.—22d. Thanksgiving-day for the return of the Colony's Agents from England and for other mercies.

Feb. As Mr. Hathorne declined being Deacon, Eli Gedney was chosen in his stead.—22d. The negro of John Ingersoll testified, before the Court of Commissioners, against Bridget Oliver, of Salem, as a witch. Among other things, he deposed that he saw the shape of said Bridget on a beam of the barn, with an egg in its hand, and that while he looked for a rake or pitchfork to strike her shape, it vanished. She was required to give bonds for her appearance before the Court of Assistants, or be imprisoned till their session.

March 10th. It was agreed that Messrs. Gedney and Veren shall be ordained as Deacons April 15th, and that the Covenant shall then be renewed. Mrs. Ann Gardner, having been married to Gov. Bradstreet, receives a letter of recommendation from the Church.

\* April 6th. A Committee at Salem Village are appointed to get some one to preach instead of Mr. Bailey, and to ask advice of Mr. Higginson or his Church.

† May 2d. The wife of Dea. Eli Gedney is received from South Church in Boston.—‡ 19th. General Court assemble. Bart. Gedney and Wm. Brown are chosen Assistants, and continued as such till 1684. John Putnam is Deputy. The Court instruct the Selectmen of twenty-two towns, among which is Salem, to make returns about the new Brick building for the College. As the Baptists of Boston had built a meeting-house, contrary to law, the Court summon them to appear. The Court decide that as a person of Salem was a factious, litigious townsman, he shall have no case before any civil judicature, sustain no office, nor vote in town affairs, during their pleasure. They grant the petition of Joseph Phippen, Francis Neal sen. and son Francis, George and John Ingersoll, John and Nathaniel Wales, John Pickering, John Marston, Robert Nich-

\* Dan. R.

† 1st Ch. R.

‡ Col. R.

ols, John Johnson, John Royal and Jonathan Putnam, most of whom were of Salem, for a Plantation at the bottom of Casco Bay on a River, called "Swegustagoe." These petitioners were to have a township five miles square and two of the adjacent Islands, on condition, that they should settle twenty or thirty families under an able minister within two years, and allow, as an acknowledgement of the Governor and Company, or the Chief Proprietors by his Majesty's Charter, after the first seven years, five Beaver skins a year. The Court, hearing that these petitioners were not approved by those of Casco Bay, who favoured Gorges' claim, granted them a township on the north of the Bay. Of a committee to superintend this settlement at Casco Bay, was B. Gedney. This committee were to build a Fort and sell £100 worth of the land there. The Court approve the Confession of Faith and Platform of the late Synod, and order them to be printed.

\*June. As Barbadoes was inflicted with small pox, no vessel coming thence to this port, is allowed to land its crew, passengers and cargo, till examined and permitted.—† 29th. A petition for a new meeting house and another congregation here was granted by County Court. It says: "Whereas it hath pleased God to increase the town of Salem so greatly within these few years past, insomuch that contrary to former expectation the meeting house will not contain about two thirds of us with any convenience, the which is made the general plea for abstaining from the public worship of God, whereby the Sabbath is greatly profaned, we therefore, inhabitants of said town, sadly considering the same, do judge it necessary to have another meeting house." This petition was signed by 158 and protested against by 31. Though it was allowed, it was not carried into effect.

‡ July 6th. At their monthly meeting at Joseph Boyce's house, the Friends residing in Salem, desired Thomas Maule to obtain a bill of sale for their burying

\* T. R.      † Ql. Ct. R.      ‡ Friends' R.

ground. Edward Wharton had left them £5 in his will towards purchasing this ground.

\* Oct. 6th. John Hardy, Elder John Brown and the Pastor, attend the ordination of Joseph Whiting as Teacher of, and Jeremiah Shepard as Pastor of Lynn Church. Mr. Whiting had assisted his father, Samuel Whiting, who had preached at Lynn and died 1679, in his 83d year. Mr. Shepard was son of Rev. T. Shepard, of Charlestown.—† 13th. Court of Assistants convene. Wm. Brown and Bartholomew Gedney were among them. The Court order the Essex Regiment to be divided into two. Salem, Ipswich, Wrentham, Beverly, Gloucester, Marblehead and Lynn were to form one Regiment and the remaining towns another. They estimate wheat at 5s., barley and barley malt 4s., peas 4s., corn 3s., oats 2s. for rates. They enact that the freemen shall vote for their public officers *with Indian Corn*. They agree that according to his Majesty's instructions the number of Assistants shall be eighteen as at first. v They order that as cattle, sheep, horses, and swine are brought from other Colonies and thus injure the market for such animals raised in Massachusetts, there shall be paid for them when brought into Massachusetts, 2s. 6d. a head for cattle, swine 1s., sheep or lambs 6d., horses 2s. 6d. The rate as to cattle was repealed next May. ✓ † John Turner had deceased lately. He was son of John Turner, merchant, who died at Barbadoes 1668, and whose widow, Ruth, became the second wife of George Gardner. He left a widow, Elizabeth, formerly Roberts. They were married 1660. He also left children, John, Elizabeth, Eunice, Freestone and Abiel. He served as selectman. He was a respectable merchant. His estate was estimated over £6788. His death was a public calamity. ✓

§ Nov. 25th. Those of Salem village agree to give Rev. George Burroughs £60 salary, one third payable in money and two thirds in provision, such as rye, bar-

\* 1st Ch. R. † Col. R. ‡ Qt. Ct. R. § Dan. R.

ley and malt at 3s., corn 2s., beef 1 1-2d., pork 1s. and butter 6d. It appears that they estimated his produce at cash price.

## 1681.

\* Jan. 4th. General Court assemble. They consider his Majesty's letter by Edward Randolph, who complained of them because they had neglected to send over agents, instead of those returned, and required them to dispatch others to answer the claim, which the heirs of John Mason made to the territory from Naurkeag River to the Merrimack. The Court choose two agents, but they decline.—† 20th. Richard Brackenbury of Beverly testifies, that he came to Salem with Governor Endicott; that he found here old Goodman Norman and son, Wm. Allen, Walter Knight and others; that these persons stated, that they came over to Cape Ann for the Dorchester Company; that they and R. Conant, J. Woodbury, P. Palfrey, J. Balch and others, had houses erected at Salem; that he was informed that the Dorchester Company had sold their right to Massachusetts Company before Mr. Endicott came over; that Mr. Endicott, when arrived hither, took possession of Cape Ann, and, in the course of the year, had the house, built there, pulled down for his own use, and also took possession of Cape Ann side and soon after laid out lots for tillage there.

Feb. 16th. Wm. Dixy of Beverly, Æ. 73, deposes, that he came to New-England 1629, and that Cape Ann was under the care of Governor Endicott as certified by Brackenbury. He also remarks: "Before we came to dwell here, the Indians bid us welcome, and showed themselves very glad that we came to dwell among them, and understood that they had kindly entertained the English that come over before we came, and the English and Indians had a field together, and the Indians fled to shelter themselves under the English often times, saying they were afraid of their

\* Col. R.

† Reg. R.

Indian enemy in the country. I remember sometime after we arrived the Agawam Indians complained to Mr. Endicott that they were afraid of the Tarrentines, and Hugh Brown with others were sent in a boat to Agawam for the Indians relief and at other times we gave our neighbour Indians protection from their enemy." Humphry Woodbury of Beverly, *Æ.* 72, testifies, that John Woodbury, his father, with others came to Cape Ann about 1624, under the Dorchester Company, and brought cattle and other things with them ; that they built a house there and afterwards removed to a *Neck* of land called Salem ; that his father after three years absence returned to England, described the settlement here and staid about six months and came back to Salem 1628 ; that he was knowing to the fact that Massachusetts Company bought of Dorchester Company all their houses, boats and servants and that Mr. Endicott took possession of them ; that the Indians were glad of the Colonists' company, planted by them, and came to them for protection against their Indian enemy up in the country ; and " we did shelter them when they fled, and we had their *free leave* to build and plant, where we have taken up their lands ; the same year or next after we came to Salem, we cut hay for cattle, which we brought over, on Beverly side and have had possession of Beverly side ever since." These depositions were given in reference to the claims which the heirs of John Mason were endeavouring to enforce as to all territory from North River to the Merimack. They inform us, that Salem side was first settled and not Beverly side, as some have conjectured ; and that the Indians granted the land of Naumkeag to its first settlers for defending them against their Indian enemies. \* Inhabitants of Salem village vote to build a parsonage house of 13 ft. stud, 20 by 42, and four chimnies and no gable ends. Thomas Putnam and Jonathan Walcott are chosen to serve as Deacons among them. Mr. Burroughs, by consent of the

Church here, still preached for those of the village. He appears, however, to have left them about a year after this, and preached at Falmouth, Maine.

\* March 29th. Two females, for incest, are sentenced to be imprisoned a night, whipped or pay £5, and to stand or sit, during the services of next Lecture day, on a high stool, in the middle alley of Salem meeting house, having a paper on their heads with their crime written in capital letters.

† April 20th. A Salem Ketch, Capt. Edmund Henfield, picked up a boat with Capt. Andrew and six of his crew 150 leagues from Cape Cod. These persons, so saved, belonged to a Dublin ship, bound to Virginia. She sank the 18th with sixteen men and three women, who perished.

‡ May 11th. General court sit. Edmund Batter and Samuel Gardner sen. are Deputies.

§ June 28th. Hon. Wm. Hathorne died lately A. 74. He left a widow, Ann, and children, Sarah Coaker, wife of Israel Porter, Sarah the widow of his son William, and John. He also left a grand child, Jervise Helwyes in Europe, and children of his son Eleazer, deceased. From the time of Mr. Hathorne's coming from Dorchester to Salem 1636, he sustained some town or colonial office. The public both at home and abroad, appeared to believe that his services might be applied to political, military, judicial, and ecclesiastical concerns. As Selectman, Surveyor, Deputy, Major, Assistant, Judge and Commissioner of the United Colonies, he ever showed himself able, faithful and worthy of confidence. He was actively and respectably useful to his country till the last. If long, various, multiplied and important duties, performed from patriotic motives, should bring the reputation of any man to our minds with sentiments of respect and esteem, then should the reputation of Mr. Hathorne be thus remembered. He knew what it was to offend his own Legislature and his Kings, by the open expression of his

\* Qt. Ct. R.

† Mather.

‡ Col. R.

§ Qt. Ct. R.



opinions ; but he refused not, when convinced of his mistakes, to make a manly apology for them. He was a pillar, which sustained and adorned both church and state, till prostrated by the strong hand of death.

\* Oct. 12th. Court of Assistants meet. As Wm. Bowditch, collector of Salem, had died suddenly, a committee are designated to act for the colony when his estate is settled. The Court set wheat at 6s., rye 4s. 6d., peas, barley, barley malt 4s., corn 3s. 6d., oats 2s. for rates. They notify the Indians to take up their residence at Natick, Punkepaug or Wamesit, and be under the rulers set over them, where land was provided from many families more than were there already. They empower the Selectmen of each town to put all Indians, refusing to comply with such notice, into the House of Correction or Prison until they do comply.

1682.

† Feb. Randolph exhibited to the Lords of the Council charges against some of the Assistants and Deputies of Massachusetts. Among these Assistants was B. Gedney. Randolph was favourable to Wm. Brown sen. of the Assistants and therefore suffered him to pass.—‡ 15th. Court of Assistants convene. They agree on an address to his Majesty. They receive a petition from the people of Gloucester and other inhabitants, directed to the King against Mason's claim for territory from the North River of Salem to Merrimack, which claim included the land of Gloucester. To satisfy his Majesty and comply more with his acts of trade, the Court order a Naval Office to be erected in Boston. They had lately appointed James Russell to take charge of this office. "For the greater ease of the town of Salem and adjacent Ports," they appoint Benjamin Gerrish Naval Officer in this town, who was to make his returns once in six months to the Naval Officer in Boston and as often deliver fair copies of all bonds to the Governor. They repeal the law against *Christmas*.

\* Col. R.

† Hutch.

‡ Col. R.

From the business of this session, it appears, that our fathers were constrained to obey some of the reiterated commands of their Sovereign. Though his situation was critical at home, yet he was determined that they should be more compliant with his wish, than they had been.

May 24th. General Court sit. Edmund Batter and Samuel Gardner sen. are Deputies. They set apart June 22d as a Fast, to seek a divine blessing on the Agents bound to England, so that their Agency may be a means of securing charter privileges.

\* June 5th. Mr. Higginson, on account of his age and infirmities, requests help in preaching.

† Aug. 21st. There were 310 taxable persons in town.

‡ Oct. 10th. After a difference of opinion for years had existed in the Friends' Society here, about wearing the hat in time of prayer, thirty-two males and females at a monthly meeting in the house of Matthew Estis, bore their testimony against two of their brethren, who considered themselves as correct in wearing their hats when prayer was offered.—§ 11th. Court of Assistants assemble. They instruct Salem to mount its great Artillery upon good carriages, and provide a number of cannon baskets sufficient to protect the men. They appoint surveyors of goods damaged on board of vessels. For Salem they designate John Hardy sen., John Brown, and Richard More. Such surveyors were to be chosen annually by each town where required. || 23d. Nicholas Noyes had an unanimous call to preach here. His salary was £80 and 20 cords of wood. Benjamin Gerrish brought him from Haddam, Connecticut, where he had preached thirteen years. ✓ As Samuel Beadle was crippled in serving against the Indians at Narraganset, the town recommend him to County Court as suitable for an Inn-keeper. He had permission from the Court.

\* 1st Ch. R.    † T. R.    ‡ Friends' R    § Col. R.    || T. R.

\* Dec. 18th. £25 5 3, which had been given by Wm. Brown sen. for the use of the Grammar School, was let on interest. † Capt. John Peas sen. *Æ.* 52, had moved lately from Salem to Enfield. He had been a Deputy to General Court.

## 1683.

‡ Feb. 7th. Court of Assistants meet to consider his Majesty's letter, concerning the complaints of Randolph and others against the Colony.—9th. They agree to observe 13th as a Fast day for threats of the King to deprive Massachusetts of its Charter. They prepare an address for him, and propose that another be sent him by the inhabitants. They appoint May 10th to be kept as a Fast day for late deaths of eminent persons; for sword, fire, blasting, losses at sea, threatening aspect of public affairs, and conflicting state of Protestant nations. They order that the Port of Boston, to which Charlestown is annexed, and the Port of Salem, to which Marblehead, Beverly, Gloucester, Ipswich, Rowley, Newbury, and Salisbury are annexed, as members; shall be the lawful Ports in this Colony, where all ships and other vessels shall lade or unlade any of the Plantations' enumerated goods, or other goods from foreign parts and no where else, on penalty of the confiscation of such ship or vessel with her goods and tackle, as shall lade or unlade elsewhere. According to a petition, Mason's claim to land on northern side of Salem North River, had been tried at Ipswich Quarterly Court

§ April 1st. The Ketch Friendship, Richard Ingersoll, master, bound from "Saltatudos" for Salem was cast away at Cape Cod. Nathaniel Ingersol one of the crew perished

|| May 16th. General Court sit. John Hathorne and Timothy Lindall are Deputies. The Court allow John Wallace and Content Mason his daughter, and relict of John Tufton Mason, to give deeds, as her hus-

\* T. R. † Reg. R. ‡ Col. R. § Qt. Ct. R. || Col. R.

band had been allowed. It seems from this, that Mr. Mason got his case, as to his claim for lands North of Naumkeag River. The Court estimate oxen of four years and above at £3 each ; every cow and steer of three years and above at £2 ; all of two years at £1 10 ; yearlings 15s. ; and swine of one year 10s.—for rates. \* 24th. Deodat Lawson was invited to preach at Salem Village.

† June 24th. Joseph Grafton sen. had died lately at an advanced age. He was made freeman 1637, when his mother was living here. He left a daughter Bethiah Goodhue, and a son John. His wife and sons Joseph and Nathaniel, and daughter Priscilla Gardner, died before he did. He had been an enterprising commander of vessels belonging to Salem. He suffered much when taken by D'Aulnay 1645. He was of the selectmen several years. He was a useful and respected man. ✓ 26th. As the Prison here was decayed and another greatly needed, one was ordered to be built 13 ft. stud and 20 ft. square, with an inclosed yard, at the expense of the County. Salem was to find a convenient spot for the prison, in which a chimney was ordered, the next year, to be built. ✓

July 12th. Capt. John, son of George Curwin, died *Æ.* nearly 45. He was born July 25th, 1638. He married Margaret, daughter of Governor Winthrop. She deceased Sept. 28, 1697. Their children died in infancy. He was often one of the Selectmen. He was Deputy to General Court. He commanded a military company. He was cut off in the midst of usefulness, and when his prospect was fair for unusual eminence. † About this time, Zechariah Symmes was ordained at Bradford. On this occasion the Salem Church was represented by its messengers. Mr. Higginson and other clergymen, the preceeding Dec. 31st, advised his people to settle him. He was son of the clergyman at Charlestown. He graduated at Harvard

1657. He had preached at Bradford as far back as 1668. He died there 1708.

\* Aug. 12th. John Wise was ordained at Ipswich, Chebacco parish. Salem Church sent its messengers to attend on this occasion. As recommended by General Court, Mr. Wise began to preach to his people 1680. He graduated at Harvard 1673. He died 1725, *Æ.* 73.—† 16th. Mr. Lawson was requested to preach longer at Salem village on trial.

‡ Nov. 14th. Nicholas Noyes, having been called by Church and Society here, was ordained as Teacher. Newbury, Rowley, Ipswich, Wenham and Beverly Churches were invited. Mr. Noyes preached from Mark i. 7th and 8th vs. Wm. Hubbard of Ipswich, Samuel Phillips of Rowley, and the Pastor imposed hands. Mr. Hubbard also gave right hand of fellowship. He observed that as Enoch was the 7th from Adam, so Mr. Noyes was the 7th ordained church officer of Salem. Mr. N., at the first of November, by recommendation from Newburyport Church, was admitted to the Church here, and, also, Daniel Epes and his wife, from Ipswich church, were admitted.—§ 15th. The Governor and greater part of the Assistants, having heard that the King was resolved to wrest from them their Charter, agree to throw the Colony upon his mercy.—30th. Their decision lay in the House till this date, when the Deputies refused to agree with them.

|| Dec. 20th. Hilliard, son of Philip Veren, died *Æ.* 63. He married Mary Conant who survived him. He left children, the wife of Samuel Williams and the wife of Benjamin Marston. He had a son Hilliard, who died about a month before his death, and also a deceased daughter, Sarah, wife of Deliverance Parkman, who left two children. He joined the Church here 1648, of which he was afterwards Deacon. He was a merchant, Clerk of County Court, and Collector of the Customs. He lived to be useful and died es-

\* Wen. Ch. R.    † Dan. R.    ‡ 1st Ch. R.    § Huteh.    || Qt. Ct. R.

teemed.—\* 25th. Mr. Epes is hired to preach at Salem village for 20s. a sabbath, half money and half provision.

1684.

Feb. 11th. About this time Randolph, the resolute and powerful instrument of the King, forwarded communications to the towns, requesting them to vote for a surrender of their Charter into his Majesty's hands. But the towns seem to have unanimously rejected his proposal. Though this fact does not appear on Salem Records, yet it does on Records of neighbouring towns. \* 22d. Persons of Salem village were employed to get a boat for removing Mr. Lawson's goods. He was offered £60 salary, and in April was voted 30 cords of wood at 4s. a cord. While he was absent, Mr. Epes supplied his place. ✓

† March 6th. George Curwin's house was broken open by a gang and £505 were stolen. The thieves were apprehended and punished. The principal of them were a man and his wife. He was sentenced to pay treble damages,—be branded on the forehead with B, and receive thirty-nine stripes or pay £10. She was to be similarly branded and receive thirty stripes or pay £10.—‡ 12th. Persons are designated to command a nightly watch of seven men. Each of the Selectmen, with another person, was to walk the rounds twice a week. The watch began at 9 o'clock.—27th. Zerubabel Endicott died recently. He was son of Governor John Endicott. His second wife, Elizabeth, the widow of Rev. A. Newman and daughter of Governor Winthrop, survived him. He left ten children, John, Samuel, Zerubabel, Benjamin, Joseph, Mary, Sarah, Elizabeth, Hannah and Mehitabel. He was a respectable inhabitant.—§ 31st. Ten merchants are allowed to build wharves at Winter Island, under the direction of a committee.

\* Dan. R. † Qt. Ct. R. ‡ T. R. § T. R.

✓  
 April 21st. Overseers are empowered to employ the poor in spinning, and, if necessary, to lay out £50 of the town's money to purchase wool. ✓\* 29th. Lynn, Marblehead, Beverly, Wenham and Gloucester, towns, which sent their juries to Salem, are required to join this town and build a House of Correction here near the County Prison. Towns which sent their juries to Ipswich, are required to help build one there.

† May 7th. General Court assemble. John Hathorne is elected an Assistant. B. Gedney and Wm. Brown sen. with several others, who thought best to submit to his Majesty's pleasure about the Charter, were not chosen Assistants as usual. Wm. Bartholomew and Jonathan Curwin are Deputies. Benjamin Gerrish is appointed Collector instead of Mr. Veren, deceased. The Court send an address and petition to the King about their difficulties. They as well as the people, were doubtful what he would do in reference to their Charter. Such a state of mind produced a stagnation in every branch of business.

‡ June 24th. John Hathorne sits as Judge. Edward Norrice died recently, *Æ.* 70. He was son of the minister of the church here, which he joined 1639. His wife, Dorothy, seems to have died before his decease. He left two children, Edward and Elizabeth. He began to teach the Grammar School 1640, and continued to be thus employed till 1671, when Daniel Epes was chosen to supply his place. Though through age he was unable to instruct the school, yet the town allowed him £10 a year for a few years after Mr. Epes came. He long sustained a toilsome but useful office. He deserved well of the town, and went down to the grave with their benedictions. Benjamin Gerrish is chosen Clerk of County Court and sworn into his office. As one of the persons, who was accessory to robbing Capt. Curwin's house, threatened to burn Salem, he was required to give bonds for £1000.

\* July 9th. Court of Assistants convene. They consider a letter from the King. According to its contents, they forbid the Colonists to serve any power against him or his allies, as some have done ; and to have intercourse with Privateers or Pirates, which should come into their ports or be on their coasts ; and command them to do all they can to have such vessels seized. † W. Bartholomew and J. Higginson, jr. are chosen Deputies.

‡ Aug. 13th. Rev. Samuel Cheever and forty-nine others desire to be set off from the Church here. Their desire is granted. The churches of Lynn, Beverly, Wenham, Ipswich and Salem, attend by their Elders and messengers on the ordination of Mr. Cheever. After Mr. Cheever had prayed and preached, he read a Confession of Faith and a Covenant, to which his Church members expressed their assent. Having done this, they were approved by the Elders and messengers, as a distinct church of Marblehead. Then the brethren expressed their choice of Mr. Cheever for their Pastor. Mr. Higginson and three other Elders imposed hands on him. Wm. Hubbard gave him the right hand of fellowship.

§ Sept 11th. "Voted that the meeting house (at Salem village) shall be filled and daubed, all where it wants, below the beams and plates ; and that six case-ments shall be hanged in the meeting house, and that there be a couple set over the pulpit."

|| Oct. 22d. Fast was observed for the perilous condition of the Colony, and to beseech the Lord for his protection. This Fast was ordered by the Court of Assistants 10th ult. because news had come, that the Charter of Massachusetts was to be forfeited. The High Court of Chancery decided for the King, June 18th, against the Governor and Company of Massachusetts ; and their Charter was declared null, on condition, that they appeared next term for another trial, but if not, then the decision to stand.

\* Col. R.    † T. R.    ‡ 1st Ch. R.    § Dan. R.    || 1st Ch. R.



Nov. 6th. Questions as to the baptism of children, situated as follow, were proposed to the church here by the Elders:—1. Children of those, who had scrupled the baptizing of any infants. 2. Children of other churches, who live here, and their children also. 3. Children of Christians here, though not members of any church. Messrs. Higginson and Noyes advise, that parents, who have not been baptized, may have their children baptized, if they will consent to be examined.—\* 25th. John Horn sen. deceased recently, Æ. 82. He left children, John, Symond, Joseph, Benjamin, Elizabeth Gardner, Jehoadan Harvey, Mary Smith and Ann Felton. He and his wife Ann were among the first Church members. He became free-man 1631. He had 75 acres of land granted him 1636. He was Deacon of the Church here over fifty-four years. He was a friend and confidant of Hugh Peters. He and Dea. Charles Gott were Mr. P's agents till his death. Mr. Horn died full of years and deserved respect.

## 1685.

\* Jan. 6th. George Curwin died, Æ. over 74. He was born at Workington, Cumberland County, England, Dec. 10th, 1610. He settled at Salem 1638. He married Elizabeth, widow of Mr. John White, in England. She died 1668, leaving five children by Capt. Curwin, named Elizabeth, Abigail, Hannah, John and Jonathan. He married widow Elizabeth Brooks, sister in law to Governor Winslow, of Plymouth Colony, 1669, by whom he had three children, named Penelope, George, and Susannah. Elizabeth married Hon. James Russel of Boston. Susannah married Edward Lynde, Esq. of the same place. George died in infancy. Others of Capt. Curwin's children will be noticed in course. He left property over £5964. He was often Selectman and Deputy to General Court. He was frequently appointed by the Legislature, on

\* Ql. Ct. R.

military and other committees. He was in service against the Indians. His misunderstanding with Capt. Henchman was unhappy. But the sentence of the General Court against him, was all remitted, and he was restored to public favour. Capt. Curwin is an instance of what a good understanding, actively, honestly and patriotically applied, may do for succeeding in the world. He deserved esteem, and it was readily and largely granted him.—\* 28th. Court of Assistants appoint March 12th, as a Fast day, on account of threatening difficulty in public affairs.

March 18th. General Court advise all the Churches to renew their Covenants, and seek divine aid for deliverance from impending calamities. W. Bartholomew and S. Gardner sen. are Deputies. Among instructions, given them by Salem, is the following :—“ Especially you are to take heed in all things, wherein this General Court shall have to deal, relating to the affair, depending between his Majesty and this Colony, so as not to engage us in any unlawful action, if any such thing should appear, you are to express your dissent by all lawful means.”

April 2d. The Governor issues a proclamation, that there is a ship about 300 tons, cruising between “ Martyn’s Vineyard and Cape Cod, whercof Christopher Goff is Captain, and John Salter, master.” This vessel was suspected to have been piratically taken from some of his Majesty’s allies in the West Indies. The Governor forbids those under his jurisdiction, to have any intercourse with her.—20th. As news had arrived, that Charles II. died suddenly, Feb. 6th, and Mr. Blaithwait wrote to the Governor that it would be well to proclaim James II, King of England, Scotland, Ireland and France immediately, this was done in Boston. The Governor, Deputy Governor and Assistants appeared on horseback with thousands of the people, a troop of horse, eight companies of militia, drums beating and trumpets sounding, volleys of the cavalry and

\* Col. R.

discharge of seventy cannon; and Edward Rawson, Secretary, on horseback, proclaimed James II. amid the loud acclamation of the people, God save the King. This event led our fathers to expect deliverance from such oppressions, as they had endured from Charles II. He had arrived to despotic power, and, in its exercise, had violated the rights of corporate bodies in England, and nullified the Charters of his colonies. Shortly before his decease, he had appointed Col. Kirke Governor of Massachusetts, who was preparing to come hither, when the King died.

\* May 8th. The Common against the front of Governor Bradstreet's pasture, is appointed as a place, in which persons may shoot at a mark.—† 11th. Mr. Ebenezer, son of George Gardner, deceased lately. He had married Sarah Bartholomew, who died before he did. He left considerable property to his relatives, and also £50 "to the poor honest people of Salem." ✓

‡ July 7th. General Court, informed of pirates on the coast, order that forty volunteers be raised, to go out for taking them. They request the Elders, among whom was Mr. Higginson, to meet and give their advice on the public difficulties.—§ 14th. Fast day for drought, to ask the presence of the Lord with the new government (in Eng.) and the afflicted Church in the world.

Aug. 14th. Edmund Batter, merchant, had deceased recently, Æ. 76. He became freeman 1636. He and his wife Sarah, joined the church by 1635. He left a second wife, Mary, daughter of Daniel Gookin, Esq., of Cambridge, whom he married 1670. He left children, Edmund, Mary, Elizabeth and Daniel. He had sustained various offices in town. He was often of the Selectmen, and of Deputies to General Court. He was an intelligent, active and respectable man.

|| Sept. 28th. Stephen Sewall, of Salem, was appointed one of the two clerks for Essex, and Benjamin Gerrish to keep a record of births and deaths for this

\* T. R. † Qt. Ct. R. ‡ Col. R. § 1st Ch. R. || Qt. Ct. R.

town. \* A committee are to agree with John Baker of Boston, for a new bell there, or one already here.

† Oct. John Carson, being at the house of John Gedney, Vinter, of Salem, met Wm. Dyer, Surveyor General of his Majesty's Customs, and severely censured him. For such conduct, Carson made an acknowledgement, which was recorded.

‡ Nov. 24th. John Brown sen. deceased recently. He joined the Church 1637, and became freeman 1638. He left a daughter, Elizabeth, who had married, for her first husband, Joseph Grafton, and, for her second, Samuel Gardner, jr. He had lost a son James. He appears to have been one of the brothers, who were sent out of the Colony, for encouraging Episcopacy, 1629. He served as Elder of the Church for a time, but owing to his business, which called him to Virginia, he declined the office ; but afterwards resumed and held it, till his death. His life was desirable and his death lamented.

#### 1686.

§ Feb. 25th. Fast day for small pox in some towns, loss of cattle by cold, and frowns of Providence.

|| April 20th. Nineteen merchants of Salem were licensed to supply men, employed by them in the Fishery, with liquors.

¶ May 12th. General Court convene. John Hathorne is chosen an Assistant. John Putnam is Deputy, to whom this town give the following orders:—"In case Mr. Dudley, &c., said to be nominated and authorized by his Majesty to edit another government here, do publish a loyal nullification of our Charter, and a commission from the King, for their acceptance of the Government here, then our instruction to you is, that you give no countenance to any resistance, but peaceably withdraw yourselves, as representing us no longer."

\*\* 15th. The Rose Frigate arrived with a commission

\* T. R.      ‡ Qt. Ct. R.      || Qt. Ct. R.      \*\* Hutch.  
† Reg. R.      § Col. R.      ¶ Col. R.

from James II. to Joseph Dudley and others as his Council, to administer the government of Massachusetts, New-Hampshire, Maine, and Narraganset. B. Gedney was one of this Council. General Court having considered the above commission, unanimously replied to those commissioned by the King, that they did not consider their assuming of the government as just; but if they deemed themselves bound to obey him, they might, and the Court would endeavour to act loyally. Thus were the Charter liberties of Massachusetts subverted. Such an event had been frequently dreaded by our ancestors; but none of them, from the first settlement of the Colony, had experienced it in operation. The advocates for the charter, did not entirely despair, but that, by persevering exertions, their former privileges might be restored. They hoped, that the government by a President and Council, chosen by the King, was merely temporary, and that it would be succeeded by a more lenient policy on his part. But they were soon to be sadly disappointed. The arm of royal displeasure was still raised, and was about to give them a blow more severe than ever.—\* 28th. Rev. J. Higginson had taken a deed from Robert T. Mason, for 700 acres of land, granted by General Court, and bounded on Haverhill. Mr. H. was to pay him, or his heirs, 2s. a year for each house, afterwards built on his lot.

† May. A Fast was observed here, on account of *worms threatening a famine.*

‡ June 17th. B. Gedney was on a committee of three who issue an order respecting Narraganset Records.

§ Sept. 5th. There was a contribution of £26 here for distressed French Protestants, who had come to New-England. Similar contributions were made in all the towns, by order of government. The Protestants were obliged, when the Edict of Nantz, which protected them, was revoked, to the dishonour of Lewis XIV.,

\* Reg. R. † 1st Ch. R. ‡ Hist. Coll. § 1st. Ch. R.

the preceding October, to flee whither they could enjoy their religion undisturbed. Mr. Gerrish carried the money to Boston, and paid it to the persons, appointed to receive so commendable a charity. In connexion with what was raised here for the French Protestants, Mr. Higginson says: "As there had been a contribution some years ago for thirteen men, that suffered ship wreck, coming from Ireland, to whom was given £17." \* 7th. James Rumney Marsh, Æ. 50, testifies that the River, between Salem and Beverly, was called Naumkeag by the Aborigines, and that they called Forrest River, between Salem and Marblehead, Mashabequash. Other Indians gave similar testimony. \* 27th. The President and Council were petitioned for a "Bank of Credit, Lombard and Exchange of Monies in New-England." The term Lombard seems to have reference to Lombards, or lending houses of private merchants, then existing in France and England. The petition states, that paper currency would be better, than silver of different species, brought into the country; and that nations in Europe had found paper currency promotive of trade and wealth. † 28th. Wm. Dounton, as keeper of Salem Prison, had £5 a year.

‡ Oct. 1st. The people of Salem Village had long indulged the opinion, that the village, petitioned for in 1629, to be planted by Ipswich River, was their village, and not a part of Topsfield. It appears, however, that Topsfield considered the grant, as made for them. Hence difficulty arose, and those of Salem village now empower a committee to defend their claim against the claim of Topsfield.—§ 11th. The Selectmen paid £40 to the Indian descendants of George Sagamore, who now lived at Chelmsford, and to other Indians, who lived at Natick, in full for their claims to the township of Salem. There can be little doubt, but that the first settlers of this town, according to depositions of Dixy and Woodbury, as well as the declaration of both the Rev. Messrs. Higginsons, had received their lands

\* Prov (Province) R. † Qt. Ct. R. ‡ Dan. R. § Reg. R.

at the price of affording protection to the natives, who owned them, against their enemies, the Tarrentines. They were actually at more expense in defending the Indians, who owned Naumkeag, than would have purchased all its territory. The single expedition from Salem to Ipswich, though an advantage to the Colonists, to repel the Tarrentines, was of more worth to the natives here, than they would have asked for their land. Besides this, Mr. Endicott was empowered by Massachusetts Company to look up all claims of the Indians for Naumkeag land. If there were any claims he settled them. If there were none, but payment had been made in expensive protection, he had opportunity to ascertain, and his decision was an implicit settlement of the matter. Still it was well to afford relief to the poor descendants of the Sagamore, who owned Naumkeag, and thus get a particular deed so as to silence all future demands. Though Ipswich was purchased by J. Winthrop, jr. 1638, of Masconnomet for £20; yet in 1701, Topsfield paid £3 to one of his heirs, for the part, which was originally included by Ipswich. This shows, that a claim's being brought against Salem for its territory, by descendants of its former owner, does not decide, but that every such claim was, at first, considered by both parties as settled.—\* 14th. John Marston and Benjamin Gerrish are ordained Deacons by the two Elders with prayer and imposition of hands according to Acts, 6 c.

Nov. 25th. Salem village ask leave of the Church here, to settle Mr. Lawson, who had preached for them two years. The Church consent.

† Dec. 20th. Sir Edmund Andros landed in Boston, and published a commission from the King, which empowered him to govern the whole of New-England, with advice of a Council. Among the members of this Council, were B. Gedney and Wm. Brown sen. of Salem.—‡ 22d. The Governor and Council meet. B. Gedney was with them. They order, that all members

\* 1st Ch. R. † Hutch. ‡ Hist. Coll

1687]

of the Council assemble in Boston the 29th. Neither Mr. Brown nor Gedney were present at the latter session. It was moved, that proclamation be made, that all officers, both civil and military, should be continued in their offices, and that the laws, according to those of England, should stand during his Excellency's pleasure.

1687.

\* Feb. 7th. Wm. Brown sen. gives to the school here the remainder of a farm, which had been granted him by Salem, but not laid out.—20th. Dr. George Emory died. His wife, Mary, had deceased 1673. He was granted land 1636, and joined the church here 1648. For years he was useful and respected in his profession.

† May 9th. Richard Leach died recently. He left wife, Sarah, who joined the church here 1648. He left children, John, Elizabeth, wife of Benjamin Collins, Mary, wife of Benjamin Johnson, Hannah and Rachel. He had lost a daughter Sarah, wife of Joseph Herrick. He had been a Selectman. He commanded the company at Salem village. His will, written beautifully on parchment, instead of being approved by County Court, as usual, was approved by Sir Edmund Andros, and also, bears the signature of his Deputy Secretary, John West. Hutchinson remarks: "It was a great burden on widows and children, who lived remote, to be obliged to come to Boston for every part of business, relative to the settlement of estates." Francis Collins, who had lived here fifty years, requests permission to keep a house of entertainment. Wm. Driver desires license to distil and sell liquor here.

Aug. 9th. Wm. Gerrish died here. He came from Boston the 6th for his health. He was buried 11th in his brother Walter Price's tomb. He was born Aug. 19, 1627. He was a merchant at Bristol, England. He settled first at Newbury. He had several children,



among whom was Rev. Joseph, of Wenham and Benjamin, Collector of Salem district.—\* Government required each town to choose a commissioner, as formerly, to join the Selectmen for assessing taxes. This requisition was resisted in some places, as contrary to the law of the land, which stated, that no taxes should be assessed, without consent of the Assembly, chosen by freeholders, and as infringing on the liberty of free born English subjects. The Governor commanded about thirteen, who opposed his order for taxes, to be imprisoned in Boston and heavily fined. The most of them belonged to Ipswich. Nothing but the fear of consequences, kept the people from rising together, and do as these sufferers had done.

† Sept. 24th. Jas. Thomas, as Captain of the ship John, presents a petition to Governor Andros, which stated, that he and other French Protestants had arrived at Salem Sept. 9th and that the ship was seized the 14th. He desired, that her trial might come on, and that if judgement should be given against her, enough might be allowed to pay the seamen, and relieve himself from distress.

‡ Nov. 17th. By agreement of churches, Thanksgiving was observed for a good harvest, health and peace, and for the King's confirming to the Colonists their title to their property, and for his Act of religious toleration. The royal confirmation of our fathers' claim to their possessions, which they feared might be disregarded, as their Charter was gone, and as Andros had tried to have them pay quit rents, must have been a source of high satisfaction to them. The King's act for religious toleration, though contrary to what they had been accustomed, was a relief to them in their present circumstances. Andros did all he could to promote Episcopacy, and put down Congregationalism. Randolph, his prime agent, had written to the Bishop of London, desiring him to send over able Episcopal ministers, and said, "but one thing will mainly help,

\* Ips. T. R.

† Prov. P.

‡ 1st Ch. R.

when no marriages shall hereafter be allowed lawful, but such as are made by ministers of the Church of England." Indeed, Andros and his coadjutors seemed to take pleasure in striving to overthrow the civil and religious institutions, around which the affections of our ancestors were entwined.



1688.

Jan. 20th. Wm. Brown sen. died, aged 81. He was the youngest son of Francis Brown of Brandon, Suffolk, England. He and his first wife, Mary Young, came to Salem 1635. She died 1638. He married Sarah, daughter of Rev. S. Smith of N. Yarmouth. He kept store 1639, and was then granted 80 acres of land. He and his wife Sarah became members of the Church 1648. He sustained various offices in town. He was often Selectman and Deputy to General Court. He was an Assistant under the Charter, and at his decease was nominally of Governor Andros' Council. It appears, that, however he was more for surrendering the Charter to Charles II. than having it nullified in a Court of law, yet he was too much of a patriot to countenance the arbitrary measures of Andros. Randolph indirectly compliments Mr. Brown, in our view, by the remark, made May 1687 : "His Excellency has to do with a perverse people. There is none of the Council at hand, except Mr. Mason and myself, Mr. Brockholt and Mr. Usher, who appear lively for his Majesty's interest." Mr Brown became one of the commissioners to try small causes, 1678, and Judge of the County Court, 1679, and so continued for years. He paid 1-10th of the expense for the meeting house, finished 1673. He gave £100 to Harvard at its foundation, and left for it £150 more. "He gave besides £100 for poor scholars," probably to the same institution. He left £50 to the poor, and £50 to the Grammar School of Salem ; £50 to Charlestown school, and "other sums for pious uses." ✓ Two sons, William and Benjamin, and a daughter Mary, wife of Wait, son of Governor Win-

throp, survived him. He had lost a son Joseph, preacher at Charlestown. The deeds, influence and character of Mr. Brown were such, as to have rendered his life desirable, and his death much lamented.

\* May 3d. Mr. Lawson appears to have ceased preaching at S. Village. He settled in the S. Society of Scituate, whence he took his dismission 1698.

† June 12th. The Town Cage and Stocks are to be repaired.

Sept. 18th. A house is to be repaired "for the entertainment of the poor of the town."

‡ Aug. 5th. Jacob Allin and wife, for attending the meetings of the Friends, and professing themselves to be of their denomination, are dealt with, but their excommunication delayed. John Gedney sen. died, *Æ.* 85. He was admitted an inhabitant 1637. He and his wife Mary joined the Church the same year. He was granted 80 acres of land, and became freeman 1638. His second wife was Catherine. He had children, John, Bartholomew, Sarah, Eli, and Eleazer. He served as selectman. He was of a reputable character.—§ 24th. Gov. Andros, who had been commissioned to unite N. York to his jurisdiction, issued a proclamation from that Colony, for Thanksgiving to be observed there Sept. 2d, and in other parts out of N. York, Sept. 16th, for the birth of a son to James II. The birth of this prince was the signal in England, for resisting the despotism of the King. His subjects generally concluded, that they would bear with his policy, as long as he lived; but to think of having such policy prolonged by his son, was too much for them. They invited the Prince of Orange over to take the throne. He landed in England Nov. 8d.

Oct. 17th. Nathaniel, son of Increase Mather, died here. He was born July 6, 1669; graduated at Harvard 1685. He was a noted scholar for his age. He had begun to preach privately.

\* Dan. R. † T. R. ‡ 1st Ch. R. § Hutch.

\* Nov. A quantity of military stores were taken by order of John Palmer, lately made Ch. Justice of Supreme Court, from Salem. They belonged to J. Higginson, jr., and John Webb & Co. They were carried to Governor Andros in Boston.

1689.

† Feb. 28th. Thomas Maul proposed, that a monthly meeting should be held at Lynn. This proposal was accepted.

‡ March. Sir. Ed. Andros, Attorney General Graham, Sect'y West, and Judge Palmer called on Rev. Mr. Higginson. Gov. Andros was on his way to Boston from Pemaquid, where he had been to suppress Indian hostilities. His soldiers had suffered much from the cold. He asked Mr. Higginson's opinion on this question :—Whether all the lands of N. E. did not belong to the King. Mr. H. answered him, after being solicited, in the negative. He stated two reasons, by which the colonists owned their lands ; 1st, By right of just occupation ; 2d, By right of purchase from the Indians. Here he remarked, that our ancestors, having lived sixty years in Massachusetts, took care to treat with the Indians, and satisfy them with valuable considerations for their land. He said, that he himself had certain knowledge of such a fact ; that having learned the Indian language when young, he was employed by government and various Plantations, as an interpreter in treating with Indians about their lands ; and that this being done, the townships and particular persons' land were settled by General Court. Mr. H. then proceeds, "therefore I did believe, that the lands of N. England were the subjects' property and not the King's." Sir. Edmund contended with Mr. H., that the lands were his Majesty's, because he had given them by Charter on conditions, which the colonists had violated. He then appealed to those with him, to know if what he said, was not law. Mr. H. replied, that the King had

\* Prov. P.

† T. R‡

Prov. P.

no other than a Popish right to N. England territory ; that the Pope had granted the West Indies to the Spaniards ; but that Protestants denied the validity of such a grant. Sir Edmund said at last, with much indignation, " either you are his subjects, or you are rebels," intimating, that, if the people would not yield their lands to the King so as to take a Patent and pay rent for them, they should be treated as rebels. The foregoing was the testimony of Mr. H., as requested by General Court, after Sir Edmund was displaced.

\* April 8th. News having arrived, that the Prince of Orange had landed in England to put down the authority of James II., an insurrection took place in Boston and adjacent towns, against Gov. Andros and his supporters. Mr. Bradstreet and several Magistrates, who were put out of office, 1686, and other principal men, advised the Governor to give up his authority and the fortifications, lest the people should assault him and his friends. Among the Magistrates, who gave this advice, were Wm. Brown and B. Gedney.—19th. Some require, according to the order of Sir Edmund, that John Pipon surrender the Castle, as the Fort had done. 20th. Mr. Bradstreet, some Magistrates and others resolve themselves into a Council of Safety. Messrs. Brown and Gedney were of this Council. Others, invited to be of their number, among whom was John Hathorne, approved the advice given to Sir Edmund. The Council appointed Simon Bradstreet their President and Wait Still Winthrop to command the militia. They also dismiss some officers, who commanded the Eastern forces.—22d. The Council order the Rose Frigate to send her sails ashore. They provide a room in the castle for the persons, who were made prisoners. 23d. A committee of four, of whom was Mr. Gedney, are raised to search into any designs, injurious to the public peace. Mr. Gedney is appointed Colonel of Essex Regiment. The Council authorize Capt. John Higginson to receive of Thomas Offley, Collector of

Salem, two bbls. of powder and the public money. 24th. Col. Gedney is instructed to dispatch a messenger to Pennicook to ascertain the number and situation of the Indians there; to concert measures for securing Hope Hood and other hostile Indians.—26th. A committee are raised to examine ~~Thomas~~ Dudley's papers. This gentleman was seized at Narraganset. He was brought to Roxbury 29th, and confined to his own house. That he might be attended by a physician, he came to Boston 30th, and was guarded in the house of John Eyre.

May 2d. The inhabitants of every town are desired by the Council of Safety, to send one or two discreet persons to Boston the 9th, to give advice in present exigences. Boston was allowed to have four delegates for this occasion.—7th. The Council observe a Fast for direction.—9th. They and delegates from the towns assemble. Messrs. Brown, Gedney and Hathorne were of the Council; and John Price and Jona. Curwin were of the delegates from Salem. Messrs. Price and Curwin were chosen here the 7th, and then received instructions from this town, which say: "Do humbly present their desires, that the Honoured Governor, Magistrates and Deputies, chosen 1686, would (having always respect to our dependance on the Crown of England, and the obligation we lay under by the late declaration, before surrender of last government) re-assume our Charter government, by taking their places and forming a General Court, as soon as possibly may be, unto which we shall readily and cheerfully subject ourselves, and be always assisting to the utmost of our power, with our lives and estates as formerly."—10th. The Delegates approve the measures of the Council. They vote that the persons, who composed the General Court in 1686, and were dissolved by the King's commission to Mr. Dudley, shall constitute the government of Masssachusetts, till another election. There were nine, of whom was J. Hathorne, who dissented from this vote. The reason of such dis-

sent was in part, because the delegates did not include those, who had been lately associated with the magistrates of 1686. The delegates informed of this dissent, resolve, that the whole Council of Safety stand till 22d, when Representatives from all the towns, would take further measures on the subject.—\* 16th. Fast is kept according to order of the Committee of Safety, for the unsettled state of colonial affairs.—† 20th. The Council address their Majesties, William and Mary, and excuse the part, which they had acted, as not intended to thwart their royal pleasure, but as necessary in the circumstances of the Colony.—22d. Delegates from 54 towns meet in Boston. They wish to have the Charter resumed. The greater part of the Council, though desirous to comply with their wish, deem it not prudent for the present.—24th. The Magistrates of 1686, declare their willingness to hold their offices, according to Charter laws, until an order shall come from England, to settle the mode of government in Massachusetts.—‡ 26th. A ship arrives with advice to proclaim their Majesties.—29th. King William and Queen Mary are proclaimed in Boston, with greater parade than had been on similar occasions.

§ June 6th. The Council and Representatives address the King and Queen. Both bodies agreed, that their government should be according to the Charter. Still, as they knew not the exact policy, which their Majesties would pursue in reference to them, they acted with fear, lest their conduct should subject them to evil. 11th. B. Gerrish is appointed Clerk of Writs at Salem.—13th. A vessel is ordered with forces to the eastward, and there to scour the coast for pirates.—14th. Simon Willard of this town, is made Marshal of Essex.—|| 18th. The people of S. Village vote Rev. Samuel Parris a salary of £66, 1-3d in money and 2-3ds in produce, such as wheat at 4s., rye, Barley, and malt 3s., corn 2s., beef at 1 1-2d., pork 2d., and

\* Ist Ch. R.  
† Col R.

‡ Hatch.  
§ Col. R.

|| Dan. R.

1689]

butter 6d.—\*20th. Jonathan Wolcott as Captain, Nathaniel Ingersol, Lieut. and Thomas Flint, Ensign, are confirmed for S. Village company.

July 1st. Three hundred men are to be raised for defending the frontier towns. Essex Lower Regiment is proportioned 70, and Essex Upper Regiment 60. Capt. John Price is to aid in raising them.—6th. Of W. Salem Company, B. Gedney is confirmed Captain, S. Sewall Lieut., and Edward Flint Ensign. As Capt. Gedney declined, Lieut. Sewall was promoted to his office on the 12th, and Robert Kitchen took the place of Lieut. Sewall. A Fast is ordered to be observed the 25th, for war with the Indians.

† Aug. 5th. Capt. Benjamin Church writes to the Council, that he arrived at Newport, R. I. last night, and found Gov. Andros seized, secured and guarded by the inhabitants. He states, that it is not safe for Andros to continue where he is, and that a guard should be sent to bring him to Boston. It appears from this, that Sir Edmund had made his escape from Boston.—

‡ 19th. The Council, having been informed, that Thomas Hawkins and others were acting as pirates, order the sloop Restitution with forty men, Joseph Thaxter, master, to go after them. These pirates took the Ketch Mary, Capt. Hellen Chard, of Salem, the 9th, three leagues from half-way Rock. They captured the brig Merrimack of Newburyport, Capt. John Kent, on the 22th, in "Martin Vineyard Sound." In this sound, the same pirates fought the sloop Mary of Boston, Capt. Samuel Peas, who had also been commissioned to search for them. They killed him, and wounded some of his crew; but were taken by his Lieut. Benjamin Gallop, and in Oct. brought to Boston, where four of them belonged. They were condemned to die, but were reprieved.

Aug. Six hundred men are to be employed against the Indians. Essex upper Regiment's proportion was 94, and Essex lower 108. Simon Willard is appointed

\* Col. R.

† Col. P.

‡ Col. R.



one of seven captains to march against the enemy. His station was to be at Casco Bay. Essex lower cavalry are ordered to "Newichewaneck."

\* Sept 17th. The Ketch John and Eliza, Ezra Lambert Captain, Ketch Margaret, Daniel Jeggles Captain, and on 18th Ketch Dolphin, Isaac Woodbury, Captain, all of Salem, are taken by French ships of war, part of a fleet from France. A petition is forwarded to the Council, soon after 17th, by merchants of Salem, which states, that several of their vessels had not returned with their last fares, that six of their Ketches and 30 men had been taken and carried in Port Royal by two French frigates. The petitioners further say, that they are discouraged from sending their vessels next spring, and desire, that a suitable person may be sent to see about the captured Ketches and their men.—19th. Fast for war with Indians and public difficulties.—† The people of S. Village request to be set off. The next March, Salem voted not to give them leave.

‡ Oct. 11th. Samuel Gardner, merchant, died recently, *Æ*. 59. He was son of Thomas. He married Mary White, who deceased 1675, and who was daughter in law of Capt. George Curwin. He left children, Abel, Hannah, and Jonathan. He had lost two daughters, Margaret, wife of Deliverance Parkman, and Mary, wife of Joseph Henfield. He sustained various offices. He was Selectman and Deputy to General Court. He was a worthy townsman.

§ Nov. Capt. Willard writes from Salem to the Governor, that his men at Casco Bay, needed supplies; that the parents of his soldiers were much displeased, because they had not returned, as was promised. He proposes, that Dr. Harraden be encouraged to visit the soldiers at Casco, and take care of them.—|| 5th. The Council and Representatives meet. Of the former were J. Hathorne and J. Curwin. Of the latter was J. Price. B. Gerrish takes the place of S. Sewall as

\* Col. P. † Dan. R. ‡ Qt. Ct. R. § Col. P. || Col. R.

Clerk of Essex Court. Six Rates are ordered, one of them to be in money and the rest in produce. One third of the amount of rates, payable in produce, is allowed, if paid in money,—\*10th. Twenty-five persons are dismissed from the first church, to form the church under Rev. S. Parris. This was done by consent of Magistrates and neighbouring Churches.—15th. Mr. Parris was ordained. Messrs. Gedney, Hathorne, and Curwin, with the Pastor and Teacher, attended.—†26th. Jonathan Curwin first sits as Judge of the Court. Richard Croad had died lately, *Æ.* 61. He was from Hampton, England, where he had an estate, 1684, and where his father Richard lived and died. He left a wife, Frances, and children, Hannah, Richard, William, John and Sarah. He had lost two daughters, one married to a Neal and the other to a Bridges. He was a respectable man.

‡ Dec. 3d. The Council and Representatives meet. Of the former were J. Curwin and J. Hathorne and of the latter J. Price and J. Higginson. They assemble to consider two letters from the King. One of these letters approved what had been done, as to ordering the government here ; and recommended, that it shall be so administered, till further instructions. This tended to lessen a prevailing dread, lest the King would send over a Governor. The other letter required, that Sir Edmund Andros and his friends should be sent over to England for trial. ✓ It was ordered, that, as Capt. Samuel Peas had been killed by pirates, a collection should be taken in each town, for the relief of his widow and four children, and, also, for two of his crew, who were wounded.—47th. Thanksgiving was to be 19th, because the Indians had been checked ; William and Mary had come to the throne, and thus the Protestant religion is likely to be defended. War was to be declared 20th, in Boston, against the French.—20th. An embargo is laid on all vessels, bound to Europe, that they may not be captured by the enemy.—§ 30th. Six

\* 1st Ch. R. † Qt. Ct. R. ‡ Col. R. § T. R.

country rates are assessed on Salem, amounting to £360; one of which was to be discharged in money, and the rest in *pay*, or, as this term then meant, produce.

1690.

\* Jan. 1st. As Capt. S. Willard was in active service, his Lieut. Wm. Wormwood, is allowed to sign certificates for Capt. Willard's soldiers, who had been with him against the Eastern Indians.—10th. On a committee, to consult about an expedition to Port Royal, was Col. B. Gedney. They report in favour of such an expedition, and, also, of reducing Nova Scotia. 20th. It was agreed, that the *Convention* should be called *General Court*, as before the Charter was annulled.

Feb. 12th. General Court sit. J. Hathorne is an Assistant. Messrs. Higginson and Price are Deputies. Fast day is to be kept March 6th, on account of small pox, fever and war. Capt. S. Willard, in the Fort at Falmouth, is instructed to aid in pursuing the enemy to head quarters. Essex soldiers are divided into three Regiments. Salem, Lynn, Marblehead, Beverly, and Manchester form one of them. Maj. B. Gedney is appointed Serj't Major of South Regiment. An expedition is ordered to Nova Scotia.—10th. Country rates are to be levied. Wheat 5s. rye 4s. oats 1s. 6d. corn 3s. 6d. peas 4s. barley and barley malt 4s. for taxes.

† March 15th. The soldiers of Salem, under J. Price and S. Sewall, are to compose four companies. 18th. Col. B. Gedney is chosen commander-in-chief against the French.—† 28th. There are 28 persons here with the small pox.

§ April 24th. J. Hathorne and J. Curwin are appointed by the Council, to visit the Eastern parts of New-Hampshire and Maine, for securing them against the enemy, and disposing of the troops sent thither.

\* Col. R. † Col. P. ‡ T. R. § Col. P.

\* May 5th. The Country rates for Salem, were £750, and its own taxes beside were £208 1 4.—14th. † One hundred and sixty men are to march for Albany. The Regiment, including Salem, is to afford its proportion of them.—‡ 24th. Maj. Gedney writes to the Governor from this place, that great consternation prevailed at Wells; that the forces there were resolved to quit their post, if not speedily succoured; that he had endeavoured to rally his men, and have them march for Wells by to-morrow morning; that it was troublesome to have soldiers billeted at Salem, and wished advice about obtaining a commander to head them.—26th. He writes, that he shall march his forces under John Wolcott of Salem, who had been against the enemy once before. The embargo, which was to have continued till June 14th, is raised.—§ 28th. General Court assemble. J. Hathorne and J. Curwin are Assistants. J. Ruck and N. Putnam are Deputies. Four hundred men are ordered to defend the frontiers. Essex South Regiment is proportioned 51. A resolve is passed to attack Canada

June 10th. The cavalry under Capt. Brown of Salem, and belonging to Essex South Regiment, are to draft 14 for service.—17th. Embargo to be continued till Sept. 10.—19th. Among the muster masters of several Regiments is B. Gerrish.—20th. Proclamation is made for volunteers to Canada, under Sir Wm. Phipps.—|| 24th. Jeremiah Neal desires to be excused from serving as marshal for Essex County. John Rogers, glazier, is appointed in his stead. They were both of Salem. J. Higginson as County Treasurer, is succeeded by John Appleton of Ipswich.—Dr. Daniel Weld of this place, died recently. He left a wife Bethiah; and children, Edward, Bethiah married to Robert Kitchen, Barbara and Elizabeth. He was son of Rev. Thomas Weld, formerly of Roxbury. He graduated at Harvard 1661. He was esteemed, both as a man and physician.

\* T. R.    † Col. R.    ‡ Col. P.    § Col. R.    || Ql. Ct. R.

\* July 17th. One hundred men are to be drafted for the Eastward. Essex South Regiment's proportion was fifteen.—18th. Robert Kitchen is abated £12 10 out of the prize of his Ketch, re-taken at Port Royal. It appears, that this Ketch was one of eight vessels, with seven or eight hundred men, under Sir Wm. Phipps, which sailed April 28th, and took Port Royal.—29th. Three hundred and eight seamen and soldiers, from Maj. Gedney's Regiment, rendezvous at Salem, ready for marching with others, on an expedition to Canada. Of seven Essex Captains for this expedition was John Curwin.—† 22d. John Peach of Marblehead, Æ. 77, testifies, that Richard Hollingworth sen. formerly of Salem, shipwright, deceased, owned two ten acre lots, "*lying on Darby fort side so called in the township of Marblehead.*" Richard More sen. of Salem, Æ. 78, testifies, that R. Hollingworth had land "*on Darby Fort side, which is now Marblehead.*" Several other aged people gave similar testimony. Such evidence settles the question, which once excited considerable attention, as to the location of Derby Fort. The received opinion was, that this Fort was on Beverly side. But the evidence, now adduced, makes it to have been undoubtedly on Marblehead side.

‡ Aug. 28th. Fast is observed for a blessing on the Canada expedition, on William and Mary, and for a lasting peace. The expedition, here mentioned, proved unsuccessful.—§ Dr. John Barton of this place is allowed £25 0 5 for medicine, supplied to some of the Canada forces.

|| Sept. 8th. There were 470 taxable persons in Salem.

¶ Oct. A number of the principal men of this town, having a deep sense of the deplorable condition of the country by reason of French and Indian enemies, petition the Governor and Council to lay the state of the Colony, before their Majesties for relief. The Petitioners think this best to be done by Governor and

\* Col. R. † Qt. Ct. R. ‡ 1st Ch. R. § Col. P. || T. R. ¶ Col. P.

Council, though other gentlemen are about to address the King and Queen. They also desire, that some means may be used to prevent the Mohawks from going over to the French, which seems threatened by divisions at New-York.—8th. General Court raise the embargo.—\* 13th. Selectmen here, according to order of General Court, provide for having 2s. a week paid to the family of every man, in public service.

† Nov. 4th. General Court order 20 rates to be assessed, and raise a committee to procure a loan.—‡ 25th. The Selectmen of Salem state, that sick and wounded men, lately disbanded, were brought hither; and that many of them did not belong here. They remark, that the necessitous of this town are more, than can be comfortably provided for; and ask what they shall do for the suffering strangers.

§ Dec. 10th. General Court raise a Committee to issue Bills of Credit. They had calculated too much on the capture and booty of Canada to satisfy their soldiers. When their defeated forces returned, they were unable to answer their just and pressing demands. They were compelled to issue paper money—a measure convenient at present, but distressing to many of the poor in future.—|| 19th. The country rates for Salem were £953 18 4; for its fortifications £150; for its poor and other charges £182 18 10. These sums made a heavy burden for the people here, because the war had both increased them and lessened their ability to pay them. They and the rest of the Colonists were called to endure severe trials.

✓  
1691.

Jan. 6th. John Swinnerton, physician of this town, died. He left a widow, Hannah, who died 1713, Æ. 71. He was a benevolent and respected man.

¶ Feb. 3d. General Court convene. J. Curwin is an Assistant. J. Ruck and N. Putnam are Deputies.

\* T. R.  
† Col. P.

‡ Qt. Ct. R.  
§ Col. R.

|| T. R.  
¶ Col. R.

Thanksgiving is to be kept 26th, for success of King's arms in Ireland; for a check given to enemies of the Protestants in Europe, and to seek divine aid for the Colony, against its enemies. B. Gedney and others are a committee to inquire, if any plunder, brought from Canada, is concealed. The military stores, taken by Governor Andros from Salem, had been in public use, and Capt. Higginson is either to have them, or be paid for them.—\* 11th. The Council choose S. Gardner, J. Higginson and S. Sewall to take care of the wounded soldiers and seamen.

May 7th. A fast is to be observed to seek divine deliverance from the French and Indians, and a blessing on the Agents in London.—† 18th. Selectmen are desired to prevent the spread of the Small Pox in Salem.—‡ 26th. General Court sit. J. Hathorne and J. Curwin are Assistants. John Putnam and Manasseh Marston are Deputies. Bills of Credit are limited to £40,000.

June 2d. Forty men are to be posted at Wells to defend it against French and Indians. Essex South Regiment's proportion of them is 11. Scouts are ordered in each County. In Essex four scouts, of six men each, are required to watch the frontier.—§ 9th. The Country rates for Salem are £1346 1 0.—|| 19th. B. Gedney writes to the Governor, that twenty men from this town, are drafted for public service.

Aug. 12th. Mr. Gedney informs the Governor, that Capt. Allen of the Ketch Endeavour had arrived at Salem and that his men, though paid for past services, refused to go on another expedition. The Governor and Council reply, that they will try the ring-leaders, and that Capt. Allen may retain only ten of the least mutinous, and, with them, bring the vessel to Boston.—¶ 13th. Capt. John, son of Walter Price, died recently Æ. 46. He left a wife Sarah, daughter of Henry Wolcott, Esq. of Connecticut. He left one son, Walter. He had lost several children, which were young.

\* Col. P. † T. R. ‡ Col. R. § T. R. || Col. P. ¶ Qt. Ct. R.

His widow deceased March 5, 1699, *Æ.* 49. He was a merchant. His estate was over £2245. He held various offices. He was frequently Selectman and Deputy to General Court. His life gave large promise of continued and distinguished usefulness. But it was cut off to the sorrow of many.

\* Oct. 14th. General Court order £35 14 11 to be refunded to several persons of Salem, being what they expended for the sick and wounded men, landed here on their return from Canada. ✓ † 16th. An inhabitant of this town, having tried, April 6th, to pass counterfeit coins, is sentenced to pay costs, stand in the pillory at Boston an hour, on each of three lecture days after worship, and have a paper affixed to him, signifying his crime.

† Nov. 25th. Maj. Charles Redford died lately. He bequeathed his property to his brother William, and sisters, Mary and Sarah Redford, and to a daughter-in-law, and children of his brother, John Turner, deceased. He gave some things to the poor of Salem. He was a respectable merchant.

§ Dec. Mr. Noyes and three brethren attended a Council at Lynn, about a misunderstanding, between Mr. Shepard and some members of his church.—|| 25th. As others, beside French Protestants, had fled to this country, and been succoured in time of war, an order is issued by government, that no more of such Protestants take up their residence in any seaport or town, without license. A reason for this measure was, that some had come to the Colony under pretence of being French Protestants, when they were of a "contrary religion and interest."

1692. ✓

Feb. 21st. By order of General Court, a contribution is taken up here as well as through the Colony. The amount contributed in Salem was £31. The object of it was to redeem captives, lately carried away by

\* Col. R. † Ips. Ct. R. ‡ Qt. Ct. R. § 1st Ch. R. || Col. R.



Indians, particularly from York. ✓ \*25th. Tituba, an Indian servant of Rev. S. Parris, is complained of for witchcraft. Before this, John, her husband, another Indian servant of Mr. P., had been persuaded by Mary Sibly to make a superstitious experiment for discovering persons, who, they supposed, secretly afflicted Mr. P's daughter Elizabeth, Æ. 9, and his niece Abigail Williams, Æ. 11, and Ann Putnam a girl of the neighbourhood.

March 1st. Sarah Osborn, Sarah and Dorothy Good, Tituba, servant of Mr. Parris, Martha Cory, Rebecca Nurse, Sarah Cloyce, John Proctor and his wife Elizabeth, all of Salem Village, are committed to Boston jail on charge of witchcraft.—† 11th. Mr. Parris and other ministers observe a Fast at Salem Village, because witchcraft had appeared there.—‡ Mary Sibly having confessed, that she innocently counselled John, the Indian, to attempt a discovery of witches, is permitted to commune with Mr. P's Church. She had been previously disciplined for such counsel and appeared well.

§ April 11th. ~~T. Dudley, Deputy Governor, and five other~~ Magistrates assemble to examine Sarah Cloyce, John and Elizabeth Proctor, who had been confined in Boston prison.—18th. Giles Cory and Mary Warren, both of Salem Village, Bridget Bishop alias Oliver of Salem, and Abigail Hobbs of Topsfield are examined for witchcraft.—|| 22d. Wm. Hobbs and his wife Mary, Mary Easty and Sarah Wildes, all of Topsfield, Edward Bishop and his wife Sarah, and Mary Black, negro servant of Nathaniel Putnam, all of Salem Village, and Mary, wife of Philip English of Salem, are committed to the prison of this town, charged with witchcraft. ¶ Mr. English appears to have been under the same suspicion as his wife; for a warrant was issued for his apprehension April 30th; but he had avoided being taken.

\* Qt. Ct. (Papers.) P.  
† Hale.

‡ Dan. R.  
§ Qt. Ct. P.

|| Calef.  
¶ Qt. Ct. P.

May 2d. Lydia Dasting of Reading, Susannah Martin, widow, of Amesbury, Dorcas Hoar and Sarah Murrell, both of Beverly, having been examined for witchcraft, are sent to Boston jail.—6th. Another order is issued for the apprehension of P. English.—8th. Bethiah Carter of Woburn, Sarah Dasting of Reading, and Rev. George Burroughs of Wells, and Ann Seirs, having been examined for witchcraft, are imprisoned in Boston.—13th. George Jacobs sen. Giles Cory and Mary Black, negro servant of Nathaniel Putnam, all of Salem Village, Edward Bishop and wife Sarah, Bridget Bishop alias Oliver, Mary English, Alice Parker and Ann Predeater, all of Salem, and Wm. Hobbs of Topsfield, are confined, for a similar charge, in Boston jail. Some of these were taken from Salem prison.

\* May 14th. Sir Wm. Phipps arrived with a new Charter from William and Mary, dated the preceeding Oct. 7th. This Charter constitutes Massachusetts, Plymouth, Maine, and Nova Scotia one Province, of which Wm. Phipps was appointed Governor by their Majesties. Thus the hope, which the Colonists of Massachusetts had cherished, in some degree, as to the confirmation of their first Charter privileges, was disappointed. Still Sir William was appointed by nomination of their Agent, and he, as they must have a Governor chosen by their Majesties, was the one, with whom they were most pleased under their circumstances. † 18th. Thomas Farrar and Elizabeth Hart both of Lynn, Roger Toothaker of Billerica, and John Willard of Salem Village, having been examined for witchcraft, are committed to Boston prison.—23d. Mary Easty of Topsfield, Susannah Rootes of Beverly, Sarah Basset of Lynn, Benjamin son of John Proctor of Salem Village, Mary Derich of Salem, and Abigail Soames, endited for the same crime, are confined in Boston jail. Persons who had confessed themselves witches, and who are imprisoned at Salem, are Deliverance and Abigail Hobbs of Topsfield, Mary Warren and Margaret Jacobs

\* Prov. (Province) R.    † Qt. Ct. P.

both of S. Village and Sarah Churchwell. Others confined here for witchcraft are Rebecca Jacobs, Sarah Proctor and Mary Withered, all of S. Village, Sarah Bulkley, Sarah Peas, both of Salem. Rebecca was mother of Margaret Jacobs, and also wife to George Jacobs, jr., who, being accused of witchcraft, had fled. 25th. Elizabeth, wife of Nathaniel Cary, of Charlestown, is imprisoned at Boston as a witch.—31st. John Aldin of Boston, and Sarah, wife of Nicholas Rice of Reading, are confined in Boston jail for witchcraft. Rev. Henry Gibbs, of Watertown, writes in his diary : “ Spent this day at S. Village, to attend the public examination of criminals, and observed remarkable and prodigious passages therein. Wonders I saw, but how to judge and conclude, I am at a loss.” Up to this time fifty-one persons had been imprisoned on the charge of Witchcraft. There were others accused of the same crime, and examined ; but they were cleared. Both the committed and cleared were tried at S. Village, because there the afflicted, so called, had their residence, and there they were charged by such afflicted ones, with injuring them by their spectres or spirits. The place for examining them, was generally at the house of Nathaniel Putnam. The examinations took place, for the most part, before Judges of the County Court, who belonged to Salem.

\* June 2d. A Court of Oyer and Terminer, commissioned by the Governor, sit at Salem. B. Gedney was one of its Judges. The Court arraign Bridget Bishop on the indictment of witchcraft. The Jury bring her in guilty. She had been tried on a similar charge 1680.—6th. Ann, wife of Capt. Wm. Dolibar of Gloucester, is to be apprehended as a witch. She was daughter of Rev. Mr. Higginson. There were a few others of Gloucester afterwards seized for the same account.—† 8th. General Court assemble by order of the Governor. Of his Council were B. Gedney, J. Hathorne, and J. Curwin. The Representatives from

\* Ct. of O. & T. P. (Papers.)

† Prov. R.

Salem are J. Higginson and S. Gardner.—\* 10th. B. Bishop is hung by G. Curwin, High Sheriff. She was the first, who fell a victim to the delusion of witchcraft, which now prevailed. She left a husband, Edward, and children. † Of a Committee for revising the laws are B. Gedney and J. Hathorne. J. Higginson, jr., takes the oath for a Justice of Essex.—15th. The Governor and Council consult several ministers about the witchcraft at S. Village. The clergymen advise, that care should be taken not to condemn any on spectral evidence, because Satan could assume the shape of innocent persons; but still that the laws of God and the statutes of England, should be enforced against those guilty of witchcraft.—17th. Thanksgiving is to be kept on July 14th, "for the safe arrival of Governor Phipps and Rev. I. Mather, who had industriously endeavoured the service of this people, and had brought over with them a settlement of Government, in which their Majesties have graciously given us distinguished marks of their royal favour and goodness."—‡ 28th. Court of Oyer and Terminer meet here. They try Sarah Good, Rebecca Nurse, Susannah Martin, Elizabeth How and Sarah Wildes, on the indictment of witchcraft. The Jury bring them all in guilty.

§ July 3d. R. Nurse is excommunicated from the Church here for witchcraft.—|| 19th. The persons condemned 28th ult. are hung. R. Nurse's case was peculiarly hard. At first the Jury could find no verdict against her. Even on their second return to the Court, they had not found her guilty. When, however, they were in their places, and she stood at the bar, they agreed on a verdict against her, because she made no answer to some interrogations about an expression, which she had uttered. She left a husband, Francis, and children, John, Sarah, Rebecca, Samuel, Francis, Mary, Elizabeth, and Benjamin. Sarah Good left a husband, William. R. Nurse and S. Good both be-

\* Ct. of O. & T. P.  
† Prov. R.

‡ Ct. of O. & T. P.  
§ 1st Ch. R.

|| Ct. of O. & T. P.

longed to S. Village. E. How left a husband, James, and children, Mary and Abigail. S. Wildes left a husband, John, and a son Ephraim. Both of them belonged to Topsfield.

Aug. 3d. Court of Oyer and Terminer convene here. They try George Burroughs, John Proctor and wife Elizabeth, John Willard, George Jacobs sen. and Martha Carrier, who are all brought in guilty of witchcraft.—19th. These persons, except E. Proctor, who plead gestation, are executed. G. Burroughs was once minister of S. Village, whence he went to preach at Falmouth. From this place, he was driven by the Indians 1690, and then appears to have preached at Wells, where he lived, when charged with witchcraft. He had three wives. His last was sister to John Ruck of Salem. She survived him. He left children, George, Jeremiah, Rebecca, Hannah, Elizabeth and Mary. He met his untimely end with Christian fortitude. Though his accusers charged him with deeds of murder, as was common for them to do in reference to others, yet he appears to have been a worthy man. Mr. Proctor and wife sustained excellent characters, before they were charged with witchcraft. Their neighbours at S. Village, spoke decidedly in their favour. Many of his acquaintance at Ipswich, where he was born, and whence he moved to S. Village, thought highly of his reputation, and petitioned for his reprieve. His wife was E. Basset of Lynn. He was  $\text{\AA}$ . 58, at the time of his execution. He left children, John, Benjamin, Elizabeth, Martha, Mary, Wm, Joseph, Sam'l, Thordike, Sarah and Abigail. J. Willard was a conscientious and respectable man. At first, he believed, that some, charged with witchcraft, were really guilty. He even took an active part against them. But convinced that he was wrong, he confessed his mistake, and strove to lessen the mania, which raged around him. A consequence of this was, that he was soon accused of witchcraft. He fled, but was speedily apprehended and suffered the evil, from which he endeavoured to es-

cape, He left a wife, Margaret, who married a Town. G. Jacobs was a reputable man. He left a wife, Mary, and children, George, Anne and Margaret. Messrs. Procter, Willard and Jacobs belonged to S. Village. M. Carrier left a husband, Thomas, and belonged to Andover.—It appears from the testimony of P. English, that his goods at Salem, amounting to £1500, were seized by G. Curwin, Sheriff. The reason for this seizure was, that Mr. English and his wife Mary, being imprisoned in Boston for witchcraft, fled to New York, as the only means of preserving their lives.—\* 28th. A Fast is kept “for the afflicted state of things here” and in England.—† 31st. Sarah, wife of Peter Cloyce, had been removed to Ipswich prison, as a witch.

‡ Sept. 9th. Court of Oyer and Terminer sit in Salem. They arraign Martha Cory, Mary Easty, Alice Parker, Ann Pudeater, Dorcas Hoar and Mary Bradbury. The Jury bring them in guilty. Giles Cory was also arraigned, but he refused to put himself on trial. For thus standing mute, he was sentenced to be pressed to death.—§ 14th. Martha Cory is excommunicated from S. Village Church, and the two Deacons are instructed to give her notice at the Prison here.—|| 17th. Nine more, charged with witchcraft, receive sentence of death. They are Margaret Scott, Willmot Reed, Samuel Wardwell, Mary Parker, Abigail Faulkner, Mary Lacy, Ann Foster, Rebecca Eames and Abigail Hobbs.—¶ 18th. G. Cory is excommunicated from the Church here.—\*\* 19th. He was pressed to death. Richard Gardner from Nantucket, his former friend, persuaded him to confess. But Cory chose to die rather than wrong the truth. He bequeathed property to a son-in-law, Wm. Cheeves of Beverly. He had two wives. His first was Mary, who died 1684, Æ. 63. His second, Martha, was soon to follow him. They lived at S. Village.—22d. Eight

\* 1st Ch. R.

† Ct. of O. &amp; T. P.

|| Ct. of O. &amp; T. P.

† Dan. Ch. R.

§ Dan. Ch. R.

¶ 1st Ch. R.

\*\* Ct. of O. &amp; T. P.

of the sixteen lately condemned, are executed; viz.—M. Cory, A. Parker, M. Easty, M. Parker, M. Pudeater, M. Scott, W. Reed, and S. Wardwell. Of those condemned the 9th, and not executed, were D. Hoar of Beverly, who married a King, and M. Bradbury of Salisbury, who had a husband, and sons, Henry and Samuel. M. Cory as well as her husband met death with christian consolation and firmness. They left children, Elizabeth and Martha. M. Easty of Topsfield was sister to R. Nurse, and left a husband, Isaac, and seven children. A. Parker left a husband, John, and A. Pudeater was widow of Jacob Pudeater. They both belonged to Salem. Of those condemned 17th, and not hung, are the following. A. Faulkner was spared on account of gestation. She and M. Lacy and A. Foster were of Andover, and all of them had families. R. Eames was of Boxford. A. Hobbs was daughter to William and Deborah Hobbs of Topsfield. They who were sentenced at the same time and hung, are as follow. M. Scott was of Rowley. W. Reed was of Marblehead and left a husband, Samuel. M. Parker and S. Wardwell were both of Andover, and left families. During July, Aug. and Sept. many persons of Andover were examined, and committed for witchcraft. The distressing scene spread thither from S. Village. The Court of Oyer and Terminer, after their last judgment Sept. 17th, dissolved. They thus afforded the public mind a better opportunity to consider the means of counteracting the calamities, which supposed witchcraft was scattering in various directions.

Oct. 3d. B. Gedney is appointed by the Governor Judge of Probate for Essex.—\* 7th. Edward Bishop and wife Sarah of Salem, having escaped from prison, where they were confined for witchcraft, his property is seized as forfeited to his Majesty.—† 12th. A number of men, belonging to Andover, petition the Governor to release their wives from Salem Prison, to which they were committed as “penitent confessors” of witch-

\* Calef

† Prov. P.

craft, on condition, that suitable bonds are given for their appearance.

Dec. 16th. B. Gedney and J. Curwin take oaths as Judges for Essex Inferior Court, which is now established.—\* 27th. "Whereas the house where Wm. Dunton now liveth, adjoining the Prison in Salem, was built for a house of Correction," he is appointed keeper of this house. Henry Bartholomew sen. merchant, had died recently, *Æ.* 92. He joined the Church here 1636, became freeman 1637, and was granted 50 acres of land 1638. His wife was Elizabeth. She died Sept. 1, 1682, *Æ.* 60. He had a considerable number of children. Of these, who survived him, was Henry. Few men belonging to Salem, had more frequently sustained its offices or more faithfully performed them. He was often of the selectmen, and, also, a prominent Deputy to General Court. He did much to promote the interests of this town. He deserves to hold a place in the grateful remembrance of its inhabitants.

### 1693.

† Jan. 3d. A Supreme Court convenes at Salem. Wm. Stoughton was Chief Justice. He had several associates. The Court arraign those, who had been confined for witchcraft. They clear Rebecca wife of George Jacobs and her daughter Margaret, and Mary Withered of S. Village, and Sarah wife of Wm. Buckley of Salem. Rev. Wm. Hubbard, in certifying to the good character of S. Buckley, said that it was more than fifty years since she came from England.—5th. They clear Job Tookey of Beverly, and Hannah Tyler of Andover.—6th. They acquit Candy, a negro servant of Mrs. Hannah Hawkes of this town, Mary wife of John Marston jr., Elizabeth Johnson, widow, Abigail, wife of Ebenezer Barker, all of Andover.—7th. They acquit Mary, wife of Hopeshill Tyler of Andover. 10th. The jury bring in a verdict against Sarah

\* Gen. Sess. R. † Sup. Ct. R.



Wardwell, widow of Samuel, who had been executed. The Court clear her daughter, Mary, and Sarah Hawkes, both of Andover.—11th. Elizabeth Johnson, jr., of the same town, and Mary Post of Rowley are brought in guilty. Mary wife of John Osgood, Sarah Bridges, and Mary wife of John Bridges, all of Andover, and Hannah Post of Boxford are acquitted.—13th. Mary Lacy, jr. of Andover is cleared. During the session Richard Carrier and Stephen Johnson, both of Andover, appear to have been acquitted. Thus closed the trials in Salem for witchcraft. The three who had been condemned were reprieved. The Supreme Court held other sessions to try those, charged with witchcraft. One was at Charlestown Feb. 1st, when they acquitted Mary Toothaker of Billerica, Mary Taylor, Lydia and Sarah Dasting, all of Reading, and Sarah wife of John Cole, of Lynn. Another was at Boston in March, when John Aldin was discharged. A third was at Ipswich 2d Tuesday of May, when Susannah Post, Eunice wife of John Fry, Mary Bridges, jr., Mary Barker, jr., and Wm. Barker, jr., all of Andover, are cleared. The Governor ordered all others, accused of witchcraft and not tried, to be discharged. Thus terminated one of the most surprising and afflicting scenes ever witnessed in New-England. Twenty had been put to death and 11 condemned for witchcraft. Rev. J. Hale, of Beverly, informs us, that about 50 confessed themselves guilty; that the same number of other persons were afflicted; and about 100 accused. Mr. Calef makes the last number double, and says that 150 besides were imprisoned. Mr. Hale was probably more correct than Calef. The attainders which existed, according to law, against families of those executed, and also of those condemned but reprieved, were reversed by General Court in 1711. At the same time, it was enacted, that no person should be prosecuted for what he did legally in reference to those, charged with witchcraft. They who suffered in their estates, on account of this crime, were partly remunerated by General

Court 1712, either in person, or in their heirs. Witchcraft, as exhibited at S. Village and adjacent places, was no new thing. Previously to its taking place, several persons had been executed, and others arraigned for such an offence, in New England. It so prevailed in England and Scotland, 1542, a law was enacted under Henry VIII. making it felony without benefit of Clergy. When Elizabeth began to reign, 1558, Bishop Jewall remarked in a sermon before her: "It may please your grace to understand, that witches and sorcerers, within these four last years, are maliciously increased within your grace's realm." According to Reginald Scot, witchcraft prevailed alarmingly, 1584, in the same kingdom. It also spread dismay there in 1603. Soon after this a new Statute was enacted under James I., making witchcraft punishable with death. At Chelmsford, England, 30 were tried for this offence, 1645, before Judge Coniers, 14 of whom suffered death. Besides these, 100 more were imprisoned, at the same time and in the same country, in Essex and Suffolk. Sir Matthew Hale sentenced some to death, 1664, on a like accusation. Nor were other parts of Europe free from such an evil. It had brought death upon 100 persons in the Subalpine Vallies, and 900 in France. In addition to these facts, English jurists of eminence, such as Keeble and Dalton, had described Witchcraft as though it could be discovered, and should be punished, like other capital offences. Such things had confirmed both young and old, on this side of the Atlantic, in the sure belief of Witchcraft, and opened the way for securing its prevalence. Did they appear to us, as they did to our ancestors, we should not be so much surprised, that these ancestors gave any countenance to so gross a delusion. The chief mistake, which prevailed here, was confiding in established precedents, which could stand neither the test of sound philosophy nor of Scripture. The public had cherished the persuasion, as confirmed by the law and practice of the mother-country, that no one could think he saw the resemblan-

ces of other persons afflicting him, unless these persons were either witches or wizards. Mr. Parris was of their number. Had he been of a different opinion, and discouraged his daughter and neice from crying out against their neighbours, as if inflicting pain upon their bodies by spectral appearances, the probability is, that the tragic events, which followed, would never have been known. He, however, was firm in the general impression, and prompted these children rather to proceed, than to stop in their accusations. Upon them and many others, who declared themselves afflicted, reflection rests the most heavily. They were much excited. Wonderful relations were expected from them. Their minds were ready to account common things as supernatural. They had the highest authorities in men and books, to continue the part, which they had begun. They dreaded to retract, lest, as the consequence, they should bring on themselves the charge, which they laid to others. Indeed, they were strongly tempted to wish all their testimony true, and then to deliver it as their conscientious persuasion. But the fact appears to be, that, whatever their unchecked, flattered, and disordered imaginations might perceive, they did accuse persons of crimes and thus occasioned their execution, of which crimes there is no evidence, that these persons were guilty. There was, also, another class, who confessed themselves to have practised witchcraft. They were females of respectable standing. They were directly accused. The testimonies against them were believed by their Judges. They perceived that the public voice spoke severely of them. What almost every one said and believed of them, they feared might be true, though their own consciences taught them differently. They saw no alternative between a confession and the gallows. They chose the former. They afterwards declared themselves innocent. They said, that what they had allowed to the contrary, was drawn from them, when their minds were so agitated as scarcely to know either

their thoughts or words. Of those who were put to death, it must be said, that they fell innocent victims of well-intended but ill-directed zeal. When we look back on them—consider them wrongly accused and condemned—cruelly hastened to execution and destroyed, as the outcasts of God and man, we feel an agonizing wish, that they might have been saved, and lived long to have manifested their dying integrity. Hapless is the land, which refuses to learn wisdom from such direful events.

“ The baleful charms  
Of superstition there infect the skies,  
And turn the sun to horror.”

With respect to the Judges and Juries, concerned in the trials for witchcraft, the Rev. John Higginson appears to make a true remark. This is as follows: they “proceeded in their integrity with a zeal of God against sin, according to their best light and law and evidence; but there is question whether some of the laws, customs and privileges, used by Judges and Juries in the trial of Witches in England, which were followed as patterns here, were not insufficient.” We would add to his opinion, that as there has been time for the public mind to examine the grounds, upon which the Judges and Juries here made up their decisions, so it is convinced, that such grounds were untenable. Thus we have taken a view of those, immediately concerned in one of the most remarkable calamities, which ever fell on this part of our country. One benefit, divinely educed from such a calamity, is, that it has long kept the community vigilant against its being repeated. For its past prevalence we regret. For its suppression we are thankful. For the perpetual prevention of its recurrence we hope and pray.

\* Feb. 3d. A meeting is called at S. Village to make void Mr. Parris’s salary. Much disaffection towards him prevailed for the part, he had taken in witchcraft.—†6th. Francis Ellis is appointed keeper of the

Tavern at the sign of the Ship.—\* 7th. The deputies voted, that Essex be divided into two Counties; but their vote was not approved by the Governor and Council.

✓  
March 30th. Philip Cromwell, wheelwright, died Æ. 83. His first wife Dorothy, who had been widow of Allen Kenniston, deceased Sept. 27, 1673, Æ. 67; and his second, Margaret, who had been widow of Robert Lemon, died Nov. 14, 1683, Æ. 72. He left a son John. He was granted 110 acres of land 1649. He was often of the Selectmen. He was a useful and respected man.

✓  
† May 31st. General Court assemble. B. Gedney, J. Curwin and J. Hathorne are Assistants. Benjamin Brown and Wm. Hirst are Deputies. During this session, Wm. Brown of Salem appeared as an Assistant. It is ordered, that, for the benefit of trade, six instead of eight per cent. interest, should be taken on money loaned. About this time, a petition was sent to the Legislature by the principal men of Salem. It stated, that the people here had paid £500 for their Fort and had maintained, in 1692, a Scout Shallop, which cost £60; and that they had been at considerable charge for block houses and other town fortifications. It desired, that, as only a small allowance had been made to Salem for these things, the expenses of the Fort and Scout Shallop, might be paid by the Province.

† Oct. 13th. Rev. J. Higginson advises Mr. Parris and his Church, to have a Council for settling difficulties, which had risen about witchcraft. Mr. Higginson did this by request of Mr. Willard and other Boston Elders.—14th. Messrs. Noyes of Salem and Hale of Beverly give similar advice.—19th. Mr. Parris and his church agree to have a mutual Council.

✓  
§ Nov. 8th. "To the intent that the Indians may be forwarded in civility and Christianity, and their drunkenness and other vices be more effectually suppressed among them," General Court enact, that

\* Prov. P. † Prov. R. ‡ Dan. Ch. R. § Prov. R.

Commissioners be appointed to take care of the Indians, and that 40s. fine shall be paid for every pint of strong liquors sold them. Even Cider was included in such liquors. 4/14th. Thanksgiving was appointed to be Dec. 21st, for preservation of his Majesty; for support of Protestant cause; for stop put to mortal sickness; for good harvest, and submission of Indian enemy. The sickness, here spoken of, was taken at Boston from the fleet of Sir Francis Wheeler, who arrived, June 11th, from the West Indies, with most of his men dead. It was probably the Yellow Fever. In reference to the Indians mentioned, it appears, that after two defeats at the Eastward, they made peace Aug. 11th.—17th. B. Gedney is on a Committee, from the Assistants, to join a Committee of Deputies, to consider the best means for enabling the Treasurer to collect arrears of rates and pay the public debt. J. Hathorne is on a Committee to unite with a Committee of the Deputies, for regulating the Indian trade. J. Curwin is on a Committee to consult with a Committee of the Deputies, about a new establishment of Chancery.

Dec. 6th. B. Gedney, as one of three Commissioners for managing the War Department, is to receive £100 a year, conditionally subject to some deductions. \*26th. Nathaniel Sharp is to be keeper of the jail and house of correction in Salem. He was son of Elder Sharp. Persons, refusing to pay Mr. Parris' salary for 1691–2, are ordered by the Court to be sued. Expenses of the Court of Oyer and Terminer, which had sat on cases of Witchcraft, in Salem 1692, were £130. This sum is to be assessed on the County. Salem's part of it was £40 10.

1694.

† March 27th. Indian corn was 2s. 3d., wheat 5s. rye 2s. 9d., barley malt 2s. 3d., oats 1s. 4d., and peas 3s. 6d. for rates.

\* Gen. Sess. R. † Prov. P.

May 5th. Mr. John Pickering died *Æ.* 57. His wife was Alice, daughter of Wm. Flint. She survived him. He left children, John, to whom he bequeathed Broad Field by mill pond, Benjamin, William, Elizabeth, and Hannah married to John Buttolph. He was frequently of the Selectmen. He was a capable, enterprising and public spirited townsman.—\* 30th. General Court assemble. B. Gedney, J. Hathorne, Wm. Brown and J. Curwin are of the Assistants. Manasseh Marston and S. Gardner are Deputies. According to the last Charter, the Deputies presented a list of Assistants to the Governor, that he might accept or reject them, as he chose. √ † A memorial was received, signed by many clergymen, desiring the Legislature to enact laws against prevailing iniquities. Among such laws, passed this session, were two against Adultery and Polygamy. Those guilty of the first crime, were to sit an hour on the gallows, with ropes about their necks,—be severely whipt not above 40 stripes; and forever after wear a capital A, two inches long, cut out of cloth coloured differently from their clothes, and sewed on the arms, or back parts of their garments so as always to be seen when they were about. The other crime, stated with suitable exceptions, was punishable with death. √

June 12th. “Whereas some gentlemen of Salem are sending out a Ketch to St. John’s River and parts adjacent, for fetching off some of their people, lately taken prisoners by a French Privateer and carried thither,” and ‘His Excellency is to dispatch an express by said Ketch to the Captain of the Frigate Nonesuch, it is voted, that if the Ketch miscarry by reason of this express, the Province will bear the loss of her.’—‡ 14th. As difficulty had occurred in S. Village Church, as to choosing a mutual Council, Mr. Parris and his Church are still advised, by the ministers of Salem and other towns, to have such a Council.—§ 15th. Capt. S. Willard of this place petitions General Court, that for-

\* Prov. R.    † Prov. P.    ‡ Dan. Ch. R.    § Prov. P.

1694]

bearance might be used towards him, in reference to £30 of the public money, which he had agreed to collect, because he had 26 weeks of hard service, as an officer under Gov. Andros, and was sick and likely to be so.—26th. Benjamin Brown of Salem, is one of the Justices at the Court of General Sessions.

\* Sept. 5th. B. Gedney is on a Committee to propose measures for a vigorous prosecution of the war ; and for limiting friendly Indians, that they need not expose themselves, nor alarm the English, by their straggling. This war was begun against the French and Indians, because a party of them fell upon Oyster River, a village of New-Hampshire, July 18th, took and killed about 100 persons and burnt 20 houses.—18th. As His Majesty's Council had desired, that a ship load of Pitch, Tar, Rosin, Plank and knee timber, might be sent to England, it was voted to comply with their request within a year. On a Committee to see this vote effected, was B. Gedney.

Nov. The Supreme Court did not meet in Salem the 2d Tuesday, "because of sickness and other weighty occasions of the Province."—17th. Sir Wm. Phipps sailed for England, to answer some charges against him by the Collector of Boston and the Captain of a Frigate. Both of these persons had displeased him, and he in return, treated them with some violence. While using means to clear himself from arrest, he died Feb. 18, 1695. He was a good friend to the people of New-England, and they were much attached to him.

Dec. 10th. Walter Skinner is chosen bell-man. He was to begin walking through the town, at 10 o'clock at night, to prevent fire and disorder.—† 25th. Eight Indians had been confined in the prison here over two months. § Rev. J. Higginson gives the following testimony. He says that when he came to Salem, 1629, with his father, there was an aged Squaw Sachem here ; that she had three sons, viz. Sagamore

\* Prov. R. † T. R. ‡ Gen. Sess. R. § Reg. R.



John at Mistick, Sagamore James at Saugus, and Sagamore George with her. He doubts whether George, who was 13, about his own age, was actual Sachem, and thinks he had a guardian. He deposes that "the Indian Town of Wigwams was on the North side of North River not far from Simonds'; that then North and South side of this River was together called Naumkeag."

## ERRATA.

Page 216 line 9th omit "Rebeckah and Sarah." 219 p. 13 l. omit *r* from Er-  
dith. 223, 3—put *were* after *believed* and before *its*, and omit it in 4 l. after at-  
traction. 224, 36—For *Gour* put *Gover*. 226, 33—R. Moulton here mention-  
ed, was son of the first R. Moulton, to whom the account, after *Mary* to 1666,  
applies. The first R. M. died 1655, and his children were Robert and Dorothy  
Edwards. 231, 3—For *Hinghan* put *Hingham*. 233, 35—N. Pickman was in  
Salem as early as 1639, 242, 32—For 89 put 96. 245, 37—omit "*deceased*  
*the succeeding*" and put "*survived till* Nov 11, 1688. 246, 16—omit "*was*  
*son*" to "*who*" in 17 l. 252, 19—For *affirming* put *informing*. 266, 19—For  
*inflicting* put *afflicting*, and 27 l. for *about* put *above*. 267, 21—For *Ruth* put  
*Elizabeth*—31 l. for 1660 put 1667, 274, 11—For *daughter* put *widow*, and 121.  
omit Goodhue, and the words, "*wife and*." 284, 26—For 1629 put 1639.  
296, 12—For *Hampton* put *Frampton*. 302, 19—Omit "*and children*" to "*de-*  
*ceased*." 309, 2—For *M.* put *A. Pudeater*. 310, 9—For 92 put 85.

## ANNALS OF SALEM.



1695.

\* Jan. 2d. A bell is to be purchased and placed on a turret of the Town House.

† April 3d. A large Council sat at Salem Village about the difficulties of witchcraft between Mr. Parria and his people. The Council's result was, that, if Mr. P. should find it impracticable to continue with his Society, he might depart with their approbation of his character.

‡ May 3d Tues. Thomas Mason, of Salem, brings an action against Robert Glover, of Boston, captain of the sloop Dragon privateer, which had captured, last July, the French ship, St. Joseph, at the mouth of "Canada" River. This vessel and cargo was estimated at £15,500. It seems, that Mason was pilot for the Dragon and another vessel, which were cruising in company, and the crew of which were to share in each others prizes. He sailed on board of the latter vessel, called the Dolphin. He thought what he had received for his part of prize money, was not enough. He was awarded over £87. § 29th. General Court assemble. Wm. Hirst is Deputy from Salem. Among the candidates for Assistants, presented to the Deputy Governor, are J. Hathorne, W. Brown, B. Gedney and J. Curwin.

June 4th. J. Hathorne is one of three Commissioners to visit Pemaquid and transact business with the Sagamores, who had brought in a few captives and promised to bring in all the rest. These Commissioners met with the Indians, who refused to deliver up their captives, because some Indians con-

\* Town Records. † Danv. Ch. R. ‡ Sp. Ct. R. § Prov. R.

1695]

fined at Boston, were not released, and who departed to renew hostilities. 14th. A law is passed, forbidding persons to marry within the degree of relationship, prohibited by the Bible. They who broke this law, were liable to be set on the gallows with a rope round their neck, be whipped not above 40 stripes, and always wear to open view a capital I, two inches long and of a color different from their clothing. To prevent clandestine marriages, it is enacted, that none but a Justice or an ordained minister, shall perform the marriage service. The Justice is required to marry none out of his county, and the minister none out of the town, where he is settled. It becomes a law that if a church choose a minister and the parish will not agree to their choice, the church may call a council from neighboring churches, and, if the council advise them to settle their elected minister, they may do it, and the congregation be obliged to aid in maintaining him. If the council decide differently, the church shall seek for another Pastor.

\* Aug. 5th. Cesar, a negro servant of Mr. Josiah Walcott, of Salem, was tried for attempting to poison Hannah Gardner. He confessed that another negro, who worked with Mr. Hunt, and who had poisoned his own wife, advised him to do the same to her. He, therefore, lest she should tell his master, that he had stolen money from her, got some ratsbane and put it into her milk. He was sentenced to pay costs and have 39 lashes.

† Sept. 1st. John Ruck in granting a homestead to his son, Thomas, before witnesses, took hold of a twig in the garden and said,—“Here, son Thomas, I do, before these two men, give you possession of this land by Turffe and Twigg.”

Nov. 16th. Thomas, son of Thomas Gardner, died. He was born May 25, 1645. He married Mary Porter 1669. She died the 27th, a few days after his decease. They left children, Mary, Thomas, Habakuk, Joseph and Hapcott. He appears to have resided at

the Eastward 1675, and sustained some of the chief offices in the county of Devon, then existing there. He seems, however, to have returned by 1684. He was a worthy merchant.

\* Dec. 12th. General Court order, that Thomas Maule, of Salem, "should be brought before the Lieut. Gov'r and Council the 19th, to answer for his remarks in a book called 'Truth held forth.' " They require G. Curwin, sheriff of the county, to search his house and the shops of booksellers, and seize all the copies of his book, which could be found. The book which T. Maule wrote, contained severe reflections on the Government for their treatment of his denomination, the Friends, and held up, that one of the judgments for such conduct, was the witchcraft lately suppressed. Mr. Curwin immediately secured him in Salem prison, and discovered 31 of his books.—† 31st. Each Justice of the Gen. Sess. Court, is allowed for his attendance 4s. a day, and when attending out of his own town, is paid for one day's travel.

#### 1696.

‡ Jan. 16th. Thanksgiving for success granted to the arms of His Majesty and Confederates. This refers to the retaking of Namur from the French.

Feb. 26 & 7. It was cold and stormy. The roads were blocked up with snow. There was no travelling.

§ April 28th. Rev. Thomas Barnard, of Andover, marries, for his second wife, Mrs. Abigail Bull, residing in Salem. He graduated at Harvard College 1679; was settled colleague with Rev. Francis Dane 1682; and died Oct. 13, 1718. He was ancestor of the Messrs. Barnards, preachers of this town.

May 14th. John, son of Rev John Emerson, of Gloucester, marries Mary, the daughter of Edmund Batter, deceased, of this town. He graduated at H. C. 1689. He preached at Manchester a few years; then at New-Castle, where he was ordained; and was in-

\* Prov. R.    † Gen. Sess. R.    ‡ Prov. R.    § T. R.

stalled at Portsmouth, 1715, after preaching there about three years. He died in the ministry, at the last place, June 21, 1732, in his 62d year. He left six daughters. He was highly esteemed.—\*27th. General Court sits. Among the nominated Assistants are B. Gedney, J. Hathorne, J. Curwin and W. Brown. Benjamin Marston is Deputy.—29th. J. Hathorne is on a committee to adopt measures for securing the frontiers, prosecuting the war, attacking the French, and driving them from their settlement on the River St. John. Thanksgiving is appointed to be June 18th, for the preservation of His Majesty and his kingdom from invasion and insurrection. This referred to endeavours made by James, with the aid of the French, to recover the crown of England, and, also, to conspiracies formed against king William.

† June. B. Gedney is on a committee to settle difficulties with Enfield, Suffield and the Connecticut jurisdiction, because some heads of families had been impressed to serve in the King's ships.

‡ 25th. Mr. Parris notifies his people, that he shall preach for them no longer than the remaining Sabbath of the month. He continued to live at the Village till the latter end of 1697. His congregation, after much difficulty, paid him his due, according to the decision of arbitrators. His well intended, but mistaken exertions, about witchcraft, were the chief occasion of the separation between him and his people. In 1704 he resided at Concord; and 1711 he preached at Dunstable. Here his salary was partly paid by the Province. In this and many other instances, the government took a wise precaution for aiding to maintain the Gospel, where it could not be entirely supported by the inhabitants.—Mr. Parris was son of Thomas Parris of London, and was born 1653. He was a member of H. College, but did not graduate. He was a merchant before he entered the ministry. He was a person of good talents and worthy attainments in Theology. Though severely

\* Prov. R. † Dan. R.

tried, the principle of piety sustained and enabled him to pursue his course with the commendation of respectable men.

\* Oct. 11th. Wm. Way and his wife Persis, Aaron Way and his wife Mary, with their children, are dismissed from Village Church to the Church lately gathered in Dorchester, and transferred to S. Carolina, whereof Joseph Lord is pastor.—12th. It is voted by those of S. Village, that Mr. Bailey, their former minister, preach for them one month.—27th. They agree to observe a fast, Nov. 5th, for divine direction as to the obtaining of a Pastor.

† Nov. 10th. T. Maule, who had been imprisoned since his first commitment, is reheard before the Superior Court in Salem. The Jury clear him.—‡ 17th. A committee of the Society at S. Village are chosen to treat with Simon Bradstreet, who preached for them the previous Sabbath, to tarry with them six months. This person seems to have preached at Medford. He was grandson of Gov. Bradstreet; born Nov. 16, 1669; graduated at H. C. 1693; settled at Charlestown 1698; and died Dec. 31, 1741.

§ Dec. 8th. J. Hathorne is allowed £30, and B. Gedney £15, for commanding forces against the enemy at St. John's. Col. Hathorne had been dispatched by water to take the command of forces, which were returning from the Eastward under Col. Church. He attacked the enemy's fort, Oct. 7th, and after two days skirmishing, found his troops insufficient and ordered them back in transports to Boston. Col. Gedney had been by land with 500 men, to secure the Eastern frontiers. Finding the enemy gone, he strengthened the garrisons, which were not taken. He also arrested Pasco Chubb for surrendering Pemaquid Fort, while under his command in July, and had him brought to Boston. Here Capt. Chubb was confined, till it was decided, that he should lose his commission and not be eligible for any other. This unfortunate man, with

\* Dan. R.    † Qt. Ct. R.    ‡ Danv. R.    § Prov. R.

1697]

his wife Hannah and three others, were killed by the Indians at Andover Feb'y 22, 1698.

1697.

\* Jan. 14th. Fast for troubles in Europe and for many destroyed with the sword.

† Feb'y 4th. Eleazer Gedney and his wife, Anna, had recently moved from Salem to "Momorimack," West Chester County, N. Y.

March 27th. Simon Bradstreet died here. On the 30th, the Legislature say, "In consideration of the long and extraordinary service of S. Bradstreet, late Governor, who is now deceased," they "vote £100 towards defraying the charges of his interment." He was son of a clergyman in Lincolnshire, and was born at Horbling, March, 1603. He was one year at Emanuel College. For his first wife, he married in England, Ann, the daughter of Thomas Dudley, Deputy Governor. She wrote and published a volume of poems, which she dedicated to her father. For his second wife, he married Ann, the widow of Capt. Joseph Gardner, of Salem, and sister to Sir George Downing. He came over to Massachusetts 1630, as one of the Assistants and was thus continued till 1673. He was Secretary of the Colony from the first year of his emigration to 1643. He went as an agent with Mr Norton to England, 1662, and returned 1663. While Connecticut, Plymouth, and Massachusetts continued their union as colonies, he was frequently one of the commissioners. Mr. Bradstreet was chosen Deputy Governor 1673, and so continued to 1679, when he was elected Governor. He sustained the last office till May 1686, when the Charter of Mass. was made void, and Joseph Dudley was commissioned by the King to have jurisdiction over this colony and other territory. He was named among the Council of Mr. Dudley, his kinsman, but he declined serving. Thence he held no office till the Revolution of 1689, when Sir



Edmund Andros and friends were deposed by order of the people. At this time Mr Bradstreet was chosen President of the Council of Safety, and soon after was elected Governor, and so continued till 1692, when Sir Wm. Phipps, appointed by his Majesty, came and took his place.—Thus closing his public life, he moved to Salem, where he was buried. He left children by his first wife, who were useful and respected.—A translation of the epitaph upon his tomb, gives a correct idea of his character :—"He was a man of deep discernment, whom neither wealth nor honour could allure from duty. He poised, with an equal balance, the authority of the King and the liberty of the people. Sincere in Religion and pure in his life, he overcame and left the world."

\* April 9th. The town vote £100 to repair their fortifications. There was a great dread here and elsewhere of being invaded by a powerful French fleet. Besides this the Indians were attacking the frontier towns. They had fallen upon Haverhill, March 15th, burnt six houses, killed and taken about 40. Among their prisoners, was the noted Hannah Duston.

12th. George, son of John and grandson of George Curwin, had died recently. He was born Feb. 26, 1666. He had two wives, Susannah and Lydia, both daughters of Hon. B. Gedney. Lydia survived him, and died Dec. 23, 1700. His mother was Margaret, daughter of Gov. Winthrop. He left a son Bartholomew, who moved to Amwell, N. J. about 1731. He was a Captain under Sir Wm. Phipps in the expedition against Canada, 1690. As sheriff of the county, he was obliged to take an active part in seizing persons, accused of witchcraft, and also their property. Such a discharge of his duty, was the cause of much trouble to him. He was respected in life and lamented in death.

† May 26th. The Assistants proposed and accepted, were the same four as last year. The Deputies are

\* T. R. † Prov. R.

Sam'l Gardner and Sam'l Brown.—27th. **Messrs.** Gedney and Hathorne are on a committee, who report, that the militia be ready to repel and pursue the enemy in case of invasion by sea or land.—\* About this time, the following instructions are given to the soldiers of Fort William in Salem.. On seeing two ships standing into the harbour, they shall give an alarm. They shall suffer no vessel to leave the harbor without a pass from the captain of the fort, except fishermen and coasters. If any ship, bound in and above Johnson's Haste, should not lower her topsail, they shall fire on her. They shall order every vessel, going out or coming in, to send a boat and be reported at the fort. Five soldiers shall watch day and night, and two of them shall constantly walk on the walls.

† July 29th. Rev. Mr. Noyes has Thatcher's Island, containing about 40 or 50 acres, and lying E. of Cape Ann, conveyed to him by James Davis of Gloucester for £15.

‡ Aug. 31st. The ketch Exchange, Capt. Tho's Marston, was taken by a French ship the 6th, off Block Island. She belonged to T. Lindall of Salem. She was ransomed for about £260, and came into this port. James Lindall, his son, was supercargo of the Exchange, and was carried as a hostage to Placentia, and was to remain there till the ransom was paid.

§ Sept. 14th. Nath'l Rogers, who began to preach at S. Village in Feb'y, receives a call to settle there. He gave a negative answer. He was a native of Ipswich, and son of John, who became President of H. College. He was born Feb. 22, 1670; graduated at H. C. 1687; settled at Portsmouth, 1699; and died there Oct. 3, 1723.

|| Oct. 15th. Thanksgiving is to be observed Nov. 11th, for health, good harvest, and preservation from feared invasion. It is enacted by the Legislature, that persons, guilty of blasphemy or denying the Canonical Books of the Bible, shall be imprisoned, not above 6

\* Qt. Ct. R. † Reg. R. ‡ Dan. R. § Prov. R.

months, or be set in the pillory, be whipped, or have their tongues bored through with red hot iron, or sit on the gallows with a rope about their necks.—Not more than two of these sorts of punishments, were to be inflicted for one and the same offence.

\* Nov. John Barton, physician of Salem, had died lately. He left a wife, Lydia, and children. He was intelligent and useful in his profession.

† Dec. 10th. The peace made at Ryswick between France and England with her allies, is proclaimed in Boston. † 14th—"It is ordered that hereafter when any corpse, belonging to this town, is to be interred, the sexton or bell-ringer, shall, in two hours after the first bell's ringing, ring the second bell, giving the relations first notice thereof; at the ringing of which bell all persons, with the corpse, are to move and walk orderly two and two;—if a man is buried, the men follow first; if a woman, the women first;—no person shall presume to run or go before or abreast with the corpse or the relations."—§ 28th. Stephen Sewall, Clerk of the County Court, is confirmed as Register of Deeds, according to a late law, which required that the person, holding the former office should hold the latter.

### 1698.

Feb. 28th. Bartholomew, son of John Gedney, dies. He was baptized July 14, 1640. He married Hannah Clark 1662, who died Jan. 6, 1697, aged 52. He left children:—Samuel, a physician; Hannah, widow of Joshua Grafton; Bethiah, Lydia Curwin and Deborah Clark of Boston. He practised physic. He was often Deputy and Assistant in General Court. As a political man, he had much to do with public concerns, and was frequently on important committees of the Legislature. He was Judge of the Quarterly and General Sessions Courts. He held a commission as Colonel and was several times in active service against the French and Indians. He was an eminent member of the first

\* T. R. † Prov. R. ‡ T. R. § Qt. Ct. R.

church. Though elevated by men, yet he bowed in reverence and faith at the cross of Christ. As judge, he was called to take an immediate part against those, charged with witchcraft. He, like other worthy men thus engaged, undoubtedly altered his views and regretted the mistaken principles, on which he had acted with reference to so great a delusion. He was cut off in the midst of extensive usefulness and growing respectability.

\* March 7th. Col. S. Sewall accounts for £10, which he had received of his brother for the poor of Salem, being part of a contribution, given by Connecticut Colony.

April 25th. Benja. Gerrish, Town Treasurer, is allowed 3d. per £1, on all monies which he shall receive and pay.

† May 25th. General Court sits. Among the Assistants are J. Hathorne, W. Brown, and J. Curwin. Samuel Brown and Samuel Gardner are deputies. N. Noyes preaches the Election sermon, which is prefaced by his senior colleague, J. Higginson.

‡ June 28th. George Hacker is appointed keeper of Salem prison and house of correction.

§ Oct. 24th. Roger Derby, merchant, had died lately. He married Lucretia Kilham 1668. Their first child was Charles, which was born in Topsham, England, 1669, whence they came to Ipswich 1671. They had moved to Salem 1681. She died May 25, 1689. He had a second wife, Elizabeth, who survived him. He left children, Experience, Samuel, John, Richard and Lucretia, by his first wife, and Elizabeth, Margaret, Ann and Martha, by his last. He had lost three of his first wife's children. He was great-grand father of Elias Hasket Derby, the eminent merchant of this town, who died 1799.

|| Nov. 10th. Joseph Green is ordained over the Church at Salem Village. Churches of Salem, Beverly, Wenham, Reading and Roxbury are represented on

\* T. R. † Prov. R. ‡ G. Se. Ct. R. § Prob. Ct. R. || Village Ch. R.

this occasion. His salary is £80 and 30 cords of wood.

\* 30th. As Daniel Epes is about to leave the Grammar School, a successor to him is to be sought. ✓ £50 are to be raised to purchase stock, hire a house and an overseer, for the poor. ✓

† Dec. 6. Timothy Lindall dies, aged 56 yrs 7 mos. He was born at Duxbury, N. E. His father was James, who came from England. He married Mary, daughter of Nath'l Veren. She died Jan. 6, 1731, aged 83. He was admitted an inhabitant 1661; joined the Church 1677. He left children, James, Timothy, Nath'l, Abigail, Sarah, Caleb, Rachel and Veren. He was a merchant. His estate was £1740. He frequently acted as selectman and commissioner to receive votes for magistrates and assess taxes. He was Deputy at General Court. He was worthy of both private and public confidence.—† 15th. Thanksgiving for health, good harvest, check given to the Indians; continuation of civil and religious liberty, "while the faithful in France, Piedmont and other places, are suffering horrible persecution."

§ About this time, John, son of Thomas Ruck, dies, aged 71. He married Hannah —, by 1652, who died 1660; then Sarah Flint 1661, who died 1672; and then Elizabeth, widow of John Croad and daughter of Walter Price, the same year. She survived him and died 1705. Of his children, were John, Elizabeth and Samuel. He was a respectable merchant. He was often selectman and deputy to General Court. He lived usefully and died lamented.

|| This year was the greatest fire ever before in Salem. Five houses were consumed. Maj. Brown was the chief sufferer. His loss was 3 or £4000.

### 1699.

¶ May 9th. Samuel Whitman is chosen to keep the Grammar School, as successor of Mr. Epes. He accepted the appointment.

\* T. R. † Prob. Ct. R. ‡ Prov. R. § Reg. R. || Sewall. ¶ T. R.

1699]

May 24th. Tho's Putnam died. He was son of John and Priscilla, formerly inhabitants of Abbotston, Buckinghamshire, England. He married Ann, 1643, daughter of Edward and Prudence Holyoke, formerly of Tamworth, Warwickshire, England. His first wife died 1665. She had children, Ann, Mary, Tho's, Edward, Deliverance, Elizabeth and Prudence. He married Ann Carver 1678. She died the next month after he did. He was of the 25 who helped to form the Village Church. He was a useful and respected man.

\* 31st. Benj. Brown and Josiah Wolcot are Deputies to Gen. Court.

June 1st. W. Brown, J. Curwin and J. Hathorne are accepted, as Assistants, by Earl of Bellamont, who for a year had been successor to Sir Wm. Phipps.—

7th. J. Hathorne is chairman of a committee to report in reference to pirates and privateering and the post-office. 16th. He is on a committee respecting the regulation of Indian trade.

July 3d. The Legislature hear Capt. Wm. Kidd, from Madagascar, give an account of himself. 6th. They order him to be apprehended. 8th. They examine his crew.—They order, with usual exceptions, that persons of every town, from 16 and upwards, shall, either in person or substitute, take their turn to keep a night watch, and also a watch on the Sabbath.—† 25th, Sarah, wife of Capt. Kidd, confined in Boston for piracy, had come to him from New-York. Her plate and other property, having been seized, is ordered by the government to be restored. Capt. Kidd was, not long before, a respectable shipmaster. In 1691, the Gov'r and Council made proposals to him and Capt. Walkington, as to going on a cruise for the capture of a privateer, on the coast. Capt. Kidd and Capt. Joseph Bradish, with others, were sent to England, tried and executed for piracy.

† Aug. 25th. John Emerson is invited to succeed Sam'l Whitman in the Grammar School. His salary—

\* Prov. R.

† Prov. P.

‡ T. R.

in Salem was £50. Towards raising this sum the town had the following rents :—Ryal's side, £22 5 6 ; Baker's Island, £3 ; Misery Island, £3 ; Beverly Ferry, £6 ; and Marblehead Ferry, 18s. Besides these rents, interest on £50, given by Wm. Brown, £3 ; and on £50, given by Joseph Brown, £3. If there were 20 scholars, each of them paid 3s. a quarter ; if 30 and over, 2s. ; if 40 and upwards, 1s6. The surplus of such income was to be put in the town treasury.

Dec. 15th. A contribution of £51 15 is divided among the poor of Salem.—18th. It is voted, that 20 buckets, two iron hooks and poles, for pulling down houses in case of fire, shall be provided.—\* 30th. Messrs. J. Higginson and N. Noyes send a long letter to the authors of the declaration, who call themselves undertakers of the new Church erected in Boston. This is Brattle Street Church. Messrs. Higginson and Noyes complained of such a declaration, because they considered it too lax in doctrine, in the ordinance of baptism, and also in admission to communion. They desire the authors of the declaration, not to be the beginners of schism.

## 1700.

† March 13th. J. Hathorne is on a committee of the Legislature, to consult about the combination of the Indians at the Eastward, and for raising forces to oppose them.—16th. It is ordered by General Court, that 145 soldiers be impressed ; 90 of whom are to be of Essex Regiments. Of the Essex troops, 30 are to be posted at Wells ; 15 at York ; 15 at Kittery ; 10 at Amesbury ; and the rest at Haverhill. Fast is appointed to be April 25th, because of troubles from the Indians. A report had been circulated, that the Indians were about to unite and fall upon the English Colonies. It excited much alarm ; but afterwards appeared groundless.

May 29th. General Court assemble. Besides the

\* M. S. Mass. Hist. Coll.

† Prov. R.

1701]

Assistants from Salem last year, John Higginson is accepted as one. Manasseh Marston and Philip English are Deputies. The Court enact,—that,—as Jesuits and Popish Priests, in remote parts of his Majesty's provinces, had disaffected the Indians with the English, they, if seen after Sept. 10th, shall be perpetually imprisoned, and if escaping and found, shall suffer death.

About this time, Doctor John Endicott, son of Zerubel and grandson of Gov. Endicott, died. He left a widow, Ann. He was active, useful and respected.

\* July 23d. Nath'l Putnam died lately,  $\text{Æ}$  79. He left children, Mary, wife of John Tuft, John and Benjamin. His wife, Elizabeth, and daughter Elizabeth Flint, had deceased, before he did. He was Selectman and Representative to the Legislature. He was much employed in public business. He was an energetic and worthy man.

Sept. 27th. John, son of Philip Cromwell, died lately. His wife Hannah survived him. He bequeathed £30 towards a writing and cyphering school.

† Oct 14th. The inhabitants of S. Village had agreed to build a meeting house and place it on *Watch House* hill. They now determine, that its measurement shall be 22 feet stud, 42 wide, and 48 long, and cost £330.

‡ Nov. 26th. A person of Salem who had stolen from Jeremiah Gatchel of Marblehead, is allowed to be sold for 5 years, that the price of his service may pay his fine.

✓  
1701.

§ May 28th. General Court sit. In addition to the Assistants from this town, is Benja. Brown. S. Gardner and S. Brown. are Deputies. It is enacted, that there shall be a Naval Office in every sea-port. Before this, there was but one such office in Massachusetts. To encourage the sowing and manufacture of Hemp, the Legislature engage to pay any company, which will purchase all merchantable hemp, offered to them at 4 1-4 a lb., 1-4 on each pound so purchased.

\* Prob. R.    † Danv. R.    ‡ Sup. Ct. R.    § Prov. R.



June 13th. Wm. Brown is on a committee to address his Majesty. \* 16th. £50, in produce or clothing, are granted to the farmers, by way of assisting them to build a meeting house.

† July 31st. J. Hathorne and J. Curwin are on committee to answer letters from the Province's agents in London, about the appointment of a new Governor. Richard Earl of Bellamont, the last Governor, had died in N. York, 5th of March.

‡ Oct. 29th. Mr. Noyes and delegates attend the ordination of Thomas Blowers at Beverly. Messrs. Clark of S. Village preached the sermon; Noyes gave the charge; and Cheever, of Marblehead, the hand of fellowship.—§ Mr. Blowers was son of Pyam and Elizabeth Blowers of Cambridge. His mother was sister of Andrew Belcher, Esq. He was born Aug. 1, 1677; and graduated at Harvard 1695. He married Emma Dodge of Beverly, 1702, and died June 17, 1729. His wife, 4 sons and 2 daughters survived him.—He published a sermon on the death of Rev. Joseph Green 1715. He was an ornament to his profession.

## 1702.

|| Jan. 28th. The proprietors of South Fields have leave to hang two gates, one at each end, "conveniently for travellers to pass through."

¶ May. The ketch Benjamin, Capt. Francis Ellis, of this place, having discharged her cargo of dry fish at Bilboa and taken in iron and some silk and linen, is seized as English property. \*\* 27th. Gen. Court meet. The same Assistants from Salem, as the last year, are present, except B. Brown. Josiah Wolcot and John Turner are Deputies. As money is much needed to pay soldiers and seamen, employed in war, £10,000 are ordered to be issued in bills from 2s. to £5. These are the first bills of public credit, which were printed. Such a measure, to alleviate the burdens of the Pro-

\* T. R.      † Prov. R.      ‡ Ch. R.      § Bost. N. Letter.  
|| Gen. Ss. Ct. R.    ¶ Reg. R.      \*\* Prov. R.

1701  
79  
22

vince, was hailed by many as the token of future good. But it proved the avenue to much perplexity and distress.—28th. News came that King William died March 8th, and that Princess Ann of Denmark had succeeded to the throne of England, Scotland, France and Ireland.—29th. The Council order Ann to be proclaimed Queen. They thus assume the executive authority, because Joseph Dudley, the new Governor, had not arrived, and Mr. Stoughton, the Lt. Gov. had deceased July 7th.

June 4th. There are funeral solemnities for King William, by order of Council.—6th. An address is to be forwarded to Queen Ann.—\*9th. To promote the growth of Salem, it is voted, that every one, who has a dwelling house and land of his own proper estate in fee simple, shall have a right to commonage.—† 17th. News last evening, that the Queen and the States General had declared war against France and Spain.—27th. J. Hathorne is on a committee about the erection of fortifications at Pemaquid.

‡ Sept. 21st. "It is ordered, that a constable attend funerals of any, that die with the small pox, and walk before the corpse to give notice to any, who may be in danger of the infection."—"The Town Treasurer is to supply Mr. Foot or any one else appointed to take care of the Block Houses, with such things as may be necessary for defence."

§ Oct. 9th. Doctor Edward, son of Doct. Daniel Weld, deceased lately. He married Mary Gardner 1699. She and his son Daniel survived him. He was useful in his profession.

Nov. 6th. Nehemiah Willoughby, merchant, died. He was son of Francis, of Charlestown, who was deputy-governor. He was born June 8, 1644; married Abigail Bartholomew, Jan. 2, 1672. His wife died Sept. 3, 1702. He left children, Francis, Nehemiah, Abigail and Sarah. He was selectman. He lived and died respected.

\* T. R. † Prov. R. ‡ T. R. § Prob. R.

\* Nov. 11th. J. Hathorne and others, having attended his Excellency to Pemaquid, have an allowance for extra-expences.—16th. The Governor presses the Legislature to grant him a suitable salary and to have the fort at Pemaquid repaired. The subject of a salary now proposed, becomes the source of a long, violent and threatening controversy between the House and several Governors, who were backed by the Crown.—18th. J. Hathorne as one of five judges of the Supreme Court, receives £50 for a year's service.

† Dec. 14th. Col. Elias, son of Capt. Stephen Haskett, of Salem, had lately moved to Boston from this town. He had been sometime Governor of Providence. 29th. The Court House chamber here, is ordered to be repaired and plaistered over head and whitewashed, and the *Queen's Arms* to be procured and handsomely placed over the seat of the Chief Justice.

‡ £133 paper currency equals £100 sterling.

### 1703.

§ Jan. 13th. Fast observed at the Village on account of small pox.

Feb. 14th. The sentence of excommunication of Sept. 11, 1692, against Martha Cory, for witchcraft, is revoked.

|| March 15th. Maj. S. Brown is empowered to fit up a place in the Town House for depositing arms.—

¶ 26th. A report is made to the Legislature for importing £5000 from his Majesty's mint in *pence*.—27th. They vote that an attack be made on Port Royal.

\*\* April 12th. The Governor orders Maj. S. Brown to impress 20 men for the Flying Horse, of Salem, to cruise for an enemy's vessel on the coast.

†† May 26th. General Court meet. B. Brown is of the Assistants from this town. S. Gardner and Benja. Lynde are Deputies. As mulatto and negro slaves, who had been freed, were often obliged to be

\* Prov. R. † Gen. Sss. Ct. R. ‡ Douglass. § Vil. Ch. R.  
 ¶ T. R. †† Prov. R. \*\* Qt. Ct. P. †† Prov. R.

1704]

maintained by the towns, where they lived, an act is passed, that they shall not be considered as manumitted, unless their masters give security to pay whatever charges may accrue for assisting them. As great disorders had been occasioned in the night by Indian, negro and mulatto servants and slaves, they are forbidden to be out after 9 o'clock at night. † 27th. As the Governor had rejected five of the Assistants proposed, S. Gardner is on a committee to nominate others, who are accepted.

July 29th. News that French and Indians are about to attack the frontiers. Two companies, one of Essex, are ready to march against them.

\* Aug. 11th. County tax is £200. Ipswich pays of it £35 8 6; Salem, £30 6 8; and Newbury, £26 8.

† Sept. Her Majesty's letter of April 8th, is read to the Assistants. It required, that an honourable salary be granted to the Governor.

Oct. 4th. Mrs. Mary, wife of Samuel Phillips, dies. He was son of Rev. Samuel Phillips, of Rowley. She was daughter of Rev. John Emerson, of Gloucester, and grand-daughter of deputy-governor Symonds. They were married 1687. She left a son, Samuel, settled in the ministry at Andover, and other children. Her husband married Sarah Mayfield 1704. She was a worthy woman.

1704.

‡ March 8th. It is agreed, that, on each public fast-day, there shall be a contribution for the poor.—§ 16th. J. Higginson is on a committee of the Couucil, to consider a bill from the House, about hiring vessels for war, and meeting expenses of officers and men and of transports. This was done in reference to the expedition of Col. Church against the French and Indians at the Eastward.

|| April 27th. The Governor orders a Fast to be Thursday, May 18th, on account of troublesome wars in Europe, and her Majesty's interest in them, and their influence on the people here; to pray for her Ma-

\* Gen. S. Ct. R. † Prov. R. ‡ Ch. R. § Prov. R. || Bost. N. Lot.

jesty, that her forces and those of her allies, and of this Province, may prevail, that the sea coast and inland frontiers be protected, and that there be a "plentiful effusion of the Holy Spirit of God for a thorough reformation of all evils."—15th. An embargo is laid on all outward bound vessels.—24th. Thomas Povey, deputy-governor, issues a proclamation for the seizure of John Quelch and crew, charged with piracy.—\* 31st. General Court sit. Five Assistants, or Counsellors, are from Salem as last year. J. Wolcot and S. Brown are Deputies.—As persons had forged the Province bills, it is enacted, that such criminals shall pay treble of what they counterfeit and be branded with F on their right cheek.

† June 9th. Maj. Stephen Sewall, Capt. John Turner, and 40 other volunteers, embark in a shallop and the fort pinnace after sunset, to go in search of some pirates, who belonged to Quelch's crew and who had sailed in the morning from Gloucester.—11th. Major Sewall brought to Salem, a Galley, Capt. Tho's Larrimore, on board of which he had captured seven pirates and some of their gold, at the Isle of Shoals.—12th. Two more of the pirates, found at Gloucester, are put in Salem jail.—13th. Maj. Sewall carries the pirates to Boston under a strong guard.—30th. Capt. John Quelch and five of his crew are hung. About 13 of his ship's company remained under sentence of death, and several more of them had been cleared.

‡ August. The ketch Repair, belonging to Philip English, and commanded by Nicholas Andrews, is chased ashore at Barbadoes by a French privateer and lost.

§ Oct. 11th. Dr. Anthony Randell, aged 69, died lately. He had practised his profession for a considerable number of years in this town. He was a Frenchman. He had a brother in Holland,—another, Stephen, and sister in France, and a third brother, Samuel, in Guernsey. He left most of his property to Ann Collyer, the mother of his wife Mary, who was 18 when

\* Prov. R.    † Bost. N. Letter.    ‡ Reg. R.    § Prob. R.

he was 58. He appears to have been a respectable physician.

1705.

\* Jan. 22. Fast appointed to be March 1st, because of great troubles in Europe, wherein her Majesty and confederates are engaged against the common enemy; and of troubles here with French and Indians; and to pray that her Majesty's arms be prospered, the designs of the Savages be defeated, exposed plantations be preserved, and captives in Indian hands be returned.

Feb. 3d. The Eastern Post arrives at Boston, and says "there is no travelling with horses, especially beyond Newbury, but with snow shoes."

† May 30th. General Court assemble. The same five Assistants from Salem as last year. S. Brown and S. Gardner are Representatives. The House choose a speaker, who is negatived by the Governor. They decide, that he had no authority to do this.—From regulations enacted, it appears, that tar, pitch, turpentine and rosin had been and were manufactured and exported in various places of Massachusetts. Surveyors, gagers and searchers of these articles, are to be chosen annually for each sea-port. White persons are forbidden to marry coloured persons. A duty of £4 is required for every slave, landed in the Province.

‡ Manasseh, son of John Marston, merchant, had died recently, aged 70. He married Mercy Pearce 1667. He was selectman, commissioner for rates, and Representative to the Legislature frequently. He was an active, useful and highly respected townsman.

§ June 22d. As a great storm and tide last winter had made a passage through Gloucester, so as to save doubling the Cape, and the channel, thus formed, was filling up with sand, the Legislature instruct Capt. Coit, of that town, to have the passage cleared. They empower him to make a swing bridge, and charge 2s. for each vessel going through, which was not of Gloucester, and 7s. a year on each vessel which was. For

\* Bost. N. Let. † Prov. R. ‡ Prob. R. § Prov. R.

some reason, he did not immediately comply with their request, and they called on him, in Oct'r, for an explanation. It appears, that such a passage had been long desired and was probably made many years before. Mr. Endicot, in 1638, sent "men to view Cape Ann, whether it may be cut through." Gloucester Records of 1643 say:—"Mr. R. Blinman, Pastor, is to *cut the heath through* and to maintain it, and hath given him three acres of upland, and he is to have the benefit of it himself and his forever, giving the inhabitants of the town free passage."

July 30th. Nathaniel Felton dies in his 91st year. He came to Salem 1633; made a voyage to England 1634; and returned 1635. He became a member of the Church 1648. He testified, 1705, that North River was called Naumkeag by the Indians. He left children, John, Nathaniel, Elizabeth a widow, Ruth and Hannah. He was a man of good faith and judgment. He was frequently called to give his testimony about litigated estates.

\* Aug. 21st. An Association of Ministers meet at Salem to consider the following question:—"What further steps are to be taken that Councils may have due constitution and efficacy in supporting, preserving and well ordering the interests of the Churches in the country?" In giving their reply to this question, they state, that as a minister is not inducted into office without a clerical council, so he ought, when parting from his people, to be dismissed by such a council. The Association took up the question, by recommendation of a General Convention of Ministers in Boston, May 30th, who then considered another question, viz:—"In case a person, censured by a particular church, complains to elders and churches of the neighbourhood, that the Church doth wrong him; how ought those Elders to consider the complaint of such a person?" The Association at Salem deputed Messrs. Gerrish and Cheever to present their result to the General Convention, who

\* Mr. Gerrish, of Wenham.

were to meet in Boston Sept. 13th, and who, when in session, gave valuable instructions for rendering councils efficacious.

\* Sept. 2d. The first Quarterly Meeting of the Friends, which was held in this town.—† 7th. The House are charged by the Governor with disobedience to her Majesty's letter, as to aiding in repairs on Piscataqua fort and building Pemaquid fort, and settling fixed salaries for the Governor and his Deputy for the time being. They appoint a committee to wait on him, of whom was S. Brown. The committee state to him, that her Majesty had been misinformed, and that the House wished for a longer time to consider her instructions. His Excellency found the Council of the same mind with the Representatives. Many prejudices existed against him for his former adherence to the policy of Gov. Andros, which partly prevented him from carrying his purposes into effect.—14th. J. Hathorne is chairman of a committee, who report an address to her Majesty.

Nov. 28th. General Court order money to be paid, which had been advanced to Rev. John Williams, in Quebec, where he was a prisoner. Mr. Williams was minister of Deerfield, and was taken when that place was destroyed by the enemy.

Dec. 5th. The Legislature order two pamphlets, sent them by John Rogers and John Rogers jr., to be burnt by the common executioner near the whipping-post in Boston.

#### 1706.

† May 29th. General Court convene. J. Hathorne, W. Brown, J. Curwin, and J. Higginson are of the Counsellors and so continue till 1713. J. Wolcot and B. Lynde are Representatives.—31st. J. Higginson is on a committee to report best means of defence against "powerful enemies in America." These enemies were French and Indians, who, in the course of

\* Friends' R.

† Prov. R.



the year, had killed and taken a number of the English in different towns. ✓

\* June 24th. A considerable debate takes place here in town meeting, about repairs on the Fort, as the Governor had ordered. It is decided not to comply with His Excellency's instructions, and to give him the following reasons for such a decision. 1st. The fort here is the Queen's and ought to be repaired by the Province. 2. It is on an island upwards of two miles from the body of the town. 3. The Province had maintained block houses on Merrimack River not further distant from settlements, than the fort here. 4. The fort here is of long standing and stronger than any except Boston's; and Salem is the first town of Massachusetts. 5. Very great danger exists from enemy expected by sea. 6. "We are at considerable charge for building a line of about 200 feet long, and two block houses, in which are several great guns; and we keep a constant watch there every night,—being more than a mile from the fort, nigh the end of the town; we design to set up 150 or 200 feet of stockades near the two block houses, if your Excellency thinks it proper;—our poverty and decay of trade is so great, occasioned by the war, we can do but little. 7. We desire your Excellency to have fort Ann repaired, lest it be ruined and thus dishonor the Queen and expose us, her loyal subjects, to be destroyed."—The town vote £60 to be expended for defence. ✓ ✓

† July 31st. B. Lynde is on a committee to unite with the Attorney General, to draw up a bill of attainder against persons, who had carried on an illicit trade with the enemy.—The persons, here mentioned, had been to N. Scotia in a flag of truce to redeem captives, and used this opportunity to benefit themselves more than their country. Nathaniel, son of Rev. J. Higginson, and a merchant in London, united with others, and June 1707, presented a petition to the Queen for the removal of Gov. Dudley, as being secretly concerned

with the said illicit traders. The General Court, however, passed a vote, Nov. 1707, expressive of their belief, that Mr. Dudley was innocent. He had granted a permit for those traders to carry some contraband articles to Port Royal. This was made the source of many suspicions unfavourable to him. ✓

\* Aug. 25th. Ann Putnam, who, in the witchcraft delusion, had accused several persons, confesses, that she was greatly deceived, and asks forgiveness of the Church, to which she is received.

† Sept. 30th. The county tax is £150. Of this Ipswich pays £27 0s. 6d.; Salem, £23 3s. 3d.; and Newbury, £19 17s. 5d. ✓

‡ Nov. 26th. General Court order, "that a plate be forthwith provided and the eight several stamps or blazons, affixed to the bills of public credit on this Province, be engraven thereupon; and that the Committee for imprinting the bills, do forthwith imprint 3000 of them to be dispersed and transmitted to the several towns within the Province, proportionably to the sum they pay in the public tax, for the better information of her Majesty's good subjects of the different forms of the said stamps, and to which of the bills they respectively belong: the figure of the sum of the bill to be placed in the middle of the stamp; for discouraging and preventing the designs and endeavours of ill-men to alter and increase the sum of the bills." J

#### 1707.

§ March 25th. John Pilgrim, merchant, had died lately at Barbadoes. He had been a respectable inhabitant of Salem.

|| May 28th. General Court sit. S. Gardner and John Brown are Representatives.

August. Wm. Pickering, of this place, is commissioned to command a vessel for protecting the fishery at Cape Sable, against the French and Indians. Precaution of this kind was necessary, as the last of two

\* Vil. Ch. R. † Gen. Sa. R. ‡ Prov. P. § Ct. C. Pleas R. || Prov. R.

attempts against the fort at Port Royal, was about to fail.

November. Among the clergymen, who congratulate the Governor on the choice of John Leverett, as President of Harvard College, is Mr. Noyes of Salem.

### 1708.

\* May 26th. General Court meet. J. Wolcot and Daniel Epes are Representatives. As England and Scotland became one kingdom, May 1, 1707, and were to be known as Great Britain, the Legislature vote, that the Royal style shall be altered to Queen of Great Britain, France and Ireland.

June 12th. Salem petitions that soldiers may be posted in fort Ann at Winter Island. The Council agree to do this, if the people here will repair their fort. But the House object, because they contend, that the Council have no right to grant money without their consent.—23d. Fast is appointed for deliverance from insects, which devour the trees.—26th. The Legislature send a congratulation to her Majesty for the union of England and Scotland.

July 1st. The Representatives ask the Governor and Council for redress, because the latter body had granted money without their consent.

† Aug. 29th. Maj. John Turner, Capt. John Gardner and Capt. Walter Price and men, from Salem, with other soldiers, pursued the French and Indians, who had surprised Haverhill.—After hard fighting, Maj. Turner and his troops, put the enemy to flight, who had nine killed and others wounded. John Gyles of this town, was at the battle of Haverhill, and lost the use of his arm by a shot. Having a large family, he received a pension from the Province.—The loss of property at Haverhill by means of the enemy was £1000. Of its inhabitants, Mr. Rolfe, the minister, and about 42 others were killed.

‡ Nov. 3d. A committee of the Legislature is appoin-

\* Prov. R.

† Penhallow.

‡ Prov. P.

1708]

ted to examine rates for postage on letters, and to consider an alteration *of the day for the Post's coming into Boston*.—6th. General Court send a memorial to her Majesty, in which they vindicate themselves against the charge, that they were severe against persons of denominations different from their own. ✓

Dec. 7th. Benjamin, son of William Brown, dies, aged 60. He married Mary, the daughter of John Hicks, a non-conformist minister in England, 1686. She came over this year in company with Rev. Mr. Morton, settled at Charlestown. Mr Brown's wife and two children died before he did. He left a large property. Dunton, in his journal, says, that he was worth £30,000. He bequeathed the following legacies in current money :—£200 to Harvard College, the income of which was to assist poor scholars there from Salem ; £50 to the First Church, half of which was to purchase a bason for baptizing, and income of the other half to supply the Lord's Table ; £60 to the Grammar School, the interest of which was to help in making it a free school ; £70 towards building an Alms House, and £30 for supplying it with stock. He gave largely to the children of his sister, wife of Wait Winthrop ; to his neices, Mrs. Sarah Woodward, living in England, and Mrs. Mary, wife of Benjamin Lynde ; and to his two nephews, Samuel and John Brown. He sustained various offices. He was selectman, commissioner for rates, representative, a counsellor of the Governor, and Justice of the Court of Sessions. He lived to be useful. He was an ornament to his town and country. ✓

9th. Rev. John Higginson dies. Cotton Mather preached his funeral sermon, to which was annexed an elegy on his decease, by his colleague, Mr. Noyes. He was son of Francis and Ann Higginson, and born at Claybrook, England, Aug. 6th, 1616. He joined the Church here at 13 years old. His father died, and left his mother with him and seven other children. He was assisted in getting an education by the chief mag-

istrates and ministers of the Colony, for whom he ever cherished feelings of gratitude and esteem.

1636—Having become acquainted with the Indian language, he is one of three commissioners to wait on Canonicus, about the murder of John Oldham. He is employed as chaplin at Say Brook fort. He continued here above four years. 1637—He is scribe of the Synod, which sat at Newton. 1641—He teaches a school in Hartford, and privately assists Rev. Mr. Hooker, with whom he pursues his theological studies. He was thus employed in Hartford about two years. 1643—He moves to Guildford and is settled in the ministry, as colleague with Henry Whitfield. 1647—Mr. Higginson transcribes nearly 200 of Mr. Hooker's sermons, who was his friend and benefactor, and who had died recently. Having thus written off these sermons, he sent them to England, where about half of them were printed. 1651—His father in law goes to England and leaves him to carry on the ministry alone. 1659—He, being on his passage for England, is unintentionally brought into Salem. He is persuaded to say, that he will preach one year. Before this time was out, he received an invitation to settle, which he did 1660. Thus connected with the First Church, which his father helped to found, he was called to take part in the controversy, then existing between the Congregationalists and the Friends. He, like almost every eminent man in the Colony, considered the religious opinions and practices of the Friends, as dangerous to both Church and State. For the agency, which he took in excommunicating some of his church, who joined them, they severely reproached him. 1663—He preaches the Election sermon, highly recommended by two noted clergymen. 1669—He is active in forming the old S. Church of Boston. He with Mr. Thatcher of this Church recommends Morton's Memorial. 1673—May 18—Mr. H. preaches at Wenham and returns P. M. to Mr Newman's house, who had died lately. The room, where he and others sit con-

versing, has lightning pass through it and go up chimney, killing one of the company and a dog under his chair. Mr. H. is much tried about Mr. Nicholet, his assistant in the ministry. He did not think so favourably of him, as the majority of his people did. 1686—He publishes a "Treatise of Peace in Christ," prefaced by Rev. S. Willard, and dedicated to the people of Saybrook, Guildford and Salem. 1689—At his own house, Mr. H. maintains an ingenious argument against the position of Sir E. Andros, who contends, that the Colonists had forfeited their lands to the King. This argument was forwarded to General Court, at their request, soon after Sir E. Andros was deposed. 1692. Mr. H., though taking no active part in the transactions of Witchcraft, did not feel so confident of their incorrectness as to oppose them. He appears to have coincided with Mr. Noyes, his colleague, in the excommunication of G. Cory, who had been condemned for witchcraft. Such a consent is by no means surprising, when we reflect on the prevalent views and laws of that period. 1697—Mr. H. writes an interesting attestation to Mather's Church History. 1698—He publishes a long and excellent sermon, entitled, "New-England's duty and interest to be an habitation of justice and holiness." 1698—He writes a candid Epistle, prefixed to Rev. John Hale's remarks on Witchcraft. 1701—He and Rev. Wm. Hubbard of Ipswich, publish "Testimony to the order of the Gospel in the Churches of N. England." 1702—Mather says, in his *Magnalia*, "Mr. J. Higginson and Mr. W. Hubbard have assisted me and much obliged me with information for many parts of our history." 1705—Mr. H. writes advice to his children, called his dying testimony. 1708—He has his name to a preface of Tho's Allen's "Invitation to Thirsty Sinners."

Mr. H. was frequently upon councils. His judgment was sound, well informed, exercised discreetly, and when expressed, had great weight. An agent from England, supposed to be Edward Randolph,

writes home about 1677, that Mr. H. is one of three, who are the most popular divines in Massachusetts. John Dunton visited Mr. H. 1686, and remarks of him: "all men look to him as a common father, and old age for his sake is a reverend thing; he is eminent for all the graces, that adorn a minister; his very presence puts vice out of countenance; his conversation is a glimpse of heaven." Cotton Mather says of Mr. H. 1696, "this good old man is yet alive; and he that from a child knew the holy scriptures, does at those years wherein men are to be twice children, continue preaching them with such a manly, pertinent, judicious vigour, and with so little decay of his intellectual abilities, as is indeed a matter of just admiration."

Mr. H. discharged his duties as a son, husband and father, as a member of the community, and a minister, with more than common fidelity. He bore with pious fortitude the various trials of his profession, and duly balanced them with its consolations, so as not to be driven from the course of duty. Such were his talents, attainments, and virtues, such his aims and exertions, in particular for this town, and in general for New-England, he deserves to be remembered by the people of Salem with sentiments of high and lasting esteem. We take an interest not only in the individual concerns of a person, like Mr. H., but also in his family. His first wife was a daughter of Mr. Whitfield, with whom he was colleague at Guildford. She died before 1678, when he married Mary, a widow of Boston, who died March 9th, 1709, and left two daughters, one, Anna, married to Jeremiah Dummer, Esq., and the other, Mary, to Mr. John Coney. Mr. H. left children by his first wife, John, Nathaniel, Thomas, and Anna. He had lost Francis, Henry and Sarah. John, of the Governor's Council, lived in Salem. Nathaniel was born at Guildford, Oct. 11, 1652, and educated at Harvard. He went to England, 1674; was with Lord Wharton about 7 years, as steward and tutor to his children. He was employed in the mint of the tower

1681; and went, 1683, in the Company's service to Fort St. George, E. Indies; was member and secretary of the Council, and afterwards Governor of the Factory at said fort. He married Elizabeth Richards, 1692, returned to England with his wife and 4 children, 1700, and established himself as a merchant in London, where he died 1708. Thomas went to England, learnt the Goldsmith's trade, came home, embarked for Arabia, and was never more heard off. Francis went to his uncle at Kirby Stevens in England, was educated at the University, and died of small pox in London, *Æ* 24. Henry was brought up a merchant, went to Barbadoes as Factor, and there died of small pox, 1685. Sarah was married to Richard Wharton of Salem, and Anna to Capt. Doliver, of Gloucester.

## 1709.

\* Feb. 19th. If either of the commissioners, appointed to attend Lord Lovelace to New-York, should fail, J. Higginson is designated to supply his place.—† 23d. The Legislature order, that the duties "on a cargo of Bibles and paper, &c., lately arrived from the Society for propagating the Gospel in New-England and parts adjacent in America, be remitted."—The House require "that information be sent to several towns in this Province, that the sheep on the Islands and Necks in or near Boston, have an infectious disease, called the Scab, lately brought from beyond sea, so that all persons may endeavour to keep their sheep from the infection."

‡ May 9th. According to Mr. Noyes' request, the Church vote to have George Curwin, as colleague with him. The town did not immediately comply with this vote.—§ Instructions are voted by Salem for their Representatives to General Court next session:—"1. That you do your utmost, that such measures and methods may be taken, as may be effectual to cause the money to pass currently and universally throughout this



Province, conformably to and in obedience to her Majesty's proclamation and act of Parliament referring thereto, which may be a means to prevent confusion and mischief, which will otherwise immediately ensue. 2d. That you industriously bring forward, encourage and use all suitable means to facilitate the expedition, which her Majesty is forming against the common enemy, for the safety and benefit of her subjects here, in these northern parts of America. 3. In general, that you do what may be proper for the good and safety of the Province and her Majesty's subjects therein and dominions adjacent, and, in particular, for this our town of Salem, as occasion may offer."

\* May 25th. General Court assemble. J. Wolcot and John Brown are Representatives. † A number of the inhabitants in Salem, petition the Legislature, that they, as children of some executed for witchcraft, may be relieved, from the disabilities, to which they are liable in consequence of a bill of attainder, which had existed against them. They, also, petition, that they may be remunerated for damages, sustained by their parents on account of prosecutions for witchcraft. P. English joins with these petitioners as to damages, which he incurred by having his property seized, when he and his wife were falsely imprisoned for the same offence.—† 30th. A resolve is passed by the Legislature to go against Canada.

July 13th. J. Higginson is on a committee to consult with the Pilots for Canada expedition about the charts in reference to the River (St. Lawrence) and correct the errors in them, and draw up a suitable chart for the fleet.—15th. The chart prepared is ordered to be engraved on copper. The contemplated expedition against Canada failed, because forces, expected from England, were sent to Portugal to reinforce an army of English and Portuguese, which had been defeated by the French in Estramadura.

Nov. 2d. J. Wolcot is on a committee to see that the coast is guarded in fall and spring.

\* Prov. R.

† Prov. P.

‡ Prov. R.

## 1710.

\* Feb. 20th. The inhabitants, who lived in the W. and N. parts of Salem, petition for leave to build a meeting house and maintain a minister.

March 20th. These petitioners are granted 1-4 acre of land for a meeting house.

† May 31st. General Court convene. S. Gardner and Jona. Putnam are Representatives.

Aug. 24th. A fast is ordered to pray for the success of an intended expedition against Port Royal, and other settlements of N. Scotia. This expedition sailed Sept. 18th, was successful, and P. Royal capitulated Oct. 2d, and was called Annapolis in honor of Queen Anna.

Sept. 1st. John, son of Jeffrey Massey, dies, Æ 79. He was among the first children born in Salem. Though in humble life, he was an upright man.

Nov. 2d. On a petition of those, living in Salem without the bridge, for 10 acres of land towards the support of the ministry, the Assistants are equally divided. Still their petition is granted.

‡ Dec. 26th. "Ordered, that Col. J. Higginson and S. Sewall do draw and prefer a petition to the next Sessions of the General Court, in the name of the Justices of this Court and County, for obtaining a bridge to be built over to Noddle's Island to the main at N. East side, or if it cannot be granted them, that there be three boats kept plying betwixt Winisimet and Boston, under such regulation, that the Queen's subjects may not be so long detained to their great detriment and hindrance, as now too often they are." It appears, that only one ferry boat had been used to convey passengers from this way, over Charlestown River to Boston. General Court orders, Oct. 1711, that there shall be three boats.

## 1711.

§ Feb. 7th. Letters from Barbadoes state, that 18 sail were bound thither under convoy of a frigate; that

\* T. R.      † Prov. R.      ‡ Gen. Co. R.      § Bost. N. Let.

four of them were taken and three missing, one of which was from Salem under Capt. Orms.

\* March 12th. A committee of this place is appointed to receive claims to the common lands, according to law of 1661 for cottages, or town vote of 1702.—† 16th. Wm. Pickering, of this town, is appointed by the Governor to command the Province Galley. He had been captain of her previously.—‡ 27th. A case is tried, relative to land, which had been sold by Elizabeth Barker, widow of Deptford, England, and daughter of Hugh Peters. This land had been granted to him by this town.

§ April 12th. A fast to pray, that captives may be returned from the enemy.

|| May 3d. The town concur with the church in calling Mr. Curwin, as colleague with Mr. Noyes.—¶ 30th. General Court sit. B. Lynde jr. is Representative.

June 2d. J. Higginson and B. Lynde are on a committee to devise measures for the better treatment of Indians in the Province.

\*\* Aug. 10th. As His Excellency had sent a letter to Col. J. Hathorne about repairing the fort here, the town say, that as they maintain "two block houses and a line of defence," and pay towards the Castle and other fortifications of the Province, they deem it hard to repair their fort at their own expense; that they are willing to pay 1-3d of such expense, if not above £150, provided the Province will pay the rest.

In the course of the summer, a brig from Barbadoes, Capt. Ebenezer Hathorne, brought in the small pox, which spread some.

Sept. 3d. The town state, that as their fishery have decayed, and they have met with losses at sea, they are unable to repair their fort, as the Governor had ordered.

†† Oct. 7th. Samuel Phillips is dismissed and re-

\* T. R.    † Prov. R.    ‡ Ct. C. P. R.    § Bos. N. Letter.  
 || T. R.    ¶ Prov. R.    \*\* T. R.    †† Ch. R.

1712]

commended by First Church here to the Church at S. Andover, where he was ordained Oct. 17th. On this occasion, Mr. Curwin and Major Sewall represented the first Church. Mr. Phillips was father of John, who founded Exeter Academy.

\* Dec. 17th. It is voted, that the Inhabitants of Ryal Side, be allowed, with some of their neighbours of the Village and also of Beverly, to build a meeting house near horse bridge, on line between Salem and Beverly.

1712.

† March 6th. Votes are passed to erase the records of Rebecca Nurse and Giles Cory's excommunication for witchcraft, 1692. With the first vote, the following is connected: "Humbly requesting the merciful God would pardon whatsoever sin, error or mistake was in the application of that censure, and of that whole affair, through our merciful High Priest, who knoweth how to have compassion on the ignorant and those that are out of the way."

10th. John Emerson, master of the Grammar school, had died recently. He graduated at Harvard, 1675; had taught school at Newbury and Charlestown. He left a wife Sarah. He sustained the office of teaching here, from 1699 to the year of his decease, with ability and usefulness.—25th. John Barnard, afterwards minister of Marblehead, begins to instruct the Grammar School.

April 12th. According to a law passed 1710, against nuisances, places are assigned for curriers, tallow chandlers and butchers of Salem.

† May 28th. General Court assemble. B. Lynde and Wm. Bowditch are Representatives. As Indian slaves had been found troublesome and dangerous, they are forbidden to be imported into the Province.

§ June 10th. It is voted, to fit up the old watch house as a place for teaching, reading, writing, cyphering and navigation. The first teacher in this school

\* T. R.

† Ch. R.

‡ Prov. R.

§ T. R.

house, was Nathaniel Higginson. This year there were three public schools, one at the Village and two in the body of the town.

\* Oct. 9th. The Friends in Salem agree, that no tomb stones shall be set up or put over any graves in their burying places; nor any rails be placed around such graves.—† 27th. Proclamation is made for suspension of arms between the subjects of her Majesty and King of France. Their Majesties had agreed on an armistice Aug. 18. They made peace March 30 1713.

28th. Mr. Robert Kitchen, dies  $\text{Æ}$  56. He left a widow, Bethiah, and a son Robert, who died a member of Harvard College, 1716,  $\text{Æ}$  17. He was selectman and a respectable inhabitant.

30th. The middle precinct, now S. Danvers, having been set off by the Legislature, and complied with the conditions of building a house of worship and employing a minister, are freed from ministerial taxes in the first parish.

Dec. 31st. B. Lynde is on a committee of the House to demand all English prisoners from the Indians, before they shall be permitted to consult about terms of peace. It appears, that, after the armistice, the Indians came frequently to the Casco garrison about delivering up their captives, but did not seem sincere.

### 1713.

‡ Jan. 4th. B. Lynde is on a committee, which report to the Legislature, that the Indians be received into friendship, after confessing their outrages, and humbling themselves before her Majesty, and giving hostages of their chiefs.

§ Feb. 12th. Thomas Maul and Benjamin Flint, of the Friends, are appointed to petition the town for land to enlarge their burying place. This petition was granted in March. ✓

|| As Benjamin Brown had left a legacy to the town

\* Friends R. † Prov. R. ‡ Prov. R. § Friends R. || T. R.

towards building an Alms House,—it is voted, that the legacy be accordingly appropriated. The subject of erecting such a building had been previously discussed in public meeting. The Alms House here spoken of, was placed where the Registry Office now stands.—  
 \* 20th. A committee report to the Legislature, that a light house shall be erected at the entrance of Boston harbor, on the S. part of Beacon Island. A report was before the same body, June 17th, for taking fees of vessels, which should pass this light house. Such a house was the first of the kind in Massachusetts.

April 19th. Ann, relict of Governor Bradstreet, dies, *Æ* 79. She was daughter of Emmanuel Downing, and was born in London. Her first husband was Capt. Joseph Gardner, slain by the Indians at Narraganset. She had an excellent education, and what is more, a principle of deep piety, which rendered her talents, attainments and possessions, blessings to society.

† 24th. Benjamin Gerrish dies. He was son of Wm. Gerrish of Newbury, and was born Jan. 13, 1653. He had three wives, Hannah Ruck, Anna Paine, and Elizabeth Turner. The last survived him. He left six children, including his oldest son Benjamin. He was deacon of the first church and collector for Salem District. He had served as selectman and town treasurer, and clerk of county court. He was a worthy man. In his decease the community suffered a loss.

‡ May 27th. General Court assemble. Wm. Browne, J. Curwin, and B. Lynde are Counsellors. John Brown and Francis Willoughby are Representatives.

§ June 25th. According to request, 13 males and 26 females are dismissed from the First Church, to constitute a Church at the middle precinct, now S. Danvers.—|| 29th. The Commoners of Salem meet and choose J. Higginson, S. Gardner, J. Turner, Jona. Putnam, and S. Sewall for their Trustees. They grant

\* Prov. R.    † Bos. N. Letter.    ‡ Prov. R.    § Ch. R.    || T. R.

the privilege of commonage to Rev. Messrs. Green of the Village and Prescott of the precinct.

\* Aug. 25th. Col. S. Brown reads his Excellency's order for proclaiming peace in Salem. Gentlemen from this and neighboring towns attend on the occasion. The guns at the forts of Salem and Marblehead are discharged and there are other demonstrations of joy.

† Sept. 23d. Benjamin Prescott is ordained pastor of the middle precinct. Churches represented at his ordination are of Cambridge, Lynn, Marblehead, Beverly, and Village. Messrs. Appleton preaches, Shepard gives the charge, and Green the right hand.

‡ Nov. 13th. The Commoners vote, that all the highways, burying places, and common lands, lying within town bridge and the block houses, shall be for public use.—16th. It is voted, that the common lands where the Trainings are generally kept before Nath'l Higginson's house, shall be forever as a Training field for the use of Salem ;—and also, that the block houses shall be for the same use.

§ Exchange is £150 in bills for £100 sterling.

#### 1714.

|| Jan. 14. Public fast on account of fevers, measles, and scarcity of bread.

¶ Feb. 6th. J. Higginson is on a Committee of the Legislature to report on a medium of trade to supply the deficiency of money and facilitate the paying of public taxes.

\*\* March 13th. Martha, daughter of Daniel Epes of Salem, is published to Peter Dallec, French Protestant minister of Boston.

†† May 4th. An inhabitant of Salem is found guilty of passing counterfeit bills. He is sentenced to the Pillory, to have an ear cut off, to be imprisoned 12 months, branded with F on his right cheek and pay £30.—†† 13th. The Friends here, consider the build-

\* Bos. N. Letter. † S. Dan. R. ‡ T. R. § Douglass.  
|| Ch. R. ¶ Prov. R. \*\* T. R. †† Sup. C. R. ‡‡ Friends R.

ing of a new meeting house, 18 feet stud, 34 broad and 40 long. They receive from the yearly meeting at Rhode Island a proportion of books, sent as a present from London.—\* 19th. George Curwin is ordained, as colleague with Mr. Noyes. Mr. Coleman's church and North church, both of Boston, and churches of Ipswich, Beverly, Wenham, Marblehead, and S. Village, are represented in the ordaining Council.—C. Mather begins with prayer. Mr. Curwin preaches from 2 Cor. 2 ch. and last clause of 16 v. and prays. Mr. Noyes gives the charge. Elders impose hands. C. Mather gives the right hand. Mr. Gerrish makes the concluding prayer. Mr. Curwin pronounces the benediction.—The salary of Mr. Curwin was £90.—† 26th. General Court sit. J. Curwin, J. Higginson and B. Lynde are Counsellors. Peter Osgood, and John Pickering are Representatives.—It is enacted, that persons, guilty the second time of counterfeiting Province bills, shall suffer death.

‡ June 7th. The people of Salem petition the Legislature to man Fort Ann, which mounted 20 guns. They, also, petition that the grant of a Plantation to them at Pennicook 1661, may be confirmed to them. They state that some of them had erected a trading house there 40 years since. They give as reasons for having the grant confirmed, that, since it was first made, they had been embarrassed by Indian wars; that their boundaries were now reduced to four miles broad, and seven long;—that they had met with great losses; suffered much in the late war, and needed a settlement for part of their population.

§ July 13th. The Friends in this town agree to pay one third of the expense for land, adjoining to a meeting house of their denomination in Boston.

|| Sept. 23d. The death of Queen Ann is solemnized in Boston. She died Aug. 1st.—At noon, George, Elector of Hanover, is proclaimed king of Great Britain, with public expressions of joy.—¶ 30th. B.

\* Ch. R. † Prov. R. ‡ T. R. § Friends' R. || Bos. N. Letter. ¶ Prov. R.



Lynde is on a committee of the Legislature to consider the statement of Mr. Dummer, Province Agent, relative to the French making a strong settlement at Cape Breton and parts adjacent.

Oct. 20th. £50,000 in Province bills, is ordered to be emitted,—put into the hands of Trustees, and let out on good security at 5 per cent. The income, thus gained, is to be paid towards the payment of public charges.—28th. P. Osgood is on committee to facilitate public payments. ✓

\* Nov. 22d. The Town grant 60 acres of land for the use of the poor and others, having no right in the common lands. They vote, that each fishing vessel, belonging here, may dry its fish for 5s. a year on Winter Island,—and; each vessel, not of Salem, may have the same privilege for 20s.; that the land E. of block house, shall be reserved for a pasture,—where “milch cows and riding horses” may feed,—allowing two and a half acres for a cow and four for a horse;—that ten acres be kept for the use of the ministry in the body of the town, five for the ministry of the village and five for that of the middle precinct,—in convenient places.

Dec. 23. Francis Drake is appointed by the Selectmen, to keep a school for mathematics.

### 1715.

† Feb. 21st. The proprietors of the common lands grant the poor of Salem pasture enough for 40 cows.

‡ May 25th. General Court meet. S. Brown, J. Higginson and B. Lynde are counsellors, and so continue till 1720. D. Epes and P. Osgood are Representatives. The Court enact, that house-breaking in the night shall be punishable with death.—31st. J. Higginson is on a Committee to address his Majesty, in which there was to be particularly mentioned the settlement of the Eastern country by the French, and, also, the retention of Cape Breton by them.

June 1st. D. Epes is on a committee to inquire af-

\* T. R.

† Ct. C. P. R.

‡ Prov. R.

ter a house for the entertainment of Elizeus Burges, the expected Governor. Col. Burges did not arrive, though his commission, as Governor, was published in Boston Nov. 9.—Mr. Dudley wrote to several governors in order to prevent the introduction and vending in this Province, of Indian captives from Carolina. In answer to a memorial of clergymen, leave is granted for a Synod of Churches in the Province.—9th. Increase Mather appeared in Court against granting a Synod.—17th. D. Epes is on a committee to inform the Council, that the House intend to choose an Attorney General, if they will not concur.—20th. The House choose Thomas Newton for such an officer, though the Council decline to act with them.

July 20th. J. Higginson is among commissioners to go and treat with the Cape Sable Indians, who, it was reported, had taken vessels, and murdered some of the English ;—but he appears to have declined the appointment.—The Court enact, that a Register of Deeds be annually appointed in every county ;—and that towns, voluntarily without ministers, shall be prosecuted for such deficiency.

Oct. 26th. Rev. Joseph Green, of S. Village, dies, aged 40. He graduated at Cambridge 1695. He married Elizabeth, daughter of Rev. Mr. Gerrish, of Wenham. She survived him, and married Rev. Wm. Brattle of Cambridge. He left a mother Champney, and children, one of which was about to be educated at College. Mr. Green was highly esteemed, and his death was much lamented.

Nov. 14th. Deliverance Parkman, merchant, dies. He had four wives, Sarah daughter of Hilliard Veren, whom he married 1673 ; and who died 1681 ; Mehitable Wait, of Malden ; Margaret daughter of Samuel Gardner ; and Susannah, widow of John Gedney jr. who survived him.—He left children, of whom was Mehitable, married to Rev. George Curwin. He was a useful and respected man.

\* Dec. 28th. John Chipman is ordained at Ryal Side, now Upper Beverly.

1716. ✓

Feb. 14th. William Brown dies in his 78th year. He was son of Hon. Wm. Brown, who died 1688. He married Hannah, daughter of George Curwin 1664. She died 1692 aged nearly 48. Their surviving children were Samuel, Mary, Sarah and John.—Mr. Brown left a second wife, Rebecca, who had been a widow Bailey, and who had a son John. He bequeathed to his relict £1000 in silver, £40 a year current money, and some real estate.—He gave £100 to her son; £10 to Rev. Mr. Curwin, and £25 to Mr. Noyes; £20 to the First Church, to be expended in plate or in supplying the communion table; £40 to the poor of the same church and parish; £50 towards the Alms House, which is partly built, including what he had already given. He gave £100 towards making the Grammar School free, requiring only the interest to be spent; £100 to Harvard College, the interest of which is “to help support his grand children or their posterity while students there, and if none such, to help poor Salem scholars, that may live at College.” He left £100 to his neice, Sarah Woodward in Great Britain; £50 to his neice, Anna Lechmore; £100 to each child of his sons, Samuel and John; £250 to each of his daughter Mary Lynde’s two children. He gave to this daughter, £500 in silver; the land at Castle Hill, about 25 acres, which he had bought of Erasmus James, and other valuable estate. He willed £2000 in silver to his eldest son Samuel, and other valuable property; and £1000 to his son John. His wealth was great for the period in which he lived. He had held the chief offices of the town. He was Representative to General Court and a member of the Governor’s Council. He was Justice of the Court of General Sessions and of Common Pleas. He died full of years, usefulness and honours. He was an ornament to his town and country.

• Ch. R. ✓

1716]

\* March 5th. The Congregation at S. Village vote to defer an answer to the petition of their neighbours at Wills Hill, who desire to be set off to build a meeting house and have preaching by themselves.

† April 25th. The First Church is represented in the Council for ordaining Edward Holyoke, pastor of the new Church at Marblehead. He was born in Boston, graduated at Harvard, became President of this College 1737, and died June 1769, aged 80. He was father of the highly esteemed E. A. Holyoke, M. D. who has lately deceased.

‡ May 30th. General Court meet. John Pickering and John Gardner are Representatives.

§ June 26th. Francis Willoughby of this place is requested to provide the King's arms for the Court House, and to have those there altered.

July 17th. F. Willoughby having declined being a Commissioner for the County excise, Daniel Epes is appointed in his stead. || 18th. The First Church of Salem is represented at the ordination of John Barnard, as Colleague with Mr. Cheever, over the First Church of Marblehead. Other churches represented, were the 2d and 4th of Boston, church of Lynn, and the 2d of Marblehead. Mr. Curwin prayed. Mr. Barnard preached. Dr. C. Mather offered the ordaining prayer. Mr. Coleman gave the right hand. Mr. Barnard had a settlement of £150; a salary of £110, while single, but £130 when married. He was born in Boston; graduated at Harvard, and died June 24, 1770, in his 89th year.

¶ Aug. 7th. Peter Clark is invited to become the minister of S. Village.

\*\* Sept 27. Neighbouring clergymen meet at Mr. Prescott's about forming an Association, for mutual help in discharging their ministerial duties. The articles of this Association were signed, in about a year, by S. Cheever, N. Noyes, J. Gerrish, T. Blowers, R. Brown,

\* Dan. R.

† Ch. R.

‡ Prov. R.

§ G. Sess. Ct. R.

|| 1st Ch. R. of Mar.

¶ Dan. R.

\*\* Assn. of Sa. and vicinity R.

J. Barnard, G. Curwin, A. Cheever, B. Prescott, J. Chipman, and P. Clark.

\* Nov. 7th. The First Church is represented at the ordination of Ames Cheever over the Manchester Church. His salary was £70, parsonage and firewood. He was son of Rev. T. Cheever of Marblehead, and graduated at Harvard. He married a daughter of Rev. J. Gerrish of Wenham. For his second wife, he married Sarah Choate, of Ipswich, 1736. His pastoral connexion was dissolved by Council 1734. He died at Manchester 1755.—† The Legislature order an emission of £100,000 in bills. They do this because the Province is drained of specie, and many bills of former emissions, had been called in and burnt. They designate trustees to let out the bills at 5 per cent, secured by mortgages on estates to double their amount. The proportion for Essex is £23,242. Among the trustees for Essex are B. Lynde and John Turner.—‡ 8th. As the Friends had built a new meeting house, they sell their old one to Thomas Maul for £25. § The exchange is £175 paper currency for £100 sterling.

✓  
1717.

|| April. As a matter of general and anxious concern, the pirate ship, *Widah*, Capt. Samuel Bellamy, appeared off Cape Cod. He took several vessels; one of which, with 7 of his crew, was retaken. Soon after this, his ship was cast ashore on the Cape and all his men, except two, were drowned. Six of them, taken and saved, were hung in Boston Nov. 15.

May 10th. John, son of Wm. Hathorne, dies. He was born Aug. 4, 1641. He married Ruth Gardner 1675. He had lost two sons, John and Nathaniel. He left children, Ebenezer, Joseph, the wife of James Pitman, and Benjamin. He was an eminent member of the First Church. He held the principal offices in town. He was Representative and Counsellor at General Court for many years. He was Judge of the

\* Ch. R.    † Prov. R.    ‡ Friends' R.    § Douglass.    || Hutch.

1717]

Court of Sessions, of the Court of Common Pleas, and of the Supreme Court. He was in active service as Colonel, against the French and Indians. His official trusts, were many, various and important. His faithful discharge of them should lead us to remember him, with sentiments of high respect and esteem.

\* 29th. General Court sits. T. Lindall and P. Osgood are Representatives.

† June 5th. Peter Clark is ordained at the Village. The Churches of Beverly, Wenham, Reading and Topsfield are represented on this occasion. He had £90 settlement, and a salary of £90 and the Parsonage.

‡ July 22d. Doct. Bartholomew Brown had died lately. He married Susanna, daughter of Thomas Maul, 1693. He left children, of which was John, his eldest son. He appears to have been a respectable physician.

Nov. 1. Wm. Hirst, merchant, dies. He married Mary Grove 1674. She died April before he did. He left children, of which were Grove, and Elizabeth, wife of Maj. Walter Price.—His clear estate was over £2534. He had been Selectman, Representative to the Legislature, and Justice of the Court of General Sessions. He was a useful and respected inhabitant.

23d. Rev. George, son of the Hon. Jonathan Curwin, dies. He was born May 21, 1683, and graduated at Harvard 1701. He married Mehitabel, daughter of Deliverance Parkman, 1711. She died Nov. 13, 1718. They left children, Jonathan, Samuel, and George. Mr. Barnard, of Marblehead, gave the following character of Mr. Curwin: "The spirit of early devotion, accompanied with a natural freedom of thought and easy elocution—a quick invention, a solid judgment and a tenacious memory, laid the foundation of a good preacher—to which his acquired literature, his great reading, hard studies, deep meditation, and close walk with God, rendered him an able and faithful minister of the New-Testament." The portrait of Mr. Curwin shows, that

\* Prov. R.

† Dan. Ch.

‡ Prov. R.

he had a very interesting countenance. With a prospect of eminent usefulness, he was called to rest with his worthy predecessors.

Dec. 13th. Nicholas, son of Nicholas Noyes, of Newbury, dies. He was born Dec. 22, 1647, and graduated at Cambridge 1667. He lived a bachelor. Before his preaching here, 1682, he had been settled 13 years at Haddam, Connecticut. John Dunton, having visited him, 1686, writes,—“he is all that is delightful in conversation; it is no lessening to his brother Higginson to say, that he is no ways inferior to him for good preaching or primitive living.” Mr. Noyes erred in opinion and action, as to witchcraft. But he confessed his mistake, and strove to make all the reparation in his power. His talents were good, his literature general, his acquaintance with theology extensive, his attachment to the ministry strong, and his life both useful and desired. His printed productions are few. He gave an account of his uncle James Noyes, as contained in the *Magnalia*. He published an Election sermon, 1698; a poem on the death of his colleague, Mr. Higginson, 1708, which was bound with a sermon, preached by C. Mather on the same occasion; and another poem on the death of Rev. J. Green, 1715.

#### 1718.

\* Jan. 27th. The First Church desire Mr. Fisk to preach longer for them, and call him to be their minister.

† Feb. 8th. Gov. Shute, who arrived at Boston Oct. 4, 1716, appoints a Fast, to be the 27th, on account of great sickness and mortality in many places; and to pray that “all essays to propagate the Gospel among the Eastern Indians may be successful.”—For the sickness and mortality, here mentioned, a fast was observed the 13th, at Salem Village.

April 26th. John third, son of Hon. John and Sarah Higginson, dies. He was born Aug. 26, 1675. He

\* Ch. R.

† Bos. N. Letter.

married Hannah, daughter of Samuel Gardner, 1695. She died June 24, 1713. He married Margaret, daughter of Stephen Sewall, 1714. He left children John, Elizabeth Prescott, Sarah and Stephen. He was a respectable merchant. ✓

\* May 28th. General Court convene. T. Lindall and P. Osgood are Representatives. 29th. The Governor in his speech says, "In several preceeding sessions, I have mentioned to you how extremely necessary it was for us to find out some means to advance the sinking credit of our public bills ; and also for encouraging products of this Province. The ill consequences of our not giving due attention to these weighty affairs are every day increasing, and they will inevitably end in our utter destruction, if not timely removed. If you would reflect a little upon the miserable state of your neighbours at Carolina, it would awaken you." ✓

July 1st. John Higginson, of this place, and eighty others, petition for leave to settle a township between Dunstable and Lancaster. This petition was left, Dec. 1st, to a Committee of both houses.

9th. Jonathan, son of George Curwin, dies. He was born Nov. 14, 1640. He married Widow Elizabeth Gibbs, of Boston 1676. She died Aug. 20, 1718. Her mother was Margaret Thatcher of Boston. Rev. H. Gibbs of Watertown, was one of her children. Mr. Curwin left a daughter Elizabeth, wife of James Lindall. He had been Selectman, Representative to General Court, and long of the Governor's Council. He had been Judge of the Court of Sessions, of Court of Common Pleas, and of the Supreme Court. He belonged to the First Church.—In his several relations, as a member of society and a christian, he richly deserved the confidence, which was extensively granted him.

† 14th The First Church and Congregation worship in their new meeting house, which was raised May 21st. This house continued till March 13, 1826, when it was



taken down. \* As the Court House chamber here is too small, a building is ordered to be erected about twenty feet stud, thirty broad, and forty long; the upper story of which is to be for the Court and the lower for town business. Half of the cost of the building is to be paid by the county and the other by the town.

Oct. 8th. Samuel Fisk is ordained over the First Church. Mr. Blowers prayed. Mr. Coleman preached from II Cor. 4th chapter 5th verse. Mr. Fisk prayed and was received into the Church. Mr. Gerrish prayed and gave charge. Messrs. Rogers of Ipswich, Coleman and Blowers, imposed hands. Mr. Rogers gave the right hand. Mr. Fisk pronounced the benediction.

† Nov. 14th Some members of the First Church, being thirty-six, request to be set off for settling Robert Stanton, as their minister, in the east part of the town.

‡ Nov. 20th. B. Lynde and T. Lindall are on a Committee to draw up instructions to "the agent on present emergencies of government." 27th. J. Higginson is on committee to facilitate the better settlement of new townships in the Province.

§ Dec. 11th. Thanksgiving is observed, and, according to the Governor's order, a contribution of £26 2 is gathered here for propagating the Gospel. £5 is collected at the Village for the same object and paid over to Edward Bromfield, Esq. 15th. As Simon Williard had resigned the office of Deacon in the First Church, Peter Osgood is chosen to succeed him. 25th. The brethren and sisters at the east part of the town, are dismissed according to their request. Their meeting house was built by this time.

### 1719.

|| Feb. 16th. Dea. Nathaniel, son of John Ingersoll, of the Village, died recently. He left wife Hannah. His brothers were George and John.

\* G. Sess. Ct. R. † Ch. R. ‡ Prov. R. § Ch. R. || Prov. R.

1719]

\* April 8th. Robert Stanton is ordained over the East Church. C. Mather preached. ✓

14th. John, son of Hon. William Brown deceased, dies. He was born Nov. 2, 1672. He married Sarah, daughter of John Burroughs of Boston. She died Nov. 24, 1715. He had for his second wife Mary, widow of Capt. Roger Plaisted of Berwick.—She survived him and returned to Berwick. She had children, Ichabod, Mary and Olive by her first husband, and Sarah by her second. Mr. Brown left children, Benjamin and John, by his first wife. He left a large property.—Among his bequests to his son Benjamin is “a share in Providence Island in the government of R. I.”—He left £20 to the poor and £25 to the Grammar School of Salem. Gov. Shute, being on his way to Piscataqua, attended his funeral. He was a member of the East Church. He was Selectman, Representative to General Court, and Justice of the General Sessions Court. His death was much lamented.

May 1. Benjamin Marston, merchant, died recently. He left wife Patience, who deceased 1731, aged 55; and children, Benjamin, Elizabeth and Mary. Abigail, a daughter of his, had married Mr. Cabot. Mr. Marston had been Selectman and Representative to General Court.

† 27th. General Court assemble. T. Lindall and J Gardner are Representatives.—29th. The first law against duelling is passed. It requires, that any who challenge or fight a duel, shall be subject to a fine not above £100, and to imprisonment, not exceeding six months, or corporeal punishment. ✓

Nov. 2d. As lotteries tended to impoverish many families, the Legislature forbid them on penalty of £200.

27th. The east parish is set off from the first with full rights. ✓

‡ Dec. 11th. The Aurora Borealis appears and fills the whole country with alarm.

\* Ch. R.

† Prov. R.

‡ Bos. N. Letter.

\* John Nutting succeeds Mr. Ayres in the Grammar School.

1720.

† Jan. 27th. First Church send the Pastor and two brethren to meet in Council for installing Peter Thatcher, lately pastor of Weymouth, over the N. Church in Boston. But the pastor and delegates, finding only two churches represented, which had been invited, and knowing, that some members of the N. Church and Congregation in Boston were dissatisfied, declined to sit in Council. They, however, advised the persons, opposed to Mr. Thatcher's installation, to remain peaceable.

March 23d. John, son of Rev. J. Higginson, dies, aged 73. He married Sarah, daughter of Thomas Savage, of Boston, 1672. He had children, John, Nathaniel, Thomas, Mary, Sarah, Elizabeth and Margaret. Thomas and Margaret died young. Nathaniel deceased the same year that his father died. Mr. Higginson was a merchant. He had sustained the principal offices in town. He was Representative to General Court and long of the Governor's Council. He held a commission as Colonel and was several times in service against the enemy. He was Justice of the Court of General Sessions and of Common Pleas. He was extensively useful. He was esteemed in life and lamented in death.

‡ April 10th. Village Church is invited to attend an ordination, 13th instant, at Lynn End.

§ May 3d. The question, whether aged and infirm persons, who have repented and who are unable to attend public worship, may be baptized in presence of many principal members of the Church, was decided in the affirmative by ministers of the Association of Salem and Vicinity. Widow Mary Cook, situated as this case represents, was admitted to the First Church

\* Bentley. † Ch. R. ‡ Vil. Ch. R. § Sa. Assn. R.

at her own house, Sept. 18th. Such a thing was previously done in reference to another person.

\*25th. General Court sit. B. Lynde and S. Brown are of the Council. T. Lindall and P. Osgood are Representatives. These Representatives received the following instructions from Salem, the 9th instant :—  
 “ You are requested not to come into any unnecessary project, especially that of building a bridge over Charles River, or the like, which may further involve the Province in debt, but rather to lessen it. You will also use your endeavours, that there be no delaying of time limited by any former vote or acts, for paying in any sum or sums, but comply therewith, that the credit of the bills, which are at present our only principal medium of trade, may not be lessened and lowered.”—30th. The Governor dissolved the House, because they persisted in retaining Elisha Cook their Speaker, whom he had negatived.

† June 19th. The Village Church is invited to help ordain Daniel Putnam, who was one of its members, at the N. precinct of Reading.

‡ July 13th. General Court meet. T. Lindall and John Gardner are Representatives. The former, who was not pledged either to the party of the House or that of the Governor, is chosen Speaker. 15th. J. Gardner is on a committee to answer His Excellency's Speech. 19th. A letter to the Legislature informs them, that the Indians had terrified the English about “ Merry Meeting and Sagadehoc River.” 20th. J. Gardner is on a committee, who carry a report to the Council, that, on account of the low circumstances of the Colony, no more money be paid for public rejoicings. He is on another committee in reference to a petition of the Friends, who request, that they may be free from paying towards the support of Presbyterian or Congregational ministers, and also from expense for meeting houses not their own.

§ Nov. 2d. The First Church was to have been

\* Prov. R. † Village Ch. R. ‡ Prov. R. § Ch. R.

represented in Council for ordination of Nathaniel Henchman over First Church in Lynn—but the weather being very stormy, it was not represented ; only the two churches of Marblehead and one of Reading were present.—\* Gov. Shute informs the House, that the Indians are committing great outrages on the Eastern settlements. 8th. J. Gardner is on committee to see what shall be done with the Kennebeck Indians.—11th. Stephen Sewall is chosen Notary for Salem by the Legislature. Before this there had been no Notaries in N. England except such as were commissioned by the Archbishop of Canterbury.—17th. J. Gardner is on a committee to visit the settlement made by James Mac Gregor, James Mac Keen, and James Gregg, about 14 miles from Haverhill and in New Hampshire. It appears, that these persons were of a company from Ireland, who had leave to settle a township at the Eastward, but who preferred the place, which they had occupied in an informal manner.↵21st. A message is sent from the House to the Governor desiring him to obtain the release of Robert Leighing, who was servant to Thomas Picket of Milton, and who had been pressed a month before, from Boston Long wharf, for his Majesty's ship Shark. They represent, that such an impressment is a great breach on the rights of the Provincials.—23d. The House raise a committee to draft a bill to prevent the inhabitants' being forcibly taken and detained on board of any vessel. They are informed, that the men of the Shark Frigate had abused the crew of a Boston vessel. They vote, that his Excellency order the commander of Castle William to stop this frigate, till satisfaction be given by her captain.↵25th. S. Brown is on committee, as to prohibiting trade with Cape Breton and levying soldiers for service, because the French are said to have promoted the disaster, which took place, August 7th, at Canso, where several were killed and a loss of £20,000 sustained.

Dec. 8th. A resolve passes the House, that 100 men be sent to "Norridgwog," and arrest Sebastian Ralle, and bring him to Boston, for stirring up the Indians against the English; and that a Missionary be sent to instruct the Kennebeck Indians at a salary of £150. Samuel Moody is chosen for the Missionary. 12th. J. Gardner is on committee to address his Majesty. \* 21st. A deserter from his Majesty's service is sentenced to be tied at a cart's tail with one end of a halter and to have the other end around his neck; be whipped 39 stripes through the public street in Salem, on Wednesday next immediately after the lecture.

## 1721.

† March 21st. The House insist on an emission of £100,000, though opposed by the Governor and Council. T. Lindall is Speaker this session. 31st. It is enacted, to emit £50,000 in bills, after much debate between the House and Council. ✓

‡ April 22d. It is voted, that "a watch be kept at Winter Island until all the vessels, now expected from Barbadoes and Tortudas, are arrived to prevent the infection of the small pox." Some families in town had this disease the past winter. It is agreed that the price of wheat shall be 8s. a bushel. ✓

§ May 31st. General Court meet. B. Lynde, S. Brown and John Turner are of the Council, and so continue sill 1728. D. Epes and J. Gardner are Representatives. During this session the Governor and House have a serious misunderstanding on several subjects.

June 9th. J. Gardner is on a Committee to desire an explanation of the Governor about his instructions from England, as to the emission of bills in this Province.—19th. The House request the Council to unite with them in appointing a Fast on account of small pox in Boston. After some delay the request is granted.

\* Sp. Ct. R.

† Prov. R.

‡ T. R.

§ Prov. R.

\* July 3d. Measures are taken to prevent the small pox's spreading to Salem from Boston. A house is appointed for those, who should take this disease.—†13th. Fast is observed here because of the small pox, which prevailed in Boston and "threatened the whole land." This disease was brought into Boston by the "Saltortugas" fleet about the middle of April. Dr. Z. Boylston began to innoculate by recommendation of C. Mather. It is well known, that Dr. Boylston, for his enterprise and perseverance on this occasion, was shamefully threatened and abused.✓†18th. Of a county rate, £150, Salem pays £19 8 2, Ipswich £20 17 3, and Newbury £17 8.

§ Aug. 4th. T. Lindall having been chosen Representative with D. Epes, declines, and P. Osgood is elected in his stead.—This new choice of Representatives was because the Governor had dissolved the House the 19th ult. and issued writs for a new one to meet the 23d inst. ||23d. A Fast is observed in the first parish meeting house, by four Congregations of the town,—because of excessive rain "whereby the hands of men have been sealed up and the fruits of the earth and the treasures of the sea (fish having been greatly wasted and endangered)."

¶ Sept. 4th. "Whereas there are many families of the Irish people, that were affrighted from their new settlements in Eastern parts, come into this town," it is ordered, "that their circumstances be inquired into and how many persons of them there are, and whether they intend to move hence or not."✓

Oct. 12th. Salem's proportion of the Province loan, £50,000, is £1330, which they agree to take. They choose T. Lindall, J. Wolcott, and William Bowditch as Trustees of this sum, to let it out at 6 per cent on real estate or personal security, and to allow no person to have less than £10 nor more than £50. The Trustees were to have one-sixth of the interest, and the remainder was for defraying town charges.

\* T. R. † Ch. R. ‡ Gen. Sess. R. § T. R. || Ch. R. ¶ T. R.

\* "Mr. Blanchandin, of the Custom House District of Salem (including this town, Marblehead, Gloucester, Ipswich and Newbury) says, that in the course of several years preceding, communibus annis, he cleared out about 80 vessels upon foreign voyages a year."

1722.

† April. The Association of ministers meet at the Village and consider the unhappy difficulties of Lynn.

‡ May 30th. General Court sit. J. Wolcot is present as Representative. William Bowditch had been chosen by the town as the other.

June 8th. A ship with 100 men, Capt. Peter Papillon, is ordered to sail on the morrow, to take a piratical brig on the coast.

19th. John, son of John Pickering dies, aged 64. He left wife, Sarah, and children, Theophilus, Timothy, Lois Orne, Sarah wife of Joseph Hardy, and Eunice. He was Selectman and Representative to the Legislature. His decease was a loss to community.

26th. The Legislature vote to have £500 worth of  
 " 1d, 2d, 3d, bills struck off for small change, The 1d bills are to be round, 2d square, 3d sex-angular.

§ July 2d. A nightly watch is to be kept at Salem fort because of "the rumor of a pirate's being near the coast."—|| 6th. Major J. Turner is on a committee to visit the Eastern Indians, and inquire of them the reasons for their late hostilities, and to propose an exchange of their hostages in Boston fort, for the English prisoners, whom they had taken.

¶ 18th. Capt. John, son of Samuel Gardner, died recently. He left wife, Elizabeth, and children, Elizabeth, Hannah, Bethiah, Ruth, Lydia, John, Daniel and Samuel. He gave one-tenth of his real estate to the poor of Salem. He served as Selectman and Representative to General Court. He was in the battle at Haverhill. He was highly and justly esteemed.

\* Douglass.  
 || Prov. R.

† Ass. of Sa. & Vi. R.

‡ Prov. R.  
 ¶ Prov. R.

§ T. R.

*Wife of John Pickering*



\* Aug. 8th. The Governor declares war against the Eastern Indians. He remarks to the House, that all should lay aside their animosities and "join in the vigorous prosecution of the weighty matters now on the carpet."—† 9th. Fast is kept here because of disturbances at the Eastward by Indians.

10th. B. Lynde is on committee "to consider what is proper to do upon the proceedings of the Council of N. York, in the affair of the Five Nations." This Committee "are of opinion that the goods already sent to Albany, as a present to the Five Nations, being made up to £500, be delivered to them at the Treaty, which is to be there made this month by two Commissioners;—and that the commissioners be instructed to renew the covenant claim with the Five Nations and engage them to be no ways assisting the Eastern Indians in their present rebellion against His Majesty King George."

Oct. 1st. John Putnam died recently. He left wife, Hannah, and children, Samuel, Priscilla, Josiah, John, Joshua, Amos, Abigail, Sarah, Rebecca, and Elizabeth Phelps. He had often been Selectman and Representative to General Court.

Nov. 13th. Daniel, son of Daniel and Elizabeth Epes, of Ipswich, dies. He was born March 24, 1649, and graduated at Harvard 1669. He married Martha, daughter of William Boardman of Cambridge, 1672. She died 1692. Mr. Epes was married again to Widow Hannah Wainwright of Ipswich 1693. She survived him. He left children, Daniel, Samuel, Elizabeth, Mary, Ruth, Margaret and Martha. He came to teach the Grammar School here 1671. While thus employed, he preached occasionally. He was an exemplary member of the First Church. He held the chief offices of the town and was Representative to General Court. He was Commissioner of Excise in Essex and a Justice of the Court of General Sessions. He was eminently useful. Dunton remarks in his journal, "I

\* Ch. R.

† Prov. R.

must remember the great civilities I met at Salem from Mr. Epes, the most eminent school master in New-England. He hath sent many scholars to the University. He is a person of solid learning. He does not make so poor a use of the world as to hug and embrace it."

\* Exchange is £270 in bills for £100 sterling.

## 1723.

† Jan. 1st. As Gov. Shute saw, that the House refused to grant him a sufficient salary,—denied his power to negative their speaker,—appointed fasts and thanksgivings and adjoured to a distant day without his leave, and assumed some of the military power, which was claimed by him,—he unexpectedly sails for London, with an intention to return in the fall.—4th. J. Wolcott and another are instructed to "go up to the Board and inquire whether they have passed on the vote of the House refering to Col. Walton and Maj. Moody." These officers had been posted at the Eastward to act against the Indians, and were charged with not conforming with their instructions.—The House maintained, that they ought to be dismissed without compensation. The Council and Governor took the opposite stand.—William Dummer, Lt. Governor, by advice of Council, granted Col. Walton and Major Moody pay for their services and discharged them from office.

‡ Feb. 21st. Fast is appointed to be March 14th, to pray for the defeat of conspiracies in favour of the Pretender and against the King and Royal family. It was reported that a plot had been discovered to destroy them on Sabbath while at Church,—to fire London in three places,—and to massacre all dissenting Congregations.

§ March 12th. The people at Will's Hill request the Village Congregation to free them from ministerial taxes, and give them leave to unite with some of Tops-

\* Douglass.

† Prov. R.

‡ Bost. N. Let.

§ Dan. R.

field, Boxford and Andover, and to have preaching among themselves.—Their petition is allowed to go into effect, when they shall have built a meeting house and settled a minister.

\* April 1st. Wheat is 9s6 for this month.

† May 29th. The Legislature meet. P. Osgood and D. Epes are Representatives. Mr. Dummer, in his speech, says, that the Troops at the Eastward, on account of the openness of the Winter, had suffered much from sickness.

‡ June 21st. Joseph Hiller is chosen Public Notary for Salem.

§ July 23d. James Thornton of Salem and others, exhibit, to the Justices, linen, manufactured by them with Province flax. His piece is the best and is valued at 5s6 a yard. He receives the bounty as specified by law.

|| Aug. 20th. B. Lynde is on a committee to congratulate delegates from the Five Nations, when they arrive in Boston. 31st. The Legislature had a conference with delegates from the Eight Nations.

Sept. 10th. They grant the last delegates £500 worth of such articles, as guns, hatchets, shirts and blankets.—26th. Fast to be Oct. 17th, because of the expensive and distressing war with the Indians and sickness in many plantations.

Nov. 6th. Thanksgiving to be Nov. 28th,—as “our sea coasts are guarded against bloody pirates and many of them are delivered into the hands of justice.”—A piratical crew had been lately executed in R. Island, who had taken forty five vessels and killed part of their men.

Nov. 14th. The House vote to employ agents in England for defending their Charter privileges against Gov. Shute’s memorial to his Majesty.

¶ Dec. 3d. Mr. Fisk and delegates sit in Council at Reading, to settle difficulties between Mr. Putnam

\* T. R.

† Journal of House.

‡ Prov. R.

§ Gen. Sess. Ct. R.

|| Prov. R.

¶ Ch. R.

1724]

and some of his people.—\* 10th. Allowance is made to a troop of horse, under Capt. D. Epes of Salem, for their late services on the Frontiers. 13th. The House vote for an expedition against "Arresaguntacook." 15th. B. Lynde and J. Turner, the surviving Commissioners of Essex for the loan of £100,000, except Walter Price, disenabled by sickness,—petition for others to help them. P. Osgood and D. Epes of Salem, and Richard Kent of Newbury, are chosen to be assistant commissioners.

1724.

Feb. 24th. Samuel, son of George Gardner, died lately. He was born May 14, 1648. He had two wives, Elizabeth, widow of Nathaniel Grafton, whom he married 1673, and a widow Daniels. He had children, George, John, and Hannah, who deceased before he did.—Hannah was wife of Jno. Higginson 3d.—Mr. Gardner had been frequently Selectman and Representative to General Court. He was a respectable merchant.

† 25th. The highest tide ever known in this country. Being attended with a storm, the tide did much damage.

‡ April 22d. The Legislature are informed by Mr. Dummer that there are a piratical sloop and ship on the Coast, and that he had ordered the ship Sea Horse and a sloop to go out in pursuit of them.

§ May 3d. The piratical sloop is brought into Boston by Andrew Haraden of Cape Ann. Her crew said, that they had taken thirty-four vessels and killed many of their men.—A few of the pirates were hung. 18th. Mr. John Coleman of London writes to his brother, minister of Boston, that Gov. Shute is likely to get his case against the Representatives of Massachusetts, and that he fears they will be deprived of their Charter, unless they are more submissive to Royal prerogatives.—|| 27th. General Court meet. D. Epes and Ichabod

\* Prov. R. † Mather. ‡ Prov. R. § Bos. N. Letter. || Prov. R.

Plaisted are Representatives. The Legislature agrees to celebrate his Majesty's birth day.

\* July 2d. Thomas Maule died lately. He married Naomy Linsey 1670. He left a second wife, Sarah, and children, of whom was John. He came from England to Barbados, when twelve years old, and thence to New England. After being in this country three years, he moved to Salem, and united himself to the Friends.—For his adherence to this denomination and the maintaining of their principles,—he was imprisoned, fined and whipped several times.—He kept a store and traded considerably.—The book, which he published, called "Truth held forth,"—and the pamphlet, intitled "the Mauler mauled,"—show him to have possessed more than a common share of intellect and information. He was highly respected by his own denomination.

† Aug. 12th. The English surprise Norridgewock and kill Ralle, the Jesuit, with eighty Indians. This Priest had been the subject of frequent remarks in General Court,—who had offered a reward several times for him, either dead or alive, because he actuated his Indian followers to hostilities against their frontiers.

‡ Oct. 5th. Price of wheat this month 10s.

§ Nov. 11th. The Legislature enact that no more scarfs shall be given at funerals,—because a burdensome custom.—30th. Col. S. Brown's account for billeting soldiers at Salem, is allowed.

Dec 24th. "The Indian scalps, now in keeping of the Treasurer, to be buried in some private place so as not to be discovered or produced again."—|| 28th. John Higginson of Salem, having been chosen Register of Deeds for Essex, takes the oath of his office.

### 1725. ✓

Jan. 26th. Mary Mathews is to be sold as a servant five years, for jail charges in Salem. ✓

¶ April 30th. "Voted that the money, contributed

\* Prov. R.

† Bos. N. Letter.

‡ T. R.

§ Prov. R.

|| Gen. Sess. Ct. R.

¶ Dan. R.

*Journal of the House of Representatives  
for the year 1725*

1725]

for the redemption of Samuel Trask from the enemy, shall be appropriated for buying a bell, and that if said Trask should be heard of and stand in need of help for his redemption, that we will contribute towards it." The Trask here mentioned, belonged to Salem Village,—and had been redeemed from the Indians by Monsieur Castin before July 9th, when he was taken away by the crew of an English bark.

\* May 26th. General Court sits. T. Lindall and D. Epes are representatives. 27th. Congregational ministers, met in Boston, petition the Legislature for a Synod. This petition was opposed by Episcopal clergy. It was put over for consideration. Orders came from England forbidding it to be allowed.—Mr. Dummer recommends voluntary enlistments instead of impressments.

† June 7th. Rev. John Rogers of Boxford, agrees to compensate the Selectmen of Salem for whatever assistance may be rendered to his parents, who were inhabitants of this town. † 10th. T. Lindall is on committee to draft a memorial to the King. 16th. Josiah Williard, captain of a company at the Westward, has his accounts allowed.

§ July 28th. The Act, passed May 26th, requiring Congregations to make up the salaries of their ministers, according to the difference between bills of credit and specie,—is read before the First Parish. Clergymen were suffering greatly by having their salary paid in Province paper money, which had fallen much below par.—|| The east parish petition the first parish to have the ministers of both parishes, supported by a general tax. The reasons of the east parish were, that they were impoverished,—that their lowest rate was 9s. while the lowest rate of the first parish was 2s6,—that their principal men, except Col. Samuel Brown, were taken away,—several of them having gone to a Marblehead Church and others moved to the first parish for the sake of a less tax.

• Prov. R.    † T. R.    ‡ Prov. R.    § Ch. R.    || Ct. C. P. R.

Oct. 17th. Major Stephen, son of Henry and Jane Sewall, dies. He was born at Badsly, England, Aug. 19th, 1657, and came over with his parents, 1661, to Newbury, where they had previously resided. He entered Harvard College, but was unable to get through with his education there.—He married Margaret, the only surviving daughter of Rev. Mr. Mitchel of Cambridge, 1682. They had seventeen children, nine of which, being five sons and four daughters, survived him.—He settled in Salem soon after his marriage. He joined the first church 1693. He was frequently of the Selectmen and was Commissioner to assess taxes. He was Clerk of the Court of Common Pleas and Register of Deeds for Essex County. He was Notary Public and Justice of the Court of General Sessions.—His remains were buried with military honours. He was a worthy and respected man.—Major Sewall's son Stephen, born Dec. 14, 1702, graduated at Harvard 1721, where he was tutor from 1728 to 1739, was an excellent preacher, but did not settle, became Chief Justice of Supreme Court, and died a member of Dr. Mayhew's Church in Boston, Sept. 10, 1760.

\* Nov. 2d. First Church represented in Council at Reading,—who remove the censure, laid on six brethren of Mr. Putnam's Church.

† Dec. 14th. Mr. Dummer sends an explanatory Charter, come from England, to the House. This Charter allowed the Governour to negative the Speaker, chosen by the Representatives and gave them liberty to adjourn, at their own option, only two days.—Thus it was against the House in two particulars, for which they had contended with Gov. Shute. 15th. Delegates from Eastern tribes of Indians, sign 'articles of peace in the Council Chamber.

### 1726.

‡ Jan. 15th. In the House there are forty-eight for receiving and thirty-two for rejecting the explanatory

\* Ch. R.

† Prev. R.

‡ N. E. Courant.

Charter. Messrs. Epes and Lindall were for its adoption.

\* March 21st. J. Higginson, I. Plaisted and Thomas Barton, as Trustees, are instructed to call in yearly one-fifth of the loan to this town, and pay it into the Province Treasury, as the law directs. ✓

April 4th. Wheat for this month is 11s.—Orders are given as to the weight of Baker's bread in this town. The 2d loaf 8oz. 4 drams; 4d loaf 16 oz. 12 dr.; 6d Wheaten loaf 2 lbs. 5 oz.; 6d household loaf 3 lbs. 2 oz. ✓

May 9th. Daniel Bacon and others petition for a swing bridge, thirty feet wide, over the Creek in South River, nigh the mill.—Their petition is granted. † 25th. General Court convene. T. Lindall and D. Epes are Representatives.—According to the Royal explanatory Charter, the House sent a Committee, of whom was D. Epes, to inform Mr. Dummer, that they had chosen a Speaker, and to request that he would confirm their choice.—Their request was granted.

June 1st. As James Ross of Salem had his collar bone split and cut off, 1690, at the capture of the fort at Casco, and had suffered much from the Indians, while their captive in Canada, he is allowed by the Legislature £5 a year.—15th. On a Province Tax of £29666 13 4, Boston pays £3657 1 8, Ipswich £563 4, Salem £528 6 4, Newbury £476 7 10, Marblehead £473 9 11.—21st. Mitchell Sewall is chosen Notary for Salem. 28th. T. Lindall is one of the Commissioners to settle difficulty between New Hampshire and Massachusetts about their boundaries. D. Epes is appointed Collector of the excise for Essex county. This excise was 8d on each gallon of distilled liquors and of wine, sold by retail. The duties on merchandize are as follow. Every pipe of wine, from Western Islands, 20s.; of Canary 30s.; of Madeira 20s.; of other wine 25s.;—Each Hhd. of Rum, of 100 gallons, 20s.; of Sugar 2s.; of Molasses 1s.; of Tobac-

• T. R.

† Prov. R.



co 20s. Every ton of Logwood 3s. For other merchandize, except what comes from Great Britain, 1d on 20s. worth. A bounty is offered for Duck or Canvas, made from Hemp and Flax of this country.

Aug. 24th. Mr. Dummer informs the House, that he has lately received from the Eastern Indians the ratification of peace. This was a judicious peace and continued considerable time.

\* Oct 22d. Among many vessels, greatly injured by a hurricane at Jamaica, P. Royal, the "Mary Gally," of Salem, Capt. Eben'r Bowditch, is driven ashore and condemned.

† Nov. 28th. T. Lindall is on a committee to consider the proposals of Gov. Burnet, about settling the boundaries between the provinces of Massachusetts and New-York.

Dec. 3d. T. Lindall is on a committee to address His Majesty on such subjects, as "preventing the French Government of Canada from influencing the Indian tribes to commit barbarities on His Majesty's subjects; and for ordering the neighbouring governments to furnish their quota of men and money in time of war."—8th. He is on committee to consider the petition of Samuel Doty and crew of the sloop Trial, showing, "that in August last he was taken in the harbour of Malagash, to Eastward of Cape Sables, by one John Baptist and others, a piratical crew; that some time after the said pirates had taken them, the petitioners rose upon them, and by the good Providence of God subdued them and brought eight of them to Boston and delivered them to justice, where they have been convicted and five of them have suffered death." The petitioners are allowed £100. 27th. John Menzies, of Lecester, member of the House and also Judge of the Vice Admiralty, is arraigned before the Representatives, to hear their resolutions with regard to what he had written home to the Lords Commissioners. He had written, that frequent prohibitions were granted by

\* Bos. N. Letter.

† Prov. R.

Provincial Judges to stop the proceedings of his Court, which he considered as defeating the ends of his office, and that it was impossible to get a jury in the country, who would do the King justice on trial. He contended, that he had stated no more than truth and than his duty required. As he would not retract, he was expelled from the House.

## 1727.

\* Feb. 6th. As the old stocks are broken and gone, new ones are to be made according to law.

March 20th. Permission is granted to William Bowditch and others, to build a wharf over flats, from Samuel Whitefoot's to a little Island in S. River, called Jeggle's Island.

May 1st. Wheat this month is 11s6.

3d. Robert Stanton, pastor of E. Church, dies, in his 30th year. He graduated at Harvard 1712. He left a wife and children. His decease was a loss to his own people and the community at large.

† May 31st. General Court meet. B. Lynde, S. Brown, J. Turner, and T. Lindall are of the Council and so continue till 1731. D. Epes and Benjamin Marston are Representatives.

June 9th. J. Turner communicates to the House the petition of some in the N. precinct of Lynn, now Lynnfield, for a settlement of difficulty between them and their minister, Nathaniel Sparhawk.

July 5th. Mr. Dummer declines to give his consent for an emission of £50,000, until he knows the King's pleasure, though the House argue, that there is no need to consult His Majesty.

Aug. 16th. As King George I. had died, Mr. Dummer desires the attendance of the House for proclaiming George Prince of Wales, King of Great Britain, France and Ireland. 17th. B. Lynde is on a committee to congratulate George II. on his accession to the throne.

Oct. 6th. Thanksgiving to be Nov. 9th, because the loss by death of his late Majesty is happily repaired, peace "prevails in our borders," our merchandize and fishery "have been preserved from the rapacious hands of barbarous pirates."

\* 18th. The First Church are represented in Council at Ipswich for ordaining Nathaniel Rogers, a colleague with his father.

29th. An earthquake occurred here on Sabbath night 40 minutes past 10.—It extended through the country. Mr. Fisk says, that there were many other shocks the same night and afterwards, especially in the N. part of the Province.—Mr. Clark, of the Village, informs us, that this earthquake was accompanied with "a terrible noise and shaking." It so affected the minds of people, that there was a great revival of religion in many congregations.

Nov. 4th. A public meeting is held in the house of the first parish, Saturday P. M. on account of the "terrible earthquake." Many attended. Mr. Fisk preached from I Peter, 4 ch. 17 and 18 vs.

† 10th. As bills of credit are scarce and taxes allowed to be paid in produce, the prices of articles in Salem are as follow:—There are two prices,—one Province and the other Town. Beef a Bbl. £3 P. price; and 2 15 T. price; Pork, £5 10; 5 5; Winter Wheat, 8s.—7s.; Summer do. 7s.—6s.; Barley and Rye, 6s.—5s.; Corn, 4s.—3s.; Oats 2s. 6d.—2s.; Flax, 1s. 4d.—1s. 2d.; Hemp, 9d.—7d.; Bees Wax, 2s. 6d.—2s. 4d.; Peas, 9s.—8s.; Firkin Butter 1s.—9d.; Dry Hides, 6d.—5d.; Tanned Leather, 1s.—11d.; Cod Fish, £1 10—1 6; Mackerel a bbl. £1 10—1 6; Oil a bbl. £2 10—2 5; Whale bone, 6 feet long, 3s. 6d.—3s. 1b.—Bayberry wax 1s. 4d.—1s. 2d.—Turpentine cwt. 13s.—11s.;—Bar iron a hund. £2 8—2. Iron pots and kettles, a hundred, £2 8—2; Tobacco, 4d. 3d.; Tried Tallow, 8d.—7d. ‡ 22d. ✓ Mr. Dummer informs the House, that the Cape Sables

\* Ch. R.

† T. R.

1728]

Indians had taken the property and the lives of some English, and carried others into captivity. He also states, that William Burnet is appointed Governor of this Province

Dec. 8th. Fast is appointed to be the 21st because of "the late amazing earthquake which still continues in some parts of the Province."—27th. D. Epes informs the Council, that the House are ready to vote for Truck masters, one at St. George's River and the other at Richmond Fort. The business of these Truck masters, who had been previously chosen, was to carry on a trade with Indians.—28th. Towards every £1000 Provincial tax, Boston paid £185; Salem, £26 14 4; Ipswich, £26 0 1; Marblehead, £22 15; Newbury, £22 2 11.

1728.

\* Feb. 19th. Mr. Dummer, after considerable delay, signs the bill for an emission of £60,000 in paper.

† April 1st. J. Higginson, I. Plaisted, and T. Barton are chosen trustees to take out £1603, Salem's proportion of the £60,000 Province loan. They are to let such a sum on former terms; to pay 4 per cent into Province treasury; 1 per cent into town treasury, and retain 1 per cent for their trouble.—9th. Each cow is to be allowed two and a half acres, and assessed 20s. and each riding horse 4 acres, and assessed 32s. for a summer on the neck. Winter Island is let to shoremen for drying fish at 5s. a vessel.

‡ May 22d. William Jennison is ordained over the E. Church. Mr. Fisk prayed; Mr. Clark, of Village, preached from Romans 1 ch. 9 verse; Mr. Blowers, of Beverly, gave charge; and Mr. Barnard, of Marblehead, gave the right hand.—§ 29th. General Court sit. B. Marston and B. Lynde jr. are Representatives.

June 11th. The Legislature vote to observe His Majesty's accession to the throne at 3 P. M.—19th. It is enacted, that Anabaptists and Friends shall be ex-

\* Prov. R.

† T. R.

‡ N. E. weekly Jo.

§ Prov. R.

empted from being taxed for the support of Congregational ministers. 20th. An act is passed to encourage the killing of wild cats, which had done much damage. The inhabitants of Salem at Wills Hill, united with some of Andover, Boxford and Topsfield, are incorporated as a town by the name of Middletown.

July 24th. General Court meet. Gov. Burnet, who arrived the 13th, addresses the House. He lays before them one of the royal instructions, which requires them to afford him at least £1000 salary. As there had been several duels lately, it is enacted, that persons concerned in a duel, whereby is no death, are to be carried publicly in a cart to the gallows with a rope round their neck and sit one hour on the gallows, and then be imprisoned a year and give bonds to keep the peace for another year; that a person, who kills another in a duel, shall suffer death, have his body buried without a coffin, with a stake driven through it, at or near the place of his execution. The body of a person, killed in a duel is to be buried in the same manner. As the duty on negroes of £4 a head, is often evaded, the masters of vessels, bringing them, are to enter them on oath to the town clerk, where they arrive and to pay him the duty. If any negro die within a year after he is imported, the duty on him is to be returned.

\* Sept. 24th. The vote of the House, as to the Governor's salary, is lodged with T. Barton, town clerk, to know the minds of the people here. The selectmen, being informed by B. Lynde, jr. that the House, since the 11th, had added £1600 to the £1400 first allowed Mr. Burnet, advised with gentlemen of the town about the vote, but did not call the inhabitants together. Mr. Burnet had not objected to the amount of these two sums, but to their not being granted as the King required.

† Oct. 31st. General Court assemble in Salem according to order of the Governor on the 24th. Before he adjourned the Court to this place he refused several of their applications for a recess, because the House

1728]

would not comply with the royal injunction as to his salary. Hutchinson relates, that Mr. Burnet said, when about to order the Court here, "there might be a charm in the names of places, and that he was at a loss whether to adjourn the Court to Salem or Concord." \* To accommodate the Legislature, "the new Town and Court House was fitted up."—Salutes are fired at the coming of the Governor into town. He informs the House, that the reason why he removed them from Boston was, that the people there endeavoured to influence Representatives from other places against granting him a salary and thus to rule the country.—The House remark, that however they apprehend, that they cannot be removed from one place to another without their own consent, they "do not refuse meeting his Excellency at this critical juncture."

Nov. 1st. The House send up their opinion, just mentioned, to the Governor, and desire him to order the Court to Boston.—6th. His Excellency ordered the Court to meet again at Salem the 12th.—14th. The House state to him, that they are greatly concerned at his dissatisfaction with them, that they had not acted from disloyalty to his Majesty, that they had not been influenced by the people of Boston, but by reasons, which would prevail with them every where, and that they still believe it irregular for them to be kept from sitting in Boston.—19th. A memorial is to be prepared for His Majesty, "setting forth the reasons why the House cannot settle a salary on the Governor for the time being."—22d. B. Lynde, jr. is on committee to desire the Governor, that he will adjourn the House. His Excellency refuses their request, because they refuse his.—28th. As the House had done no business for two days, the Council advise them to, lest it "be resented by His Majesty and have a tendency to endanger our happy constitution."

William Bowditch, merchant, dies, aged 64 and 3-4 years. He married Mary, daughter of Thomas Gard-

ner. She died 1724, aged 53. He left children, Joseph, Ebenezer, Daniel, Sarah Hathorne and Eunice. His estate was over £5298. He sustained various offices in town. He was commissioner of the Province loan and often selectman. He was representative to General Court. He was active, useful and highly respected.

\* Screwed hay 7s.cwt., Wood 24s. 8d., Oak 28s. 6d., Walnut 33s. 6d., Beef 5d., Pork 5 1-2d., Veal 6d., Wheat 8s. 6d., Rye 5s. 6d., Corn 6s., Oats 3s.

Dec. 12th. The House, having refused to do any business from the 25th ult. till this date, because they believed, that, by the law of 1698, they ought to sit only in Boston,—are adjourned by the Governor to the Ship Tavern for more convenient accommodation.

13th. According to advice of a committee from the Council, the House conclude, on the whole, to legislate on the necessary business before them.—20th. His Excellency desires the House to deliver him a copy of their memorial to the King, but they refuse. They choose Jonathan Belcher, bound to England, to co-operate, as their agent, with Mr. Wilks. The Governor prorogues the Legislature to meet Feb. 5th, at the Court House in Salem.

† Exchange is £340 in bills for £100 sterl.

### 1729.

‡ Feb. 28th. Prices of Provision and grain :—Beef 6d., Veal 7d., Mutton 8 to 9d., Pork 6 to 7d., Wheat 10s., Rye 6s., Corn 6 to 6s. 6d., Oats 3 to 4s. ✓

§ March 13th. John Nutting, master of the Grammar School, is to have £20 salary for five years to come. Col. S. Brown gives £240 for three schools in the body of the town, viz. Grammar School £120; Reading, writing and cyphering school, £60, and woman's school, £60. B. Lynde jr. gives the G. School £20. The town render these benefactors their sincere thanks. ✓

\* M. S. Mass. H. Coll. † Douglass. ‡ M. S. Mass. H. Coll. § T. B.

\* April 2d. General Court meet in Salem. The Governor renews his call on the House as to fixing his salary. He assures them, that all expectation of his deviating from the King's instruction will be fruitless. He concludes, "as I kept you together in the Fall that you might avoid His Majesty's displeasure, until you put it out of my power to excuse you, by sending home a declaration that must have been highly offensive to him, so now I give you an opportunity, which this House will never have again, of retracing and retrieving so unhappy measures, and of showing that your professions of duty and loyalty to His Majesty are more than words."—4th. The question, "whether the House will come into any further consideration of settling a salary on the Governor at this session," is put and decided in the negative.—10th. A committee of the House, chosen Dec. 20th, to report on the message of the Council of the 10th of the same month, regret, that the Council have taken a stand against them by taxing them with mistaken views about the Court's being moved to Salem and with endangering the Constitution and ill-treating His Excellency. 12th. The Council inform the House, that they non-concur with the vote of 10th inst. for £300 sterl. to be paid Messrs. Wilks and Belcher for presenting and advocating the memorial of the House to the King. The Council say that their reasons for this are,—that the House would not give them a copy of their memorial and that they had incorrectly stated in the memorial, that the Council were opposed to a fixed and definite salary for the Governor.—16th. Rev. S. Fisk is allowed £10 for officiating as chaplain to the Council and House the last and present session.—The House return thanks to William Foy, William Clark and John Alford, of Boston, and others, for subscribing money to compensate the Agents in London for proceeding with their memorial to His Majesty, and also promise that they will endeavour to have the sum, thus raised to be paid in season.



17th. "A petition of Francis Gahtman, of Salem, Chyrurgeon, shewing, that by order of this Government, 1704, Capt. Larramore and others were sent to England to receive their tryals, as accessaries to Quelch's piracy, he was sent over with them, and in his passage was taken and carried captive into France and lost his cloathing, books, chyrurgeon's chest and instruments, to a considerable value, praying for such relief as the Court shall think proper. Referred to next May session." 18th. The Governor informs the House, that his proceedings had been approved by the Lords Commissioners, that he had not ordered them any pay, because they had refused to do business one third of their sessions and to compensate him, as the King required; and that "what has been hitherto done may be charged on this House of Representatives only; but the Country will now have an opportunity by a new choice of showing their loyalty to His Majesty as well as faithfulness to their own Constitution." He dissolves the Legislature. \*22d. B. Lynde, senior, of Salem, sits for the first time, Chief Justice of the Supreme Court.

Josiah Wolcot, merchant, dies about this time. He married Penelope Curwin, 1685, and Mary Feek, of Boston, 1694. He left children. He was frequently Selectman and Representative to the Legislature. He was Justice of the Court of Sessions and of Common Pleas. He was extensively useful and much respected.

† May 12th. As the Legislature are about to meet in the Court House, there is a vote to have it painted. It is ordered, that a hired watch of two or four men, be ordered to the bellman's watch for Election week, to prevent disorders, which "may arise from so great a concourse of people as usually there are on such public occasions."—† 28th. The Legislature meet in the Court House here. D. Epes and B. Lynde, jr. are Representatives.—† Mr. Wise, of Berwick, preaches the Election Sermon from Romans 13 ch. 4 vs.—Im-

mediately after the Council is formed, His Excellency prorogues the Court to June 25th, without delivering any message.

\* July 7th. The people here vote, that, as the Governor had given no order to pay the Representatives the last political year, Messrs. Marston and Lynde, of this body, should be compensated out of the town treasury, on condition, that, if they should be paid by the Province, they would refund what they have of Salem.—The town tax for poor, highways, &c. is £350.—† 10th. The General Court having sat at Salem from June 25th, without having any communication from the Governor, as to public business, are adjourned by him to meet Aug. 21st at Cambridge.—‡ 16th. Capt. Wm. Cash, having arrived here in a Salem brig from Ireland, with 161 passengers, gives a list of them and their circumstances to the selectmen. Of these passengers were men, who had families and indented servants, and who were of good report. Robert Noyes, the merchant, and the captain, give bonds of £500 to secure the town against charges for 19 of the passengers.

§ Aug. 6th. The organization of the First Church, exactly 100 years before, is commemorated here. “There were 13 ministers present and a considerable confluence of people both from this place and towns about.”—|| 21st. General Court meet at Cambridge. The Governor informs the House, that they were considered in England as acting disloyally, and that his difficulty with them should be laid before Parliament. ¶ 22d. Walter Price is appointed by William Tailor, Deputy Naval Officer in Salem, in room of B. Lynde, jun.—28th. Thomas Robie, M. D. dies, in his 41st year. He was born in Boston. He graduated at Harvard College, 1707, where he was tutor and fellow several years. He left wife Mehitable, and children, Mehitable, William and Elizabeth. He was learned and respectable in his profession.

\* T. R. † Hutch. ‡ T. R. § Ch. R. || Hutch. ¶ N. E. Weekly Jo.

Sept. 7th. Gov. Burnet dies of a fever in Boston. He was son of the celebrated Bishop Burnet, and was born March, 1688. S. Brown, of Salem, was one of six who attended as bearers, at his funeral. Mr. Burnet was taken away in the midst of a difficult and growing controversy with the Representatives.—\* 8th. B. Lynde, jr. is on a committee of the House, to make preparation for the Governor's funeral. This was ordered as follows:—His two sons, daughter and sisters, Mr. Langlazary, French tutor to his children, George Burnet, his steward, and his servants, to be dressed in mourning; his "coach and coach horses and a led horse to be put into mourning;" the present members of Council and House, ministers of King's Chapel in Boston, three doctors and bearers, President of College, women who laid out the corpse, to have gloves and rings; 12 under bearers, Justices of Peace, Captains of castle and man of war, Officers of Custom House, Professors and Fellows of College, to have gloves, and ministers, besides those of King's chapel, who attend, to have gloves; the wives of those, who have rings, are to have gloves, if attending the funeral; guns at the Castle and Battery to be discharged; wine needful to refresh Boston regiment under arms to be provided; this regiment to have usual mourning, its field officers to have gloves and rings, and its other commissioned officers to have gloves; "the door keepers of his Excellency and this Court to be put into mourning." The expenses of this funeral were £1097 11 3.—† 10th. Mr. Fisk, and Dea. P. Osgood and John Nutting, are on council for the ordination of James Osgood over the Church at Stoneham. Mr. Osgood, thus ordained, was son of Dea. P. Osgood, and was a member of the First Church here.

‡ Nov. 26th. The Village Church grant dismission to eight males and sixteen females to help form the Church at Middleton. They are, also, represented at the ordination of Andrew Peters over the Middleton Church.

\* Prov. R.

† Ch. R.

‡ Vill. Ch. R.

1730]

\* Dec. 10th. Mr. Fisk, Dea. P. Osgood and Thomas Barton are of the Council, who ordain Joseph Champney over the first Church of Beverly.

1730.

Jan. 24th. William, son of John Gedney, dies, aged 62. He married Hannah Gardner, 1690. He left widow, Elizabeth and children, Bartholomew and Hannah Grant; and grand children, William Gedney and Elizabeth Davie. He was selectman, long the Town Treasurer, and a Justice of the General Sessions Court. He deserved and received public confidence.

† Feb. An inhabitant had been fined 20s. for not attending public worship; but as he was poor and had promised reformation, the sum was remitted to him.

March 16th. The swing bridge over the Creek near S. Mills, is taken into the town's hands.

‡ May 27th. General Court meet at Cambridge. B. Lynde, jr. and Jonathan Wolcot are Representatives.—29th. The Legislature vote to make preparations to receive Jonathan Belcher, as successor to Gov. Burnet. He reached Boston the beginning of August.—80th. As the small pox prevailed in Boston and members of the Legislature were exposed to it, Lt. Gov. Dummer adjourns them.

§ Aug. 19th. Village Church is represented on Council at Lynn, for dismissing Rev. Nathaniel Sparhawk from this people.—|| 31st. Wheat 11s., Rye 8s., Corn 5s. 4d., Oats 3s., Barley 6s. 6d., Pork a bbl. £10, Beef a bbl. £5, Beef 8d. lb. Mutton 8d., Lamb 9d., Veal 8d.

¶ Sept. 9th. The Legislature sit at Cambridge. Gov. Belcher informs the House, that if they refuse him a salary, as demanded by the King, their conduct will be laid before Parliament. He also states to them, that the King considered them, as having attempted, by unwarrantable practices, to weaken, if not cut off obe-

\* Ch. R. † T. R. ‡ Prov. R. § Vil. Ch. R.  
|| M. S. in Mass. H. Coll. ¶ Prov. R.

dience, which they owe to the Crown and the dependence, which all Colonies are expected to have on the mother country. The House, however, refuse to comply with his wishes.

Oct. 7th. The Legislature, having been adjourned by the Governor, because of small pox in Boston, meet at Roxbury.—\* 16th. Doct. Geo. Jackson, of Salem, had visited the people of Marblehead, sick with the small pox.

Dec. 23d. The S. Ferry to Marblehead is to be stopped because the small pox prevails there.

† £380 in Province bills for £100 sterling.

### 1731.

‡ Feb. 10th. General Court assemble in Boston.—25th. French and German Protestants, who live in the Province and have acted loyally, petition for the privileges of His Majesty's naturally born subjects. Their petition is granted 16th of March.

March 13th. B. Lynde and T. Lindall, of the Council, are on board of conference between the Assistants and Representatives about the Governor's salary. The Representatives, in a few days, refuse to fix his salary.—§15th. Baker's Island and the Misery are sold to Hon. John Turner and Benjamin Marston, Esq. on such terms, as they and the committee of the town may comply with.—The income of the price of this property is to be for the Grammar School.

|| April 2d. General Court give thanks to Benjamin Colman for his sermon and desire a copy of it. It was preached the day before on the occasion of Thomas Hollis' death, of London, "who (as the Court say) has merited highly of this government and people by his liberal benefactions to Harvard College for the promotion of learning and religion in this province."

¶ 5th. Walter, son of John and Sarah Price, had died lately. He was born May 17, 1676, and graduated at H. College 1695. He married Freestone,

\* T. R. † Douglass. ‡ Prov. R. § T. R. || Prov. R. ¶ Prov. R.

1731]

daughter of John Turner, March 30, 1699. She died June 14, 1714, in her 37th year. He was published to Elizabeth, daughter of William Hirst, Feb. 4, 1716. She survived him. He left two children, Sarah and Elizabeth, and grand children of his son John, deceased. He was often selectman. He was a Captain in the battle at Haverhill 1708. He was a Commissioner of the Province loan for Essex, and Naval Officer for the port of Salem. He followed in the useful and honourable path of his ancestors.

\* 12th. B. Lynde, sen. is on a Committee to consider a printed sermon, "said to be preached at Southborough, Dec. 21st, by John Greenwood, pastor of Church at Rehoboth, at the ordination of Nathan Stone, pastor of Church at Southborough, which the House apprehend may have a tendency to subvert the good order of the churches and towns within this Province."

May 26th. The Legislature meet. B. Lynde, senior, and J. Turner, are of the Council and so continue till 1737. D. Epes and B. Lynde, jr. are Representatives. Mr. Fisk, of Salem, preaches the Election sermon. He remarks, "We are now entering on the second century of choosing Magistrates in Massachusetts."

† June 21st. Samuel, son of William Brown, is buried. He was born Oct. 8, 1669. He married Eunice, daughter of John Turner, 1696. For his second wife, he married Abigail, daughter of John Keach, merchant, of Boston, 1706. She died Feb. 8th, 1725, and left three sons, Samuel, William, and Benjamin. "The Gov. and Lt. Governor and a great number of distinguished persons" attended his funeral. He bequeathed £70 to First Church for purchasing a silver flagon; £44 to four ministers of Salem; £100 to poor within Town Bridge; £50 to G. School; £50 to reading and writing school; £50 for a woman's school for poor children; £60 to H. College to purchase a handsome plate with his coat of arms upon it; and, also, to said College about 200 acres of land and the

buildings thereon in Hopkinton, the "income thereof always to be for bringing up some poor scholar or scholars, more especially such as his sons, and their posterity may recommend."—He left a large personal and real estate. He sustained many offices. He was ~~often~~ selectman, and long of the House and Council. He was Justice of the General Sessions Court, and of the Court of Common Pleas. "He was a wise and faithful assertor of his country's interests." ✓

\* Sept. 14th. It is put to vote, whether the town will consider what has been lately published by order of the House of Representatives, about the supply of the public treasury. The vote is passed in the negative. The supply, here spoken of, was to be made by taxes on polls and estates of the towns in the Province, to pay the sum, which the Representatives considered as due to Gov. Belcher. As their mode of compensating him, was not according to Royal instructions, he still declines to accept their appropriations.

† Dec. 3d. B. Lynde, jr. is on committee of the House, to consider what farther may be done, to assist their agent, Mr. Wilks, in London, to oppose any endeavours, in favour of Barbadoes and other Sugar Islands,—which may tend to impair the trade of this Province.—‡ 5th. Sarah Odel is received into the First Church. "She was deaf and dumb, but quick to understand by signs."—§ 9th. B. Lynde, jr. is of a committee to report on the memorial of Roger Price, "Commissary of the Episcopal Churches in New England," for a law to relieve Episcopalians, as there had been for Quakers and Baptists. This petition was granted 6th of January, with certain restrictions—¶ 31st. The House order £200 to be paid the Selectmen of Edgarton, to relieve the Palatines, lately brought into Martha's Vineyard. These foreigners came from Rotterdam, and intended to land in Pennsylvania, but the captain of the vessel, in which they embarked, did not comply with his contract.

\* T. R.

† Prov. R.

‡ Ch. R.

§ Prov. R.

## 1732.

Jan. 7th. Thomas and Hannah Dustan, of Haverhill, state, in a petition to the Legislature, that they have suffered great injuries from the Indians in the late wars ; that she was carried into captivity in 1697 by them, at which time, by the assistance of another woman, she killed and scalped *ten* Indians, for which service they had a reward from the Province. They also state, that, as they have grown old and are in low circumstances, they desire help. The Court order that 200 acres of unappropriated land, be laid out for them. 29th. The House vote, that the French, who had built at Crown Point, should, if necessary, be forcibly driven thence, because the said Point belongs to the English. French encroachments had been much complained of previously.

\* April 29th. Wheat 8s. to 9s., Rye 6s. to 6s. 6d., Corn 5s. 6d. to 6s. 6., Oats 3s. 6d. to 4s., Malt 7s., Beef 7 1-2 to 9d., Mutton 8d., Veal 6 to 9d.

May 31st. General Court assemble. D. Epes and B. Brown are Representatives. ✓

June 9th. A petition in favour of the surviving soldiers and heirs of those dead, who fought in the Narraganset war above fifty years ago, had been presented to the Legislature as early as 1728, and is now confirmed for two townships of land. Five more townships were voted to the same persons April 26, 1733. To these grants some of the inhabitants of Salem had a proportionate claim.

July 5th. To co-operate with the Society of Scotland for propagating Christian knowledge among the Indians, the Legislature order, that there be three missionaries for five years, each of them to have £100 salary, if stationed, as follows, one at the Truck House on St. George's River, another at Richmond Fort, and the third at the Block House above Northfield, and there serve as chaplains and missionaries.—† 10th. J. Turner of the Council, and B. Brown, of the House, are

\* M. S. in Mass. His. Coll.

† Bos. Weekly Jo.



among the persons, designated to attend the Governor in his interview with Eastern Indians at Falmouth 20th instant.

\* Aug. 1st. Town tax is £500. † There are 520 houses, 1200 taxable polls, and 5000 inhabitants in Salem.—‡“ Very broad brim’d hats were worn. My father had a beaver whose brims were at least seven inches. They were all cocked triangularly. Pulling them off by way of salutation was invariably the fashion by all who had any breeding.”

### 1733.

§ Jan. 10th. The First Church is represented in Council for ordaining John Warren over Wenham Church. Two more churches of Salem, first and third of Ipswich, and two of Beverly are present. Mr. Samuel Wigglesworth preaches from Heb. 13 ch. 17 verse. Mr. Warren was born at Roxbury, Sept. 18, 1704; graduated at Harvard College 1725; and died July 19, 1749.

|| March 31st. Beef is 6 1-2 to 8d., veal 8d. to 10d., mutton 8d. to 9d., pork 9d., corn 7s. to 7s. 6d., rye 8s. to 9s., wheat very scarce.

¶ May 30th. General Court meet. D. Epes and B. Brown are Representatives.—31st. The Governor in his speech to the House says: “ In obedience to His Majesty, I must inform you, he still expects, that you make provision for the support of His Government according to his Royal instructions.”

June 6th. The question is proposed, whether the House will grant the Governor a fixed salary, and they passed it unanimously in the negative.—14th. The Governor informs the House, that the act which they had passed for supplying the Treasury, could not receive his assent.—15th. The House have the question before them, “ Whether they will project any other method for the supplying of the Treasury, than the bill

\* T. R. † Bentley. ‡ Memoir of E. A. Holyoke. § Wen. Ch. R.  
|| M. S. in Mass. His. Coll. ¶ Prov. R.

1733]

already passed both Houses this session for that purpose," and they decide it in the negative.

\* July 17th. Of eleven churches, invited by members of Mr. Fisk's church, who were dissatisfied with him, ten are represented in a Council, which sit here. It appears, that so long before as Dec. 15, 1718, a regular vote was passed by brethren of First Church to see about having a lecture preached, which as they remark, had been ever since the formation of their Church. This lecture was suspended at the decease of Messrs. Curwin and Noyes. On Dec. 25th, the brethren met, and some thought it would be well to have a lecture begin, and others to have it delayed. Upon what was said, Mr. F. recorded a vote, either at the time of its being passed or afterwards, in favour of reviving the lecture.—About two months after this meeting, Mr. F. began his lecture and continued it till Feb. 1726, when he discontinued it,—assigning as a reason, that it was very thinly attended. His doing of this produced dissatisfaction among his people. Some of them endeavoured to have the lecture revived. March, 1728, Mr. F. preached on vows to God and the sin of breaking them, and then referred his hearers to the vote of Dec. 25, 1718, as a vow, which had been broken.—April 1st. A majority of the Church met about this sermon.—10th. A committee of them waited on Mr. F. concerning its doctrine, as applied to them, and stated to him, that they considered what was said at the Church meeting nearly ten years before, about a lecture, was not sufficient for him to put down the vote, with respect to it, as he had. From this there were various means proposed by Mr. F. and his friends, and by the persons dissatisfied with him, for settling their difficulties.—1732—March 16th. Fourteen brethren exhibited charges against Mr. F. as to the vote and sermon.—23d. Mr. F. wished to know if they had brought all their charges against him.—27th. They said they had not mentioned some things, because they were only requi-

site to explain or prove their charges. Hence, Mr. F. declined to call a Church meeting, as they proposed, till they should present every particular which they had against him.—Nov. 8th. Ten brethren who had withdrawn from communion with Mr. F., sent a committee to advise with Boston ministers.—20th. These ministers desired the brethren to examine themselves and see whether they had done right in withdrawing, and to strive for healing their divisions.—1733. April 23d. The Pastors of seven churches in Boston informed Mr. F., that they had been applied to by part of his Church to assemble in Salem, as a Council, July 17th—At this date, as previously stated, these seven and three other churches, having formed themselves into a Council, received a letter from Mr. F. wherein he disclaimed the need of their session and their right to settle the troubles of his Church. They, however, proceeded in their examination of the complaints against him; and, on 20th, gave their result. This result justified the brethren, who called the Council; but advised them to become reconciled with their Pastor, and use endeavours for union in his Church.

\* Aug. 15th. The Governor remarks to the House, that His Majesty's Order in Council, as an answer to their address, and the order of the House of Commons, as an answer to their memorial, were so full as to their supplying of the Treasury, as to leave them no excuse for their delay. In reference to this subject, General Court had petitioned the King, that he would so alter his instructions to their Governor as not to have the royal consent necessary before their acts for raising a revenue could be legal. In reply to them the King remarks: "His Majesty doth declare and signify his high displeasure at these repeated applications upon points, which have been already maturely considered by His Majesty in Council." The instructions, about which the Legislature had petitioned the King, had been given, because as his Majesty's Council remark:

\* Prov. R.

"A pernicious practice had prevailed in several Plantations of America for issuing bills of credit instead of money, to pay public debts. Hence great inconveniences arose in depreciation of bills. His late Majesty sent instructions to all his Governors in America, and among them Gov. Shute, in 1720, to order them not to give their assent for printing and issuing bills of credit, unless the act for them have a clause to denote, that it is not valid without his Majesty's consent, excepting acts for raising and settling revenue to pay charges of government."—16th. "Whereas this Province is under the manifest tokens of Divine displeasure, particularly with respect to the difficulties, attending the public affairs at this time," the House desire the Governor to appoint a day of prayer and humiliation.—21st. The Council propose, that a Fast be kept on Friday in their chamber by the whole Court. The House decline to comply with their proposal.

Oct. 5th. On the question, whether the House will conform with His Majesty's order, as to supplying the Treasury, they voted in the negative.—19th. The Council send the following to the House: "This Court being informed, that a number of merchants and traders of Boston are engaged in a project to emit bills or notes on their own credit, to the value of £110,000, and that the Colony of R. Island are making a very large emission of bills, whereby it is apprehended the public bills of this Province, which are already too much depreciated, may be affected, and it being the duty and interest of this government by all means to keep up the value of the bills of credit by them established," voted, that a committee of their body join a committee of the House to report what is proper to be done.—22d. The Council vote to send and inquire of William Wanton, Governor of R. Island, as to the large emission of bills of credit on that Colony, which are feared, as tending to depreciate the bills of Massachusetts.—30th. The House vote to supply the Treasury with £76,500 in bills of credit, for discharging public debts. Twenty-

five Representatives are against and fifty for this act.  
 \* William Fairfax, of Salem, is a receiver of the duties for the support of the Royal Hospital, at Greenwich. These duties appear to have been assessments laid on seamen. Every fisherman paid 6d. a month for the Hospital.

† Nov. 2d. The Governor, having the opinion of the Council, that the late act of the House, for supplying the Treasury, might be considered as agreeing with his Majesty's order, remarks to the House—"How much strife had it prevented and how great a change, and how happy had it been for this Province, if former Assemblies had come into the same wise and just way of thinking you are now fallen upon."—He recommends to the House, that they vote such a sum, as was justly due Gov. Burnet, to his children. He observes to them, that a step of this kind would tend to establish them "in the Royal grace and favour." They accordingly vote £3000.

‡ The Episcopal Church of Salem is built this year. The land belonging to it, was valued at £120. P. English and children, with other family connexions, who were owners of the land, gave £95 of its worth, and, for the rest, they took a pew.

#### 1734.

§ Feb. 9th. A memorial of the officers, soldiers and heirs of persons deceased, who belonged to Essex and were in public service in 1690, under Sir William Phipps, is presented to the Legislature, praying, that they might be compensated for their "great misfortunes and fatigues, which they underwent in the expedition to Port Royal."—28th. The Legislature agree to celebrate Queen Caroline's birth day on the morrow.

|| March 18th. As the inhabitants of S. Village stated, that a chief reason why they had requested to be set off as a town by themselves, was that they had trouble about getting money for a school, it is voted,

\* Sp. Ct. R.    † Prov. R.    ‡ Ep. Ch. R.    § Prov. R.    || T. R.

that two schools be kept within the bridge, one at the middle precinct, and one at S. Village, and also one at Ryal Side.

\* April 11th. As the Governor informed the House, January 25th, that a universal war in Europe was expected and that fortifications, on the sea-board, should be repaired, they order, that as soon as Salem shall thoroughly repair Fort Ann, mount fifteen cannon, and provide suitable carriages for them, and other warlike materials, £600 in bills shall be granted towards the expense of such things.—15th. The House are informed, that the King had nullified their act of April, 1731, for paying the members of the General Court, which raised each Counsellor's pay to 10s. and each Representative's from 4s. to 6s. a day, while in session.

May 28th. General Court meet. B. Brown and D. Epes are Representatives.

† June 4th. Caleb Pickman is killed by lightning, while standing at his mother's door in main street. He was son of Benjamin and Abigail Pickman, and born June 10th 1715.—‡ 5th. B. Lynde, senior, is on commitment to draft an address to the King, congratulating him "on the marriage of the Princess Royal with His Most Serene Highness the Prince of Orange."

§ July 16th. A council, called by some a synod, and by others the grand council, meet in Salem, with reference to the difficulties of the First Church. To understand the object of such a session, it is requisite to mention some particulars not yet stated. May 3, 1733, Mr. Fisk informs the brethren of his church, who were dissatisfied with him, that if they will prove their accusation against him, he will give them satisfaction; but if they cannot prove it, they shall give him satisfaction; and if he and they could not agree about the sufficiency of proof, he was ready to ask the opinion of others. He states to them, that this is the only method of issue, in which he will consent to join.—Dec. 20th. Twenty-one brethren of Mr. F's church write to second

\* Prov. R.    † T. R.    ‡ Prov. R.    § Nar. of Eccl. Con.

church of Boston and invite them to deal with his church, according to Cambridge Platform, because they would not settle their differences, and, therefore, walked disorderly.—1734, Feb. 6th. The second church of Boston admonish the First Church here, and desire them to confer with their messengers on 20th.—13th. Brethren, friendly to Mr. F., being eighteen, write to second church of Boston, and express to them their surprise, that they should be giving heed to their other brethren respecting difficulties of First Church here. 14th. Mr. F. also writes to the second church of Boston, disapproving of their interference.—20th. Joshua Gee and Samuel Mather, of the second church of Boston, wait on Mr. F. and his friends, who decline to hear them as delegates of an offended church, because they had no voice in calling them.—21st. These delegates leave a letter of admonition to First Church, as the leading step of discipline according to Platform. April 23d. According to second step with an offending church, the second church of Boston, having invited the third church there, the church of Rumney Marsh, and first church of Gloucester, to sit in Council at Salem, holds a session here with these other churches.—25th. This Council leave an admonitory letter for the First Church, which Mr. F. and his friends decline to receive.—May 27th. The brethren, calling themselves aggrieved, write Mr. Cheever, of Rumney Marsh, as Moderator of the late Council, that their other brethren had given them no satisfaction, and that they wished further means used for such an object.—June 19th. The churches which composed the Council, that sat here April 23d, inform Mr. F. that they had sent letters to twenty-seven other churches, having thirty ministers, to sit in Council at Salem, as a third way of discipline. The Council, having met, as before mentioned, was composed of delegates from nineteen churches, from which there were seventeen ministers. They vote, that each Elder shall have but a single vote, and that a majority of their body shall decide any question.

The four churches, which had called the Council, desired them to say, whether they had injured Mr. F. or any of his church; and, if not, to join with them in convincing him and them of their error; and bear testimony against his and their refusal to unite with the other brethren in an attempt to settle their difficulties. 17th. Mr. F. and his church being desired by Council to attend their session, he answered "that as he had always declared against the third way of communion and therefore had all along refused to have any thing to do in this way, so he still declared against it and refused to have any thing to do in this matter." As a majority of the Council voted, that it was inexpedient to have laid before them the proposal of Mr. F., made to his dissatisfied brethren, May 3, 1733, and the proceedings of the Council the following July 17th, Rev. Messrs. Tufts of Newbury, Wigglesworth of Ipswich, Chipman of Beverly, Barnard and Holyoke of Marblehead, withdrew and declined to act with the Council. The delegates of these ministers appear to have withdrawn, except those of Mr. Holyoke. \* Mr. Barnard informed his Church, that several other elders were discontented, because the documents requested, were not produced, but still continued to join with the Council. The Council decided, that the steps taken by the four churches, in reference to Salem Church, were according to the Word of God and acknowledged principles of Congregationalism. The delegates of the four churches were then invited to join with the Council in future proceedings.—18th. A committee requested Mr. F. and his church to confer with the Council at the Town House, 3 o'clock, P. M. They reported, that Mr. F. declined their invitation; that but one or two of his friends thought of appearing; and that the dissatisfied brethren would attend. Mr. Samuel Ruck, of Mr. F's supporters, requested the Council to have Mr. F's proposal for reconciliation, previously called for, considered by their body. They complied

\* Marb. 1st Ch. R.



so far with his request, as to have it read, but voted to consider it no further.—20th. The Council voted to adopt a letter of advice to First Church and adjourn to 15th of Oct. This letter advised Mr. F. and both his friends and opposers to settle their difficulties, during the adjournment, on pain of excommunication from the churches composing the Council. It is signed by Nehemiah Walter of Roxbury as Moderator. \* 31st. Corn 6s. 6d. to 7s., rye 7s. 6d., oats 3s., wheat 10s to 11s., beef 8d. to 9d., lb. and £4 to £4 10 bbl., pork £5 10 to £8 bbl., hay 5s. to 5s. 6d. cwt.

† Aug 16th. Twenty-four brethren, friendly to Mr. Fisk, propose to the other brethren, considering themselves aggrieved, that the lecture, which they used to have, should be revived.—20th. Seventeen of the aggrieved brethren answer, that they wish to settle their difficulty about the vote recorded by Mr. F., as to the suspended lecture, before they unite in its renewal.—29th. The brethren, favourable to Mr. F., state to the other brethren, that, until they bring a plain accusation against him and lay it before him in writing with proof, they consider them as preventing a reconciliation in the Church,—they declare it as their serious opinion, that their reasons for withdrawing from communion, are unwarrantable ; and concluded, “ we expect you will not write to us again in this affair, until you have complied with our Pastor’s proposals, which we think are reasonable and scriptural.”

Oct. 15th. The Ecclesiastical Council meet, according to adjournment, in Salem Town House. Jeremiah Wise, Pastor of Berwick Church, is chosen Moderator. The Council inquire whether their committee had delivered their letter to Salem Church. The committee answer, that Mr. F. and Dea. P. Osgood declined to receive the letter, but that they left it with the dissatisfied brethren.—The Council invite Mr. F. and his friends to attend on their deliberations, but they decline.—13th. The Council declare to all the churches

\* M. S. in Mass. His. Coll.

† Nar. of Eccl. Con.

through the Province that the First Church in Salem (i. e. the majority who had favoured Mr. F.) have forfeited the privilege of communion with the churches, represented in their body. They, however, delay to pronounce sentence of non-communion against said Church for three months; but if, after this delay, the said Church refuses to hearken, they advise their own churches, which should accept their result, and all the churches of the Province to declare the sentence of non-communion against said Church.—The Council recommend to the communion of their own and other churches in the Province, twenty-three of the brethren, who were dissatisfied with Mr. F. Mr. Prescott, and his delegate dissented from this result. The Council remove to the Meeting House of First Parish and have their result read to a numerous auditory; and order copies of it to be delivered to the several parties concerned.

\* Dec. 4th. Fast is observed in the First Parish on proposal of Mr. Fisk, for revival of religion in the world, this land and neighbourhood, and particularly on account of his Society's difficulties.—A. M. Mr. Warren prayed. Mr. Fisk preached from 80th Ps. 14 verse. P. M. Mr. Champney prayed. Mr. Clark preached from Jer. 32 ch. 39 verse. On this occasion there was a large assembly.—† 31st. "As wars in America between French and English had been carried on barbarously by surprising men, women and children at their lawful business, contrary to all methods of war both ancient and modern," the Representatives vote that the Governor agree with the French Governor of Canada to preserve a neutrality, or, if war, to carry it on less inhumanly, and, also, that he propose this subject to other Provincial Governors. A petition of Salem is presented to the Legislature, through their Representatives, stating, "Whereas Salem is a most ancient town of Massachusetts Province, and very much straightened for land, its inhabitants pray, that a tract of land may

\* Ch. R.

† Prov. R.

be given them at the head of the main branch of Swift River, southward of the new township of Paquoig." Their petition is granted on the conditions, that one lot for the first settled minister, one for the ministry, and one for a school, be reserved; that each grantee give a bond of £25, that he will be on the spot, and have a house seven feet stud, and eighteen square, at least, seven acres laid down for English grass so as to be mowed, help build a meeting house and settle a minister, within five years; and each grantee to pay £5 on his admission to be of the settlers, towards the expense of surveying the township. A considerable number of townships had been granted on similar conditions.

## 1735.

\* March 10th. Persons of the First Parish here, disaffected with Mr. Fisk, vote to use endeavours for his exclusion from their meeting house and for employing another preacher.—† 17th. Gardner and Gatchell have leave to build a mill on Forest River, provided they give a good way through their own land, make and maintain a suitable cart bridge over the River at their own expense.

‡ April. As persons belonging to New Hampshire, had issued promissory notes, payable in bills of New-Hampshire, Connecticut, R. Island, and Massachusetts, or in gold, silver and hemp, "at the unknown price they may be in Portsmouth 1647," the Legislature forbid them to be taken in trade, on penalty of the sum received and also treble its value.—§ 18th. The brethren, opposed to Mr. Fisk, vote to dismiss him and hire Samuel Mather of Boston to supply their pulpit.—27th. The same brethren and part of the Congregation assemble in the meeting house on the Sabbath to worship. Mr. Fisk and a number of his friends also meet there. As he is going to enter his pulpit, he is told that if he persists he will be prevented. After some time, he withdraws and requests the audience to follow him.

\* Gen. Sess. Ct. R.    † T. R.    ‡ Prov. R.    § Gen. Sess. R.

In the afternoon, he appears in the meeting house with his supporters, and tries to enter the pulpit, but is hindered. He then desires silence and begins to pray, but such is the confusion, he stops. Perceiving himself not allowed to conduct the worship, he retires.

May 6th. Mr. Fisk gives bonds for his appearance at Court to answer for attempting to preach in his pulpit. James Ruck and Timothy Pickering, members of his church, are his sureties.—\* 28th. General Court meet. D. Epes and B. Brown are Representatives.

† Sept. 1st. Walter Hamilton in a contest with Cuffee, a negro servant of John Clark, merchant, of Salem, so wounds him with shot from his gun, that he dies in a few minutes. Hamilton was tried for murder, but cleared.

‡ Oct. 31st. Beef 8d., veal 9d., ✓ mutton, lamb and pork 8d., wheat 12s., rye 8s., corn 6s. 6d., oats 3s., flour 48s. bbl., cyder 10s. bbl., hay 5s. to 5s. 6d. cwt., butter 18d. to 20d.

§ Nov. 10th. The Province tax of Salem is £930 11 4. In reference to this tax, the people here pass the following :—"Whereas there is an additional sum of £200 laid on this town above and beyond their equal proportion of the land tax, on account of the proposed impost's being lowered—Voted, that D. Epes and B. Brown be directed to make a just representation of the great decay of the fishery, and the grievous burthen on the W. India trade, by reason of the late act of Parliament, imposing a heavy duty on the goods imported from the Islands, called foreign ; and the great sums drawn from us towards the support of the Greenwich hospital ; the growing charge on account of the increase of the poor among us ; together with the great uncasiness among the tradesmen, farmers and other inhabitants not immediately concerned in maritime affairs, nor advantaged by it more than the inhabitants of the neighbouring towns, that pay but their equal proportion of the land tax, and are not burthened as this town is ;

\* Prov. R.    † Sp. Ct. R.    ‡ M. S. in Mass. His. Coll.    § T. R.

therefore, they petition General Court for liberty to draw the said £200 out of the public treasury, or such other relief as the equity of the case doth require."—Dec. 8th. A committee of the Legislature visit Salem and hold a session of three days in the town house, concerning the new meeting house, which Mr. Fisk's supporters had begun for him. The Committee find that the frame was placed only twelve perches and eleven feet from the First Parish meeting house; and their report, presented Jan. 1st, and accepted, requires that the meeting house of Mr. F's friends shall not stand nearer to the other than forty perches.—20th. D. Epes is empowered by the Legislature to call the first meeting of the Salem grantees of the new township for transacting business.

## 1736.

April 1st. Public Fast on account of throat distemper, which had proved very mortal in N. England and Massachusetts.—\*23d. Sixty-one men, who dissented from Mr. Fisk, form themselves, as the First Parish, to maintain preaching.—† 30th. Beef 8 to 10d., mutton 12d., lamb 6d. to 7d., pork 10d., wheat 14s. to 15s., corn 6s. 6d. to 6s. 9d., rye 7s. 6d. to 8s., hay 6s. cwt.

May 26th. General Court sit. D. Epes and B. Brown are Representatives. Of £9000 tax, Boston pays £1620, Salem £253 15, Ipswich £253 10, Newbury £212 12 6, and Marblehead £180. Narraganset township No. 3, had been set off to inhabitants of Salem for services in war.

June 6th. P. Clark of S. Village preaches the Artillery Election Sermon.—10th. B. Brown is on committee of House to prepare for a "handsome celebration of the Prince of Wales' marriage with the Princess of Saxe Gotha, on Saturday 12th."—\*23d. The proprietors of the Episcopal Church, having previously applied to the Society for propagating the Gospel, to aid them in their worship, but without effect, because their case

\* Gen. Sess. Ct. R.

† M. S. in Mass. H. Coll.

‡ Ep. Ch. R.

1736]

was not known, now apply to the Society for a minister, through Rev. Mr. Mac Sparran, and promise to pay the minister, whom they shall send, £130.

\* Aug. 5th. Twenty-one brethren, who left Mr. Fisk, meet and renew their covenant. They vote to have John Sparhawk as their minister.

† Nov 4th, A bachelor of this town, aged 80, dies. He had appeared miserably poor. A week before his decease, he begged of the selectmen something for thanksgiving. No person knew of his having any property, except a woman, to whom he had offered a certain sum, if she would marry him. When he was sick, she told his relations of this offer, and they pressed him to inform them where his money was. He signified to them, that it was under the cellar floor. After his death, they searched and found silver coin and gold dust to the amount of £500.—† 29th. Samuel Ropes is chosen deacon, and Benjamin Lynde, senior, and John Nutting, ruling elders of the Church, which had seceded from Mr. Fisk. J. Nutting accepts his appointment May 17th.

Dec. 8th. A Council meet to ordain Mr. Sparhawk. Ministers present with their delegates, were Messrs. Prescott, Holyoke, Appleton, Chipman, Clark, Hobby and Champney. Messrs. Warren and Wigglesworth were invited, but did not attend. The Council being formed, received a remonstrance from Mr. Fisk and his friends against Mr. Sparhawk's ordination. They voted, that "Whereas the Council met at Salem, Oct. 18, 1734, did (after they had censured the First Church) advise those brethren, who have now called Mr. Sparhawk, that, in case they should withdraw from their own church and offer themselves to another, they might be received into it as if they had been regularly dismissed from their own church, yet we apprehend not that such advise (nor their constitution in the seventh article referred to) did at all oblige the said brethren to seek communion with any other church, provided they

\* Ch. R.

† Bost. N. Let

‡ Ch. R.

would settle Gospel ordinances among themselves." Mr. Appleton of Cambridge preached the sermon from Prov. 11 ch. 30 verse.—Thus were the persons of Mr. Fisk's church, who had withdrawn from him, fully separated from his charge. \* He left the congregation, who adhered to him, in 1745. His church and Mr. Sparhawk's had a long disagreement with respect to land and plate, and, particularly, to the name, *First Church*. But, in 1762, they amicably divided the land and plate, and agreed, that the church, formed by seceders from Mr. Fisk, should be called *first*.—† 23d. The precincts of Salem and Beverly petition, that they become a town. Their petition is not granted.

‡ 27th. Dea. P. Osgood having withdrawn from Mr. Fisk's church and joined Mr. Sparhawk's church, is recommended by the latter for communion to those churches, which had excommunicated the *first* church. Mr. Sparhawk's church vote to have the Scriptures read, as a part of public worship.

§ Wm. Jennison resigned his charge of the E. Church.

### 1737.

|| Jan. 12th. Rev. Thomas Prince is admitted to the House of Representatives and gives this address :— "Mr. Speaker, I most humbly present to your honour and this honourable House, the first volume of my Chronological History of New England, which, at no small expense and pains, I have composed and published for the instruction and good of my country." He then handed one of his books to the Speaker and another for the use of the House.

¶ Feb. 7th. The amount paid for public schools here is £250; viz. £12 1 to Ryal Side; £40 2 11 to S. Village; £45 9 7 to Middle Precinct; and £152 6 6 for "the two lower parishes."

\*\* April 18th. Mr. Sparhawk's church vote to have a lecture preached every fourth Wednesday at 11

\* Tab. Ch. R.

† Bev. T. R.

‡ Ch. R.

§ Bentley.

|| Journal of House.

¶ T. R.

\*\* Ch. R.

o'clock, A. M., and to commence second Wednesday of May.

\* May 2d. It is agreed, in town meeting, that Mr. Batter's tanyard and Mr. Parkman's warehouse and wharf is a suitable place for a *still* house.—† 11th. James Diman is ordained over the E. Church. Edward Holyoke, President of Harvard College, preaches the sermon from Heb. 13 ch. 17 vs. ‡ 25th. General Court meet. John Wolcot and B. Brown are of the Representatives. J. Turner and B. Lynde, jr. of the Counsellors, and so continue till after 1740.—27th. The Governor remarks, that his salary of £3000 in bills is not worth £600 sterling. He reminds the House of what he considered, though they did not, their intimations to the King, that they would raise his salary, so that it might be sufficient.—31st. The people of Beverly petition to the Court, that they may either be excused from paying toll over the Ferry to Salem, as they never have, or receive a part of the toll profits. Their petition is not granted.

June 10th £20,000 are to be issued in bills of new tenor and exchanged for those of the old. £1 of new tenor bills is to be legally equal to £3 in old tenor bills. 15th. A Committee is to report on retrenchment of extraordinary expenses at funerals.—29th. About this time, it becomes a law, that each member of the Council shall receive 3s4 a day while in session, and each member of the House 2s. in new tenor bills, which are required to pass as equal to silver.

July. An excise of 50s. is laid on every coach, 30s. on every chaise with four wheels, 20s. on every other chaise, calash or chair.

§ Sept 30th. Beef from 7d. to 9d., veal 8d. to 10d., lamb 10d., mutton 8d., hay 10s. cwt., oak wood 40s. a cord, walnut 47s., turnips 6s., carrots 8s., potatoes 8s. to 9s., wheat 16s., rye 12s., and corn 10s., a bushel, flour 55s. a barrel.

Dec. 31st. The Legislature add 1s8 to the daily

\* T. R. † Marb. Ch. R. ‡ Jo. of House. § M. S. Mass. H. Coll.



pay of each Counsellor, and 1s4 to that of each Representative.—\* “Square toed shoes were going out of fashion; I believe few or none were worn after 1737. Buckles instead of shoe-strings began to be used, but were not universal in the country towns till 1740 or 1742.”

## 1738.

† Jan. 4th. The Church at the Village, is represented on the Council for ordaining Simon Bradstreet over the second church of Marblehead.

‡ March 20th. The Representatives of Salem are requested by their constituents to use their influence for an act, which will allow any minister, whose parish is composed of persons in two or more towns, to solemnize marriage for them wherever they reside.

§ May 31st. General Court sit. Timothy Lindall and B. Brown are Representatives.

June 18th. Col. Josiah Williard, of Salem, having moved to the new township of Winchester, is empowered to call a meeting there for choosing officers.

|| Sept. 25th. Rev. Charles Brockwell had proposed to preach for the Episcopal Society here. The proprietors of this Society choose John Clark and Benjamin Moorehead for Wardens. These two, and Ephriam Ingalls, Samuel Stone, Joseph Hilliard and Jacob Manning, promise to pay Mr. B., while preaching for them, £2 10, each in bills of credit, every Sunday evening or Monday morning.

¶ Dec. 22d. B. Lynde is on committee of the Council to consider how the great difficulties on account of paper money may be removed.

## 1739.

\*\* Jan. 12th. The Governor informs the House, that the Royal instructions forbid him to sign their bill for the emission of £60,000 in paper.—26th. B. Brown

\* Memoirs of F. A. Holyoke. † Village Ch. R. ‡ T. R. § Jo. of House.  
|| Ep. Ch. R. ¶ Jo. of House. \*\* Jo. of House.

of Salem, and Timothy Johnson of Andover, are on committee to ascertain the circumstances of persons, who suffered by witchcraft in 1692, and who have not had restitution for their losses.

\* Feb. 5th. The Selectmen grant leave to Charles Bradshaw, to keep a dancing and French school here, so long as he preserves good order.

† April 20th. B. Brown is of a committee to report on the following clause in the Governor's speech :—  
 " There are lately come from Canada some persons, that were taken by Indians from Groton about thirty years ago, who (it is believed) may be induced to return into this Province on your giving them some encouragement. It would be not only an act of compassion to reclaim them from their savage life, and errors of the Romish faith ; but their living among us might be of great advantage to the Province."

May 30th. General Court assemble. William Brown and Thomas Lee are Representatives. Peter Clark, of S. Village, preaches the Election Sermon.

June 12th. A committee of the Ministerial Convention, which met 31st ult., wait on the Legislature in reference to a litigation about land, granted 1668 by proprietors of South Kingston, to aid in the support of a Congregational or Presbyterian minister. It appears, that Rev. Mr. Mac Sparran, an Episcopalian, claimed this land from Rev. Joseph Torrey of S. Kingston, and that the case had been decided in favour of the latter minister. Mr. Mac Sparran had made his second appeal to the King. The committee petition the Legislature to support " so public a cause," by granting assistance to Mr. Torrey.—21st. This petition is opposed by Timothy Cutler, Ebenezer Miller, and Addington Davenport, the only Episcopal ministers in the Province. Besides these, however, there were Episcopal preachers, called Missionaries, because coming hither under the patronage of the Society in England for propagating the Gospel.

Sept. 19th. The Governor informs the House of a Royal order for commissions of Marque and Reprisals against Spanish vessels. He says, that, according to a statement of the Lords Commissioners, April 11th, the Massachusetts Government had issued in 1714—16—20 and 27, £260,000 in bills of credit; that 60 or £70,000 were not yet redeemed, though one emission ought to have been twenty years ago; and that 6s8, the value of one ounce of silver, was worth more than 20s. of the old bills.

Oct. 5th. T. Lee is on committee of the House to inform the Governor, that his late message contained some things, about their bill last year for an emission of £60,000 in paper, which affected the free exercise of Legislative power. The Governor declined to see the committee.—9th. He remarks to the Representatives in reference to the Treasury, which they had not supplied, "Whether owing to me, for my strict obedience to the Royal order, or to the disregard of your House to the King's honour and his people's safety," judge ye.

Gen. ~~Putnam~~ Putnam moved from Salem to Pomfret, *Israel* Conn. He was born Jan. 7, 1718, and baptized at the Village Church Feb. 2d. He was son of Joseph and Elizabeth Putnam. His father was son of John, who was son of John, who had two brothers, Nathaniel and Thomas, whose parents were John and Priscilla, of Abbotaston, Buckinghamshire, England. He married a daughter of John Pope, by whom he had ten children, seven of which were living in 1818. She died 1764. After her decease he married a widow Gardiner, of Gardiner Island. He died of an inflammation at Brooklyn, Connecticut, May 19, 1790. His name will be long associated with the conquest of Canada, capture of Havana, the battle of Breed's Hill, (commonly called Bunker Hill,) and other events of the Revolution.

1740.

\* Jan. 1st. Messrs. Brown and Lee are on commit-

\* Jo. of House.

tee to prepare a statement of the misunderstanding, which the House had with Gov. Belcher, for Mr. Kilby, their agent in London.—5th. T. Lee is on committee with respect to the taking of Porpoises, by William Paine and Co. of Eastham. The committee report, that they receive 2s. for each porpoise taken, on condition of delivering “the middle part of the tails to the town clerk, and that he has burned up the same.”—10th. As war had been declared Oct. 23d, against Spain, the Council desire to consult the House about what shall be done. The House non-concur.

March 4th. The Governor remarks to the House : “I have laid before you the defenceless state of the Province, the danger and injustice of an empty Treasury.”—\*10th. A committee is raised in Salem to preserve deer as the law directs.—†17th. Phillip English had died recently. He was son of John, of the Island of Jersey, and was baptized June 30, 1651. He married Mary Hollingsworth, 1675, and Sarah Ingersoll, 1698. He left children. He had been an enterprising merchant, Selectman and Representative to General Court. He and his first wife suffered considerably in their property and persons, from being prosecuted and obliged to flee on the charge of witchcraft.

‡ May 28th. General Court convenes. B. Brown and T. Lee, are Representatives. Besides J. Turner and B. Lynde, jr. of Salem, as Counsellors, William Brown is one of two, who were chosen for the same body, to act for inhabitants or proprietors of land in any part of the Province.—30th. B. Brown is on committee to consider his Excellency’s speech, relative to the enlistment of soldiers for an expedition against some part of Spanish W. Indies.

June 23d. The Governor says to the House, that the sea coast is unguarded, that there are loud complaints of public officers for not receiving their due ; that money is needed to pay the bounty of soldiers, engaged to go an expedition against Cuba, because they had delayed

\* T. R.

† Prob. R.

‡ Jo. of House.

to make *legal* appropriations for the Treasury. He desires them to lay a "large duty on the consumption of spirituous liquors, which are so much the bane of industry and frugality."

July 2d. Daniel Epes is Collector of Excise for Essex.—4th. J. Turner is on committee to consider measures in reference to the reported temper and conduct of Eastern Indians. The Legislature agree to supply the treasury with £100,000 in bills.—9th. £900 are granted for fortifications at Salem.

Sept. 10th. The House provide for the transportation of five companies, under Capt. John Winslow, which were part of 1000 men voted, August 20th, to be raised for the expedition against Cuba.—\* 19th. George Whitefield preached in the First Church of Salem and took a collection for his orphan house in S. Carolina. His sermon, from John 17 ch. and 3 verse, was very interesting.

† Nov. 22d. The Governor says to the House in his message, "There have been for some time past two schemes going forward for circulating a great quantity of private notes of hand to pass in lieu of money; and I am told the notes are now getting out among the people." The first of the companies, here referred to, was John Colman and three hundred and ninety-five others. The second was Edward Hutchinson and one hundred and six others. It appears, that, June 19th, the Representatives voted on the question, whether these companies should emit their notes, and fifty-nine were in favour of such an emission, and thirty-seven against. Of the latter were B. Brown and T. Lee of Salem. The House, however, afterwards agreed with the Governor, that these notes should be suppressed. He and the Council require the stockholders of the two Companies to give bonds for redeeming their notes so as to prevent fraud. He further remarks, "As for the scheme of forming the Land Bank, it appeared to him and Council to be big with so many mischiefs to the

\* *Life of Whitefield.*

† *Jo. of House.*

people, that they thought it their indispensable duty to bear public testimony against it (as they have done) and so to save unwary people from the injuries they might otherwise suffer by taking notes for money, which have no honest or solid foundation." He proposes to the House, that they pass a law to prevent such a Bank. He states, that the King and Parliament had been petitioned for its suppression. The House, however, as a body, took no measures to oppose, but rather encouraged the Land Bank.—26th. T. Lee is on committee to consider the petition of Richard Clark of Boston, who, at great expense and trouble, had begun to make guns, and desired public encouragement.—\* 30th. Beef 8d. to 9d., veal 9d. to 13d., mutton 7d. to 10d., lamb 7d. to 9d., butter 2s. 4d. to 2s. 6d., wheat 14s., rye 10s., corn 8s., pork £8 bbl.

† Dec. 3d. The Legislature observe a Fast, especially "for pressing difficulties, which have long attended and do attend the public affairs of this Province."

\* M. S. in Mass. His. Coll.

† Jo. of House.

---

#### ERRATA.

Page 334 for Zerubal read Zerubabel. 336—June 16th for 9th. 358—1663 for 1661. 367 and 380—omit i in Williard. 373—Aug. 14th for 4th. 375—chain for claim. 379—10s6 for 10s. 391—May 17th for 12th. 392—July 25th for 16th. There are a few other mistakes, which the reader will easily correct

## ANNALS OF SALEM.—NO. V.

---

SINCE the publication of the first Number of this work,—the writer of it has been variously assisted in his researches.—Among the persons, to whom he is particularly indebted for ready and correct information, on several occasions, is WILLIAM GIBBS, Esq.—When names of persons are mentioned, they are to be understood as of Salem, if not otherwise stated, or not implicitly belonging elsewhere. The following abbreviations will be used—b. for born,—m. for married,—d. for died or dies,—g. for graduated,—Gen. Ct. for General Court,—Gov. for Governor,—Rep. for the singular or plural of Representative.

---

1741.

Feb. 26th. Fast on account of War with Spain. Peter Clark preaches two sermons on this occasion, which are printed.

\* May 27th. Gen. Ct. meet. Thomas Flint and John Gardner Rep. John Turner, Benja. Lynde, jr. and Wm. Brown are continued on the Council.—Several individuals are proposed for Counsellors, who are favorable to the Land Bank. Among them is Daniel Epes. But they are negatived by Gov. Belcher.—28th. The Gov. says in his message,—“The management of the Elections made yesterday discover to me so much of the inclination of your House to support the fraudulent, pernicious scheme, commonly called the Land Bank, condemned at home by His Majesty and both Houses of Parliament, that I judge it derogatory to the King’s honor and service and inconsistent with the peace and welfare of this people, that you sit any longer in General Assembly, and I have therefore

\* Journal of House.

1742]

directed Mr. Secretary Willard to declare this Court dissolved."—The Bank here mentioned had its strenuous advocates and opposers. Part of its proprietors lived in Salem. Gov. Belcher's exertions to suppress this Bank was a great cause of his removal from office.

July 8th. Wm. Shirley, as successor to Gov. Belcher,—remarks in his first message to the House,—that when his predecessor came to the chair in 1730, exchange between bills of Great Britain and this Province had risen 200 per cent against the Province and since have risen to 450 per cent.

Sept. 23d. As Major John Winslow had recently arrived from the Camp on Cuba, for more recruits, the Gov. recommends his request.

Oct. 7. Bounty is voted by the House for not above 500 men for Cuba.—Major Winslow had raised, by Dec. 3d, enough volunteers for one transport.

\* Nov. 30th. "Extraordinary commotions with respect to religion. The people meet often especially at the Eastward." This extract refers to a revival of religion, begun the past year through the preaching of George Whitefield.

## 1742.

† Jan. 15th. Gov. Shirley informs the House, that the King had not restricted him, as he did Gov. Belcher, "from giving assent to any act for emitting Bills of credit without inserting a suspending clause therein,—to prevent its taking effect till His Majesty's pleasure should be known respecting it."

‡ Feb. 17th. Edward Britton died  $\text{Æ}$  80. He married Mary Codner Jan. 1, 1692. He left children.

§ March 4th. John Turner died in an apoplectic fit as he was coming from his wharf. He was son of John and Elizabeth Turner; born Sept. 12, 1671; married Mary Kitchen May 22, 1701, who died at Ipswich Aug. 1768. He left children, John, Robert, Habbakuk, Elizabeth wife of Doct. Thomas Berry of

\* Collins' Jo. † Jo. of House. ‡ Grave Stone. § Lynde's Notes.



Ipswich, Mary wife of Ebenezer Bowditch and Eunice, wife of Benja. Brown. His estate was between 11 and £12,000. He was Captain of a horse company here and went with them, in 1708, against the French and Indians, who then attacked Haverhill. He became Colonel of the Regiment in 1729. He was noted as a merchant. He was appointed Justice 1716, and Judge of the Com. Pleas Ct. 1726. He was long of the Province Council. His worthy deserts were equal to his honors.—\* 25th. Benja. Brown and other proprietors of New Salem, petition for land on the N. W. of that township.

† May 17th. Raised for Town Tax £400 L. M.—James Lindall and other owners of land in North Field, receive liberty to build a bridge from Orne's Point to Symonds' Point, under such restrictions as the town may require. This bridge was built before 1745.

‡ April 10th. The Gov. orders, that if within a year there be erected at Salem a sufficient breastwork and platform and 16 guns, 8 pounders, or others equivalent and all suitable warlike stores provided,—£300 shall be allowed them out of the Province Treasury—The Town accept this offer 16th of Aug.

May 26th. Gen. Ct. sit. Daniel Epes and J. Gardner Representatives.

June 10th. D. Epes in chosen Collector of Excise for Essex County. He held this trust several years.

—|| 12th. John Cabot, merchant, d. recently. He m. Anna Orne, Oct. 29, 1702. He left widow Anna, and children,—John, Francis, Joseph and Elizabeth Cabot and Margaret Gerrish, and grand children of two daughters, Mary Sewall and Esther Higginson both deceased.—¶ 16th. D. Epes is of a Committee to report on a proper present for the Indian tribes at the Eastward, who are about to be visited by the Gov. and suit.

\*\* Nov. 23d. Benja. Gerrish, jr. and others, petition

\* Jo. of House.

† Town Records.

‡ Jo. of Ho.

|| Probate Records.

¶ Jo. of Ho.

\*\* Town Papers.

1743]

for a town meeting, because a French war is daily expected, to choose a Committee to wait on the Legislature for more help on fortifications.

\* Nov. 26th. Saml. Brown d. He was son of Hon. Samuel and Abigail Brown; b. April 7, 1708; g. at Harvard 1727.—He m. Katherine, daughter of John and Ann Winthrop of Boston. His wife survived him and m. Col. Epes Sargent, of Gloucester, Aug. 10, 1744, who soon moved to Salem. Mr. Brown left children—William and Abigail.—His estate was £5260 18 3 1-4 L. M. He owned over 104,000 acres of land in various places. The most of it was entailed.

† December 2d. As the Selectmen of each town were not liable to any penalty for refusing to relieve their own poor and distressed,—a Committee is raised to prepare a bill on this subject.—The occasion of this was the case of Robert Martin, a cripple of Rowley, who was refused assistance by the Selectmen of said town, and who therefore made his complaint to the Legislature. The Court order, April 23, 1743, that Rowley Selectmen support Martin.—‡ 31st. Capt. Benj. Moreshead d. lately. He m. Sarah Lindall, July 28, 1737. She d. Dec. 1750. He was a prominent member of the Episcopal Church.

## 1743.

§ Jan. 15th. The Province Tax on £1000 is for Boston £180,—Salem £30,—Ipswich £27 12 5,—Newbury £25 12 3,—Marblehead £19 9 4.

|| May 6th. A Committee report, that the two schools within the Bridge, become one, and that the salary of Messrs. Nutting and Gerrish, the teachers of them, be increased.—25th. Gen. Ct. meet. D. Epes and J. Gardner Rep.—B. Lynde, jr. is of the Council and thus long continues.—¶ 26th. “There is sad division in the Convention of ministers at Boston. Dr.

\* Lynde's Notes.

† Jo. of Ho.

‡ Prob. R.

§ Jo. of Ho.

|| T. P.

¶ Smith's Journal.

Chauncey of Boston, and others, in opposition to the late work of God in the land. They obtained a vote against the disorders, &c., thereby expressly owning the work, which puts the ministers on the other side in a great ferment—the people through the country are also universally divided and in the most unhappy temper. The opposition is exceeding virulent and mad.”

\* June 1st. The Representatives from Salem are on a Committee of the House,—to report who were formerly sufferers as Quakers or by witchcraft, and what satisfaction the Court have made such sufferers.—3d. Rev. Joshua Gee of Boston, dates his letter, about proceedings of the late Convention there. The Rev. Mr. Prescott answered this letter and maintained that the ministers, who voted against the disorders of the Revival, intended nothing against the revival itself. He stated that there was a full convention of 70 and that 38 of them voted for testimony in favor of the Revival. 10th. As Saturday 11th “will be the happy anniversary of the accession of His Majesty our most gracious Sovereign Lord King George II. to the Crown of Great Britain,” the House concur with the Council to celebrate this event.

† July 7th. “Attended Convention of ministers (in Boston) to bear testimony to the late glorious work of God in the land, which is opposed by so many;—there were 90 present, and 30 sent their testimony.”—James Diman signs such testimony “as to scope and end.”

‡ Sept. 9th. The Gov. congratulates the House, that “His Majesty had gained a considerable battle against the French on the River Maine.” The House vote, that there be public rejoicing for this success, tomorrow afternoon.—16th. P. Clark preaches a lecture at Watertown on “the witness of the Spirit in the hearts of believers,”—which is printed at the request of the hearers.

§ Oct. 5th. Voted, that Capt. John Clark have leave to put up his organ in St. Peter’s church. Persons are

\* Jo of Ho.

† Smith’s Jo.

‡ Jo. of Ho.

§ Ep. Ch. R.

appointed to collect money for this organ. This was the first organ used in public worship at Salem.—\*21st. D. Epes is on Committee to draft a bill for supplying the Treasury, and for necessary defence of the Province, and, also, for inquiring about the public stock of powder. J. Gardner is on Committee to investigate the state of the Forts and Garrisons and the grants for public supplies. Such business is occasioned by the expectation of a sudden rupture with France.

Nov. 11th. The House vote £166 13 4 for Salem fortification.

## 1744.

March 1st. The Gov. informs the House, that if they do not use means to prevent the circulation of R. Island and Conn. bills of credit, Mass. is likely to loose its charter.—The pressure on the people because of the abundance and depreciation of such bills is great.—2d. B. Lynde, jr. is on Committee to prepare a bill for regulating trade with Eastern and Western Indians.—†26th. Arthur Onslow, Speaker of the House of Commons in England, is chosen a Warden of St. Peter's Church. Capt. Benja. Gerrish, jr. is to act as his Representative.

‡ April 4th. Gen. Ct. appropriate the afternoon to congratulate one another on news, that Princess Louisa was married to the Prince Royal of Denmark, whereby the Protestant cause in Europe is greatly strengthened. April —. § A Fire club is formed here.—Its number is 28 and not to exceed 30.—One of its articles is, "We will have a watchword, whereby to know one another; every member to whisper it to the Clerk at each quarterly meeting and to any other member, when challenged, under penalty of 1s. O. T."

|| May 30th. Gen. Ct. sit. Benja. Pickman Rep. Wm. Brown is of the Council this and the year following.—31st. Gov. informs the House, that war has been declared between France and England.

\* Jo. of Hc. † Ep. Ch. R. ‡ Jo. of Ho. † Essex Hist. Soc. M. S. || Jo. of Ho.

June 1st. B. Pickman on Com. to prepare a bill for prohibiting all trade with the enemy.—2d. His Majesty's declaration of war with the French King is proclaimed.—\* 28th. Fast on account of earthquake, which occurred 3d inst. and of war with France.

† July 15th. John Higginson d. He was son of John and Hannah H.—b. Jan. 10, 1698,—g. at Harvard 1717. He m. Ruth Boardman of *Cornelia*, Dec. 4, 1719, who d. June 14, 1727,—and Esther Cabot April 28, 1732. He had children, John, Andrew, Francis, Nathaniel, Elizabeth, Ruth and Susannah. He sustained chief offices of the town and commanded a company. He was chosen County Register 1725 and Justice of Peace 1733.—He was a worthy man.—‡ 23d. The Confederate and first Churches agree to use endeavours for becoming united under one Pastor. They did not succeed.

§ Aug. 17th. Allowance to each soldier for 34 years past,—1 lb. bread and 1-2 pint of peas or beans a day, 2 lbs. pork for 3 days, 1 gall. molasses for 42 days, while in garrison. Marching rations,—1 lb. of bread and 1 lb. pork and 1 gill Rum daily.

|| Oct. 30th. Of County Tax £250,—Salem pays £38 0 6.

¶ Nov. 7th. ✓ Richard Elvins is ordained over 2d parish at Scarborough. He had been a baker by trade. He was a Selectman of Salem 1739.—He became pious through the preaching of Mr. Whitefield. He possessed good understanding and was a useful minister. He published a sermon from Romans 16 ch. 26vs. on "the obedience of faith." It was preached July 26, 1747, and had a preface by Rev. Mr. Jewett, of Rowley. He m. the widow of Rev. Mr. Willard of Biddeford, and d. Aug. 12, 1776. ✓\*\* This year a law was passed empowering all Towns to choose firewards. Each fireward is to have "for a distinguishing badge of

\* Smith's Jo. † T. R. ‡ 1st Ch. R. § Jo. of Ho.

|| Gen. Sess. Ct. R. ¶ Greenleaf's Eccles. Sketches. \*\* Prov. Laws.

office a staff of five feet long, painted red and headed with a bright brass spire 6 inches long."

## 1745.

\* Jan. 16th. B. Pickman on committee to inquire of the Gov. as to the disposition of the Penobscot and other tribes of Indians. The Gov. informs them, 17th, that these Indians were greatly under the influence of the French and no dependence could be placed in them.—† 26th. Through a petition signed by merchants of Boston and principally by merchants of Salem and Marblehead,—the House vote, by a majority of one, to engage in an expedition against Louisbourg.—‡ 28th. Benja. Lynde, sen. d. He was son of Simon and Hannah L. of Boston;—b. Sept. 22, 1666;—had rudiments of his education under Ezekiel Cheever;—g. at Harvard 1686; an eminent scholar.—He went to England 1692;—was admitted to the Middle Temple and made Barrister at Law. He returned, 1697, Advocate General of the Admiralty for Mass., Conn. and R. Is. He was several years Rep. of Salem to Gen. Ct.; was chosen one of the Council 1713 and so continued till 1737.—He was Justice of Sessions Ct. 1721,—long a Justice of the Supreme Court and for years its Chief Justice.—He m. Mary, daughter of Wm. Browne, April 22, 1699. She d. July 12th, 1753, Æ 74. He seems to have moved hither about the time of his marriage, for he was chosen to represent Salem in the Legislature in the Spring of 1700, though he did not then serve.—He was an eminent member of the First Church. His services for the Province were many and beneficial. He was "a gentleman generally beloved by all, who were favored with his acquaintance."

§ Feb. 28th. Fast on account of expedition preparing against Cape Breton.

|| March 9th. John Gardner is appointed Pilot of the Mass. Frigate.

\* Jo. of Ho. † Hutch. ‡ Lynde's Notes. § Collins' Jo. || Jo. of Ho.

\* April 30th. Dudley Leavit receives a call to settle over First Church and Society.

† May 6th. Expences for a winter guard at the Fort in late embargo. This embargo was laid on all ports to prevent information reaching Louisbourg, against which an expedition sailed 24th of March.—10th. Rev. B. Prescott addresses a printed letter to Rev. Geo. Whitefield against his itinerate preaching.—† 29th. Gen. Ct. assemble. B. Pickman Rep. B. Prescott preaches the Election Sermon. § 30th. P. Clark preaches before the Convention of ministers. His subject—"advantages and obligations arising from the oracles of God committed to the Church and its ministry."

June 28th. The Corporation invite the House to take Commencement dinner in College Hall.—29th. B. Pickman on Committee to provide for French prisoners in this Province.

|| July 18th. Thanksgiving for successes at Cape Breton. Louisbourg was taken 17th ult.—¶ 30th. The Pastoral relation between Mr. Fisk and his people is dissolved.

Aug. 12th. Mr. Leavit is voted £300 salary of present currency. The Congregation concur with the Church in this offer.—\*\* 23d. War with Indians is proclaimed in Boston.

Sept. 19th. Fast because of Indian war.

†† Oct. 2d. As the following Churches, 1st and 3d of Ipswich, 2d of Portsmouth, Newington, 1st of Malden, 1st of Reading,—Topsfield, Rowley, 4th of Salem and 3d of Lynn, had been invited to meet for ordaining Mr. Leavit—a Council is formed of Elders and delegates from them.—The Council occupy much time in examining papers laid before them. They desire an addition to the number of their Churches and defer the ordination to the 23d.—†† 13th. It is generally a sickly and dying time through the Country.—§§ 23d. Elders

\* Tabernacle Ch. R.    † T. R.    ‡ Jo. of Ho.    § Pemberton M. S.  
 || Smith's Jo.    ¶ Tab. Ch. R.    \*\* Smith's Jo.    †† Tab. Ch. R.  
 ‡‡ Smith's Jo.    §§ Tab. Ch. R.

1745]

and delegates from the following Churches meet and form themselves into a Council for ordaining Mr. Leavit;—2d of Boston, 1st of Gloucester, Kittery, 1st of Reading, Malden, and Topsfield. This Council ordained Mr. L. next day, though Mr. Fisk and several brethren objected.—\* So great was the disturbance on this occasion, that one of the Council desired silence. Some justices, belonging to the town, ordered a sheriff to stop him; which he did in so uncivil a manner, as to force him from the pulpit. Tradition says that Mr. L. was ordained in Mr. Kitchen's garden. Mr. L's church had been some discommoded by the sentence of non-communication against them. As a specimen, in which such non-communication was commenced and retracted, the following is given. † "March 12, 1735. Then the first Church in Gloucester met by adjournment and voted—1st, That they concurred with the Grand Council met at Salem from time to time;—2d, and passed the sentence of non-communication with the First Church in Salem. And it was done deliberately and with a great deal of awfulness and solemnity.—At a Church meeting 1745, upon an humble confession of the First Church in Salem, the first Church in Gloucester released her from the sentence of non-communication, and assisted in the ordination of Mr. Dudley Leavit at their request."—Churches in Boston and other towns passed similar votes.

‡ Dec. 23d. The Confederate Church vote to commune with members of Mr. Leavit's Church, who had been admitted by Mr. Fisk since the separation;—to commune with those, who adhered to Mr. F. at the separation, if they confess their fault for not using proper means of reconciliation;—to have a committee write and desire Churches, who had passed sentence of non-communication against the first Church, to withdraw such sentence.

\* Bos. Ev'g Post of 1763. †1st Ch. of Glouc. R. ‡1st Ch. R.



1746.

\* Feb. 10th. As the Bishop of London had proposed the removal of Mr. Brockwell to the King's Chapel in Boston, the Wardens of St. Peter's Church join with Mr. B. in petitioning the Society in England for another Missionary. The wardens agree with Mr. B. to preach here till a missionary comes.—Their petition states, that Salem is the next market town to Boston in New England. It says,—“you cannot but conclude our opposition has been great, having what the world calls great men our antagonists; but thanks to Heaven they have at last great reason to applaud our system, and we hope ere long they will join with us in the established form; they having had monstrous divisions in most of their Societies, occasioned by Mr. Whitefield and his successors, which has opened the eyes of some so as to behold the beauty of our Church, which has hitherto escaped the snares laid by the grand Deceiver of mankind.”—It observes “we hope the Honored Society will add the £20 to the £40, which was taken from Mr. Brockwell to the next gentleman, who comes, so that with the £130 we will give him, it will afford him a comfortable living.”—In its P. S.—“If you will be pleased to send us some Common Prayer books with Tate and Brady's version, they will be of great service.”

† March 11th. B. Pickman is on committee to examine accounts of the directors of the government lottery,—which was to aid in paying for the late expedition to Cape Breton.

May 28th. Gen. Court meet. B. Pickman Rep. The Gov. says in his message, that the assistance, given by the N. Eng. troops in the capture of Louisbourg, had been strangely concealed, in England,—till it was made known by a true representation.—30th. He states that more damage had been done by French and Indians at the Eastward.

\* Ep. Ch. R.

† Jo. of Ho.

1746]

\* June 2d. Proclamation for enlisting men for expedition against Canada.—7th. George, son of Rev. Geo. Curwin d., b. Dec. 4, 1717, g. at Harvard 1735; m. Sarah Pickman 1739. She survived him. He was commissary under Sir Wm. Pepperel in Lousbourg expedition.—† 24th. B. Pickman is on committee of arrangements for receiving Gen. Pepperel and Admiral Warren, arrived in Boston harbour. These officers, being in the Council Chamber, are visited by the Speaker of the House, who congratulates them on their arrival and thanks them for their signal services in the late reduction of Cape Breton and its dependances.—28th. The Gov. calculates, that Mass. in resisting the French and Indians, is at the expense of £30,000 communibus annis.—He remarks that the Province would be eased of such a burden if Canada were taken.

‡ In June, a sloop, from St. Eustatia, brings in the small pox. A man and boy of the crew are sent to Pest house on Rainsford Is. and the vessel ordered up Forest River.

§ July 15th. B. Pickman is on Committee to draft instructions for Commissioners, who are to meet with Commissioners from other Colonies at Albany,—to treat with the Six Nations about going against Canada and to make these Indians customary presents.

|| Aug. 14th. Thanksgiving for signal victory, gained by the Duke of Cumberland over rebels in Scotland.

¶ Sept. 3d. The Gov. still urges the necessity for the forces of Mass. and N. York and other Colonies to attack Crown Point by the “late tragedy at Mass. Fort, now burnt down by the enemy and all the garrison, as well as women and children, put to the sword or carried into captivity;” and by the enemy’s having “plundered divers houses and destroyed a considerable number of cattle at Northampton.”—9th. He presses the House to order forces for Annapolis because the French and Indians are collected at Menis to recover N. Scotia. 10th The House consent to both of these proposals.

\* E. A. Holyoke's Diary. † Jo. of Ho. ‡ T. R. § Jo. of Ho.

|| E. A. Hol. Diary.

¶ Jo. of Ho.

—11th. B. Pickman is on Committee of War to estimate the expenses of Mass. for the expedition against Cape Breton, and present them to Admiral Warren and Gen. Pepperel for their approbation, so as to be paid by the Crown.—\* 22d. Companies are raised in all the towns and marched to Boston for fear of invasion by a French fleet.—† 25th. Great alarm here, lest the town and 'country should be attacked by this fleet.—29th. £500 are voted here to purchase warlike stores for defence. ‡ Salem, Marblehead and Cape Ann are in great distress, sending away their effects.

§ Oct. —. “Voted that for Christians to consult reputed witches or fortune tellers, this Church firmly believe, on the testimony of the word of God, is highly impious and scandalous, being a violation of the Christian Covenant, rendering the persons guilty of it subject to the just censure of the Church. Voted, that the Pastor, in the name of the Church, publicly testify their abhorrence of this practice, warning all under their watch and care to guard against it.”—These votes were occasioned by some persons in the parish going to consult a woman, who set herself up as a fortune teller.—|| 16th. Fast to implore the protection of God for His Majesty's dominions in America, and for this Province, in particular, against the formidable and threatening appearance of the French in these seas, and against the frequent attacks and invasions on our inland frontiers, and to seek his blessing on the intended expedition against Crown Point.

Nov. 7th. The Gov. remarks in his message—“the Providential train of events, which seem most visibly to have conspired to disappoint every part of the enemy's late scheme upon these coasts” suggests, that what was applied to the defeat of the Spanish armada, may be truly said of the French fleet,—“Afflavit Deus et dissipantur.”—He appoints Thanksgiving for so great deliverance.—¶ 27th. Charles Brockwell “preferred to the Lecture of the King's Chapel in Boston,” makes

\* E. A. Hol. Diary.  
§ N. Dan. Ch. R.

† T. R.  
|| Jo. of H.

‡ Smith's Jo.  
¶ Ep. Ch. R.

## 1748.

\* Jan. 4th. By an arrival at Salem from St. Eustatia there is news, that the Dutch had declared war against France.—14th. Another arrival hither confirms the success of Admiral Hawkes in taking 9 ships of war and 48 sail of merchantmen from the French.

† Feb. 3. The Gov. states in his message, that there is general distress in the province from the depreciation of paper money,—and that clergymen are thereby greatly embarrassed.—†22d. Snow on a level 30 inches and in the woods 4 1-2 feet deep.—29th. No travelling about the country except upon rackets.

§ May 25th. Gen. Ct. meet. John Gardner and James Jeffrey, jr. Rep.—26th. Gov. recommends an expedition against Crown Point as most preventive of the Six nations from siding with the French. He relates that the Eastern Indians had killed some and taken others of the English; and that the people at the Eastward were much alarmed and that many of them were coming away.—31st. He is desired by the House to appoint a Fast for calamities from the enemy,—for early and extreme drought, whereby many fruits of the earth are in danger of being cut off.

|| June 9th. Fast for drought. It had not been drier since George I. was crowned.

¶ Aug. —. Mr. Leavit's church are invited to attend the installation of Daniel Rogers over the new Church at Exeter. They did not attend.—Contributions had been lately made in Mr. L's Society for schooling poor children.

Sept. 13th. Several persons,—not having clear views on the subject of infant baptism,—are unanimously allowed to unite with Mr. L's church.—\*\* 29th. The year past 4 ships, 12 snows, 21 brigs, 63 schooners and 31 sloops,—belonging to Salem, Marh. Bev. Glouc. Ips. and Newb., were cleared from Salem Custom House.

\* Bos. News Letter. † Ju. of Ho. ‡ E. A. Hol. Dia. § Jo. of Ho.  
 || E. A. Hol. Dia. ¶ Tab. Ch. Rec. \*\* Douglass.

In these vessels 32,000 quintals of dry cod fish were sent to Europe, and 3070 hhds, each of 6 or 7 quintals, to the W. I. Only 8 fishing schooners were out of Salem this year,—which were not so many as usual. Each of them was about 50 tons, carried about 7 hands,—caught on an average 600 quintals a year ;—made five fares in this time, two to Isle of Sable and three to the banks along Cape Sable shore.—The merchantable Cod were exported to Spain, Portugal and Italy ; and the refuse to the W. I. for negro slaves.

\* Oct. 13th. Mitchel Sewall d.—son of Stephen and Margaret S.—b. Oct. 29, 1699—g. at Harvard 1718, m. Mary Cabot, May 10, 1729, and Elizabeth Price June 20, 1743.—On the decease of his father 1725, he succeeded him, as clerk of the Court of Sessions and Com. Pleas,—became Justice 1733.—† He left widow Elizabeth, and children—Jonathan, Mitchel, Elizabeth and Stephen under 14 years—and Katherine, Margaret and Mary above and Sarah Bartlett.—His estate £5953 15 O. T.—‡ 27th. The Captain of a vessel, arrived at Salem from Jamaica, saw an engagement Oct. 1, between Admiral Knowles and a Spanish Squadron from Havana,—and that the Admiral was victorious.

§ Nov. 14th. £1 ster. equals £10 of bills O. T. Other authority makes 1 equal to 11.

|| Dec. 12th. Joseph Orne merchant d. recently. His estate was £12852 13 11 O. T. ; bequethed to his sisters and his brother's children. He was often Selectman and active to promote the welfare of the town.

### 1749.

¶ March 20th, Richard Derby and others have leave to buy a Fire Engine ;—be a company for it,—excused from town offices ; and if one of them remove or die, his son to succeed him as a member.—They immedi-

\* Collins Jo.

† Prob. Rec.

‡ Bos. News Letter.

§ Jo. of Ho.

|| Prob. Rec.

¶ T. R.

ately purchased the Engine. It was the first, which belonged to Salem.

\* April 13th. James Peirce, wounded in the late expedition against Cape Breton, is allowed compensation.

† May —. Edward and David Hilliard, erecting a Rope Walk, petition for land.—‡ 10th. Peace proclaimed in Boston between France and England.—§ Alms house to be repaired and to employ idle paupers.—|| 31st. Gen. Ct. assemble. ✓ J. Jeffrey, jr. and Samuel Gardner Rep.

June 1st. The Gov. states, that since he offered a reward for the apprehension of persons, who threatened, last April, to burn the buildings and vessels and take the life of a Counsellor, unless he complied with their demands for money,—he himself had received a similar letter, declaring that if he did not lay a sum of money in a secret place, his country house and the Province House should be consumed.—2d. For the extreme drought and great increase of devouring insects, the House desire the Gov. to appoint a Fast.—¶ 3d. Doctor John Cabot d.—son of John and Hannah C.—b. Oct. 26, 1704,—g. at Harvard 1724—m. Hannah Clark, June 5, 1747.—He left a son, John.—He was often on town committees for public objects.—\*\* 7th. Corn and provisions very scarce.—†† 15th. English hay cut short almost 9-10ths through the Province.

‡‡ July 3d. North ferry let for £3 sterl. a year.

§§ Aug. 3d. Gov. states to the House, that persons of property in N. H., had lately received menacing letters to extort money from them. He also says, that he has leave from His Majesty to visit England and shall soon depart.—5th. As plentiful rains had fallen and insects removed, the House desire the Gov. to appoint Thanksgiving.—||| 7th. Rates for N. ferry. 6d. O. T. or 1 copper, for a passenger,—2 coppers for a horse, 7 for a chair, 9 for a two wheel chaise and 11 for a

\* Jo. of Ho. † T. P. ‡ E. A. Hol. Dia. § T. R. || Jo. of Ho.

¶ E. A. Hol. Dia.

\*\* Jo. of Ho.

†† E. A. Hol. Dia.

‡‡ T. R.

§§ Jo. of Ho.

||| T. R.

four wheel carriage.—\* 18th. Bill enacted, that any person, convicted of sending threatening letters to extort money, should sit on gallows an hour,—with a rope round his neck ;—be set in the pillory and have an ear cropped,—imprisoned three years,—kept at hard work,—and every three months brought out and have 20 stripes on the bare back at the public whipping post. This act to be read by the Clerk of every town at March meeting. ✓

† Nov. 17th. Jona. Verry is ✓ offered £400 O. T. and wood to be master of the work house,—he to board his own family.—Capt. John Clark states, that his brother Gedney Clark of Barbadoes, had promised, probably, 1000 bushels of corn, and certainly 500 from his Bonaventure plantation, to the poor of Salem, if the town will get it imported.—The town order a vote of thanks to be sent him for this promise. ✓ † 23d. Spencer Phillips, Lt. Gov., informs the House, that a treaty of peace is made with Eastern Indians. He congratulates them on the arrival of £183,000 sterl., granted by Parliament to reimburse this Province for charges in expedition against Cape Breton.—As a part of this sum, there was *hammered* money.

Dec. 23d. Obediah Alby, jr. had been lately brought from Wiscasset and committed to Prison here, on charge of being concerned in killing one Indian and wounding two others.—§ 26th. Lt. Gov. and Council send an order to Justices of Essex to have the jail here guarded by six men,—three of whom to be constantly on the watch, lest Alby should escape and thus involve the Province in a new war with the Indians. This order was not complied with. Alby was carried from Salem jail to York jail, in about nine months, that he might be tried.

1750. ✓

|| Jan. 23d. Joseph Crellius, a German of Philadelphia, has a proposal read to the House for transporting

\* Jo. of Ho. † T. R. ‡ Jo. of Ho. § Gen. Sess. Ct. R. || Jo. of Ho.

German Protestants and tradesmen.—26th. Four townships are granted for these Germans,—two in the W. and two in the E. parts of the Province.—Joshua Winslow and other merchants of Boston are loaned the Mass. Frigate to sail for N. of Ireland and bring from 300 to 550 Irish Protestants hither. ✓ 27th. Bills of 1, 3, 4 1-2, 6, 9 and 18*d.* to be struck off to the amount of not above £3000.

\* Feb. 3*d.* Col. Benjamin Brown d.—son of John and Sarah B.—b. July 25, 1706,—g. at Harvard 1725,—m. Eunice, daughter of Col. John Turner, June 19, 1729.—Had children—Hannah, Eunice, Benjamin and John. He was frequently Selectman; was Rep. to Gen. Ct. several years;—made justice by Gov. Belcher.

† March —. Act to prevent stage players and other theatrical amusements.—† 5th. Peter Frye succeeds John Nutting in the Grammar school at salary of £400 O. T.—§ 11th. Contribution of £13 8 to aid David Woodwell of Hopkinton, to ransom his daughter from captivity.—18th. Village Church invited to aid in Council, for dismissing Stephen Chase, pastor of 2d Church at Lynn.—|| 19th. Each minister of the town is to preach at the work house once a month for a part of the year.—The town accept the Engine, provided by R. Derby and others.

¶ April 23*d.* Robert Boden merchant d. lately. He had an estate in the Island of Jamaica. He left no family.

\*\* May 30th. Gen. Ct. meet. John Leach and Daniel Gardner Rep.

June 22*d.* James Jeffrey is chosen Notary of Salem. Joseph Frye is appointed Collector of Essex.

†† Aug. 6th. Wm. Gale had kept a reading, writing and cyphering school within the bridge.

‡‡ Sept. 26th. Lt. Gov. informs the House, that Indians, supposed to be from the frontiers of Canada, had attacked fort Richmond and taken some of the English.—28th. House vote 150 men to defend Eastern frontiers.

\* Lynde's Notes. † Province Laws. ‡ T. R. † N. Danvers Ch. R.

|| T. R. ¶ Prob. Rec. \*\* Jo. of Ho. †† T. R. ‡‡ Jo of Ho.



## 1751.

\* Jan. 25th. The distance from this town to New Salem is 90 miles, about two thirds further than at present.

† Feb. 11th. There are 56 scholars in the Grammar school, 10 of whom study Latin.

‡ March 4th. The town accept of a Fire Engine, purchased by Hon. B. Lynde and others.

§ April 28th. Col. Thomas Barton, Apothecary, d.—m. Mary Willoughby 1710, who d. about Jan. 1758. In early life he practiced physic and thus acquired a good estate. For many years, he was Selectman and T. Clerk; became Justice of the Peace 1733. He left children, John and daughter Mary Toppan.—His will says I give my wife all “my gold rings had at funerals, saving what may be made use of for my own funeral.”—He bequeathed 24 bibles to poor people.

|| May 29th. Same Rep. as last year.

¶ July 26th. In Mr. Gale's school are 57 readers, writers and cypherers.

\*\* Sept. 26th. “Voted that pretenders to worship at St. Peter's church, living in the lower Parish, who owe any thing here, if they will not pay the same, be turned over to said parish.”—This shows, that *signing off*, about which so much is said in our country parishes, was formerly done for one of the purposes,—for which it is often done now.

†† Oct. 7th. Joseph Bartlett physician d.—left wife Sarah and son Walter Price.—†† Oct. 23d. Voted that, the Middle and Village parishes be set off, as a separate district. Gen. Ct. consented to this next Jan.

§§ Nov. 13th, Caleb Lindall d.—son of Timothy and Mary L.—b. Feb. 5, 1685. He had been merchant in the Island of Barbadoes.—Sarah Clark, who had been wife of Caleb Lindell, d. June 28, 1764, Æ 60.

\* Jo. of Ho. † T. P. ‡ T. R. § Lynde's Notes. || Jo. of Ho.  
¶ T. P. \*\* Ep. Ch. R. †† Prob. Rec. ‡‡ T. R. §§ Burying Point.

1752]

\* Dec 18th. A house in N. Field is *impressed* for a man sick with small pox.

1752.

† Jan. 22d. The Act of Parliament, lately passed,—for regulating the commencement of the year and correcting the Calender in use,—is ordered to be printed and bound with the Province laws for the better information of the people—This act required, that the year should begin Jan. 1st after Dec. 31, 1751,—and not March 25th, as previously, and that 11 days be added to the year 1752, so as to make Sept. 3d the 14th. Such an addition was made, that the Equinoxes and Solstices might be calculated to fall on their proper dates.

‡ March 9th. Voted by the Confederate Church “that the version of the Psalms by Tate and Brady be sung as a part of divine service.”—§30th. Fences are built across the entrances into Salem from Boston, for the preventing of the spread of the small pox.

|| April 3d. A bill is brought into the House for ascertaining the value of Spanish Coins, called Pistareens and smaller pieces of the same stamp. This money began to pass the previous year. ✓

¶ May 10th. Wm. Lynde d.—son of Hon. Benjamin L.—b. Oct. 27, 1714, g. at Harvard 1733. He was a merchant and left considerable estate. Leaves a large part of his property to Wm. Lynde, son of his cousin Joseph L. of Saybrook, Conn., and £250 O. T. the interest of which is to be given to six such poor persons here, as his Executors choose.—✓ 29th. Salem and its district are fined £60 for not sending a Rep. to Gen. Ct.

June 3d. Peter Frye is chosen Collector on Tea, Coffee, Arrack, Coaches, Chariots, &c. for Essex.—5th. The House desire the Gov. to appoint a Fast for distress of the Provinces, particularly for Small Pox and Fevers, both of which prevail.

\*T.P. †Jo. of Ho. ‡1st Ch. R. §T. R. ||Jo. of Ho. ¶Lynde's Notes. \*\*Jo. of Ho.

\* July 4th. The Justices issue a warrant for impressing houses, lodgings, nurses and other necessities for persons here, sick with Small Pox.

This year Benjamin Gerrish son of Benjamin G., b. July 7, 1714, m. Margaret Cabot Jan. 7, 1737, Notary Public here 1739, d. Governor of Bermuda.

Rev. P. Clark publishes a defence of the divine right of infant baptism.

## 1753.

† March 5th. Timothy Orne, merchant, d. lately, m. Lois Pickering April 7, 1709, left wife, Lois—children, Timothy, Samuel, John, Lois Lee, Esther Gardner, and Mary Diman.—‡19th. A Committee report, that Ryall Side be set off to Beverly by consent of Gen. Ct.

§ May 10th. Dea. James Lindall d., son of Timothy and Mary L., b. Feb. 1, 1676, m. Elizabeth Curwin Dec. 15, 1702,—she d. May 19, 1706,—m. Mary Weld, daughter of John Higginson, May 1708,—she lived till Jan. 22, 1776, Æ 90. He was Justice of Gen. Sess. Ct. He left children, James, Timothy, Mary, and Abigail Jennison.—||30th. Henry Gibbs Rep. to Gen. Court.

Sept. 5th. Gov. Shirley, having returned, states to the House, that he had been a Commissioner of His Majesty to Paris, and says I have been gone “three years longer than I promised to myself when I left Boston.” Mr. S. was occupied in Paris about claims of the French to territory in this country.—¶13th. As the setting off of Ryall side was confirmed by Gen. Ct., John Leach, belonging there, resigns his offices of Selectman and Assessor.—He had been Rep. to Gen. Ct. and became Justice of Gen. Sess. Ct., d. Sept. 14, 1774, Æ 73.—\*\*25th. A female of Rowley is fined 25s. and costs, by a Court here, for wearing men’s apparel.

†† Oct. 1st. Dea. Peter Osgood d. lately---m. Mar-

\* T. P.

† Prob. R.

‡ T. R.

§ Burying Point.

|| Jo. of Ho.

¶ T. R.

\*\* Gen. Sess. Ct. R.

†† Prob. Rec.

1754]

tha Ayre May 19, 1690, who survived him---one of his children was Mary, wife of Benjamin Woodbridge. He sustained prominent offices in town and was Rep. to Gen. Ct.

\* Dec. 5th. The Gov. states, that the payment by Parliament of charges for reducing Cape Breton, had a happy effect in lessening "many mischiefs attending a Paper currency."

1754.

† Feb. 4th. Hon. B. Lynde is chosen Ruling Elder of the confederate Church instead of his father. John Nutting still sustained the same office, having been chosen 1737.

‡ March 26th. County Tax £400. Salem pays £33 12 6, District of Danvers £18 10 3, Marblehead £38 7 3, Ipswich £47 19, and Newbury £61 9.

§ May 15th. The great Engine Company are to be excused from serving on Juries, as well as from other public duties. £600 L. M. voted for town charges exclusive of Danvers district.---|| 29th. H. Gibbs and D. Epes, jr. Rep. to Gen. Ct.

June 15th. H. Gibbs on Committee "to farm the excise on Tea, Coffee and China ware for Essex." This excise was let for £35 6 8.

¶ July 2d. The Gov. signs a treaty with the Norridgewock, and, 6th, with the Penobscot Indians.

\*\* Sept. 9th. According to the desire of the House of Rep., the people here meet about the Excise Bill, as to the private consumption of Wines and distilled spirits. The Gov's speech on this subject is laid before the inhabitants.---The town express the opinion, that the enacting of said bill would be inconsistent with the natural rights and liberties of the people of Mass.---Other towns expressed various opinions as to this Bill, which Minot says was passed.

†† Oct. 21st. Dea Nathaniel Putnam, of N. Danvers Church, d. He m. Hannah Roberts June, 24, 1709.

\* Jo. of Ho.    † 1st Ch. R.    ‡ Gen. Sess. Ct. R.    § T. R.  
 || Jo. of Ho.    ¶ Smith's Jo.    \*\* T. R.    †† N. Dan. Ch. R.

\* Dec. 14th. On the question, "whether it be the mind of the House, that there be a general Union of His Majesty's Colonies on this Continent, except Nova Scotia and Georgia,"---the House resolve, that such a Union be formed, though they were nearly divided.---H. Gibbs was on the affirmative. This Union was proposed by the King's Secretary, as the means of more effectually resisting the French. It was not carried into effect.---†The census of Salem (exclusive of Danvers Dist.) gave, this year, 372 houses, 3462 inhabitants, having 1629 men, 1710 females, of whom were 205 widows, and having, also, 123 blacks.

1755.

‡ Jan. 5th. £33 17 10 O. T. contributed to redeem Peter Labaree from the French in Canada.—§ 26th. Mr. Leavit's Ch. appoint delegates to a Council for ordaining Robert Rogerson over Brooklyne Church.

|| Feb. 21st. An embargo is laid, till March 1st, on fishing vessels bound to the Banks.

¶ March 10th. Richard Derby is granted upland, beach and flats at Ober's or Palmer's head at Winter Island, for a wharf and warehouse for 1000 years at 1s. per year.

April 7th. James Jeffrey d. lately, m. Ruth Pratt 1732, had been of Selectmen, school committee, Rep. to Gen. Ct. and Notary Public. He left widow Ruth—children, James, Arthur, William, John, Benjamin, Ann, Margaret, and Richard.—\*\* 30th. Rev. John Sparhawk d. in his 42d year, son of Rev. John S. of Bristol,—g. at Harvard 1731,—m. Jane Porter, daughter of Rev. Aaron P. of Medford Oct. 4th, 1737. He left children Priscilla, m. to Hon. Nathaniel Ropes, Catherine m. to her cousin Nathaniel Sparhawk, Nathaniel, John, Samuel, Jane m. to John Appleton, Susannah m. Hon. George King of Portsmouth, and Margaret m. Isaac Winslow of Boston.

\* Jo. of Ho. † Salem Register of Nov. 2, 1899. ‡ N. Dan. Ch. R.

§ Tab. Ch. || Jo. of Ho. ¶ T. R. \*\* Lynde's Notes.

\* May 28th. H. Gibbs Rep. of Salem and D. Epes of Dan. Dist. H. Gibbs chosen Clerk of the House and continues so till his death.--30th. B. Lynde on committee to consider the Gov's proposal for several expeditions against the French.

† June 5th. Jonathan Prince of Dan. Dist. physician, d. lately. He left wife Mary.—10th. Vote of House, that the Gov. declare war against all the Indian Tribes, Eastward of Piscataqua River, except Penobscot Tribe. Bounty for every male Indian above 12 is £50, and for every one under 12, £25—for every male Indian scalp above 12 is £40 and every one under 12 £20; for each female prisoner £25, and each female scalp £20,—all to be brought to Boston.—18th. Many English vessels are reported, as concerned in supplying Louisbourg with provisions, and French vessels as hovering on the coast to get provisions for that place. The Gov. recommends, that an armed vessel be sent to prevent English vessels from selling provisions to French vessels.—21st. An Embargo was laid on all vessels with provisions and warlike stores, more than enough for their own supply, to hinder illicit trade with the French.—24th. Gov. congratulates the House on success of the expedition against N. Scotia. Fort Beausejour was taken there 16th inst.

‡ July 3d. Fast for expeditions against the French Forts.—§ 23d. News of Braddock's defeat 9th inst.

|| Aug. 16th. The Gov. is desired by the House to request the Southern Governments so far to remove their embargo, as to allow their vessels, with provisions, to visit Boston and Salem.

Sept. —. Some of Col. Plaisted's Regiment, from a distance, were billeted here.—5th. Gov. states that the expedition against Crown Point, is likely to fail, if Gen. Johnson is not reinforced with more men. House vote 2000 recruits.---¶ 10th. Col. Plaisted and others petition for Town Meeting to raise men for Crown Point.---The quota of Salem is 28.---A balanced Bridge

\*Jo. of Ho. †Prob. Rec. ‡Smith's Jo. §E. A. Hol. Dia. ||Jo of Ho. ¶T. P.

is to be built over North River channel instead of the one there.---The indenture for this work has a circular stamp on the top of it,---which, besides 11 pence at the *and it* bottom, has a Cod Fish in the middle and round the Fish "Staple of the Massachusetts."---\*16th. News of *made* Gen. Johnson's victory, 9th inst. at River Point.---†17th. *25* Thomas Barnard is installed over the confederate Church. Mr. Lowell of Newbury prayed; Clark of Danvers preached from Malachi 2 ch. 6 vs.; Barnard of *town* Marblehead gave charge.---‡24th. Col. Plaisted goes *refined* to take his command at Crown Point.---§29th. A *1000* soldier from the army at Lake George, brings bullets, taken from the French in late battle, and supposed to be *unarm* poisoned. *again*

Oct. 30th. Both Houses desire Lt. Gov. Phipps to declare war against the Penobscot Indians.

|| Nov. 2d. Mr Leavit's church are invited to join in Council for ordaining Benjamin Adams over 2d Church of Lynn.---18th. ¶ About 4h. 15m. we were awakened by a greater earthquake than has ever been known in this country. Tops of chimnies and stone walls were thrown down, and clocks stopped by the shake. I thought of nothing less than being buried instantly in the ruins of the house. This Earthquake was felt from N. Scotia to Wingaw, S. C., and all interjacent territories. Its direction was supposed from N. W. to S.E. ---Less shocks afterwards. Tradition says, that one result of the earthquake here was to reduce the circumference of hoops, as worn by ladies.

\*\* Dec. 12th. Miles Ward, jr. petitions Gen. Ct. for leave to send a vessel with Beef and Pork to some of the English Leeward Islands for cotton.---16th. Gov. Lawrence of N. Scotia is to be informed, that his Province must pay for the French Neutrals about coming thence into Mass.---John Nutting is appointed Notary Public.---†† 19th. News that Lisbon was destroyed by earthquake 1st of Nov.---‡‡ 23d. The House desire

\* E. A. Hol. Dia. † 1st Ch. R. ‡ E. A. Hol. Dia. § Jo. of H. || Tab. Ch. R.

¶ E. A. Hol. Dia. \*\* Jo. of Ho. †† E. A. Hol. Dia. ‡‡ Jo. of Ho.

1756]

the Gov. to appoint Fast for awful dispensations of Divine Providence in repeated earthquakes, inundations and other calamities, by which God has testified his holy displeasure against nations of Europe as well as against inhabitants of these Colonies.—\*26th. Persons give an account of the Wine and distilled Spirits, used in their families, in order to pay the excise on them. Excise on Wine 6*d.* Rum and Arrack 4*d.* gall. ✓ Vessels arrive at Boston with French Neutrals from N. Scotia.—27th. The House order these Neutrals to be distributed in various towns, under the care of the Selectmen,—and to be employed according to their ability, and charges for them to be paid by the Province. A proportion of such French were sent to Salem. Before Feb. 7, 1756, about 1000 of them had arrived at Boston. They were strong Catholics. Many of them, who were supported by charity, made loud complaints of their ill usage. They probably expected too much, and the English, looking on them as intruded by Gov. Lawrence upon Mass., though he could do no better,—did too little to relieve their necessities. They were moved from place to place, but were still unwelcome and distressed strangers.—This year Rev. P. Clark had a sermon printed,—“A word in season to soldiers.”

↓  
1756.

† Jan. 2*d.* Capt. Ichabod Plaisted, jr. d. lately, son of Col. Ichabod P., b. Oct. 20, 1720, g. at Harvard, 1745, m. Eunice, daughter of Benjamin Brown, Esq. deceased, she was b. Sept. 13, 1731, m. for her second husband Timothy Fitch.

§ March 8*th.* After choice of moderator, town meeting is opened with prayer by Rev. Mr. Barnard, and several Province laws are read against profaneness and other immoralities, to the inhabitants. This service appears to have been occasioned by the seriousness, which followed the recent earthquake, and it was continued.

\* T. P.

† Jo. of Ho.

‡ Prob. R.

§ T. R.



April 5th. Voted that Thomas Fowler be buirer of dogs and cats and be allowed 1s. each for burying them.—These animals seem to have been killed, lest they should spread the small pox.—Defoe's account of the plague in London in the reign of Charles II., relates that an immense number of cats and dogs were killed lest they should spread the plague.

\* May 17th. Col. I. Plaisted sets out for Crown Point.—† 26th. H. Gibbs for Salem and D. Epes for Danvers Dist. Rep. to Gen. Ct. Benjamin Pickman is chosen Counsellor. He so continues till 1759, when he declines serving any longer.

July 7th. B. Lynde is on Committee to devise means for complying with a vote to raise 3500 men against Crown Point.—† 22d. Fast to pray for victory over French and Indians.

§ Aug. 4th. Though war with the French had been carried on, it is now proclaimed in Boston according to order of the King.—|| 17th. Gov. Shirley and the House take an affectionate leave of each other, as he is about sailing for England.

¶ Sept. 20th. Salem is to be divided into four Wards, so that the duty of the Constables may be equalized.

\*\* Oct. 3d. Every householder of the Province is obliged to keep, at least one pound of powder in his house. Serious injury was done in several towns by such powder.—†† 13th. The House vote, that 6d. a ton on all vessels at their entry, except fishing and coasting vessels, 6d. a lb. on Tea and 2d. a lb. on Coffee, be paid to collect a fund for building and maintaining two vessels to guard the coast.—‡‡ 22d. The Overseers here petition Gen. Ct. that the French Neutrals, under their care, may be removed to some inland town for safe keeping.—Such petition was revived Feb. 12th, lest the French Neutrals should escape in some vessel and join the enemy.

\* E. A. Hol. Dia. † Jo. of Ho. ‡ Smith's Jo. § E. A. Hol. Dia. || Jo. of Ho.  
¶ T. R. \*\* Bos. Week. Advertizer. †† Jo. of Ho. ‡‡ T. R.

1757]

\* Nov. 2d. Edmund Batter d.  $\text{\AA}$  84, son of Daniel and Mary B., m. Martha Pickman, Oct. 26, 1699, Barbarra Hide, May 25, 1714, who d. at the age of 36, and Hannah Higginson, Sept. 25, 1723.—† 16th. Benjamin Prescott takes a dismissal from his people. The Council highly recommend him.—‡ 18th. Warwick Palfray d. lately, son of Walter and Margaret P. b. Nov. 15, 1685, m. Elizabeth Hunlock, Nov. 11, 1714, and widow Mary Ellis, Oct. 10, 1747. He had sustained chief offices in town. ✓

Silver shoe and knee buckles, gold sleeve buttons and gold necklaces continue fashionable among persons of common as well as of great property. ✓

1757.

§ Feb. Coldest winter since 1648,—much snow, wood from £4 to £4 15 a cord.—|| 17th. The overseers here are allowed to move the French Neutrals,—7 to Hopkinton, 5 to Southborough, 8 to Tewksbury and 12 to Sturbridge.—25th. House desire Lt. Gov. to appoint a Fast for imploring divine aid in the expeditions, in which the Province may be engaged.

¶ March 14th. £108 L. M. are voted here to furnish recruits for the present expedition, instead of those drafted from the train bands.

\*\* April 12th. Thomas Reddington, a sick soldier, who was on the last expedition against Crown Point, is allowed pecuniary help. Benjamin Ives receives a Commission as Lt. of the Province Snow, Prince of Wales. He was taken sick before she sailed and died. She was captured by the enemy.—20th. Thomas Poyington, Capt. of ship Essex, petitions that he may sail with a load of wheat to England or Ireland, notwithstanding the embargo. This petition is not allowed.

†† May 19th. Each voter for Rep. must have freehold of 40s. a year, or other estate of £40 sterl.—

\* Lynde's Notes. † S. Dan. Ch. R. ‡ Prob. Rec. § E. A. Hol. Dia.  
|| Jo. of Ho. ¶ T. R. \*\* Jo. of Ho. †† T. R.

\* 25th. John Turner for Salem and D. Epes for Dan. Dist.—Rep.

June 8th. D. Epes presents a memorial for incorporating Danvers Dist. into a town, which was granted next day.—Hutchinson states “by the King’s instructions to the Gov., he was strictly charged to consent to no act for making a new town, unless, by a clause in it, there should be a restraint of this power of sending Rep., and Danvers a few years before, when it had been separated from Salem, was made a Dist. and not a town, because Districts had not this power.” Thus Danvers is set off from Salem. Among the persons so taken from the community here, were the following. Daniel Gardner, who had been Rep. to Gen. Ct. d. 1759, left wife Anna and children. Daniel Epes, son of Daniel and Martha E., b. Oct. 28, 1679, d. 1760, left children, Daniel, John and Mary Procter; had sustained various offices of Town and County, been a leading member in House of Rep. and Justice of Gen. Sess. Ct. Rev. B. Prescott, son of Jonathan P. of Concord, b. Sept. 16, 1687, g. at Harvard 1709, m. Elizabeth, daughter of John Higginson, Oct. 20, 1715,—(she b. June 28, 1696,—d. March 20, 1723,)---m. Mary dr. of Rev. H. Gibbs, of Watertown, July 15, 1732, (she d. Dec. 18, 1744,) m. Mary, sister of the first Sir Wm. Pepperel, Oct. 6, 1748, (she b. Sept. 4, 1686, had for her first husband Hon. John Frost of Newcastle, N. H.—second, Benj. Colman, D. D. of Boston, she b. Sept. 4, 1686,—d. April 18, 1766.) Mr. P. published, 1768, “A free and calm consideration of the unhappy misunderstandings and debates between Great Britain and the American Colonies.”—He d. May 28, 1777.—Rev. P. Clark, son of Uriah, of Watertown, g. at Harvard 1712, m. Deborah Hobart of Braintree, Nov. 6, 1719, d. June 10, 1768, in his 76th year; left children, Hobert, Caleb, Samuel, Hugh, William, Mary, wife of Bartholomew Rea, and Elizabeth, wife of Ebenezer Grosvener, and grand children of son Peter deceased.—His sons, Sam-

uel and Peter, were ministers, the latter an Episcopalian. Mr. C. published, 1758, "Summer morning conversation between a minister and a neighbour," occasioned by "a Winter evening's conversation on Original sin" by Rev. Mr. Webster of Salisbury, and then a reply to a rejoinder of Mr. W. Charles Chauncey, D. D. published against Mr. Clark, and Mr. C. against him on the same subject.—Thomas Nelson b. at Norwich, Eng. June 1671, was soldier under King William,—was in Ireland to help drive out James II., served in Queen Ann's wars,—under Sir Cloudesley Shovel at siege and capture of Barcelona,—in expedition to Canada 1711, when he settled in Salem, continued remarkably erect and active till about a year before he d., Nov. 1774.

\* June 20th. Fast for great drought, fear of French fleet, disappointments and threatening judgments.

† Aug. 9th. Jonathan Morison is captured at Fort William Henry, carried to Quebec,—thence to France where he d. about Feb. 1758.—16th. Gov. Thomas Pownal, lately arrived, says in his speech, that the question has come to this, whether the French shall drive the English out of this Continent,—and, also, that Provincial affairs are very critical. He informs the House, that he had just received news, that Fort Wm. Henry had surrendered and there had been a perfidious breach of the capitulation by the French.—25th. Gov. informs the House, that a Regiment of Highlanders, in His Majesty's service, are soon expected. He desires Gen. Ct. to provide quarters for them.—31st. Both Houses reply to Gov. that they have agreed to furnish barracks on the Castle or Gov's Island to accommodate 1000 men with their officers, and that this Province is under no obligation to support such troops.

‡ Sept. 5th. Maj. Joshua Hicks d. recently, m. Martha Derby, Oct. 22, 1719. He had been select-man and sustained other trusts of the town.

§ Oct. —. Samuel Goldthwait d. in service under Earl of Loudon against the enemy.—|| 16th. Confeder-

\* Smith's Jo. † Jo. of H. ‡ Prob. Rec. § Jo. of Ho. || 1st Ch. R.

ated Ch. is invited to attend Council for ordaining' Josiah Bailey over 2d Ch. of Hampton, N. H.

1758.

\* March 11th. House vote 7000 men for Canada, to be dismissed by 1st of Nov. This was the largest force ever voted by Mass. at one time.—15th. Arms and accoutrements, furnished by the Province to the 1800 men, under Earl of Loudon, and are still not given up, are to be returned. Such of them as are in Essex, are to be left with Col. Plaisted.—†20th. The Fish Committee are to keep open the passage ways here for salmon, shad, oldwives and other fish and to appoint places for taking such fish in scoop nets.—‡25th. An Embargo is laid on all vessels of the Province.

May 31st. John Turner and H. Gibbs Rep.

June 5th. Mr. Barnard preaches Art. Election Sermon.—13th. As there have been repeated disappointments in expeditions against the enemy, and great preparations are made in English Colonies for immediate warlike operations, the House desire the Gov. to appoint a Fast. They request that the King of Prussia, as an ally of England, may be mentioned in the order for such a religious service.

Oct. 4th. Gov. relates to the House "the reduction of the Island of Cape Breton and its dependences, the key of the enemy's only port; the destruction of Fort Frontinac and the enemy's whole naval force, of their stores and magazines at Cadaraqui, and that the dominion of the Lakes, which soon or late, must be the dominion of America, is again restored to the British empire."—He mentions that Parliament has granted Mass. for its expenses in war for provisions 1756, £27380 19 11 1-2 sterl.—§ 31st. Confederate Ch. is invited to help ordain Wm. Symmes over 1st Ch. at Andover.

|| Dec. 30th. Gov. says, "Fort Du Quesne on Ohio has surrendered, an event to open an extensive trade

\* Jo. of Ho. † T. R. ‡ Jo. of Ho. § 1st Ch. R. || Jo. of Ho.

and to confirm our Indian alliances."—\*31st. Confederate Ch. is invited to assist in ordination of Nathan Holt over 2d Ch. in Danvers.

## 1759.

† Jan. 7th. The Confederate Ch. vote, that persons, who have united with Mr. Leavit's church, while he has been pastor, may commune with them.—‡ 10th. As Gen. Ct. in order to relieve Boston of a part of their Tax, assessed Salem £300 more than usual, the people here petition for redress.—13th. As the Hon. B. Lynde presented Gen. Ct. six folio volumes of the statutes from Magna Charta to 13th year of His present Majesty's reign, the Ct. vote him their thanks.

Feb. 13th. It is enacted that the solemn affirmation of the Quakers shall, in certain cases, be accepted instead of an oath.—§ 14th. Gov. orders the officers of justice in every town, to prevent Taverners and others from selling spirituous liquors, wines, coffee, tea, ale, beer or cyder on the Sabbath, and from entertaining any persons then contrary to the ends of the law.—|| 17th. Henry Gibbs merchant d., son of Rev. Henry G. of Watertown, b. May 13, 1709, g. at Harvard 1726, m. Margaret daughter of Rev. Jabez Fitch of Portsmouth, N. H. Jan. 31, 1739, she d. Nov. 7, 1742, m. Catherine, daughter of Josiah Williard of Boston, May 28, 1747, she d. May 31, 1769. He left children.—He was Rep. to Gen. Ct. and Clerk of the House from 1755 to his death, was Justice of Gen. Sess. and Com. Pleas Courts.

¶ March 10th. House vote 5000 men to aid in the conquest of Canada.—13th. "There being affairs of the utmost importance to this and the other British Governments in N. America agitating and under consideration," the House desire the Gov. to appoint a Fast.—\*\* 27th. Town vote £4 L. M., as bounty to each man, who enlists to make out their quota for expedition against Canada.

\*1st Ch. R. †1st Ch. R. ‡Jo. of Ho. §T. R. ||Lynde's Notes. ¶Jo. of Ho. \*\*T. R.

May 16th. £800 L. M. voted for town charges.—  
 \* 30th. Stephen Higginson Rep. to Gen. Ct. Ichabod Plaisted was of the Council and so continued till 1762.

† Aug. 9th. Schooners George and Swallow, and 15th, Sparrow, on a fishing voyage, are taken by a French Privateer.

Sept. 18th. Quebec taken. When the news of this event arrived hither there was first a tolling of bells for the death of Wolf and then ringing of them for victory.

‡ Oct. 25th. Thanksgiving for the capture of Quebec.

§ Dec. 11th. Doct. Jonathan Prince d. in his 26th year.

## 1760.

|| March 21st. Gov. Pownal informs the House, that he has been appointed Gov. of S. C. and that Gov. Francis Bernard of N. J. is to be his successor.—The House resolve, that the Gov. send briefs through the Province to have collections made for sufferers by fire in Boston, and that £3000 be paid out of the public Treasury to the Selectmen there to relieve their poor. This fire began 2 o'clock morning of 20th and caused a loss of £100,000 sterl.

¶ March 24th. Jonathan Pue, Esq. d. suddenly. He was surveyor and searcher of this Port and Marb.—

\*\* 24th. Gov. and House take an affectionate leave of each other.—25th. S. Higginson is on committee to congratulate Gov. Bernard, when he arrives.

April 23d. I. Plaisted is on committee to assign to French Neutrals to each county and its towns according to their Tax. There were 1017 of these Neutrals in Mass.

†† May 19th. £1100 voted for town charges. A school house is to be built, not on the same spot of the

\* Jo. of Ho. † Bos. Ev. Post. ‡ Smith's Jo. § Bos. Ev. Post.

|| Jo. of Ho. ¶ Bos. Ev. Post. \*\* Jo. of Ho. †† T. R.

old one, in school-house lane. This new building was placed where the present Court house stands.—\* 28th. Nathaniel Ropes Rep. to Gen. Ct.

† June 27th. Capt. Stevens from St. Kitts, states, that Capt Carlton and two other vessels were lately taken by French privateers in W. I.—‡ Two lads of this place are sentenced at Ipswich to pay £10 each, to two months imprisonment, and one of them to stand in pillory, for passing counterfeit dollars in Haverhill. It was supposed, that the dollars were made by a gang in Salem, who employed the boys to pass them.

Aug. 11th. Joseph Dowse is confirmed Surveyor and Searcher of Salem and Marblehead.

§ Sept. Dissentaria prevails.—|| 18th. Rejoicing here for the capture of Montreal and the rest of Canada.

¶ Oct 26th. Timothy Lindall d., son of Timothy and Mary L.—b. Nov. 4, 1677., g. at Harvard 1695, m. Bethiah Kitchen May 27, 1714,—she d. June 20, 1720, Æ 31, he was published to Madam Mary Henchman of Lynn, Dec. 6, 1749, she d. Feb. 8, 1767, Æ 80.—His daughter Jane m. Francis Borland of Boston and a grand daughter of his m. John Still Winthrop, whose son is Thomas Lindall W. present Lt. Gov. He long worshipped with the Society at N. Danvers,—sustained chief offices of town, was often Rep. to Gen. Ct. and Speaker of the House a few Sessions, of the Council several years,—long Justice of Gen. Sess. and Com. Pleas Courts.—“He was a gentleman of good understanding and much knowledge. He served with ability and faithfulness in many important offices.”

\*\* Dec. 30th. Geo. III. proclaimed King in Boston.

### 1761.

†† Jan. 9th. John Nutting mentioned as Notary Public.

‡‡ Feb. —. For near 30 years a law required 6d. a gallon on imported Molasses and was exceedingly un-

\* Jo. of Ho. † Bes. Ev. Post. ‡ Bes. Gaz. § E. A. Hol. Dia.  
|| Henfield Dia. ¶ Temb. Stone. \*\* Smith's Jo. †† Jo. of Ho. ‡‡ Hutch.



popular. There was a considerable amount of forfeitures by this law. The merchants of Boston and Salem preferred a petition in opposition to one by a Custom House officer to Superior Ct. for writ of assistance to aid him more fully to execute this and other laws.—James Otis appeared for these merchants and his speech was admired by such as were opposed to the Royal power.—\*16th. A brig, Capt. Elkins, bound from Gibraltar to Monto Christo, was lately lost on Caucases, crew saved.—† 20th. Mrs. Anna, wife of Rev. Samuel Fisk d. with the small pox. She was daughter of Joseph and Elizabeth Gerrish, b. Aug. 13, 1712, m. Mr. F. Dec. 20, 1739.

‡ March 12th. “We were last night about 1-4 past 2 o’clock, roused out of our beds by an astonishing earthquake, much such as that five years ago, only that was a more terrible jar and this was undulatory.”—§25th. Selectmen lease the N. School house chamber to a number of gentlemen for a Library.

|| May 21st. A general cold prevails here and through the country.—¶ 27th. S. Higginson and N. Ropes Rep. to Gen. Ct.—29th. The former is on committee to devise measures for redeeming persons of this Province, who are held by French and Indians, and, also, to consider what may be done by the Government to encourage the propagation of the Gospel among the aborigines.—The Gov. says in his message “Whig and Tory, Court and Country, are all swallowed up in the name of Briton.” He fears that a party spirit is prevalent in the Province and desires that it may be suppressed.—\*\*30th. Miles Ward Æ about 87, has for more than 70 years travelled an old road on S. bank of N. river from bridge at W. end of the town to Curwin’s lane.

†† June 6th. B. Lynde is on committee who advertise for all persons that have friends in captivity in Canada and Louisiana to send in their names.—‡‡15th.

\* Bos. Ev. Post. † Bos. Gaz. ‡ Smith’s Jo. § T. P. || Hen. Dia.  
¶ Jo. of Ho. \*\* T. P. †† Jo. of Ho. ‡‡ St. Peter’s Ch. R.

It is voted that if Wm. Epes, Esq. will lengthen the church 20 feet and move the pulpit at his own charge, he shall have the price, which the pews, built in this addition shall bring.

\* July 9th. Salem to pay £18 13 11 on £1000 of Province Tax.

† Sept. 20th. Elizabeth, wife of Benjamin Marston d. Æ 53. She was daughter of the noted warrior, Isaac Winslow, of Marshfield, m. Nov. 20, 1729. Her husband was a native of Salem, and m. Rev. H. Gibbs' daughter Mehitable of Watertown, for his first wife, who was b. Jan. 8, 1706, and d. Aug. 21, 1727,—was Rep. to Gen. Ct.,—sheriff of Essex—Justice of Gen. Sess. and Com. Pleas Courts,—moved from Salem to Manchester, where he d. 1754, leaving 1-6th of the income of the Misery Island, after his wife's death, to the Society for propagating the Gospel among Indians.

‡ Oct. 12th. Stephen Higginson d. at Newbury, buried here, son of John H. b. July 31, 1716,—m. Elizabeth Cabot, April 22, 1743, held principal offices in town, Rep. to Gen. Ct., Justice of Gen. Sess. and Com. Pleas Courts.—His wife Elizabeth survived him.—§ 26th. Sch. Jolly Robin, bound to St. Kitts, taken 22d ult by French Privateer.

Dec. 14th. Joseph James hostage at Martinico for the ransom of brig Ranger.—|| This year it is enacted, that, instead of death for *second* offence in robbing, it shall be for the *first* offence therein.

## 1762.

✓ I Jan. 20th. I. Plaisted of Council brings down to the House a petition from individuals in the Province, for being incorporated as a Society for spreading the Gospel among the Indians of N. America. The petitioners had already subscribed a large sum for a permanent fund. They were incorporated 6th March. Gordon informs us that the King would not allow their incorporation.

\* Jo. of Ho.

§ Bos. Ev. Post.

† Burying Hill.

|| Prov. Laws.

‡ Bos. Gaz.

¶ Jo. of Ho.

\* Feb. 7th. D. Leavit pastor of first Church. ~~d~~ after a lingering illness ~~Æ~~ 42, buried in the family tomb of Edward Kitchen, Esq., g. at Harvard 1739, m. Mary Pickering, Oct. 17, 1751, who survived him,—left children, Mary, Sarah, and Elizabeth; very much lamented.

† March 8th. A way of two poles wide to be allowed from Daniel's lane to Becket's lane.—‡ 25th. Wm. Walter and Eliezer Moses are appointed waiters and preventive officers for customs of Salem.

April 14th. War against Spaniards is proclaimed in Boston,—according to the King's order.

§ May 26th. N. Ropes and Wm. Brown are Rep. to Gen. Ct. N. Ropes is elected a member of the Council and so continues till 1769.—27th. A precept is sent hither for a Rep. to supply his place. Andrew Oliver, jr. was accordingly chosen 9th of June.

June 11th. John Tapley had been Capt. in service against the enemy—15th. The House desire Gov. to order a Fast because of a severe drought.—|| Hay very short,—sold for \$20 a ton.

¶ Aug. 3d. Confederate church and first church settle their difficulties. The latter give up their name *first* to the former, and receive half of the plate and of the amount of the Deacons marsh.—\*\*25th. Thomas Barnard preaches a sermon at ordination of Wm. Whitwell at Marblehead.

†† Sept. 6th. Each Tea seller pays 1s. each Innholder and Retailer 3s. 9d. for a license.—‡‡7th. News that Havana was taken and rejoicings here, 15th, for such success.—§§ 9th. Petition of Richard Derby as to a Flag of Truce, sent to ransom hostages at Hispanola and illegally taken and detained at the Island of Providence.—10th. Gen. Ct., for the victory of Prince Ferdinand of Brunswick and for the capture of Havana, keep a day of Thanksgiving,—Dr. Sewall preaches for them. The Gov. invites the House to drink the

\* Bos. Gaz. † T. R. ‡ Bos. Gaz. § Jo. of Ho. || E. A. Hol. Dia.  
¶ Tab. Ch. R. \*\* Marb. Ch. R. †† T. P. ‡‡ E. A. Hol. Dia. §§ Jo. of Ho.

King's health with him and the Council at Concert Hall.—14th. Gov. states that "soon after the invasion of Newfoundland, the inhabitants of Salem and Marblehead, who were concerned in the Fishery N. W. of Nova Scotia, were alarmed with advice that a French Privateer was cruising in the Gut of Canso, and petitioned for protection of their fishing vessels employed in those seas, and that he fitted out the Mass. Sloop, just returned from Penobscot and sent her to the Gut of Canso,—that she had just returned from this cruise, being gone a month,—had heard of a French Pirate there and assisted the vessels there to finish their fares." For thus dispatching this sloop the House charge the Gov. with infringing on their right. He ably vindicates himself the 18th, having acted by advice of Council.—15th. House desire Gov. to appoint Thanksgiving for cessation of an extreme drought, for reduction of Martinico and of the "strong city of Havana," and success in Germany.

\* Oct. 21. Last week Benjamin Ellinwood was tried in Salem for stabbing Jacob Poland, Aug. 16th, at Beverly, so that he died.—The verdict was manslaughter. The prisoner was sentenced to be burnt in the hand, imprisoned 12 months and pay costs.

Dec. 6th. Last week John Waldo, lately from Newfoundland with his family and settled here,—in getting over a fence, fell into a well, broke his skull and died soon.—† Epes Sargent d. Æ 72, m. widow Katherine Brown Aug. 10, 1744, moved from Gloucester, where, as a merchant, he acquired considerable property, left children, had been Col. of Ipswich Reg. was long a Justice of Gen. Sess. Ct., and took an active part in promoting the public welfare of Salem.—9th. Ichabod Plaisted d. of apoplexy, Æ 63, native of Portsmouth, m. Sarah, daughter of John Brown Oct. 20, 1720, (she b. Oct. 27, 1701, d. Dec. 8, 1755,) left daughter Mary, wife of Joseph Sherburne of Boston; sustained chief trusts of the town,—served as Col.

\* Bos. Gaz.

† Lynde's Notes.

1755 and 1756, against the enemy at Crown Pt. and Ticonderoga,—was Justice of Gen. Sess. Ct.—Rep. to Gen. Ct. and member of the Council.—Pemberton's M. S. says of him "pious, modest, cheerful, beneficent,—a friend to the pious,—spurned at vice and encouraged virtue."—<sup>✓</sup>Samuel Barnard d. lately, was of Deerfield, May 29, 1723, when he moved hither, m. widow Rachel Barnard, daughter of Timothy Lindall, Esq. she d. Aug. 3, 1743,—m. Elizabeth Williams of Hatfield 1744, left widow Catherine whom he m. after 1762,—held principal offices in town and was justice of Gen. Sess. Ct. His property was large. He bequeathed £50 to the poor of Salem, and the same sum to the poor of Deerfield, £60 in plate to the first Church, and £100 in plate to Mr. Ashley's Church at Deerfield, and £40 in plate to Deerfield Church, 400 acres of land for an Academy in Hampshire Co. if endowed in 10 years, if not, said land to be for sending the Gospel among the Indians. <sup>✓</sup>Doct. Bezaleel Toppan, son of the Rev. Christopher T. of Newbury, g. at Harvard 1722,—† Had a call to settle over Topsfield Church 1727, became a physician,—m. Mary Barton June 27, 1734,—left children, Mary Pickman and Anna Toppan.—† This year there were 30 fishing vessels owned here, which brought home 11,177 quintals of merchantable and 17498 qtls. of Jamaica fish. Five of these vessels belonged to B. Pickman, Esq.—£100 O. T. equal to £13 6 8. L. M.

## 1763.

§ Feb. 7th. Gov. informs the House that peace has been made between France, Spain and England, by which the French are excluded from N. America.

† April 27th. Wm. Brown d. of an apoplectic fit in his field, son of Hon. Samuel and Abigail B. b. May 7, 1709, g. at Harvard 1727—m. Mary, daughter of Gov. Burnet, Nov. 14, 1737—she d. July 31, 1745, m. Mary daughter of Philip French, Esq. of Brunswick, N. Jer-

\*Bos. Gaz. †Tops. Ch. R. ‡Salem Gaz. 1808. §Jo. of Ho. ¶Lynde's Notes.

sey, she d. 1761, left children by former wife, William, Samuel, Benjamin, Thomas, Mary and Sarah, and by latter, Phillipa and Francis. He was Justice of Gen. Sess. Ct.—Rep. to Gen. Ct. and member of the Council. His place at Ryal side was called “Brown Hall, after the place in Lancashire, England,” whence his ancestors came. He gave a gilt cup to his son William, which belonged to his first wife’s grand mother, “Bishop Burnet’s lady, who was descended from the Duke of Buckleigh’s family,”—and who was daughter of Apollonius Scott and Maria Vanderhoog. He left £1000 O. T. to Society in Eng. for propagating the Gospel among American Indians.

\* May 23d. The Church lately under Mr. Leavit vote to be called the *third* Church. They invite John Huntington, jr. who had preached for them, to become their minister. The Congregation concur with this invitation.—†25th. Wm. Brown and Andrew Oliver, jr. Rep. to Gen. Ct. † Thomas Barnard preached the Election Sermon.

§ June 4th. Josiah Dewing, among sick and wounded soldiers, receives assistance.—||20th. Mr. Huntington voted £100 L. M. salary and £200 L. M. settlement.

¶ Sept. 6th. The Association of this and other towns, receive, according to their application, from the President of Harvard College, 2 vols. of Leland’s View of Deistical writers, which had been left with him for distribution. Other associations have the gift of such books.—\*\*8th. Of the surviving partners of the Land Bank or Manufacturing Scheme, eight were living here, and others had moved away.—28th. J. Huntington is ordained over 3d Church; Messrs. Diman prayed, Lord of Norwich preached from II Tim. 5 c. 22 vs. Clark of Danvers gave charge, Pemberton of Boston prayed, Barnard gave hand fellowship.

†† Dec. 10th. An abundance of potatoes and other country produce.—†† 26th. James Cockle collector,

\* Tab. Ch. R. † Jo. of Ho. ‡ Pemberton’s M. S. § Jo. of Ho. || Tab. Ch. R.  
¶ Assn. of Salem and Vicinity R. \*\* Bos. Gaz. †† Collins’ Dia. ‡‡ Bos. Gaz.

and Joseph Dowse, Surveyor and Searcher, state, that "as it had been represented to the Lords Commissioners of His Majesty's Treasury, that many vessels trading to plantations, not belonging to the King of Great Britain, and returning with cargoes of Rum, Sugar and Molasses, have found means to smuggle the same into His Majesty's Colonies, without paying the King's duty,"—all masters of such vessels are requested on their arrival to report their cargoes "to the Custom house, where proper officers will be put on board to see that the Act of the sixth of His late Majesty King George II. be carried into execution."—Same advertisement was published by Collectors of other ports.—Duty on Sugar was 5s. cwt. A pamphlet was published, in a few days, in Boston against the said act.—\* This year the terms Whig and Tory, were adopted from England and began suddenly to be used in Mass. Officers of the Crown and their supporters were called Tories, and those, opposed to them, were called Whigs.

## 1764.

† Jan. 2d. John Nutting, Esq. is appointed by the Surveyor General, John Temple of Boston, to be the King's weigher and gauger for Salem.—‡ 11th. Memorials from this and other sea ports to Gen. Ct. against the Sugar Act.—21st. To prevent the Small Pox from being brought hither, the Selectmen are empowered to erect fences across highways, leading into town, to continue them and keep watches till 1st of June.

§ March 8th. Small Pox prevails here,—guard is suspended, 1000 persons are inoculated.

|| May 23d. Wm. Brown and Andrew Oliver, jr. Rep. to Gen. Ct.

June 13th. The House accept a draft of a letter to their agent in London, Mr. Maudit, against the Sugar Act and the Stamp Act, though the latter act had not gone into effect.—In this letter the House maintain that Parliament has no right to tax this Province, be-

\* Hutch. † Bos. Gaz. ‡ Jo. of Ho. § E. A. Hol. Dia. || Jo. of Ho.

cause not represented in the House of Commons.—Hutchinson says that the said Sugar Act was the revival of a similar one of the sixth of George II.,—that the duty on Molasses was reduced from 6d. to 3d.,—new duties were laid on Coffee, Pimento, E. India goods, Wines from Madeira and the Western Islands. Parliament were devising measures to ease their government of future expenses in America.

\* July 2d. The Jamaica man of war sailed recently from N. York for her station at Salem and Marblehead.

† Aug. 11th. This ship anchored in the Harbor.

‡ Oct. 1st. ✓ There are 509 houses, 923 families, whites under 16 are 884 men, 985 females,—above 16 are 1050 m. 1335 f.—coloured people 117 m. 56 f.—French Neutrals under 16 are 8 m. 3 f.—above 16 are 13 m. 18 f., making in the whole 4469 inhabitants.—§ 8th. ✓ The Surveyor General has appointed William Brown Collector of Customs at Salem and Marb.—|| This year many people of the Province engaged not to import or use English goods, and particularly not to wear mourning on the decease of relatives, because of English manufacture. In the public prints, leather clothing was advertised for sale as suitable for persons to work in.—Some individuals entered into a contract not to eat any Lamb, so that wool might be more plenty for manufactures.

## 1765.

✓ † Jan. 10th. Snow from 3 to 4 feet on a level.

\*\* March 21st. Dea. Miles Ward d. lately Æ about 91. He m. Sarah Massey, Sept. 16, 1697, his son Joshua survived him.

†† April 4th. A son of Susan Lamb drowned in Mill Pond.

✓ †† May 23. News that the Stamp Act is to begin at the Colonies 1st of Nov.—§§ 29th. A. Oliver and Wm. Brown Rep. to Gen. Ct.

\* Bos. Gaz. † Hen. Dia. ‡ T. P. § Bos. Gaz. || Hutch.  
¶ Mass. Gaz. \*\* Prob. Rec. †† Hen. Dia. ‡‡ Mass. Gaz. §§ Jo. of Ho.



\* June 6th. Rev. Samuel Occum, an Indian, preached for Mr. Huntington. In Dec. Mr. Occum preached here again in company with Rev. Nathaniel Whitaker, both of whom were about sailing for England to solicit funds for the Indian charity school under Mr. Wheelock. † They returned May following and had collected about £10,000 for their object.—‡ 18th. Committee of House report a letter for Speakers of the Houses of Representatives in the Colonies, as to having delegates, from each of these Colonies, meet in N. York 1st Tuesday of Oct., to consult about late acts of Parliament. Such a Congress, composed of delegates from a part of the Colonies, met accordingly and signed a memorial to the King and each House of Parliament.

Sept. 25th. The Gov. says in his speech to the House, "I have called you together at this unusual time, that you may determine what is to be done at this dangerous conjuncture. I need not recount to you the violences, which have been committed in Boston, nor the declarations which have been made and still subsist, that the act of Parliament, for granting Stamp duties in the British Colonies, shall not be executed in this Province. By this act all papers which are not duly stamped are null and void, and all persons who shall sign, engross or write any such papers will forfeit for each offence £10.—This Province seems to me to be upon the brink of a precipice. The same spirit, which pulls down houses, attacks reputation. I recommend to you to order a compensation to be made to the sufferers by the late disturbances."—26th. The Gov. informs the House that a ship had come into Boston harbour, with stamped papers for the use of the Province and of N. H. and R. Is., that as Mr. Oliver had declined the office of distributor of Stamped papers, the House must see to their preservation. The House excuse themselves from taking charge of these papers.

§ Oct. 1. Wm. Epes, Esq. d. Æ 39, m. Abigail, dr. of Hon. Benjamin Pickman, March 1750, when he had

\* Hen. Dia.

† Mass. Gaz.

‡ Jo. of Ho.

§ Hen. Dia.

recently moved hither from Chesterfield, Va. He was one of the principal members of St. Peter's Ch. His wife survived him and m. Dr. Sylvester Gardner of Boston, May 1772.—\*21st. The town instruct their Rep. to use their efforts for the repeal of the Stamp Act,—and for the prevention of such riots, as have lately taken place.—In their remarks the town object to being denied, by Parliament, the trial by juries in the Admiralty Courts.—†29th. The House pass several resolves as to their Charter privileges ;—one, that while this Province pays for its own Government it ought not to help support government in England ;—another, that the Court of Admiralty, as administered here, is an oppression.

## 1766.

✓ ‡Jan. Amount of seizures, made in Salem and paid into the Province Treasury was £880.—20th. Committee of the House report on the grievances of the people, because the Gov. and Council had the Stamp Act and Mutiny Act printed contrary to their wishes, at the expense of the Province, and because they had shut the Courts of Justice and particularly the Supreme Ct.—23d. The House, except five, resolve that closing the Courts of Justice is a grievance and that Judges and Justices and all other offices in this Province ought to proceed in the discharge of their duties.—The Rep. of Salem are in favor of this resolve.—A letter from Secretary Conway, dated London Oct. 24, 1765, says to Gov. Bernard, “ It is with great concern that His Majesty learns the disturbances, which have lately arisen in your Province ;—the general confusion that seems to reign there, and the total languor and want of energy in your Government to exert itself with any dignity of efficacy for the suppression of tumults. You will in the strongest colours represent to them the dreadful consequences, that must inevitably attend the forcible and violent resistance to Acts of the British Parliament and the scene

\* T. R.

† Jo. of Ho.

‡ Jo. of Ho.

of misery and distraction to both countries inseparable from such conduct."

\* Feb. 2d. First Church are invited to join in Council for ordaining John Wyeth over 3d Church in Gloucester on 5th inst.—† 13th. Gov. appointed Nathaniel Ropes Judge of Probate and first Justice of Com. Pleas Ct. for Essex, instead of John Choate, of Ipswich, deceased.

‡ March 11th. Vote to have what is now called Federal street laid out.—§ 25th. Marine Society instituted, incorporated five years afterwards, its object to aid poor widows of its deceased members.

|| May 19th. A letter from Salem to a person in Boston, remarks "This day the town met for choice of Rep., when A. Oliver and Wm. Brown were chosen. We ask no pardon from Mr. Dictator for choosing those gentlemen he proscribed."—¶ 21st. Great rejoicing here that the Stamp Act is repealed. Effigies of Pitt and Lord North were exhibited. Pitt's was honoured, North's was burnt.—\*\* 28th. A. Oliver and Wm. Brown Rep. to Gen. Ct.—29th. B. Lynde resigned his office of Counsellor, because the people, in general, were much opposed to Judges of the Supreme Court's holding such an office.—†† 30th. Rev. John Huntington d. of a consumption, in his 30th year, son of John H. of Norwich, Conn. received a degree at Harvard 1763. He returned unrelieved from a voyage to W. I. for his health shortly before his decease. He was esteemed for his talents and piety.

‡‡ June 3d. The House congratulate the Gov. on the repeal of the Stamp Act as "a most interesting and happy event; which has diffused a general joy among all His Majesty's loyal subjects through this extensive Continent."—20th. The House vote their thanks to Wm. Pitt "for his noble and generous efforts in procuring the repeal of the Stamp Act" and to other members of Parliament.

\* 1st. Ch. R.    † Mass. Gaz.    ‡ T. R.    § Mass. Register.  
|| Mass. Gaz.    ¶ Hen. Dia.    \*\* Jo. of Ho.    †† Tab. Ch. R.    ‡‡ Jo. of Mo.

\* Aug. 17th. Edward Kitchen, son of Robert and Bethiah K. d.  $\text{Æ}$  66, m. Feek, daughter of Josiah Wolcott, Nov. 19, 1730, (she b. Oct. 9, 1712, d. Jan. 17, 1747)—Justice of Gen. Sess. Ct.—† He bequeathed six silver pint cans to 3d Church, £40 to poor of Salem; £66 13 4 L. M. to Society for promoting Christian knowledge among Indians, and £133 6 8 to Harvard College.—‡ 25th. Persons of first Church chosen to receive £70 in silver, a legacy by Samuel Brown, from Wm. Burnet Brown, and “to buy a handsome silver Flagon and have the arms of the Brown family engraved upon it.”

§ Oct. 11th. Capt. John Crowninshield d. lately, left wife Anstis and children, Sarah Gibaut, Mary Elkins, Anstis King, Elizabeth Derby, Jacob and George, and grand children of son John, deceased.

|| Nov. 13th. Wm. Brown is on Committee to consider difficulties, under which the trade of the Province labours, and particularly as to the fishery on the coast of Labrador.—¶ 20th. The Act of Parliament prohibiting the exportation of any articles from America to Ireland or other ports N. of Cape Finisterre, except Great Britain, will take place 1st of Jan. Persons having Flax seed are advised to bring it to market in season before the Act commences.—\*\* 24th. “Voted that the Rep. of this town use their endeavours that the losses of the late sufferers in Boston be made up to them out of the Province Treasury, agreeable to the recommendation of our most gracious Sovereign.”—In Oct. a vote different from this was passed here. The above losses were caused by mobs, who were irritated by the Stamp Act.

†† Dec. Wm. Brown is on committee to draft a letter for the Province Agent De Berdt in London, “tending to remove the unfavorable impressions that have been made by misrepresentations of the temper and conduct of His Majesty’s Province of Mass. Bay.”—

\* Burying hill.

|| Jo. of Ho.

† Mass. Gaz.

¶ Mass. Gaz.

‡ 1st Ch. R.

\*\* T. R.

§ Prob. Rec.

†† Jo. of Ho.

Dec. 5th. The question before the House whether compensation be allowed for the sufferers by mobs in Boston Aug. 26, 1765, and pardon to all concerned in these mobs,—passed in the affirmative, 53 to 35.—\* This year about 14 French Neutrals sailed hence for Martinico.—† Libels were filed in the Admiralty Ct. this year against vessels of Salem, which had imported Molasses without fully complying with the Sugar Act, which was generally considered oppressive by people of the Colonies, for 9 or £10,000 sterl. The merchants who owned these vessels made a compromise before trial, for about 1-3 of this sum, with the Surveyor General, who soon dismissed the Collector, Wm. Brown, for not being more strict to enforce the act.

## 1767.

‡ March 3d. James Ford is keeper of the writing school.—§ 4th. As a distressing loss by fire was sustained on 3d of Feb. by inhabitants of Boston, the House desire the Gov. to send briefs to all places in this Province for contributions, except to Worcester, Hampshire and Berkshire Counties.—|| 9th. Selectmen report that they have laid out a way from Robert Allen's house to Burying point lane. The eight feet way on Bank of N. River from town bridge to Curwin's lane, is to be discontinued.—¶ 18th. It being a year since the repeal of the Stamp Act, this event is joyfully commemorated through the Colonies.

\*\* April 12th. Salt 16s. hhd., Fish middling 12s. 8d. a qtl.—15th. Turpentine 16s., Pitch 16s., Tar 10s., Pork 48s., Bacon 6d. lb., Callavances 4s.—†† 27th. Episcopal Society vote to purchase a parsonage Glebe near their church, of Wm. Burnet Brown, Esq. They agree that each single pew on main aisle pay 5d. L. M. each single floor pew not on said aisle 4d., and each single wall pew 6d. for every sabbath.

‡‡ May 18th. Andrew Oliver gives the town his

\* Hen. Dia. † Hutch. ‡ T. R. § Jo. of Ho. || T. R.  
¶ Mass. Gaz. \*\* Hen. Dia. †† Ep. Ch. R. ‡‡ T. R.

1767]

compensation for being Rep. to Gen. Ct. five years,—over what of such compensation as he has already presented them. They vote him their thanks.—The Selectmen are empowered to build another work house. £1200 L. M., including £200 for a work house, voted for town charges.—\* 27th. Wm. Brown and Peter Frye are Rep. to Gen. Ct.

June 19th. Rev. Dr. Sewall and others, in the name of the Pastors of Congregational Churches in the Province, pray to be incorporated so as to relieve the widows and orphans of their deceased brethren.

† July 14th. Timothy Orne, merchant, d., son of Timothy and Lois O., b. June 27, 1717,—m. Rebeckah Taylor of Lynn, 1746, she d. May, 1771, *Æ* 44,—left children, Timothy, Samuel, Rebecca, Sarah, Lois and Esther. He was often Selectman and active for the welfare of the town. His property was £22020 8 10 1-4 O. T.

‡ Oct. 31st. Bottomry to various ports is 20 per cent.

§ Nov. 1st. John Sparhawk, son of Rev. John S. deceased, is recommended and dismissed by the First Ch. here to First Ch. at Kittery. He became an eminent man.—|| 2d. Benjamin Pickman had lately imported a Fire Engine for the town, which cost them £73 4 6.—¶ 5th. Effigies of the Pope, &c. carried about town, as commemorative of gun powder treason.—\*\* 15th. First Ch. invited to sit in Council for adjusting difficulties between Rev. John Wyeth and 3d Church at Gloucester.—†† 19th. A sloop is cast away in a N. E. storm, on Cat Island, and seven persons drowned.—‡‡ 20th. New duties on paper, glass, painters' colours and teas, begin in this and other ports, to the great dissatisfaction of most people.—§§ 23d. A Committee are appointed, according to the proposal of Selectmen of Boston, to draft a subscription paper for promoting industry, economy and manufactures in Salem and "thereby prevent the unnecessary importation

\* Jo. of Ho. † Mass. Gaz. ‡ Hen. Dia. § 1st Ch. R. || T. R.  
¶ Hen. Dia. \*\* 1st. Ch. R. †† Hep. Dia. §§ Hutch. §§ T. R.

of European commodities, which threaten the Country with poverty and ruin.”—The Committee in their report state that the Fishery, as well as trade, had been declining for years and was now under great embarrassments.

Dec. 7th. This Committee’s report was not accepted by the town.

## 1768.

\* Feb. 13th. The House direct a letter to the “several Houses and Burgesses of the British Colonies on the Continent, setting forth their sentiments with regard to the great difficulties that must accrue, by the operation of divers Acts of Parliament, for laying duties and taxes on the Colonies, with the sole and express purpose of raising a revenue.”—26th. The House resolve to endeavour by their example to suppress extravagance, idleness and vice, and to promote industry, economy and good morals in their respective towns, and to hinder unnecessary exportation of money from the Province. They resolve to discontinue the use of foreign superfluities and to encourage the manufactures of this Province.

† March 7th. Land granted near N. Bridge for another distil house.—Petition, that, as great disorder usually exists here on Election days by negroes assembling together, beating drums, using powder and having guns and swords, a bye-law may be made to prevent these things.

‡ May 8th. First Ch. invited to assist in ordaining Thomas Cary over first Ch. in Newburyport.—§ 12th. Mr. Barnard preaches the |Dudlean lecture. | His subject is Revealed Religion.—|| 25th. Wm. Brown and Peter Frye Rep. to Gen. Ct.—¶ 28th. A way near S. bridge to be made from Col. Pickman’s distil house to Dudley Woodbridge’s homestead land.

\*\* June 7th. Briefs to be sent to all parts of the Pro-

\* Jo. of Ho.

† T. R.

‡ 1st Ch. R.

§ Mass. Gaz.

|| Jo. of Ho.

¶ T. R.

\*\* Jo. of Ho.

vince for aid of sufferers by fire at Montreal on 11th of April. There had been a great fire in the same place 1765.—\*15th. Mr. Barnard preaches a sermon at the funeral of Rev. P. Clark of Danvers. The Church walked before the Corpse, assisted by twelve bearers.—† 21st. The Gov. lays before the House a letter from the Earl of Hillsborough of April 22d, which expresses His Majesty's displeasure, for their resolve for "writing to other Colonies on the subject of their intended representations against some late Acts of Parliament, and that it was the King's pleasure that the House rescind the vote, which gave birth to the circular letter of Feb. 11, 1768, from the Speaker."—A clause in the Earl's letter required the Gov. to dissolve the Gen. Ct. if the said vote was not rescinded.—30th. The House resolve not to rescind this vote, 92 to 17. The Rep. of Salem were in the minority,—who, though acting from a sense of duty, were exposed to much reproach, while the majority were highly applauded by most of the people.

† July 7th. "We hear of a Printing Office set up at Salem by Mr Hall, lately removed from Newport."—§ 18th. Vote passed here to approve late vote of the House not to rescind, and to thank them "for their firmness in maintaining our just rights and liberties."—A protest against such approbation is signed by 30 of the inhabitants.—|| 28th. Mrs. Lyda Hill d., for many years keeper of the Post Office.

✓ Aug. 2d. The Essex Gazette is issued. It was the first paper issued here, edited by Samuel Hall, circulated once a week and was 6s. 8d. a year. Its motto was "Omne tulit punctum, qui miscuit utile dulci."—Horace.—¶ 14th. Contribution of £21 12 1 1-2 sterl. in first Congregation for sufferers by fire at Montreal.—\*\* 30th. Thomas Mason is appointed coroner for Essex.

✓ Sept. 6th. Merchants and traders unanimously voted, at the King's Arms Tavern, "not to send any further

\* N. Dan. Ch. R.

† Jo. of Ho.

‡ Mass. Gaz.

§ T. R.

|| Essex Gaz.

¶ 1st Ch. R.

\*\* Ess. Gaz.



orders for goods to be shipped this Fall, and that from 1st of Jan. 1769 to 1st of Jan. 1770, they will not import, nor purchase of others, any kind of merchandize from Great Britain, except coal, salt and some articles necessary to carry on the fishery,"—will not import "any tea, glass, paper or painters colours, until the Acts imposing duties on these articles are repealed."—7th. One Row, for giving information, that a vessel in the harbour was about to elude the payment of certain duties, was carried to the Common,—tarred and feathered, set upon a cart with the word, informer, in large capitals, on his breast and back,—carried through main street, preceded by a crowd, who opened to the right and left and bid him flee out of town. He went to Boston and was there rewarded by the Crown officers for his sufferings.—11th. Edward Norris has entered on the duties of Post Master.—John Nutting is to succeed John Fisher, as Collector of Salem and Marblehead ports.—22d. A convention of 70 delegates from 66 towns, besides districts, meet in Boston and petition the Gov. to call a Constitutional assembly of the Province. He forbids them to proceed.—24th. They answer him, that they claim the right to meet and discuss public concerns.—26th. Between 70 and 80 towns are represented and there are between 80 and 90 delegates in the Convention, which dissolves the 29th. \* Salem chose on 21st two persons to represent them in this Convention,—but, not knowing its object, they wrote by a Committee to Boston Selectmen for information, and received an answer on 27th, when, there was so thin a meeting here, no vote was taken, and this town was not represented in the Convention.

† Oct. 12th. Nathaniel Ward, son of John and Hannah W. b. Jan. 29, 1746, g. at Harvard 1765, had declined Professorship of Mathematics and Natural Philosophy in King's College, N. Y., chosen Librarian of Harvard College the week, he was taken sick, d. with a fever.

\* T. R.

† Ess. Gaz.

1769]

Nov. 8th. His Majesty's speech to Parliament says, "That the capital of Mass. has proceeded to measures subversive of the Constitution and attended with circumstances that might manifest a disposition to throw off their dependence on Great Britain."—15th. Essex Almanack had been lately printed here. The most of its calculations as to transits, eclipses, &c. were by Mr. Ward, recently deceased.

\* Dec. 5th. The bye-law of 1762 is to be published, which forbid foot ball, bat and ball, and throwing snow balls and stones in public places.—† This year there were in Salem 1194 polls, real estate £33269 5 and personal £29741 2 1.—‡ The annual deaths are 87 whites and 3 blacks.—For last 4 1-2 months, there were 142 vessels of Salem and Marb. cleared out, most of them schooners.

## 1769.

§ Feb. 10th. Frozen down to Baker's Island.—  
 || 21st. ✓ A barber here advertizes, "Ladies hair dressed with French curls, rough tupees and plain tops;"—also towers, false curls and rolls for ladies and wigs for gentlemen to be sold.—Leather breeches, clogs and coloshoes are fashionable.

¶ March 6th. Edward Norris, jr. had kept one of the reading and writing schools two years at £50 salary.—\*\* 10th. A Fire Engine is kept by the Naval Officers.—13th. A Committee is appointed to join Committees of other towns to obtain relief for the fishermen from the payment of money to Greenwich Hospital.—†† 20th. News that John Fisher, lately suspended by the King's Commissioners, is honourably reinstated as Collector of Customs here.

April 7th. Samuel Gardner, merchant, son of John and Elizabeth G. d. Æ 57, g. at Harvard 1732,—m. Esther Orne, Dec. 13, 1738,—left children, Lois, Elizabeth, Geo., Weld, Henry and Esther Macay—estate

\* T. R.    † T. P.    ‡ Ess. Gaz.    § Hen. Dia.    || Ess. Gaz.  
 ¶ T. P.    \*\* T. R.    †† Ess. Gaz.

£20573 4 9—held chief offices of town, was Rep. to Gen. Court.

\* May 27th. The town instructed their Rep. to inquire about the conduct of the troops stationed in Boston—to remove unjust impressions as to the conduct of this Province—to exert themselves for repeal of Revenue laws recently enacted,—to try for the restoration of trial by jury in Admiralty Court, and for having this Ct. limited as formerly—to seek for renewal of harmony between Great Britain and the Colonies—to allow no appropriation of public money, except pressingly needed—and to encourage the Fishery.—†31st. Richard Derby and John Pickering, jr. are Rep. to Gen. Ct. The House remonstrate against an armed force in Boston, while Gen. Ct. is in session.

‡ June 14th. John Nutting, as Collector of Customs, is a member of the Admiralty Ct., who proceed to try four sailors of Marblehead. It appears that on April 23d, while these sailors were defending themselves off Cape Ann from being impressed, one of them killed Lt. Panton of the King's ship *Rose*, who came on board with a boat's crew to impress them.—They were cleared for justifiable homicide.—§ 15th. Gov. Bernard orders Gen. Ct. to meet at Harvard College to-morrow, as the House would not proceed to public business because of forces in the port and city of Boston.—27th. The House vote a petition to the King for the removal of the Gov.—28th. The Gov. informs the House that His Majesty, "by his sign manuel," has ordered him home to give an account of the state of this Province.—29th. The House pass resolves against the Gov's proceedings and as to the rights of the province.

July 15th. The House in answer to the Gov's messages, say that they shall never make provision to support the forces now in Boston against the public will. He prorogues them.—|| 28th. Nathaniel Whitaker, D. D. who had been pastor of a Church at Chelsea dis-

\* T. R. † Jo. of Ho. ‡ Ess. Gaz. § Jo of Ho. || Tab. Ch. R.

1770]

trict in Norwich, Con., had agreed with the 3d Ch., that he should become their minister without public instalment, and that they would be under Presbyterian order, until they see cause to alter. He preaches a sermon, reads the call of the Ch. and the concurrence of the Congregation, which were openly consented to by them, and declares his own acceptance of the call. Messrs. Barnard and Diman declined attending on this occasion, because it was opposed to Ecclesiastical usage and they feared it would be found inconvenient.

Sept. 11th. Third Church choose five Ruling Elders, John Gardner, Dea. James Ruck, Thorndike Procter, Jacob Ashton, and Benjamin Ropes.—\* 27th. Elizabeth, relict of John Gardner, was a Weld, m. to him Jan. 11, 1705, d. in her 88th year.—Margaret, relict of Daniel Macay, was an Epes, m. to him Dec. 2, 1719, d. *Æ* 77.

Nov. 14th. A woman of Boxford is tried here for poisoning her son's wife. She was cleared though strong presumptive proof against her.

† Dec. 3d. First Ch. invited to aid in ordination of Daniel Fuller over 2d Ch. at Gloucester on 10th of Jan.—‡ 12th. D. Eccleston delivers lectures here on Pneumatics at a half dollar a person.—It was common for negro slaves to be advertized here for sale.—Clearances of vessels from Salem and Marblehead for about 11 months were 251.—Deaths for the year were 114.

1770.

✓ § Jan. 1st. Daniel Hopkins has leave to set up a school for reading, writing and arithmetic. This is the first private school, kept by a master in the day, known to have been allowed by the town. A teacher of one of the public schools, recently instructed scholars in the evening on his own account. Grammar was taught only in the Latin school. The introduction of Grammar and also of Geography in late years, into our public schools, is a great improvement.—|| 7th. Jacob

\* Ess. Gaz.    † 1st. Ch. R.    ‡ Ess. Gaz.    § T. R.    || Hen. Dia.

Ashton, merchant, d. of Apoplexy, in his 51st year, was a Ruling Elder of third Ch., left a son Jacob.

\* March 12th. Voted, that the inhabitants here will do all they can to prevent the sale of imported goods, according to the agreement of merchants of this and other towns.—† 22d. § Richard Derby is on Committee of the House to consider the state of the Province and inquire into public grievances.—† 22d. Mrs. Hannah Clark d. in her 94th year.

April 10th. Rev. Samuel Fisk d. Æ 81,—g. at Harvard 1708—m. Anna Gerrish, Dec. 20, 1739,—left a son John and other children.—§ 25th. The House desire Lt. Gov. to issue briefs to the Congregations of the Province for making collections to relieve the distressed of Marblehead. || From 1768 to 1770, Marblehead had lost 23 vessels, amounting to £14124 8 5 L. M., and 162 men in them, besides a considerable number washed overboard from other vessels, whereby 70 women, who had 155 children, were deprived of their husbands.

¶ May 1st. The town choose a Committee of Correspondence to write to similar bodies of other towns about public concerns, and also of inspection to see, that the vote passed by the inhabitants against importing and using goods from England, be strictly observed.—They accept a paper, to be signed by the people here, which contains a pledge not to purchase any foreign teas and other merchandize from Great Britain, and to use endeavours for having other persons comply with the example of such subscribers.—By the 8th, 360 individuals, mostly heads of families, had put their names to the above paper.—16th. ✓ The new Work House is to be placed on the N. E. part of the Common,—cost for house alone to be £424 16 L. M. ✓ \*\* R. Derby, and John Pickering, jr. are Rep. to Gen. Ct.

June 25th. As the House from the beginning of the Session, would do no business, because the Lt. Gov.

\* T. R.      † Jo. of Ho.      ‡ Ess. Gaz.      § Jo. of Ho.  
 || Pemb. M. S.      ¶ T. R.      \*\* Jo. of Ho.

refused to move the Ct. from Cambridge to Boston,—he prorogues them.

\* July 17th. The Canker worms, which ravaged fields and devoured the grass in R. Is., N. H. and Mass., have appeared in Salem and vicinity. As these worms go from one place to another, some persons have dug trenches round their cornfields.

† Sept. 5th. Rev. George Whitefield preaches twice for Dr. Whitaker's people.—‡ 22d. Miss N. Leach of Beverly, excited the curiosity of numbers at Salem, where she visited, as a remarkable instance of dwarfish stature, being about 25 inches in height and 52 years of age.—§ 25th. The town vote that four persons shall be published as violaters of the non-importation contract. These and other persons were accordingly published.

|| Oct. 9th. The House, after having been prorogued twice, for refusing to do business, because the Lt. Gov. would not have them sit in Boston, agree from necessity to transact business at Camb.—11th. R. Derby is appointed one of the monitors of the House.—17th. ¶ Dr. Whitaker preaches two able sermons on the death of Rev. Geo. Whitefield, who suddenly expired, 30th ult., at Newbury.—There was offered here for sale an elegiac poem on the same occasion. It was composed by Phillis, a negro servant, Æ 17, who had been nine years from Africa, and was the slave of J. Wheatly, of Boston. She also composed and published, with the poem, a consolatory address to Lady Huntington, the patron of Mr. Whitefield, and to the orphan children in Georgia.—20th. Violent N. E. wind with rain, tide exceedingly high, wood and lumber drifted from the wharves; such goods, as stored sugar and salt to a large amount, dissolved; fences and trees prostrated and bridges hurt, and many vessels driven ashore and some of them injured.—\*\*31st. Mr. Barnard having been taken off from his labours by the palsy, and his son, Thomas, having supplied his place,—

\* Ess. Gaz.      † Hen. Dia.      ‡ Pemb. M. S.      § T. R.  
 || Jo. of Ho.      ¶ Ess. Gaz.      \*\* 1st Ch. R.

the Church have a fast preparatory to the choice of a minister.—\* The House choose Benjamin Franklin for their agent in London.

Nov. 7th. They appoint John Hancock, Mr. Hall, Samuel and John Adams, a Committee to correspond with agents and others in England and with Committees of several assemblies through "the Continent."

† Dec. 4th. Benjamin Hart advertizes the following in a Salem paper:—"He has left riding the single horse post between Boston and Portsmouth and now conveys passengers from Boston to any town between it and Portsmouth and back again, in the same Post Stage lately improved by John Noble. He sets out from Boston every Friday morning and from Portsmouth on Tuesday morning following. The above conveyance has been found very useful and now more so, as there is another Curricule improved by J. S. Hart, who sets off from Portsmouth the same day this does from Boston, by which, opportunity offers twice a week for travellers to either place." This shows that the facilities of journeying then were far less than now.—Annual deaths are 115.

### 1771.

‡ Jan. 1st. Experiments in Electricity by David Mason, at his house near N. Bridge, advertized. Price a pistareen a lecture for each person.

Feb. 5th. John Fisher, as Collector of Customs, had returned hither with his family.—12th. Widow Abigail Fowler d.,—had taught school more than 50 years.

March 5th. "The fatal and inhuman Tragedy acted in King's Street, Boston, was commemorated here."—§ 11th. Selectmen are to petition Gen. Ct. to erect one or more lights on Cape Ann shore.

|| April 3d. Lt. Gov. Hutchinson informs the House, that His Majesty has appointed him Gov. of Mass.—24th. The House still protest against sitting out of Boston.—25th. R. Derby is on Committee for

\* Jo. of Ho. † Em. Gaz. ‡ Em. Gaz. § T. R. || Jo. of Ho.

1772]

building two light houses on Thatcher's Island. These houses were lighted Dec. 21, 1771. Cost of the light houses and dwelling house was £2735 19 6 1-2. Price asked for the Island was £500.

\* May 1st. Third Ch. are represented in Council for ordaining Isaac Story, as colleague with Mr. Bradstreet of Marblehead.—† Churches of Messrs. Barnard and Diman aid in ordination of Enos Hitchcock, as colleague with Mr. Chipman of Upper Beverly.—14th. Medals of Geo. Whitefield to be struck off here in a few days.—‡ 27th. As Mr. Diman's meeting house is enlarging and his people worship with first society, voted by this society, that he preach for them. The first Church had heard Messrs. Barnard and Dunbar, as candidates, but could not be unanimous as to either of them.—§ 29th. R. Derby and J. Pickering, jr. are Rep. to Gen. Ct.

|| July 9th. Richard Routh is Dep. Collector of Customs. ✓

Aug. 3d. A pamphlet is published here, called the "lawfulness and advantages of instrumental music in the public worship of God."—30th. Francis Synonds, of Danvers, "informs the public, that by the help of the ingenious Joseph Flint, he has erected the first Chocolate Mill ever built in Salem to go by water." ✓

✓ ¶ Mr. Nichols began, this year, to assist Mr. M<sup>c</sup>Gilchrist and so continued till Dec. 1774.—There were 369 vessels cleared from Salem and Marblehead this year.—The annual deaths were 106.

1772.

✓ \*\* Jan. 13th. A Distillery, on wharf opposite Miles Ward's house, and another distillery on land, bounded S. by way near S. River and W. by Burying Point lane,—are allowed by Selectmen to be set up. ✓† 16th. Bryan Sheehen, b. in Ireland, Æ 39, is hung for a rape on Abiel Hallowel of Marblehead. Mr. Diman preach-

\* Ess. Gaz.

† 2d Bev. Ch. R.

‡ 1st Ch. R.

§ Jo. of Ho.

|| Ess. Gaz.

¶ Bentley

\*\* T. R.

†† Ess. Gaz.



ed on this occasion from Rom. 16 ch. 23 vs. This was the first conviction for felony in Essex County since the time of witchcraft. There were about 12,000 persons present at the execution.

Feb. 19th. Benjamin Lynde, Esq. is appointed Judge of Probate for Essex.

\* March 9th. It is voted to have a Town Well. This was the first public well here. It was made in School Street. Loads of hay, above 8 hundred to pay 1-2d. a hund., and of 8 hund. or less to pay 4d. for the load, at town hay scales.

† May 16th. Part of the First Ch. send a letter to the rest and the Pastor, which states, that they cannot agree to have Mr. Dunbar for their minister,—that they wish for a dismission to form another Ch. and for their just portion of Ch. property. This letter was signed by 10 m. and 42 f. who are granted a friendly dismission and 5-12th of Ch. property. The persons, thus set off, had, in connexion with others, lately begun to build a meeting house for Thomas Barnard, jr. whom they intended to have as their minister.—‡ 27th. R. Derby and J. Pickering, Rep. to Gen. Ct. at Harvard College.

§ June 3d. Nathaniel Ropes chosen Ruling Elder in place of John Nutting, who joined the new Society. || 15th. Lydia, wife of Joseph Henfield, whom he m. Sept. 14, 1710, d. in her 83d year.—¶ 16th. Walter Price Bartlett advertizes as an Auctioneer. He seems to have been the first vendue master here.

\*\* July 13th. Salem is assessed £26 11 3 1-2 on £1000 of Province Tax, which is £10,300.—†† 21st. Charles Shimmin had been lately permitted by Selectmen to keep a private school.—‡‡ 22d. Asa Dunbar is ordained as colleague with Thomas Barnard. Dr. Appleton preached from II. Tim. 2 ch. 15 vs.—§§ 27th. A man receives 15 stripes at the whipping post for stealing.

\* T. R. † 1st. Ch. R. ‡ Jo. of Ho. § 1st Ch. R. || Hen. Dia.  
¶ Ess. Gaz. \*\* Jo. of Ho. †† Ess. Gaz. ‡‡ 1st Ch. R. §§ Ess. Gaz.

\* Aug. 20th. There are chosen, Thomas Barnard, jr. as Pastor; John Nutting and Dea. Joshua Ward, as Ruling Elders; Samuel Holman and James Gould as deacons,—of the North Ch.—† 25th. Samuel, son of Benjamin and Abigail Pickman, b. Jan. 19, 1712, d. at Spanish Town, W. I.,—had been a member of the Council for Leeward Islands and Dep. Gov. of the place, where he expired.

Oct. 13th. Capt. Stephen Higginson, in brig Thomas, from London, arrived last week, with a bell of 900 lbs. for new meeting house and another of 600 for E. meeting house.

† Nov. 15th. First Ch. invited to aid in ordination of Joseph Willard as colleague with Joseph Champney of Beverly.—§ 17th. News from London, that John Williams, Inspector of N. York, is to be collector of customs at Salem, in place of John Fisher, who is to be Collector of Boston.

|| Dec. 23d. East Ch. assisted in ordination of Benjamin Wadsworth over N. Ch. in Danvers.—¶ 27th. Measels prevail here and through the country. From Salem and Marblehead, 321 vessels were cleared in 11 1-2 months.—Annual deaths are 97.

## 1773.

\*\* Jan. 13th. T. Barnard, jr. is ordained over the North Church. Mr. Williams, of Bradford, preached on this occasion.

†† Feb. 25th. J. Pickering, jr. is on Committee of House to "prepare and report a humble petition to the King for redress of grievances."

‡‡ March 8th. School Committee to provide one or more stoves for the town schools. Antipas Steward is and had been teacher of the Grammar School.

§§ April 9th. A letter of this date, with the late Resolutions of Virginia against the Stamp Act, is sent from Boston Committee to the Selectmen here.

\* North Ch. R. † Ess. Gaz. § 1st Ch. R. § Ess. Gaz. || N. Dan. Ch. R.  
¶ Hen. Dia. \*\* Hen. Dia. †† Jo. of Ho. ‡‡ T. R. §§ T. P.

\* May 18th. A Committee report that the expense of paving Main and King's street from West's to Britton's corner, will be £192 3 4 at 1s. a yard. They state that it is supposed that the manure, saved on the pavements at Charlestown and elsewhere, is equal to the interest of the cost of them,—that King's street here is so narrow, it cannot be kept in repair otherwise than by pavement,—that much of the market, which is turned to Marblehead in a wet season, would come to the centre of Salem, if this street were in good repair. As £80 had been subscribed for such paving, the town vote £100 more. Voted, that the Rep. of Salem use their utmost endeavours to prevent the importation of negro slaves.—† 26th. R. Derby and J. Pickering, jr. Rep. to Gen. Ct.—27th. R. Derby is chosen on Committee of the House to correspond with other Colonies.—28th. On motion of John Adams, the House approve the resolutions of Virginia against the Stamp Act.—29th. R. Derby is on Committee to bring in a bill for preventing the importation of negroes. Previously to this, a number of coloured persons had petitioned the Legislature for their freedom.

‡ June 1st. A clock made by Samuel Luscomb, has been recently put up in the tower of E. Meeting House.—§ 2d. The House, except five, vote that certain letters, which had been sent from individuals in Mass. to England and returned, are calculated "to overthrow the Constitution of this government and to introduce arbitrary power into this Province."—|| 7th. A report is presented by a Committee and accepted by the town, as an answer to the Committee of correspondence in Boston, who had sent to Salem "the State of the Rights of the Colonists, and a list of the infringements of these Rights."—¶ 16th. The House resolve, that, as Gov. Hutchinson and Lt. Gov. Oliver had written some of the letters, lately read to them (under 2d inst,) they would petition the King to remove them from this government.—Messrs. Hutchinson and Oliver

\* T. R. † Jo. of Ho. ‡ Ess. Gaz. § Jo. of Ho. || T. R. ¶ Jo. of Ho.

considered themselves loyally and dutifully bound to write what they did.—\*17th. The Custom House boat, with a sailing party is sunk and three men and seven women are drowned. John Becket and his apprentice, who were of this party, are saved by a schooner, which went off from Marblehead to their relief. Six of the drowned persons are found next day and landed on Derby wharf, from which they had cheerfully departed, and are buried the day following. “The solemnity of the several processions drew together a vast number of people.” Two others of the drowned were afterwards discovered and interred.—†24th. As the Judges of the Supreme Court had taken only half of the salaries, voted them by Gen. Ct., and depended for the other half on the Crown, the House resolve that such dependance is unconstitutional and subversive of the liberties of the Province.—The salaries thus voted were £300 for Chief Justice, and £250 for each of the other justices. These Judges had been instructed by the King to receive their pay only from the Crown after July, 1772. 28th. The House resolve, that it is the duty of the Judges to inform the public, who are very anxious to know, whether they intended to receive their salaries from the Crown or from the Province.—Nathaniel Ropes of Salem, was one of the Judges, who were placed in so trying a situation.

‡ July 14th. The town, deploring the alarming effects of drunkenness, petition the Court of Sessions to diminish the great number of retailers of ardent spirit, and to have only eight, two in each of the four wards.

§ Aug. 9th. Wm. Paine, of Worcester, as agent of Doct. James Latham, for Mass., notifies the people of Salem, that he is ready to inoculate any of them according to the improved and “Suttonian method.”—

|| 16th. Voted, that Jonathan Glover and others, of Marblehead, have leave to build a hospital for inoculating with the Small Pox on Cat Island, if Gen. Ct. al-

\* Ess. Gaz.

† Jo. of Ho.

‡ T. R.

§ Ess. Gaz.

|| T. R.

low.—\*20th. Benjamin Pickman, merchant, d., son of Benjamin and Abigail, b. Jan. 28, 1708,—m. Love Rawlins, of Boston, Oct. 1731, who d. June 9, 1786, *Æ* 77, had children, Benjamin, Love, Abigail, Judith, Clark Gayton, and William,—he had often held principal offices in town,—had been Col. of 1st Essex Reg't, Justice of Gen. Sess. and Com. Pleas Cts., Rep. to Gen. Ct. and member of the Council. He was highly and deservedly esteemed.—31st. Very sickly, 36 having died in a month.

Oct. 11th. Doct. Wm. Fairfield, physician, d. of small pox, *Æ* 41. Left wife Sarah. ✓

† Nov. 1. Small pox of so mortal a kind had prevailed here, that 16 out of 28, who were seized with it and sent to the Pest house, died. The town grant leave to some of the inhabitants to build a hospital in the S. E. part of great pasture for the purpose of inoculating. ✓

‡ Nov. 27th. The Ch. under Dr. Whitaker having become Presbyterians when he settled with them, desire that they may be received into the Presbytery of Mass. 21 brethren sign a request to this import. Their request was granted May 1774. 14 of their former number being dissatisfied, had been withdrawn more than a year.—§30th. The widow of Capt. John Webb, d. *Æ* 90.

Dec. 2d. Joshua Witherell d. in his 89th year,—grand son of Rev. Wm. Witherell of Plymouth Colony. 9th. First class of 132 enter the Hospital for inoculation. James Latham, called the Suttonian Doctor, inoculated them.—Among them was Rev. Phillip Payson, of Walpole, who preached for them on the Sabbath. Annual deaths, 208.

## 1774.

|| Jan. 7th. Second class of 137 enter the Hospital — for inoculation.

\* Ess. Gaz.

† E. A. Hol. Dia.

‡ History of 3d Ch.

§ Ess. Gaz.

|| Ess. Gaz.

\* Feb. 8th. In conformity with the pressing request of the House, the answer of the Judges of the Supreme Ct., as to their purpose of receiving their salary either of the province or of the Crown, is made known. All of the Judges, except Lt. Gov. Oliver, agree to have their compensation from the Province.—11th. The House resolve to petition the Gov. for the removal of Mr. Oliver from his office of Judge.—15th. The Gov. replies, that it would be contrary to His Majesty's will to have such a petition granted.—22d. House decide to impeach Mr. Oliver for taking his salary, as the King had ordered. The Gov. states, on 26th, to the House, that their process against Judge Oliver is unconstitutional. The House are thus stopped in their purpose as to this matter. Judge Oliver, evidently a very conscientious man, had political views different from those of the House, and while he acted consistently with his views and they with theirs, he was placed in a trying situation.—† 25th. Two men of Marblehead, suspected of being concerned in burning the hospital on Cat Island, on the 26th ult., are committed to Salem prison. In the evening 4 or 500 persons from Marblehead rescued the two men and carry them back. Military companies are ordered out to prevent this, but to no effect.

March 1st. By order of the High Sheriff, his deputy in Salem assembles several hundreds of the people here with arms, for recovering the two prisoners and seizing the principals concerned in their rescue. In the mean while, 6 or 800 were prepared at Marblehead to resist this force. The proprietors of the consumed hospital, fearful that if these two bodies came in collision, lives would be lost, agree to give up the prosecution of their claims for satisfaction. Such an agreement being made known here, the sheriff releases the men, whom he had summoned to enforce the law. The causes of the hospital's being burnt,—were opposition with some in Marblehead to its being built,—the small pox had

\* Jo. of Ho.

† Ess. Gaz.

been brought thither by persons of the 2d class of patients,—the rules for preventing the spread of this disease were not fully observed,—and a prevalent, though erroneous idea, that the physicians and patients of the hospital, had agreed to extend the small pox in Marb.

\* March 7th. The inhabitants of Salem vote that the inoculation at their hospital be discontinued,—that the town reimburse the proprietors of the hospital what they paid for its erection and have this establishment as public property.—† 9th. Dr. Latham meets the subscribers to Salem hospital at the town house. It had been reported, that his Suttonian method of treating the small pox, was by mercurials, and that his patients had not done so well as those of American physicians. His interview with such subscribers was to rebut charges of this kind.—Great excitement here against inoculation for small pox. ✓ 18th. Nathaniel Ropes d., son of Nathaniel and Abigail,—b. May 20, 1726, g. at Harvard, 1745, m. Priscilla, daughter of Rev. John Sparhawk, Sept. 12, 1755, she d. March 19, 1798,—he left children, Nathaniel, Abigail, John, Elizabeth, Jane and Samuel—he held chief offices of town, was Rep. to Gen. Ct., a member of His Majesty's Council, was Justice of Gen. Sess. and Com. Pleas Cts., Judge of Probate and of the Supreme Cts., and was Ruling Elder of 1st Ch. His honours were many and he was worthy of them.—28th. A communication from Boston Committee of Correspondence is received by Committee here, on the subject of establishing Post Offices and Post Riders independant of the laws of the British Parliament.

April 27th. First Reg. of Essex muster here under Col. Wm. Brown. His Excellency, Gen. Brattle and Secretary Flucker attend.

‡ May 11th. News that by act of Parliament, Boston Port is to be shut after 1st of June.—13th. Gen. Gage arrived at Boston to succeed Gov. Hutchinson, who informed the House 24th of Feb. that he had leave

from the King to visit England.—\* 17th. The town vote that it is their opinion, if all the Colonies will cease from their commerce with Great Britain and her W. India Islands, till the act for closing the port of Boston is repealed, “the same will prove the salvation of N. America and her liberties.” This vote is transmitted to Boston Committee.—† 25th. R. Derby, and J. Pickering, jr. are Rep. to Gen. Ct.—‡ 26th. Thomas Flucker, Sec’y of Prov., notifies the Selectmen here, that His Majesty has ordered Gen. Ct. to meet at Salem and he desires them to make suitable preparation.

§ June 5th. Gov. Gage comes hither from Boston. He was met by a large number of gentlemen from Salem and Marblehead, who escorted him into town. He resided at the seat of Hon. Robert Hooper in Danvers. The Commissioners of Customs now hold their sessions in Salem.—|| 6th. Jonathan Ropes, jr. is chosen to supply the place of R. Derby in the House, who is elected a member of the Council.—¶ 17th. Gen. Ct. meet in Salem.—9th. The Council address the Gov., but as they reflected some on his two predecessors, he refuses to accept their address.—11th. Two addresses are presented to the Gov. by the people here;—one, signed by 48, commend to him the trade and prosperity of this town; another, signed by 125, contains the following magnanimous sentiment:—“We are deeply affected with the sense of our public calamities. But the miseries that are now rapidly hastening on our brethren in the Capital of the Province greatly excite our commiseration, and we hope your Excellency will use your endeavours to prevent a further accumulation of evils on that already sorely distressed people. By shutting up the port of Boston some imagine that the course of trade might be turned hither and to our benefit; but nature in the formation of our harbour forbids our becoming rivals in commerce to that convenient mart. *And were it otherwise, we must be dead to every idea*

\* T. B. † Jo. of Ho. ‡ T. P. § Ess. Gaz. || T. R. ¶ Ess. Gaz.



*of justice,—lost to all feelings of humanity,---could we indulge one thought to seize on wealth and raise our fortunes on the ruin of our suffering neighbours.*" 15th. William Brown is appointed Justice of the Supreme Court instead of N. Ropes, deceased.—17th. The House resolve that a General Congress of the Colonies is essential, to meet and determine on suitable measures for recovering their rights; that such a Congress shall meet Sept. 1st, at Philadelphia;—that the delegates to this Congress be James Bowdoin, Thomas Cushing, Samuel and John Adams and Robert T. Paine, and that they have £500 for their expenses.—The proportion of this sum for Salem was £13 4 8.—The House resolve that the shutting of Boston Port is a measure, which threatens ruin to the liberties of British America. They recommend the distressed people of Boston to the charities of the Province. They advise the public to renounce altogether the consumption of India Teas, and, as far as possible, to dispense with the use of all goods imported from E. Indies and Great Britain, until the grievances of America shall be redressed, and to encourage domestic manufactures. The Gov. disapproving of these proceedings, sent his Sec'y to dissolve the House. The Sec'y found their chamber door locked. He desired admittance; but none was given him. Then he read a proclamation of the Gov., on the stairs, which led to the chamber of the House, declaring that they were dissolved.

\* July 14th. "Fast on account of the times occasioned by Boston's being blocked up."—†27th. Two companies of soldiers from Castle William, land in Salem, and march through town, and encamp near the Gov's abode.

‡Aug. 1st. From this date, the Charter of Mass. is, by act of Parliament, to be so far vacated as that the Council be appointed by the King,—the Gov. is to choose and remove Judges, and other civil officers, without consent of Council, towns are to hold no public meeting without

\* Hen. Dia.

† Ess. Gaz.

‡ Prov. Laws.

*Mr. Leslie*

his consent, and jurors are to be summoned only by the sheriffs.—\*9th. The Gov. has lately designated Counsellors of the Province, of whom are Andrew Oliver and Wm. Brown, of Salem. So great was the excitement here, as well as elsewhere, against this infringement on the Charter, Mr. Oliver declined in a short time.—12th. A Regiment from Halifax landed on the Neck.—17th. The Gov. forbids the inhabitants here from holding an appointed meeting for the choice of delegates, to a County Convention at Ipswich, about late acts of Parliament. To enforce this order he had troops stationed near the Town House. But while he was conversing with the Committee of Correspondence, the people met and elected six delegates.—† 24th. Five shops and a warehouse are burnt here,—loss about 7 or £800.

‡ Sept. 6th. A ship arrived here with 30 chests and 3 half chests of Tea. The Committee of Correspondence placed a guard over her, and on the 9th, had the Tea shipped for Halifax.—7th. The County Convention at Ipswich have resolved, that the late act of Parliament, which takes from the Provincial Government the choice of Judges and other civil officers, shall not be complied with by any, except those who are accounted by the Country "as malignant enemies."—8th. As Peter Frye had issued a warrant, according to late act of Parliament, against the Committee of Correspondence here for permitting the recent choice of delegates to Convention at Ipswich, and had thereby drawn upon himself public reproach,—he recalled the warrant and agreed not to accept of any commission under the new act.—9th. Wm. Brown being waited on by a Committee of Essex Convention, and desired by them to resign his offices of Counsellor and Judge, which he had accepted under the new Act of Parliament, he replied, that he meant to conduct "with honour and integrity,"—but that he should do nothing derogatory to the character of a Counsellor of His Majesty's Province. For such a stand, Mr. Brown was generally criminated

\* Ess. Gaz.

† Hen. Dia.

‡ Ess. Gaz.

and the officers of his Reg. resigned their Commissions. Wm. Vans, Esq. states, that, as his having signed a friendly address to Gov. Hutchinson, on his late departure for England, has greatly offended many, as though it approved the late acts of Parliament, he would have all persons understand, that he is decidedly opposed to these acts and a sincere friend to his country.—

10th. The King's troops at Danvers and Salem march to Boston.—\* 12th. J. Pickering, jr. and Jonathan Ropes, jr. are chosen Rep. to Gen. Ct., which is to meet at Court House here 5th Oct. They are instructed to unite with other members of the House, if such members choose so to do, in resolving themselves into a Provincial Congress to promote the welfare of His Majesty and of the Province.—† 16th. Samuel Orne, merchant, d., son of Timothy and Lois, b. Jan. 8, 1720, g. at Harvard, 1740.—23d. John Higginson d., son of John and Ruth, b. Oct. 11, 1720, m. Hannah Marsh, of Braintree, Sept. 19, 1743, m. Elizabeth Wolcott, 1747, and Mehitable Robie, of Boston, Dec. 29, 1755, who survived him, till Jan. 1818, when she d. Æ 94; he sustained town offices, was Register of Deeds 30 years, in 1765 became Lt. Col. of 1st Essex Regt.

Oct. 6th. The greatest fire ever before in Salem. Dr. Whitaker's Meeting house, the Custom House, eight dwelling houses and 14 stores, shops and barns are consumed. The Ct. House caught fire, but it was saved. An old lady, while escaping from a house on fire, knocked her head, fell down and was burnt to death.—

7th. As the Gov. had recalled his order for a session of Gen. Ct. in Salem, the House assemble here and form themselves into a Provincial Congress. John Hancock is chosen chairman. They adjourned to meet at Concord 11th inst.—‡ 10th. R. Derby and Richard Manning are chosen delegates to the Provincial Congress. Thanks are voted to the inhabitants of neighbouring towns, and particularly to those of Marblehead, for their assistance in the late fire. The town

\* T. R.

† Ess. Gaz.

‡ T. R.

1775]

vote to have two more wells made and that "each engine be furnished with a framed canvas screen in three or four leaves, about eight feet high and a handy mop to each screen."—\* 25th. Arrived here from Monmouth County, N. J. as a present to Boston, 1200 bushels of rye and 50 bbls. of rye flour. Many such contributions were made by the South and N. England, while the port bill continued.

† Nov. 9th. Doct. Ebenezer Putnam is chosen Ruling Elder in place of N. Ropes, deceased. According to resolve of Continental Congress, no mourning is worn by the husband of a deceased lady, except a piece of crape on his hat; nor did he give any gloves and scarfs. This observance of such a resolve was generally commended and practiced.

‡ Dec. 2d. Persons are chosen to distribute contributions, made for the sufferers here by fire. A Committee are appointed to carry into effect "the resolves of the American Congress," and also "the resolves of the Provincial Congress." Voted, that the Collectors of taxes here pay no more Province monies to Harrison Gray, Esq. till further order.—§ 18th. Daniel Hopkins preaches to a society who had seceded from Dr. Whitaker, in the Assembly House, which was fitted up for a Congregation and stood a short way to the N. from the present S. Meeting House.—Mr. H. had preached a sabbath in town seven years before. || 21st. John Barton, merchant, d., son of Thomas and Mary, b. Dec. 5, 1711—g. at Harvard, 1730.

1775.

¶ Jan. 20th. J. Pickering, jr. and Richard Manning are chosen Rep. to Provincial Congress, which are to meet 1st of Feb. at Cambridge.—\*\* 31st. The following sums had been lately contributed here for Boston;—Messrs. Diman's Soc., £91—Barnard Jr's, £45—Barnard and Dunbar's, £114 9—Dr. Whitaker's, £24 16 8—Union Fire Club, £40.

\*Ess. Gaz. †1st Ch. R. ‡T.R. §Hen. Dia. ||Ess. Gaz. ¶T.R. \*\*Ess. Gaz.

Feb. 13th. Timothy Pickering is chosen Col. of 1st Essex Reg't, in place of Wm. Brown.—\* 14th. Council meet to form a Ch. of such brethren and sisters, as, by decision of Boston Presbytery here in Sept., were to be dismissed without censure from Dr. Whitaker's Ch., if not returning before this date. The Council resolve, that these seceders from Dr. W's Ch., are the *third* Congregational Ch., which existed under Mr. Leavit, and declare fellowship with them in public, as a sister Ch. in regular standing.—† 15th. Provincial Congress resolve, that the people of Mass. should prepare for war with the mother country, as, they fear, she means to destroy this Country.—26th. A Reg't under Col. Leslie, from Boston Castle, land secretly at Marblehead, P. M. after the people had gone to meeting, and come quickly to Salem. The vanguard march to Long wharf, probably as a decoy. The main body make a short halt at the Ct. House, and then hasten to N. Bridge, which they find hoisted. The Col. orders a Capt. to face his company to a body of our townsmen, on an opposite wharf, and fire on them. An inhabitant immediately and resolutely said to the Col. and his soldiers,—“If you do fire, you will all be dead men.”—This appears to have prevented the execution of the Col's order. Some of our people scuttle one of two gondolas, and, while doing the same to the other, lest the British should cross in them, they are charged by a party of soldiers and are forced to retreat with one of their number slightly wounded. The Reg't having been on the S. side of the Bridge 1 1-2 hour, the Col. promises, that if he should be allowed to march his men over it 30 rods, he will wheel them about and leave the town. This proposal is accepted. The soldiers go back to Marblehead and embark for Boston without delay. The object of such an expedition seems to have been to seize some cannon and Artillery materials, which were N. of the Bridge. The alarm of this

\* 3d Ch. R.

† Ess. Gaz.

1775]

occurrence quickly reached the adjoining towns, and great numbers of armed men were on the way to relieve the people here if necessary.

\* March 16th. Fast appointed by Provincial Congress for difficulties with Great Britain.—† 23d. Hon. R. Derby gives Salem two field pieces.—‡ Voted, to raise two companies of minute men, whose attachment to their country may be relied on, and to support and compensate them. One of these Companies was commanded by Benjamin Ward, jr. and the other by Samuel King.—25th. The Town Treasurer is instructed to pay taxes, which are due, to Henry Gardner of Stow, Receiver General for the Province.

§ April 15th. P. Congress appoint a Fast to be 11th of May,—to implore God that the Union of the Colonies, in defence of their rights, may be preserved and continued; that America may soon behold a gracious interposition of Heaven for the redress of her many grievances,—the restoration of her invaded liberties and their security to the latest generation.—The Ess. Gazette, being moved from Salem, is printed in Stoughton Hall of the College. It takes an additional name of New England Chronicle.—18th. Up to this date from Jan. 3d there were 131 vessels cleared from Salem and Marblehead. 19th. Benjamin Pierce is killed by the British at the battle of Lexington. Other persons from Salem rode to the place of the engagement. Besides these, there were 300 soldiers under Col. Pickering, who marched on as fast as they could so as to be fit for action, into which they expected to enter and for which they were prepared. But they did not arrive in sight of the enemy, till the last of them were retreating through Charlestown, and, then, the British could not be reached by our militia, so as to be attacked. Because the Salem soldiers did not perform impossibilities, they were greatly censured. But when their case was laid before Gen. Ct., they were cleared from blame.

|| May 22d. P. Congress recommend, that the per-

\* Hen. Dia. † Ess. Gaz. ‡ T. R. § Ess. Gaz. || N. E. Chron.

sons, who have fled to Boston and other places for British protection, and also the Mandamus Counsellors, be treated as enemies, and that no one take any conveyance of property from them.—25th. P. Congress take the concerns of the Post offices in Mass. into their own hands.—\* 29th. R. Derby, J. Pickering, Samuel Williams and Daniel Hopkins, are chosen Rep. to P. Congress, which is to begin its session at Watertown 31st inst.,—"to consult and resolve upon such further measures as under God shall be effectual to save this people from impending ruin, and to secure those inestimable liberties derived to us from our ancestors and which it is our duty to preserve for posterity."—The town conclude not to choose Rep. for Gen. Ct., as required by a warrant.—† 30th. The people here are alarmed by two British Cutters.

‡ June 1st. Regal style from this day is to be expunged from all public commissions,—which are to be given in the name of the Government and people of Mass. Bay,—and not to bear the year of the reign of any King or Queen of Great Britain, but of the Christian era.—§ 17th. Resolve of P. Congress of this date, for having the militia ready at a moment's warning, was received by the Selectmen here.—Battle of Bunker, or more properly Breed's Hill. A few from Salem were in this engagement, of whom was Lt. Benjamin West, killed within the trenches, while bravely defending his post. About 100 more of our townsmen were attached to the Regiment of Col. Mansfield, of Lynn, who being deceived by orders from an officer, whom he met, took his stand on Cobble's hill, instead of marching to the place of action.—|| 20th. Many persons move from this place.—¶ 27th. Ten companies are to be raised in Essex, each of which is to have 50 men, for guarding the sea coast.—29th. Of 13,000 coats for Mass. troops, Salem is assessed 380.

July 9th. This town is assessed shirts and breeches,

\* T. R.

† Hon. Dia.

‡ Prov. Laws.

§ T. P.

|| E. A. Hol. Dia.

¶ Jo. of P. Congress.

*See  
Salem*

each 190, and stockings and shoes each 190 pair, for the army.—\* 19th. D. Hopkins and Elias H. Derby are among Rep. who meet at Watertown.—† 20th. Continental Fast for “present critical alarming and calamitous state” of the Colonies. It was appointed by Congress in Philad. and was the first so extensively observed in this country.—‡ 27th. Messrs. Derby and Hopkins are on Committee to consider a report of the Committee of Safety of the Provincial Congress, as to a new emission of bills of credit. According to this report, there is an order to issue £100,000,—the highest bill not to exceed 40s., and the lowest not to be less than 1s.

Aug. 1. Mr. Hopkins is one of three to countersign notes of Receiver General and to furnish him with blanks, so as to complete the emission of such amount of bills, as will pay demands on the Province.—§ 5th. The Council vote that the report about the Colony seal be accepted with this amendment, viz:—“Instead of an Indian holding a tomahawk and cap of liberty, there be an English American holding a sword in the right hand and magna charta in the left hand, with the words, ‘Magna Charta,’ imprinted on it.”—|| 9th. Gov. Gage allowed the poor of Boston, being about 5000, to depart, the proportion of them, assigned to Salem, arrive here in a transport. The Hospital is prepared as their residence.—¶ 17th. Mr. Hopkins is chosen monitor of the House.—23d. Salem complained to Gen. Ct., that they were charged with favouring the British, and their militia were also charged with cowardice as to the battle of Lexington, and the Court pass a vote, which clears them from these charges.

\*\* Sept. 14th. A detachment of the army marches through Salem on their way to Canada.—†† 19th. After this date all civil and military officers, under late government are to cease.

‡‡ Oct. 9th. The House resolve that the inhabitants

\* Jo. of Ho. † Hen. Dia. ‡ Jo. of Ho. § Jo. of Ho. || Hen. Dia.  
¶ Jo. of Ho. \*\* Mass. His. Col. †† Pro. Laws. ‡‡ Jo. of Ho.



of Mass. be encouraged to fit out armed vessels against the enemy.—14th. John Pickering is chosen Notary Publick,—but as he declined, Jacob Ashton is elected, April 5, 1776, to supply his place.—\* 23d. On hearing that Falmouth had been destroyed by the British, the town vote, that the passages into our harbour be stopped up with hulks ; and that the fortifications be put in order, and that Gen. Washington be applied to for ammunition.

† Dec. 2d. Recruits to be raised in Essex are 3008. ‡ 4th. Prize ship from Scotland, with coal and bale goods for Boston, taken by Capt. Manly, arrives here. § 22d. A company of 50 men by order of Gen. Ct., are to be stationed in this place.—27th. Wm. Powell petitions to send out a vessel to W. I. or Europe with cash to purchase gun powder and military stores. Persons in other ports had done the same and were encouraged by Gen. Ct.—|| 28th. Timothy Pickering, jr. is appointed Judge of Admiralty for the Middle District of Suffolk, Middlesex and Essex. ✓ ¶ 29th. A number of the Friends, living in Pa. and N. J., have a vote of thanks for the relief, which they had sent to the poor of this town. ✓

### 1776.

\*\* Jan. 1st. ✓ This town are suffering almost total loss of fishing and foreign trade,—their poor are much increased,—120 of them are wholly and 50 of them are partly supported. ✓ †† 5th. Salem is assessed 52 blankets for the army.—8th. The Selectmen and Committee of Correspondence in each town, whence persons have gone to the enemy and left property,—are to take care of such property and prevent its income from being sent to its owners thus fled.—18th. John Hancock, Samuel and John Adams, Robert T. Paine and Elbridge Gerry, having been appointed by Gen. Ct. to represent Mass. in the American Congress till

\* T. R.            † Jo. of Ho.            ‡ N. E. Chron.            § Jo. of Ho.  
 ¶ N. E. Chron.            ¶ T. R.            \*\* T. R.            †† Jo. of Ho.

1776]

Jan. 1, 1777,—are empowered to use their endeavours “for the establishment of right and liberty to the American Colonies on a basis, secure against the power and acts of the British administration, and guard against any future encroachments of their enemies.” Of 4368 men to reinforce the army before Boston, Essex’s proportion is 830 and Salem’s 91.—19th. Gen. Ct. issue a proclamation,—stating the reasons for independance of England and enjoining on the people “to lead sober, religious and peaceable lives,” and to conform with the laws, as essential to the maintainance of their liberty. They order this proclamation to be read in each Congregation on the Sabbath after being received,—at the opening of Courts and of town March meetings.—\*22d. Benjamin Goodhue is chosen Ruling Elder, and Benjamin Ropes and Richard Lang, deacons of 3d Ch.—† Feb. 20th. Among the field officers of 1st Essex Reg., which includes men of Salem and Lynn, are Timothy Pickering, Col., and Joseph Sprague, 1st Major.

March. 9th. Gen. Ct. appoint a Fast “to implore of God that the dispensations of Providence in the peculiar events, which have lately taken place may be duly *resented*, and the great end for which they were designed, happily accomplished, “and that He will command his blessing on the present struggle with Great Britain.”—The word, *resented*, was then and previously used in a good sense.—20th. Richard Ward is Provincial Commissary for company stationed here.

April 5th. R. Derby is one of two Commissioners for building and equipping two armed vessels for the Province.—6th. The House resolve to have 10 sloops of war built for Mass.—11th. Samuel King has orders to aid in raising a Regiment for fortifying Boston.—The uniform of the officers for the public vessels, now building, to be green and white,—the Colours to be a White Flag, with a green pine tree and an inscription, “Appeal to Heaven.”—22d. A detachment of 50

\* 3d Ch. R.

† Jo. of Ho.

men now on duty here, under Daniel Ward, are to be marched by him to assist in the fortifications of Boston. 24th. According to resolve of American Congress, Gen. Ct. offer a bounty for the cultivation of hemp.

May 1st. Gen. Ct. appoint that "all officers of militia make use of Col. T. Pickering's plan of exercise."

\* 13th. Rev. Dr. Whitaker, who had erected Salt Petre works, is allowed to sink several cisterns in different parts of the town, for collecting water after rain, so as to make nitre.—18th. £1500 are voted for town charges. A powder house is to be built. It was placed in W. part of the town. Voted that Rep. to Gen. Ct. be chosen by differently coloured balls.—The Friends (of Pa. and N. J.) are thanked for their second donation to the poor here.—29th. R. Derby is re-elected a member of the Council.

June 4th. At a new choice of Rep. for Gen. Ct., J. Pickering, Jonathan Gardner, George Williams, Warwick Palfray, Samuel Carlton and T. Pickering are chosen.—12th. The town instruct these Rep., "that if the Hon. Congress shall for the safety of the United American Colonies declare them independant of Great Britain, we will solemnly engage with our lives and fortunes to support them in the measure."

† July 18th. Declaration of Independence by the American Congress on the 4th, is published from the Balcony of the State House in Boston.

Aug. 5th. Rev. Thomas Barnard, son of Rev. John Barnard of Andover, d. Æ 60, g. at Harvard 1732, ordained at Newbury, Jan. 31, 1738, left his people there because of difficulties among them about Mr. Whitefield's preaching,—studied and practised law, represented Newbury in Gen. Ct., re-entered the ministry and was installed over First Ch. of Salem, Sept. 18, 1755,—left children, Thomas, John, Benjamin and Sarah, who m. Jonathan Jackson of Newburyport.—He published sermons at the ordination of his brother Edward Barnard in Haverhill, 1743,—of Josiah Bailey at

1777]

Hampton, 1757,—before Society of industry, 1757,—at Artillery Election, 1758,—at ordination of William Whitwell in Marblehead, 1762, and at Election, 1763. He possessed a strong and cultivated mind. He was much beloved by his Society here and highly esteemed by the public.

\* Sept. 2d. Fort Lee had been lately erected here.

Oct. 8th. The town vote their consent, that the Gen. Ct. form a Constitution of Government for Mass., to be laid before the people.—† 14th. A prize brig is sent in here by Capt. Forrester, laden with sea coal and woolen cloth, and a prize schooner with fish by Capt. Carlton.

‡ Dec. 17th. Capt. Benjamin Ward and his company march hence for N. York.—A meeting house is built here this year for Dr. Whitaker's people.

## 1777.

Jan. 1st. ✓ Males here of 16 years and upwards, exclusive of those in the Alms and Work House, are 1193, of whom are 24 Friends and 52 coloured persons. ✓

§ Feb. 14th. £1400 are to be raised, as bounty for soldiers of Salem, who are or may be of Continental army. A committee are to enforce the "Act to prevent monopoly and oppression."—|| 20th. A prize ship, with English goods, is sent in by Capt. Dean. John Fisk is commander of the State ship Tyrannicide.

March 13th. Capt. Mascoll and one of his men had been lately killed in attempting to board an English ship off the Western Islands.—¶ 28th. The Hospital being opened, 149 persons are inoculated there, under the care of Doct. Holyoke.

May 2d. Another class of 227 are inoculated.—\*\* 12th. J. Pickering, G. Williams, J. Gardner and Wm. Wetmore are chosen Rep. to Gen. Ct., which is to meet 28th. They are empowered to act with the Legislature in forming a Constitution of Government.—

\* T. R.      † N. E. Chron.      ‡ Hen. Dia.      § T. R.  
 || Independ. Chron.      ¶ Hen. Dia.      \*\* T. R.

Voted for town charges, £2600.—27th. Jonathan Andrew is chosen to lay before Gen. Ct., according to their act, evidence against eight persons of this town, to show, that their residence in this State is dangerous to public safety.—\* 28th. R. Derby and D. Hopkins are of the Council. ✓

† June 2d. Voted, that several houses in town be hired as hospitals, and that all persons, desirous to be inoculated in them forward their names.—† 15th. Third class of 214 are inoculated at the Hospital.—§ 11th. Edward Norris is chosen Notary Public.—12th. James Hastie, favourable to the British, has leave to withdraw from the country.—20th. John Symonds is appointed Capt. and Benjamin Ropes, jr., Lt. of the Company stationed here.—|| 24th. As T. Pickering had been appointed Quarter Master General in the army, some one is to be chosen in his stead, as Register of Deeds.

¶ July 4th. A prize brig with rum is sent in by Capt. Roland.

\*\* Aug. 8th. By order of this date, Salem raised its quota of 44 men to serve in the army, which had retreated from Ticonderoga.

Sept. 10th. The Council congratulate the House on Gen. Gates' victory over Gen. Burgoyne's army.

†† Oct. 23d. A committee is to supply the families of officers and soldiers who belong here and who are in the army, with provisions.—†† 25th. As grain is scarce, it is enacted, that no wheat, corn, rye, barley and oats shall be distilled into spirit. There is a similar prohibition, that no cyder be made into brandy.—§§ 29th. The town vote that they disapprove of the conduct of persons, who, on the 23d injured some of the inhabitants here,—and that they make compensation to those, who have had their windows broken and sustained other damage.

Nov. 5th. Bounty is voted for men, who are to be drafted, as guards of Burgoyne's army at Cambridge.

\* Jo. of Ho. † T. R. ‡ Hen. Dia. § Jo. of Ho. || T. R.

¶ Indep. Chron. \*\* Jo. of Ho. †† T. R. ‡‡ Jo. of Ho. §§ T. R.

The persons drawn for this service, were about 54 under Capt. Simeon Brown.—\* 11th. Capt. Greenwood's company marched on public service.—Bills of the United Colonies were in Jan'y, 105 for 100 silver dollars, and in December, 310 for 100.

## 1778.

† Jan. 24th. Warwick Palfray is appointed Naval Officer.

‡ Feb. 2d. The Rep. of Salem are to be instructed to vote in Gen. Ct., that the Delegates of Mass. ratify in Congress the articles of Confederation and Union between the States so that the same become conclusive. 26th. £3000 are voted to obtain the rest of this town's quota for the Continental army for three years, or during the war.

§ April 7th. A schooner and sloop arrive as prizes to Capt. M<sup>d</sup>Daniel. A tender to the ship Albany arrives, taken by a boat and six men.—|| 10th. The people here consider the State Constitution and agree to send delegates to Ipswich the 15th, for consulting about its articles.

May 13th. Voted £60 bounty to each of 27 men who shall enlist to join Continental army for 9 months, and £50 to each of 15 who shall enlist to serve at Peek's-Kill for 8 months. Voted, that £3000 be raised for paying the soldiers.—19th. Voted £4000 for town charges.—27th. J. Pickering, G. Williams and Samuel Ward are Rep. to Gen. Ct. ¶ The first was chosen Speaker of the House. D. Hopkins is of the Council.—Paul D. Sargent is Col. of 1st Essex Reg't.

\*\* June 7th. Dea. Timothy Pickering, son of John and Sarah, d. Æ 75. His widow Mary, d. Dec. 12, 1784, Æ 76. He left children, Sarah Clark, Mary Sargeant, Lydia Williams, Elizabeth Gardner, Lois Gool, Eunice Wingate, Lucia Dodge and John and Timothy.—He sustained principal offices in town,—

\* Hen. Dia.

† Jo. of Ho.

‡ T. R.

§ Ind. Chron.

|| T. R.

¶ Pocket Almanack.

\*\* Prob. Rec.

was an intelligent, active and useful man.—\* 8th. The town vote their disapprobation of the State Constitution for reasons, assigned by the County Convention at Ipswich 29th of April.—† 21st. A Providence Turtler, prize to the Centipede, arrives.—† 23d. Geo. Williams resigns his seat in the Board of War for Mass.

§ July 10th. Money to be hired for paying 1 Capt. 1 Lt. and 28 men, who were lately drafted here, to serve in R. Is. The Capt. was Samuel Flag. ~ 42 recruits are to be raised for Continental army and 52 more for public service. This town are assessed shoes, and stockings, 166 pair of each and the same number of shirts, for the army.

Aug. 4th. As men were to be raised for service against the enemy, 86 volunteers present themselves.

|| Sept. 5th. A valuable prize brig is sent into an Eastern port by the Montgomery. Another valuable prize lately arrived at Eastward, which was captured by the Black Prince.—¶ 19th. A third of the militia here and in other towns are ordered to be ready for marching to defend Boston in case the French fleet there shall be attacked by the British.—24th. George Williams is appointed a manager of the Lotteries, authorized by Gen. Ct. for the benefit of the Mass. forces in the Continental army.—\*\* 26th. A rich prize ship is sent in by the Montgomery.—28th. Richard Derby is one of the State agents for prizes in the Middle District.

†† Oct. 6th. The families of 33 men in the army had been supplied by a committee of the town, with provisions at the following prices:—Sugar 2s., flour 1s. 4d., candles 3s. 6d., wood 90s., corn 24s., rye 35s., beef 10d., rice 8d. lb., in paper currency. ✓ 12th. £7000 are to be raised in addition to what has been already assessed by the town.—†† Oct. 16th. It is enacted, that persons, who have gone to the enemy, shall not return. Among the names of these persons

\* T. R. † Ind. Chron. ‡ Jo. of Mass. Assom. § T. R. || Ind. Chron.

¶ Jo. of Mass. Assom. \*\* Ind. Chron. †† T. R. ‡‡ Jo. of Mass. Assom.

1779]

are four from Salem. There were others besides these four who had gone from this town to the British.

\* Nov. 18th. D. Hopkins is ordained over the 3d Ch.

† Dec. 11th. A valuable prize brig is sent in by Capt. Brookhouse.—† In Jan'y, 325 paper currency for 100 silver dollars, and in Dec., 634 for 100. § The valuation of property in Salem was in Ward No. 2, £138,450,—where Geo. Williams was highest on the list, named as having £18,500;—in Ward No. 3, £142,050, where Francis Cabot stood at £20,000, and George Dodge, jr. at £13,000; and in Ward No. 4, £126,900. ✓

1779.

|| Jan. 15th. A prize brig sent in by Capt. John Leech.—16th. A cartel arrived here from Halifax with prisoners, some of whom belong to Salem.—† 30th. The privateer Pilgrim comes in from a cruise,—had taken six prizes.

\*\* Feb. 1st. A prize sch'r is sent in by the sch'r Swett.

‡ March 8th. A committee are to see, that the act of Gen. Ct. against monopolizing and forestalling is carried into effect. ✓ ‡ 10th. A Charter is granted to the Essex Lodge in Salem. The first meeting under this Charter was April 2d, at Blaney's brick store, when fourteen brethren were present. The last record of this Lodge was Oct. 2, 1786. The Charter of the present Essex Lodge was dated June 6, 1791.

§§ April 28th. On the State tax, which is £200,000 paper currency, Salem is assed £20 4 5 on each £1000.

||| 29th. Rev. Mr. Dunbar requests and receives a dismission from 1st. Ch. because of his long ill health. He g. at Harvard 1767, and when ordained here he belonged to Weston, and m. Mary Jones, of the same place, 1772. He d. a lawyer in N. H. Dec. 1788.

¶¶ May 10th. The town choose J. Pickering, G. Williams and Samuel Ward, Rep. to Gen. Ct., and in-

\* 3d. Ch. R. † Ind. Chron. ‡ Low's Almanack. § T. R.

|| Hen. Dia. ¶ Ind. Chron. \*\* Hen. Dia. †† T. R.

‡‡ Essex Lo. R. §§ Jo. of Mass. Assem. ||| 1st Ch. Rec. ¶¶ T. R.



struct them to vote for calling a Convention to form a new State Constitution. £18,000 are voted for town charges.—\* 27th. Schooner Swett had lately sent in a prize. † Mascoll Williams keeps the Post Office. James Jeffry keeps an Insurance Office. He appears to be the first who opened such an office here.

‡ June 11th. The House resolve, that the address of Congress, dated 26th of May, to the people of the U. S., on the need of their being patriotic and virtuous to secure victory,—be read by each minister to his Congregation the next Sabbath after it is received.—21st. Salem is assessed shirts, pairs of shoes and stockings for the army, 166 each.—§ 23d. A committee are to procure 13 recruits to serve in R. Is. and 28 more for Continental army.—|| 30th. For fitting out an expedition to Penobscot the Committee of Salem are G. Williams and Jonathan Peel. This expedition failed, and among the vessels lost in it were the ships Black Prince, Hunter and Hector, of this town.

¶ July 3d. A prize brig is sent in by the Centipede. \*\* 11th. A snow and brig arrive here as prizes. The Macaroni privateer had lately behaved with great bravery against a ship and brig from N. York. A large ship arrives, taken by the ship Harlequin after hard fighting.—†† 12th. A prize sloop comes in.—16th. A brig is sent in by Capt. Cook.—25th. A ship and brig arrive, taken by schooner Swett.—27th. Two prize brigs come in.—‡‡ 29th. Delegates are chosen to meet in Convention at Cambridge next Sept'r, for framing a new Constitution. Delegates are chosen to meet in Convention at Concord Oct. 10th, for appreciating the currency, &c. Voted, to comply with the proceedings of the Convention at Concord 14th inst., and a Committee are chosen to carry their resolves into effect. The Convention here mentioned, agreed on the prices of merchandize and country produce. The town vote that £5,000 more be raised.

\* Ind. Chron. † Mass. Register. ‡ Jo. of Mass. Assem. § T. R.  
 || Jo. of Mass. Assem. ¶ Hen. Dia. \*\* Ind. Chron. †† Hen. Dia. ‡‡ T. R.

\* Aug. 1st. A brig arrives captured by sch'r Swett.

† 10th. The town vote to raise men for reinforcing Gen. Lovell at Penobscot.—They appoint delegates to meet in Convention at Ipswich 19th inst., about the prices of labour, taverners and manufactures.—‡ 12th. A prize schooner is sent in by the Macaroni.

§ Sept. 22d. A brig arrives taken by the schooner Swett.—|| 23d. Confiscated estates of persons, who had gone to the British, are ordered to be sold. Among these estates were some in Salem.

Oct. 2d. The House order, that the Circular of Congress, dated 13th ult. on the finances of the States, their means and duties, be read by all ministers to their Congregations the Sabbath after it is received by them. As Capt. Daniel Ropes, of brig Wild Cat, taken by the Surprise Frigate, is severely treated, being kept in irons under a strong guard at Halifax,—the House order that a British officer of equal rank be committed to close confinement until Capt. Ropes is liberated and exchanged.—¶ 12th. The town vote that \$11 a day, besides what the Continent and the State pay,—shall be allowed each man, who will enlist in the army for three months. So great a price was for Salem's quota of recruits, which were ordered to join the forces of Count D'Estaing, lately arrived, and "to strike an important blow against the enemy."—\*\* 16th. A brig, 22d, a sloop, and 30th a brig arrive, as prizes to the Centipede.

†† Nov. 10th. Rev. John Prince is ordained over the First Ch.—‡‡ 14th. Third Church vote to aid in ordaining Curtis Coe over the newly gathered Ch. in Portsmouth, N. H.—§§ 24th. Capt. Nathan Goodale, who had returned from N. York on parole, and who was about to return, is allowed by the State suitable articles of clothing. The House say, that he "has done singular service for his country and from particular circumstances, it is apprehended, the enemy will detain him as long as possible."—||| 26th. Seven sail

\* Hon. Dia. † T. R. ‡ Ind. Chron. § Hon. Dia. || Jo. of Mass. Assem.

¶ T. R. \*\* Hon. Dia. †† 1st. Ch. R. ‡‡ 3d. Ch. R.

§§ Jo. of Mass. Assem. ||| Ind. Chron.

with stores from Halifax for Penobscot, arrive, having been captured by two Privateers, one of Salem and the other of Marblehead.

\* Dec. 11th. Town vote £15000 for charges of men, gone under Capt. Addison Richardson to reinforce the Continental army. Currency in Jan. was 742 paper dollars for 100 silver—and in Dec. was 2593 for 100.

## 1780.

† March 13th. The bells of Messrs. Barnard and Diman's meeting houses are to ring at 1 o'clock in the day and at 9 o'clock in the evening. The bell was rung before this at 8 o'clock in the morning for a part of the year.

‡ April 19th. Wm. McGilchrist d. Æ 73. He willed his part "of the contribution for the unhappy sufferers in America" and his salary due from the Society in England for propagating the Gospel,—to his own people, and his robes to his successors in office.—§ 25th. A valuable brig is sent in by the ships Franklin and Jack.

|| May 4th. The American Academy is incorporated. Among its members are E. A. Holyoke, Andrew Oliver, John Pickering and Doct. Joseph Orne. ¶ Salem is assessed shirts and pairs of shoes, 116 each, and 58 blankets for the army.—\*\* 19th. Dark day. It grew dark from 9 o'clock till 2 o'clock. People dined by candle light. At noon beasts returned home and fowls went to roost. The darkness of the evening and night was Egyptian.—\*\* 31st. S. Ward, B. Goodhue, Jacob Ashton and Henry Higginson, are Rep. to Gen. Ct.

†† June 9th. Town vote £121,212 for raising 62 recruits to serve 6 months in the army. —†† 12th. A ship prize to schooner Cutter arrives.—16th. The Constitution is adopted by delegates from this and other

\*T. R.

† T. R.

‡ Ep. Ch. R.

§ Ind. Chron.

|| Reg. of Mass.

¶ Jo. of Mass. Assem.

\*\* E. A. Hol. Dia.

†† Reg. of Mass.

‡† T. R.

‡† Hen. Dia.

towns.—This Constitution abolishes slavery, though it had been generally and practically abolished years before.—\*22d. Salem is to furnish 74 recruits to serve three months in the army and to supply five horses, as its quota of 117 levied on Essex for public service.

† July 10th. A ship is sent in by the schooner Cutter.—14th. A brig, taken by the Griffin arrives.—18th. Another ship comes in as prize to the schooner Cutter.—25th. A ship is sent in by the Griffin and Fortune.—27th. A lugger, captured by the Fortune, arrives.—‡ 30th. A show<sup>l</sup>, valuable prize, comes in.

§ Aug. 2d. Ship Essex, Capt John Cathcart, arrives after taking four rich prizes.—|| 6th. Ship Brutus gets in, having captured ten vessels, laden with dry goods and provisions, part of a fleet from London to Quebec;—two of these prizes had arrived.—¶ 10th. News is received from the General Pickering, Capt. Jonathan Harraden, of 16 guns and 47 men, on a voyage to Spain. It states that Capt. H. on May 29th, fell in with a British Cutter of 20 guns, and beat her off after a battle of 1 hour and 46 minutes;—on June 1st, engaged a lugger schooner of 14 guns and 57 men and took her;—4th, was attacked by the Arquilles, of 34 guns, and 190 men, and drove her off, after fighting 2 hours, 55 minutes, had 1 man killed and 8 wounded. \*\* 16th. Maj. Samuel King is Aid de Camp to Baron de Kalb, who is killed by the enemy in S. C. Major King soon after this fell in battle. His wife Mary, d. Sept. 11, 1782, Æ 33.

†† Sept. 4th. The inhabitants here vote for Gov., Lt. Gov., Counsellors and Senators,—for the first time since the settlement of Salem. John Hancock had most of the votes here for Gov'r.—‡‡ 25th. Salem is assessed 48,530 lbs. of beef for the army.—§§ 29th. A prize sloop is sent in by the brig Cutter.

||| Oct. 2d. News that sloop Race-horse of 10 guns is carried into Halifax.—6th. Privateer Stark is chased

\* Jo. of Mass. Assem. † Hen. Dia. ‡ Ind. Ledger. § Ind. Chron.

|| Ind. Ledger. ¶ Ind. Chron. \*\* Ess. Gaz. of 1782.

†† T. R. ‡‡ Jo. of Mass. Assem. §§ Hen. Dia. ||| Bos. Gaz.

in here by two British frigates under French colors.—7th. A prize to the Brutus arrives.

\* Oct. 5th. Rep. chosen for the rest of the year to Gen. Ct. are J. Pickering, B. Goodhue, S. Ward, J. Ashton and H. Higginson.—† 27th. Great and visible eclipse of the Sun, duration 2 hours 42 1-2 minutes, and 11 1-2 digits on N. E. side of the sun were darkened.

‡ Nov. 13th. A prize to the Franklin arrives.—16th. Several days since, a British ship, laden with 380 hhd. of rum and sugar, which had run into Canso Harbour in distress, was taken by two shallops of Salem, each of 15 men, and brought into this port. A valuable prize is sent in by the ship Thorn.—§ 27th. Joseph Hiller is appointed one of the Essex muster masters for men, who join the army. Capt. Samuel Ward is appointed of the Committee for selling the estates of absentees from Essex.

Dec. 2d. Salem is assessed 73 men to serve in the army for three years or during the war. The House say that the past short enlistments have been injurious to the States and encouraging to the enemy.—4th. This town are to provide 93,179 lbs. beef for the army. || 12th. £500,000 of old emission is voted by the town to pay for their last quota of men and beef. Old emission money in Jan. was 2934 for 100 silver dollars,—and Nov. 30th, 7400 for 100.—¶ 14th. News that the privateer Roebuck is taken and carried into N. York.

### 1781.

Jan. 2d. The Salem Gazette and General Advertiser begins to be printed here by Mary Crouch and Company.—✓ 13th. Gen. Ct. set beef at £3 7 6 a hund.; rye 7s., corn 5s., oats 3s., peas 7s., a bushel.—20th. ✓ One serjeant and 6 matrosses are assigned to take care of Salem Fort. About the same number had been posted here for the two last years.—26th. The

\* T. R.

† Russell's Almanack.

‡ Ind. Chron.

§ Jo. of Ho.

|| T. R.

¶ Ind. Chron.

\*\* Jo. of Ho.

House order that an address from them to the people, be read by each Town Clerk at the first public meeting of the inhabitants where he lives. This address gave a statement of the finances of Mass. and the necessity of further exertions and sacrifices from the people in order to secure their independence.—\* 29th. Ship Postillion, Capt. Friend, from Guadaloupe, via the Vineyard, is cast away on Boon Island ledge,—17 of her men are saved in the long boat,—the Capt. 2d mate and 5 hands, left on board, are supposed to have perished.

Feb. 9th. The Privateer ship Pilgrim, Capt. Robinson, arrives. He had taken 9 valuable vessels,—sent 2 of them into France and 3 into this port. He engaged one of his prizes 3 glasses,—had 1 man killed and 2 wounded, and the enemy had 5 killed and 18 wounded.

March 2d. A prize brig is sent in by Capt. John Buffinton of ship Rhodes.—† 10th. A committee is appointed for this and other towns, to supply the State Treasury with money

‡ May 7th. The Montgomery, Capt. Carnes arrives—had sent in 3 prizes;—engaged a large British Cutter and lost his Lt. and had 5 wounded.—§ 14th. £1500, hard money, are voted for town charges.—

|| 19th. Ship Franklin, Capt. John Turner, arrives. She had her mainmast disabled in an engagement of 40 minutes with a Liverpool ship, which she took. The Franklin had 1 killed and 1 wounded. The prize had 2 killed and 8 wounded.—¶ 30th. B. Goodhue, H. Higginson, S. Ward, and Nathan Goodale are Rep. to Gen. Court.

\*\* June 7th. A brig, prize to the Tyger, arrives. †† Ship Thorn, Capt. Samuel Tucker, arrives, had taken 4 prizes,—1 of which came in here and the rest went to a foreign port. His Lt. Joseph Lynd died of his wounds after he got home.—‡‡ 8th. There are 6 innholders and 27 retailers in Salem.—§§ 16th.

\* Ess. Gaz. † Jo. of Ho. ‡ Ess. Gaz. § T. R. || Ess. Gaz.  
¶ Jo. of Ho. \*\* Hen. Dia. †† Ind. Chron. ‡‡ T. P. §§ Jo. of Ho.

Men are to be detached for R. Island. The quota of Salem for this detachment is 41, who are commanded by Joseph Hiller.—\* 18th. £2100, hard money, are voted by this town for hiring their deficient soldiers.—† 22d. Salem is assessed 38,459 lbs. beef for the army ;—and also, pairs of stockings and shoes, 162 of each, and 162 shirts and 81 blankets.—‡ 25th. The ship Junius Brutus comes in,—had captured 5 prizes off the English Channel.—§ 30th. Salem is assessed 59 men to serve three months in the army. £5000 of new emission are voted to hire these recruits.

|| June 27th. James Ford, school master, d. left wife Mary and children, Edward, James, Mary and Esther, willed that no black clothes be bought for mourning at his funeral.

¶ July 4th. A valuable prize arrives.—19th. The ship Rover, of 20 guns, is taken and carried into N. York.

Aug. 3d. Seven prizes arrive. The Thorn, of this place, having been captured by the British and retaken by the French, gets into Boston.—\*\* 27th. Capt. S. Tucker and Dr. Ramsay, of the Thorn, having escaped from St. Johns in an open boat, reached Boston within a week.

†† Oct. 9th. Benjamin Lynde is buried,—was son of Benjamin and Mary, b. Oct. 5, 1700, g. at Harvard 1718, m. Madam Mary Goodridge, of Roxbury, daughter of Major John Bowles, Nov. 1, 1731. He left wife Mary and children, Mary, wife of Hon. Andrew Oliver, and Lydia, wife of the Rev. Wm. Walter, of Trinity Ch. in Boston. Among the property which he left his daughter Mary was a farm at Brimfield, "which was part of 1000 acres, given by Indians to her mother's great great grand father, the Rev. John Elliot, 1655, as a token of their love for his teaching them the good knowledge of God." Mr. Lynde sustained various offices of the town,—was Naval Officer here, but was

\* T. R.

† Jo. of Ho.

‡ Ind. Chron.

§ Jo. of Ho.

|| Prob. Rec.

¶ Ind. Chron.

\*\* Ind. Ledger.

†† Ind. Chron.

displaced from this trust, 1729, because he acted with the House of Representatives in refusing to allow Gov. Burnet's salary just as the King had commanded ;— was often Rep. to Gen. Ct. and long of the Council ;— was justice of the Gen. Sess. Com. Pleas and Supreme Courts, and, in the latter part of his life, was Judge of the Probate Court. He was a Ruling Elder in the First Ch. He was learned ;—was persevering in what he deemed his duty ;—was extensively and highly esteemed.---\* 18th. Ship Grand Turk, Capt. Pratt, arrives with two prizes.---† 26th. The first Gen. Ct. under the new Constitution, assemble. S. Ward, Miles Greenwood, J. Ashton, H. Higginson are Rep. George Williams is Senator.---‡ 31st. A cartel from Newfoundland arrives, with 400 prisoners.

Nov. 22d. The Cato, Capt. Briggs, sends in a valuable prize ship.

Dec. 8th. Richard Derby, jr., son of Richard and Mary, d., in his 46th year, m. Lydia, daughter of Jonathan Gardner, Sept. 13, 1759, who d. April 28, 1777,---m. Lucy Smith, of Falmouth, Me., 1778, who survived him, and m. Judge Greenleaf of Newburyport. He left children, Richard, Samuel, Jonathan, Charles, Lydia, Mary and Elizabeth. He and his family resided party on a farm in Beverly. He was an enterprising merchant ;---held chief offices in town,--- was of the committee of safety and correspondence,--- was a prominent member of the House and of the Council. He was able and active in promoting our Independence.---20th. A prize, taken by the Speedwell, comes in.---27th. The Hendricke sends in a prize, and the Fox sends in another.---1 7-8 of a dollar, new emission bills, passed for 1 silver dollar from Feb. 1 to May 1 ;---from May 1 to 25, 2 1-4s. for 1 ;---from May 25 to June 15, 3s. for 1 ;---from June 15 to Oct. 1, 4s. for 1.

\* Ess. Gaz.

† Ind. Chron.

‡ Ess. Gaz.



## 1782.

\* Jan. 6th. Brig Diana, Capt. Baker, sails for Virginia. He went ashore at Nantucket. On his return, the boat overset and he with six others are drowned. † 10th. Selectmen begin to grant licenses for selling Bohea and other India teas, each license 3s.--- 14th. Voted, that the Representatives of this town be instructed to use their utmost endeavours that an application be made to Congress, that they would give positive instructions to their Commissioners, for negotiating a peace, to make the right of the U. S to the Fishery an indispensable article of the Treaty." "Voted, that the same Representatives use their utmost influence to obtain the repeal of the late Act of Gen. Ct., which established an excise on various articles."— ‡ 24th. News that the privateer ship Jason is captured and carried into Iceland.—§ 30th. Rev. Nathaniel Fisher is admitted a subject of Mass. on condition of taking the oath of fidelity and allegiance to this Commonwealth. As a subject of Great Britain, though born in Dedham, Mass., he had been imprisoned, but was now enlarged. He soon came to Salem.

|| Feb. 19th. A prize ship is sent in by Capt. Brookhouse, of the Junius Brutus. She fought the Brutus three glasses, had two killed and five wounded. The Brutus had one killed and two wounded.—¶ 25th. Nathaniel Fisher begins to officiate at St. Peter's Ch. He g. at Harvard, 1763, was ordained by Bishop Lowth, of London, 1772, married Silence Baker, of Dedham, July 2, 1782.—\*\* 28th. Privateers Speedwell, Capt. Murphy, ship Porus, Capt. John Carnes, and ship Hendricke, Capt. Benson, were lately taken and carried into Barbadoes.

†† March 7th. This town is assessed 33 men to serve in the army for three years—‡‡ 14th. Privateer schooner, Capt. Gray, arrives,—had lately lost seven

\* Ess. Gaz. † T. R. ‡ Ess. Gaz. § Jo. of Ho. || Ess. Gaz.  
¶ Bentley. \*\* Ess. Gaz. †† Jo. of Ho. ‡‡ Ess. Gaz.

men, who were drowned on N. J. shore.—\* 20th. According to a Resolve of Gen. Ct., the inhabitants here are to furnish the Town Clerk with an account of all their bills of the old emission and he is to forward it to the Sec'y of State. † On Oct. 21st, it appeared, that there were \$30,000,000 of old emission money fallen upon the hands of Mass. people, who were thus much injured. Gen. Ct. ask Congress for redress.—‡ 28th. News that four of the chief Privateers of Salem, had planned an expedition against Tortola; but had failed, because the enemy had been apprized of their design. They only recaptured the Macoroni, formerly of this place.

April 4th. Ezra Burrill advertizes a stage coach to run from Salem to Boston. This appears to be first regular stage coach, which was set up here to run on so short a route. There had been a coach to convey passengers from Boston through this town to Portsmouth.—18th. News that the privateer ship Rhodes, Capt. Nehemiah Buffinton, was taken and carried into Barbadoes.

May 9th. The Grand Turk, Capt. Pratt, arrives from a successful cruise.—16th. Dispatches arrive here for Congress, which are reported to contain information, that France has many troops ready to embark for this country.—23d. News that privateers Languedoc, Capt. Cook, and sloop Capt Dunn, are captured. The brig Fox, Capt. Neill, sends in a prize.—§ 29th. N. Goodale, B. Goodhue, Wm. Vans and M. Greenwood are Rep. to Gen. Ct. || Seth Barnes, of Yarmouth, N. Scotia, states, that a Salem privateer took from him lately 8 or £900 L. M. This statement led persons here to petition Gen. Ct., that the Yarmouth people, who had been friendly to Americans, should not be thus injured.

¶ June 11th. The ship Dispatch, Capt. John Felt, comes in from a successful cruise.—13th. The ship Jack, Capt. David Ropes, was taken 28th ult. by a

\* T. R. † Jo. of Ho. ‡ Ess. Gaz. § Jo. of Ho. || T. R. ¶ Ess. Gaz.

sloop of war and carried to Halifax, after a brave resistance of 4 1-2 hours. Capt. Ropes was wounded and died next day. He had 8 killed and 12 wounded. The sloop of war had 10 killed and others wounded.—The birth of the Dauphin of France is celebrated here. 19th. An armed brig, Capt. Ingersoll, arrives. On her passage from Cape Francois, she took two prizes, and after manning them, had only four men left. Thus, short of hands, Capt. Ingersoll saw a British privateer of more guns than his vessel had. He concluded as his only means of safety to put on a bold appearance and run down as if he meant to board the privateer. So soon as the enemy saw him making full sail for them, they escaped as fast as they could.—26th. A prize brig is sent in by ship Gen. Green, Capt. Crowel. 28th. Schooner Thrasher, Capt. Perkins, comes in from a cruise after taking six prizes. A prize is sent in by ship Marquis de la Fayette, Capt. John Buffinton.

\* July 2d. A majority here instruct their Representatives to act against all bills for showing favour to British subjects at North Yarmouth and elsewhere, and to petition the Legislature to appoint a Judge for the Maritime Court of this District. A bill did pass, however, forbidding the people at N. Yarmouth to be molested.—† 4th. N. Goodale is appointed one of the Commissioners for Essex, to expedite the payment of the Continental Tax,—which was, for Mass., £400,000. Ship Viper, Capt. Neill, takes a vessel, which is manned by John Bailey, master, and three seamen,—is retaken and carried to Quebeck. Bailey and his men went on board of a snow, bound to London, and, two days after leaving the St. Lawrence, they, with another person, rose, took and brought her into Marblehead.—10th. Doct. Wm. Goodhue, d. in his 35th year; g. at Harvard, 1769; his father Wm. moved hither from Waltham, 1767, and kept a public house.—‡ 11th. Privateer ship Viper, being captured and carried to Newfoundland,—nine of her crew escaped in a shallop

\* T. R.

† Ess. Gaz.

‡ Ind. Ledger.

and arrive at Marblehead.—\* 13th. The town vote to meet on the 16th inst., to consider the circular of Essex Commissioners about affording relief under the pressing exigences of General Government, and also to consider the letter from the Gov. and Senate on the same subject.—† 18th. A letter from Martinico gives the following account. The armed ship Julius Cæsar, Capt. Jonathan Haradan, of Salem, on 5th ult., fell in with two British vessels—a ship of 18, and a brig of 16 guns,—both of which he engaged for 6 glasses and got clear of them. His vessel was injured, but he lost none of his crew. The ship of the enemy was much shattered. Capt. Haradan had a silver plate, commemorative of this action, presented him by the owners of the Cæsar. The letter also relates, that Capt. Haradan afterwards had a severe battle with another British vessel and took and brought her into Martinico.—‡ 30th. Prize brig is sent in by the Gen. Green.

§ Aug. 1st. News that the privateer brig Chace had been taken. Privateer schooner Dolphin, Capt. Gregory Powers, had lately captured a ship, after a battle of three hours. The Capt. of the prize was wounded. The Dolphin had three killed and one wounded. She was soon after lost on Cape Sable; but her crew was saved and had gotten home.—5th. Capt. Thomas Simmons, of the brig Ranger, having seven guns and 20 men, was attacked near the mouth of the Potomac, by two barges, each manned with 30 Refugees. They came on him in the dark. He and his crew defended themselves with boarding pikes and cold shot. He fought them three hours and beat them off. He had one killed. Himself, 2d mate and another man were wounded. The enemy had 15 killed and 38 wounded, of whom five soon died and three more were likely to die. A more brave defence is seldom recorded.—14th. A Cartel arrives from Halifax, with 76 prisoners.—26th. Privateer ship General Green is captured and sent into N. York.

\* T. R.

† Ess. Gaz.

‡ Hen. Dia.

§ Ess. Gaz.

\* Sept. 28th. Some of the inhabitants of this town, petition, that they may fit out a flag for N. York, to redeem officers and seamen on board of the prison ship there. This petition is granted.

† Oct. 7th. A cartel with 62 prisoners arrives from Bermuda. The privateers Junius Brutus, Capt. John Brooks, the Raven, Capt. Needham, and another, are taken and sent into that Island.—24th. Privateer ship Hendrick, Capt. Benson is taken and carried into N. York.—26th. A cartel arrives from Newfoundland with 292 prisoners.—28th. A cartel with prisoners comes from Halifax.

‡ Nov. 8th. The Governor, in view of the losses of Charlestown, is to issue a brief for each town in Mass. to contribute for building a house for public worship there.—§ 13th. The Marquis De Chasteleux in his travels through N. America comes to Salem. He put up at Robinson's Inn. The next morning he visited the port, and in a short time, returned. He observes, "I found several merchants who came to testify their regret at not having been apprized more early of my arrival, and at not having it in their power to do me the honours of the town." He left this place before noon. || 14th. Two persons are punished here; one whipped 20 stripes and fined £1500 or sold 20 years for theft;—the other stood one hour in the pillory and fined £63 for passing counterfeit money.—25th. A cartel comes in from Quebec with 150 prisoners.—29th. Privateer Hyder Ali, Capt. Baldwin, is taken and carried into Halifax.

Dec. 3d. A letter of 9th ult. from an officer of Salem is published. It states, that he and 700 other prisoners were on board the Jersey ship in N. York;—that they were suffering extremely, and that fevers were mortal to many of their number. It also informs, that officers, who were prisoners, had gone to the Provost, but were no better accommodated than they had

\* Jo. of Ho.

† Ess. Gaz.

‡ Jo. of Ho.

§ Chasteleux's Travels.

|| Ess. Gaz.

been on board the ship Jersey.—\*25th. John Appleton is chosen Ruling Elder of the First Ch. instead of B. Lynde, deceased.—†31st. The ship Marquis La Fayette had arrived at Nantz with a valuable prize.

## 1783.

† Jan. 13th. Doct. E. A. Holyoke is chosen Ruling Elder of the N. Church.—§ 20th. Benjamin Goodhue d., Æ 75—m. Martha Hardy, Feb. 25, 1731, widow Ruth Putnam, Feb. 24, 1771; held some of the chief offices in town, was a Ruling Elder of the Third Ch.,—left a wife Ruth, and children, Stephen and Benjamin—had lost two daughters, Procter and Holman.

|| Feb. 11th. Samuel Ward was lately chosen collector of excise for Essex.—¶ 27th. Privateer ship Porus has arrived at Martinico with a prize ship.

April 3d. News that peace was made Jan. 21st between Great Britain and the U. States.—\*\* 7th. Beverly Ferry lets for £30 a year. A boat is to be kept in the night on each side of the River. No more than double ferriage to be required at unreasonable hours.—†† 10th. The American Refugees in England have chosen three of their number to repair to this country and seek relief as to their sequestered property. ‡‡ A letter from the Boston Committee of Correspondence is received by the Selectmen here, against allowing the Refugees a full right to their estates. By the 5th Article of the late Treaty, Congress was to advise the different States to have such property restored to the absentees.

§§ May 15th. As two boys were playing with a loaded pistol, one of them, a son of Capt. John Brewer, in his 8th year, was shot dead.—||| 28th. G. Williams, Samuel Flagg, Henry Rust and Samuel Page, are Rep. to Gen. Ct.; Benjamin Goodhue is Senator.

June 4th. Naval officers are ordered to enter and clear out all British vessels and merchandize.

\* 1st. Ch. R. † Ess. Gaz. ‡ North Ch. R. § Hen. Dia. || Jo. of Ho.

¶ Ess. Gaz. \*\* T. R. †† Ess. Gaz. ‡‡ T. P. §§ Ess. Gaz. ||| Jo. of Ho.

July 4th. Independence of the U. States is celebrated by the Gen. Ct. Thus began a custom, which has ever since been practised to a greater or less extent.

\*11th. As heavy losses had been sustained and navigation greatly injured, for want of a well regulated pilotage in the harbours of this and other ports,—Gen. Ct. enact that there shall be two regular pilots for the port of Salem.

†Sept. 24th. Wm. Bentley is ordained colleague with Rev. James Diman.—†26th. Up to this date from Feb. 10th, Stephen Higginson was a delegate of Mass. to Congress.

§ Oct. 3d. Richard Lang is chosen Ruling Elder, in the place of B. Goodhue, deceased.

|| Nov. 9th. Richard Derby, Esq., son of Richard and Martha, d., b. Sept. 16, 1712, m. Mary Hodges, Feb. 3, 1735, who d. March 27, 1770, in her 57th year, m. Sarah, widow of Doct. Ezekiel Hersey, of Hingham, about Oct. 1771. He left wife Sarah, and children, Mary Crowninshield, Martha Prince, Elias Hasket and John,—had lost daughter Sarah, wife of John Gardner 3d, and son Richard. He was long an eminent merchant, and died wealthy.—25th. A Capt., Lt., and about 40 men pass through town for Boston. They belonged to a ship of 50 guns, which was of a fleet from Holland for Philadelphia, with a Dutch minister to this Government. Their ship was dismasted and leaky and they on short allowance. They made for the first port. When not far from Cape Ann, they left the ship in two boats and made for a brig, which they reached. They had not shoved off from their ship more than three minutes, when she sunk with 303 men, who were all drowned.—§ 28th. Dr. Whitaker's Church inform him, that they prefer the Congregational form of government to the Presbyterian form, and desire him to call a meeting on this account. ¶ He declined to unite with them in a Congregational Council, which they

\* T. P. † Ess. Gaz. ‡ Jo. of Ho. § 3d Ch. R.

|| Prob. Rec. ¶ Tab. Ch. \*\* Brief History.

1783]

called to meet here Feb. 10, 1784. This Council decided, that Dr. W's Church had a right to return to Congregationalism, and, at an adjournment of the 24th, resolve that the Church's connexion with him is dissolved. Dr. W's society would not admit him to labour among them after March 25th. Salem Presbytery at Groton, June 11th, justify Dr. W., decide that his relation to his Church shall be dissolved when his Society shall have paid him his due and withdraw fellowship from his Church. The Presbytery say, Sept. 9th, that they had cited the 20 brethren of Dr. W's Church to appear before them to prove their charges against him and show cause, why they should not be cut off from the Presbytery;—but that these brethren had done neither. The Presbytery renew their excommunication of Dr. W's Church and their recommendation of him.—\* 26th. Jonathan Gardner, d. in his 86th year—m. Elizabeth Gardner, Dec. 2, 1725—published to Mary Avery, of Boston, Dec. 21, 1754,—m. Mary Palfray, Nov. 17, 1757---left wife Mary, had children, Jonathan, John, Elizabeth, Sarah Bowditch, Mary Andrews, Lydia Derby, Hannah and Margaret Barton,—often held offices in town; was long an eminent merchant. †In 33 weeks from April 3, there were 158 vessels cleared from Salem. ‡ There were 385 births and 189 deaths the past year in this town.

\* Prob. Rec.

† Salem Gaz.

‡ Pem. M. S.



## APPENDIX.

— 626 —

1628.

\* June 20th. John Endicott and his first wife and company sailed from Weymouth, England, in the ship Abigail.—According to Morton's New English Canaan, she died with many others in 1629.

Rev. Thomas Cobbet of Ipswich writes, in 1677, to Rev. Increase Mather, as follows. "About ye year 1628 when those few yt came out with Collonel Indecot and began to settle at Nahum-keick, now called Salem, and in a manner all so seek of ye journey, that though they had both small and great guns, and powder and bullets for ym, yet had not strength to manage ym if suddenly put upon it, and tidings being certainly brought ym on a Lord's day morning, yt a thousand Indians from Sugust were coming against ym to cut ym off: they had much adoe amongst ym all, to charge two or three of ym great guns and traile ym to a place of advantage where ye Indians must pass to ym and there to shoot ym off, when they heard their noise they made in ye woods, yt ye Indians drew near, ye noise of which great artillery, to which ye Indians were never wonted before, did occasionally (by ye good hand of God) strike such dread into ym, yt by some lads which lay as scouts in ye woods, they were heard reiterate that outcrie (O Obbomock) and then fled confused back with all speed, when none pursued. One old Button, lately living at Haverhill, (died there 1672) who was then almost ye ouely hale man left of yt company, confirmed this so to me."

Among those who came to attend the formation of the Church, (page 28,) was Edward Gibbons. On this occasion, he was seriously affected and became one of the most useful men in Boston. Joshua Scottow, in his narrative, informs us, that Gibbons was "the younger brother of the House of an honourable extract;"—that "he had been one of the Merry Mount Society."

By the word *fully* (p. 28,) is meant, that the First Church did not have two ministers,—pastor and teacher,—after Mr. Williams left,—except when one was enfeebled by disease or age so as to need a colleague.

As to the office of Ruling Elder, as mentioned (p. 29) John Appleton was chosen Ruling Elder, as successor to B. Lynde, in the First Ch. 1782,—Richard Lang was appointed to a similar office in the

\* Prince.



Third Ch., as successor to B. Goodhue, 1783,—and the North Ch., having had Ruling Elders from their beginning, elected Jacob Ashton for a Ruling elder, Feb 7, 1826.

### 1630.

July 25th. Mr. Johnson, at Salem, receives a letter from Gov. Winthrop, which recommended a Fast here on August 1st, because of sickness at Charlestown;—and which proposes, that the professors of religion in Charlestown, Dorchester and Salem become distinct churches.

Rev. F. Higginson, whose death is mentioned (p. 42,) was son of Rev. John H. and was settled at Claybrook before he came to Salem. He left a widow, Ann, who was living at Charlestown, 1669. He left the following children;—John, who d. 1708, *Æ* 92;—Theophilus, father of Samuel, a physician,—d. *Æ* 37;—Francis, a school master at Charlestown for a time,—became a preacher and d. at Kerby Stevens, Eng., 1670, in his 55th year;—Timothy followed the sea, and d. unmarried;—Samuel, Capt. of a man of war in Oliver Cromwell's time, and afterwards Capt. of an E. India ship, d. *Æ* 44;—Charles, Capt. of a ship in the Jamaica trade, d. *Æ* 49;—Neophitus, d. *Æ* 25;—Mary, who m. Rev. Mr. Fitch, of Conn., and Ann, who m. Mr. Chatfield.

\* Aug. 18th. J. Endicott m. Elizabeth Gibson.

Judge Lynde, who d. 1781, remarks in his notes in a volume of Hutchinson—"It is said that Lady Arabella (Johnson) was buried near where the present Church of England now stands."—† Mrs. Phillips, wife of the Rev. Geo. P., who came over with Gov. Winthrop, was buried near Lady Arabella.

### 1631.

Jan. 26th. Ann, widow of Rev. F. Higginson, writes a letter of thanks to Gov. Winthrop for "two kine and house and money in hands of Mr. Coddington."

‡ Houses here had wooden chimnies and thatched roofs.

April 18th. The Court of Assistants order, that "each man who finds a musket shall have ready 1 lb. of powder, 20 bullets and 2 fathoms of *match*." Match continued for a considerable number of years to supply the place of Flints in New England and Europe. "It is necessary, says Walhuysen, (in *L'Art Militaire*, printed 1653,) that every musketeer knows how to carry his *match* in moist and rainy weather, that is, in his pocket or hat. The musketeer should also have a little tin tube about a foot long so as to admit a match and pierced full of little holes, that he may not be discovered by his *match*, when he stands centinel or goes on any expedition." The suggestion of this writer was the origin of match boxes.

§ The Tarrentines (p. 55) were resisted at Agawam by Hugh Brown and others sent from Salem.

|| July 26th. "A small bark of Salem of about 12 tons, coming

\* Winthrop. † Prince. ‡ Gov. Dudley. § T. R. || Winthrop.

towards the bay, John Elston and two of Mr. Craddock's fishermen being in her, and 2 tons of stone and 3 hhd. of train oil, was over-set in a gust and being buoyed up and down 48 hours, and the three men sitting upon her, till Henry Way's boat, coming by, espied and saved them."

Sept. 6th. "The White Angel set sail from Marblehead harbour."—\* 27th. Josiah Plaistow, of Boston, for a misdemeanor, is sentenced by Court of Assistants "hereafter to be called by the name of Josias and not Mr. as formerly used to be." The title Mr. (p. 56,) was applied to captains and sometimes to mates of vessels; to military captains; to eminent merchants; to school-masters, doctors, magistrates and clergymen; to persons who had received a second degree at College, and who had been made freemen. The wives and daughters of those men, who were called Mr. were named Mrs.

Oct. 13th. Thomas Gray, not Graves, (p. 56,) had been ordered by the Court of Assistants, Sept. 28, 1630, to appear before them and answer charges against him and "remove himself out of this Patent before the end of March next." He was in the Colony Aug. 3, 1632, when Mr. Dudley accused Gov. Winthrop for not executing the sentence for his banishment.—1638, June 5th. Gray was "censured to be severely whipped and the former execution of banishment to be inflicted."

### 1632.

† March 14th. The bark Warwick had been recently at Salem to sell Corn, which she brought from Virginia.

‡ June 5th. "Ordered that the goods of the Company of the husbandmen shall be inventoried by the Beadle and preserved here for the use and benefit of the said Company."—Beadle was an officer, who waited on the Court of Assistants before and after the General Government was moved to Mass.—1635, April 7. "Capt. (Wm.) Trask to pay John Kirman out of the estate of the Company of husbandmen £24 11 5, being the remainder of 1-8 part of said estate."—§ 14th. "One Noddle, an honest man of Salem, carrying wood in a canoe, in S. River, was overturned and drowned."—|| Anthony Dicks was taken by Bull, the Pirate, (p. 58) and required to pilot him to Virginia, but Dicks refused. There was an Anthony Dixie, according to Morton, of Plymouth 1623. Anthony Dike was of Salem 1636 and was a sea captain. Dicks, Dixie and Dike are supposed to denote the same person. Gov. Winthrop says, under Dec. 15, 1638,—Anthony Dike in a bark of 30 tons, cast away on the head of Cape Cod. Three were frozen to death; the other two got some fire and so lived there by such food as they saved, seven weeks, till an Indian found them." This Capt. Dick or Dike left a widow Tabitha, who m. a Pitman and a son Anthony who d. 1670 and left a widow Margery.

\* Col. R. † Winthrop. ‡ Col. R. § Winthrop. || R. Clap.

**1633.**

\* Jan. 17th. "A maid servant of Mr. Skelton going towards Sagus, was lost seven days and at length came home to Salem. All that time she was in the woods, having no kind of food, the snow being very deep and as cold as at any time that winter. She was so frozen into the snow one morning as she was one hour before she could get up;—yet she soon recovered."

† April. Of a £100 rate for the Colony, Salem is assessed £8.

Sept. 3d. *Ancient* is used for Lieutenant.

‡ "This yeare a small gleane of rye was brought to the Court as the first fruits of English graine."—Before this the Colonists supposed that Rye would not grow on their land.

§ Oct. 2d. Of a Colony rate £412, Salem is assessed £28.

**1634.**

In the Antiquarian Society's collection there is a paper, which belonged to Wm. Bentley, D. D., and which says;—"A small fort was built on ye high land, since Major Sewall's." 'This was done 1634.' Such a fort was on or about the place where the Methodist meeting house stands.

Isaac Allerton, (p. 64,) appears to have been one of the first settlers at Plymouth 1620, where he was an assistant 1621.—Gov. Winthrop mentions him as of New Haven, March 30, 1643;—and as cast away coming from N. Haven, Feb. 17, 1645.

|| March 4th. Gen. Ct. at Newton appoint Commissioners for military affairs, who had power of life and limb. Among such Commissioners was Mr. Endicott.

Matthew Craddock (p. 64) was a merchant of London. His widow Rebecca had m. Benjamin Whitchcot, D. D. by 1670. He left a son Matthew Craddock, living 1672.

¶ Mr. Skelton (p. 67) left children, Samuel and three daughters, who sold their father's farm, 1659. The son seems to have lived in Charlestown.

\*\* Sept. 3d. Muskets, Bandileers and Rests, lately arrived, are to be equally divided among the several Plantations. Bandileer was "a large leathern belt thrown over the right shoulder and hanging down under the left arm, worn by musqueteers in the time of James and Charles I. both for sustaining of their fire arms, and for the carriage of their musket charges, which being put up in little wooden or tin or leathern cylindric boxes, were hung to the number of 12 to each bandileer. Each of these boxes contained a single charge of powder."—"Rest, a kind of fork to support muskets, when presented in order to fire. Rests were of different lengths according to the heights of the men who used them; they were shod with sharp iron ferrils, for sticking them into the ground, and were, on the march when the musket was shouldered, carried in the right hand or hung upon it by means of a string or loop tied under the head."

\*Winthrop. †Pyncheon pap. ‡Johnson. §Pyn.P. ||Col.R. ¶Qt. Ct. R. \*\*Col. R.

\* Oct. 1st. "On the 4th day seaventh night the market at Salem to begyn and to continew from 9 o'clock in the morning to 4 o'clock afternoon."

Sakers, (p. 70) were small cannon.

### 1635.

† May 6th. John Holgrave and John Woodbury were Deputies to Gen<sup>l</sup> Ct.

Aug. 3d. Wm. Pynchon, giving an account of military articles committed to him for distribution, says, "there were given to Salem besides what Mr. Humphrey had given them, 8 swords, and 25 wolf hooks, by John Holgrave."

‡ 22d. "Divers speeches about convenient places for shops for the men, as at the end of the meeting house from Williams's corner fence: and that Mr. Endicott, Mr. Sharpe, Mr. —, and Mr. Alford should consider of some convenient place for shops, that may be with the owners' consent."—"It is ordered, that all the inhabitants of this town of Salem, that have searmes greater or less, or any quantity of land granted to them, or any ten acre lott medoes or marshes, be they more or less in quantity, shall repaire to the men appointed to lay out the bounds and by the last of the 3d mo. to have all their ten acre lotts bounded; and all others, that have searmes or meadoes or marshes by the 1st of 9 mo., and all their lands being bounded, to make such marks or bounds either by fences or deepe holes; and that eurie man's bounds may be recorded upon the penaltie of 10s., provided that those deputed to lay out bounds be paid for their paynes."

§ Oct. John Wolcott, having had a quit claim of Mr. Williams's house and land through an order to Mrs. Higginson, who now lived at Charlestown,—conveys them to another person. This appears to have been done in anticipation of such property's being sequestered, because Mr. Williams was banished.

|| Nov. 16. Messrs. Trask, Woodbury, Conant, Massey and Balch are to be overseers of land.

¶ 30th. Voted, "that all such orders as the town thinke meet to be published, shall be published on the next *Lecture day* after town meeting."

### 1636.

\*\* Jan. Mr. Williams "had so far prevailed at Salem, as many there (especially of devout women) did embrace his opinions and separated from the churches, for this cause, that some of their members, going into England, did hear ministers there and when they came home the churches here held communion with them."

†† May 25th. John Blackleach should be added to the Deputies from Salem to General Court.

‡‡ 30th. An order of this date from Messrs. Vane, Winthrop

\* T. R. † Col. R. ‡ Town Grants. § Qt. Ct. R. || T. R.

¶ T. R. \*\* Winthrop. †† Col. R. ‡‡ Winthrop.

and Dudley, requires the Constable of Salem to notify men and women, who had withdrawn from the worship of the Church here, and met by themselves,—to cease from such conduct, or else they would be called to an account by the Government. The persons, thus withdrawn, were Mr. Williams' friends.

June. Rev. John Cotton preached in Salem. His text was Jeremiah 5 ch. 5 vs. He showed, that God's covenant with Israel extended to his people in every age. It appears from an address, prefixed to Mr. C's sermon, that he had written to the pastor of Salem Church on the following subject. Some magistrates arrived here when the sacrament was about to be administered. One of them had a child recently born, which had not been baptized. A question occurred whether this magistrate should commune with the Church here and have his child baptized. This question was decided in the negative. Mr. Cotton hearing of this decision, wrote to the Salem minister, that wherever godly magistrates came and found the seals of the Covenant administered,—such magistrates had a right to these seals both for themselves and their children. The pastor here wrote back an affectionate answer to Mr. Cotton.

\* 27th. "It was ordered and agreed, that all the Canoes of the N. syde of the Towne shal be brought the next 2d day, being the 4th day of 5th mo. about 9 o'clock, A. M. unto the Cove of the kcommon landing place of the N. River by Geo. Harris his house, —And that all the Canoes of the S. syde are to be brought before the port house in the S. River att the same tyme then and there to be viewed by J. Halgrave, P. Palfrey, R. Waterman, R. Conant, P. Veren, or the greater number of them. And that there shall be noe Canoe used (upon penalty of 40s. to the owner thereof) than such as the said surveiors shall allowe of and sett their mark upon and if any shall refuse or neglect to bring their Canoes to the said places att the tyme appointed they shall pay for said faulte 10s."

† "This day was brought into Town and carried up to Mr. Endicott's these corslets following,—viz.—18 back peeces,—18 belly peeces,—18 pair of tassyls,—18 head peeces of three sorts, but 17 gorgets and 16 pikes and 19 swords."—"Tassys or "Tasses, armour for the thighs;—appendages to the ancient corslet consisting of skirts of iron, that covered the thighs. They were fastened to the cuirass (or breast plate) with hooks."—"Gorget, a peice of armour for defending the throat or neck."—"Corslet,—armour to cover the body for protection, worn formerly by pike men." It comprised the head, back and belly peices,—tasses and gorgets.

‡ July 9th. "Many ships lying ready at Natascott to set sail, Mr. Peter went down and preached aboard the Hector, and the ships going forth met with an E. wind, which put them in again; whereupon he stayed and kept sabbath with them."

§ Dec. 26th. John Stone, keeper of the Ferry between the Neck and Cape Ann side, to have 2d for each stranger and 1d for an inhabitant of Salem.

\* Ql. Ch R.

† T. R.

‡ Winthrop.

§ T. R.

**1637.**

Jan. 26th. The names of the thirteen men, first contained on the present Town Records, are Francis Weston, Thomas Gardner, Daniel Ray, Phillip Veren, John Endicott, Townsend Bishop, Robert Moulton, John Balch, Lawrence Leech, Elias Stileman, Thomas Scruggs, Jacob Barney and John Woodbury. These persons acted as the executive rulers of Salem. They were of the same number, as the Colonial Government was of before the arrival of Gov. Winthrop. The number of 13 men to govern Salem was not known after the preceding date.

Feb. 16th. Richard Inkersoll to receive 1d for ferriage of each person over North River.

27th. Voted, "that a petition be drawne unto Gen. Ct. concerning the limits of Salem."

May 19th. A warrant was delivered for 16 men more from Salem for expedition against the Pequods. The General Court in stating their reasons to His Majesty in 1665, for taking the territory of the Pequods in 1637,—say that the Pequods were a common enemy to all the English, "threatening to root them wholly out of the land and *fish* their corn with their carcasses,—killing sundry of several places on land and water, and, after their cruel manner, tortured them to death;—were a potent enemy and a terror to all the Indians around them"

June 20th. Twelve Selectmen chosen were Wm. Hathorne, R. Conant, T. Bishop, T. Scruggs, J. Woodbury, J. Massey, D. Ray, R. Moulton, J. Holgrave, P. Palfrey, T. Gardner, and J. Balch.

July 12th. Mr. Phillips (p. 119) was granted hay land. The Village grant to him and company was Dec. 31, 1638. He was received an inhabitant Jan. 21, 1640.

30th. There was a Ferry between the town and Darbie Fort.

Aug. 14th. "John Horne is allowed a piece of ground for a wind mill upon or near the burial place."

John Holgrave kept an ordinary here.

28th. An ammunition "house is put out to Samuel Archer and Wm. Allin, to be finished by last of 8th mo."

Sept. 25th. "Geo. Wright to keep the Ferry between Butt Point and Darbye Fort."

\* 26th. Townsend Bishop took part in the trial of Mrs. Hutchinson on p. 111.

† Thomas Scruggs, (p. 111) who had been a leading man in Salem, died shortly before Dec. 2, 1656.

‡ Dec. 5th. Of a County Rate for £420, Salem paid £10.

**1638.**

§ Jan. 15th. The town paid Mr. Peters for "weights, beame and scales," and Adams for daubing the meeting house, and John Bushnell for glazing its windows.

\* Hutch.

† Reg. R.

‡ Qt. Ct. R.

§ T. R.

29th. Isaac Davis is paid for a pair of Stocks.

Cutting through at Cape Ann, (p. 114) appears to have meant the opening of a passage between the harbour of Gloucester and Anisquam River, so as to accommodate vessels and prevent the need of going round the Cape.

May 7th. The Country rate was £172 10.

Nov. 12th. A rate of £15 "for defraying of debts and of divers publique chardges of the publique works about the towne."

\* Mary Oliver (p. 117—8) was ordered to go to her husband in England, July 11, 1649.

† Dec. 31st. Voted to have an addition to the meeting house. This proves, that the meeting house (p. 119) was only an addition.

### 1639.

The grant made to P. Dickerson (p. 122) was Aug. 25th.

Oct. 10th. Josselyn says, that a half score of very fair Pippens were brought from Gov's Island, "there being not one apple nor pear tree planted in any part of the country, but upon that Island." This differs from the account, which has been not unfrequently given in the public prints, of pears annually borne by a tree on the farm, originally Gov. Endicott's, as though this tree was planted there, 1628. In fact the farm, containing this tree, was not granted Gov. Endicott till 1632.

‡ Nov. 18th. "Those having lots about Winter Harbour and the Island, have liberty to fence in their lotts to keep off the swine and goats from their fish, so shall they leave it open after the cattle is in."

Dec. 11th. "John Gedney is called by the town to keepe an inn and John Holgrave layeth his down."

Benedict's History of the Baptists informs us, that Rev. Mr. Wickendon, colleague with Mr. Brown, came from Salem to Providence, 1639.

### 1640.

§ May 17th. "Joseph Grafton set sail from Salem, 2d day, in a ketch of about 40 tons (three men and a boy in her) and arrived at Pemaquid on the 3d and there took in some 20 cows, oxen, &c. with hay and water for them and came to anchor in the bay the 6th.

|| Sept. 14th. "Ordered that if any man within the town of Salem shall take any wolf within the precincts of Salem and bring him to the meeting house alive, he shall have for every such wolf 15s., and for every wolf he kills he shall have 10s.

¶ Dec. 15th. "A pinnace called the coach, being in her voyage to New Haven between Salem and Cape Cod, sprang a leak, so as in the morning they found her hold half filled with water; whereupon the seamen and passengers betook themselves to their skiff, being a very small one and the wind then growing very high at S. W. Only one Jackson, a godly man and an experienced sea-

\* Qt. Ct. R. † T. R. ‡ T. R. § Winthrop. || T. R. ¶ Winthrop.



man, would not leave the vessel before he had tried the utmost;—so getting them in again and laying the bark upon the contrary side, they fell to getting out the water, which, it pleased God, they overcame, and having a fresh gale, they got safe back to Salem."

Dec. A church, formed at Lyna under Rev. Abraham Pierson, moves to S. Hampton, L. Island. Lechford, in his "Newes from N. England," says, "Master Peter of Salem was at the gathering of this Church.

Ship Charles brought passengers to Mass. this year. Mr. Peters preached on board of her at Piscataqua. Her crew disturbed him by hooting and hallooing. On their passage home, they were attacked by Turks, and some of them were killed.

### 1641.

\* Jan. 8th. "Ordered, that persons, within the limits of Salem, who had felled ship timber and should saw it into planks,—be paid by the ship carpenters using such materials. And that none shall cleave trees (fit for ship timber) up to clapboards or pipe staves."

The vessel (p. 130) was built by Richard Hollingworth. The man killed was Robert Baker, who lived here April, 1637, and was admitted an inhabitant the next July.

The following relates to Hugh Peters, a notice of whom closes on p. 151.—† He writes J. Winthrop, jr., April 30, 1654, and remarks, that he gave him conditionally all his property in Salem; and had sent him a loadstone to keep, if he did not return to N. England. There was a loadstone left by Gov. Endicott, which seems to have been the same sent to J. Winthrop, jr.

Mr. Peters writes to Dea. Gott, of Wenham, (formerly of Salem) March 3, 1655, his disappointment in not receiving rent for his property in Salem. He states, that he had conditionally given his property here to J. Winthrop, jr. He mentions, that Emanuel Downing was in London and that he wished Mrs. Downing would come thither.

The Parliamentary Diary of Thomas Burton place H. Peters in the funeral procession of Cromwell among the chaplains of Whitehall.

‡ The daughter, whom H. Peters left in London, was named Elizabeth, and was baptized at Salem, March, 1640. She was a widow Barker in 1703 and lived at Deptford, County of Kent, England, when she gave a letter of attorney to collect property here, which had been her father's.

§ Sept. 30th. "Granted to Samuel Cornhill an acre of land more or lesse for the sewing of hempe."

|| J. Woodbury (p. 153) came from Somersetshire, England, according to testimony of his son Humphrey.

¶ Nathaniel and John Putnam testify, 1694, that they had lived at Salem Village ever since 1641.

\*\* Nov. 9th. "Archibald Thomson, of Marblehead, carrying

\* T. R. † Mass. Hist. Coll. ‡ Reg. R. § T. R.  
 || Sess. Ct. R. ¶ Qt. Ct. P. \*\* Winthrop.

ding to his ground in a canoe upon the Lord's day, in fair weather and still water, it sank under him in the harbour near the shores and he was never seen after."

### 1642.

Jan. About this time "one Ward, an honest young man, who going to show a traveller the safest passage over the river, as he thought, by the salt house, fell in, and, though he had a pitch fork in his hand, yet was presently carried under the ice by the tide."

\* 17th. "The Church in Salem rule by the major part;—you that are so minded, hold up your hands;—you that are otherwise minded, hold up yours." "Where there are farms or villages, as at Rumney Marsh and Marblehead, there a minister or a brother of one of the Congregations of Boston for R. Marsh, and of Salem for Marblehead, preacheth and exorciseth prayer every Lord's day, which is called prophesying in such a place. Those of R. Marsh and of Marblehead still come and receive the Sacrament at Boston and Salem respectively."—"Marriages are solemnized and done by magistrates and not by ministers."—"There is a place "where is Master Fenwick with the Lady Boteler at the River's (Con.) mouth in a faire house and well fortified, and one Master Higginson, a young man, their Chaplain."—"Lady Moody lives at Lynn but is of Salem Church. She is (good lady) almost undone by buying Master Humphries farme, Swampscot."

† John Humphrey, (p 156) was dead before June 25, 1661, when his son Joseph and Edmund Batter were appointed administrators of his estate in New England.

### 1643.

March 5th. "Corn was scarce all over the country so as by the end of the 2d month, many families in most towns had none to eat, but were forced to live on clams, muscles, cataos, dry fish, &c."

‡ April 27th. Thomas Paine's will was received. It was dated April 10, 1638. He owned part of the ship Mary Ann of Salem. He had a mill in the hands of Henry Blomfield. He died before Jan'y, 1640. He was granted land here Aug. 28, 1637. He left a widow and three sons, of whom was Thomas.

§ Deborah Moody (p. 160) was granted by General Court 400 acres of land May 13, 1640. || She was living at Gravesend, L. I. 1649, when her agent wrote to Daniel King, who had her farm at Lynn. Sir Henry Moody had an action about her farm, 1651, called Swampscot farm, in her behalf and sold it for her to the said King.

|| Dec. 3d. Samuel Sharp sells his farm, north of Mr. Skelton's, to John Porter of Hingham.

\* Lechford. † Qt. Ct. P. ‡ Qt. Ct. papers. § Qt. Ct. R. || Reg. R.

## 1644.

\* Feb. 6th. Emanuel Downing writes to Gov. Winthrop, his brother, "I fear the Lord is offended for sparing the lives of Gorton and his companions, for if they all be as busy as this (Randall Holden) at Salem, there will be much evil seed sown in the country. I hope some of them will be brought to trial next Court for breach of their order, and if yet you shall spare them I shall fear a curse upon the land."

† July 7th. Wheat 4s. 6d., peas 3s. 6d., barley 4s., tye 4s., Indian corn 3s., to pay for work on the town's gun carriages. All grain was called corn.

‡ 11th. Richard Ingersoll's will dated. It was proved Jan. 2, 1645. He left children, George and Nathaniel Ingersoll, Richard Pettingal and Wm. Haines, sons in law, and Bathsheba his youngest daughter. He left widow Ann, who was a member of the Church here before 1635. He was granted a house lot April 6, 1635. His widow was wife of John Knight, sen., of Newbury, 1688.

§ Oct. 30th. "Capt. Thomas Breadcake is to have two small guns from Winter Island in Salem." Nov. 13th. He had a commission for 12 months to take any "Turkish Pirates."

Burton's Diary informs us, that G. Downing (p. 168) was on a Parliamentary Committee of Trade,—frequently and ably spoke on questions before the House,—took an active part against Thomas Naylor, the Quaker, 1656. || G. Downing left a son, Charles, who lived in London, 1700, and sold the farm in Salem, which formerly belonged to his grand-father Emanuel.

## 1645.

¶ About 1645 or 6, Samuel Edson moves from Salem to Bridgewater. He became an inhabitant of Salem July 25, 1629. He d. July 9, 1692, Æ 80. His wife Susanah d. Feb. 20, 1699, Æ 81.

## 1646.

\*\* July. "Great harm was done in corn, (especially wheat and barley) in this month by a caterpillar, like a black worm about one and a half inches long."

†† Nov. 16th. Recently "at Salem Lady Moody's house being a flat roof and but 9 feet high, the roof was taken off and so much of the chimney as was above it and carried into two parts 6 or 8 rods off. Ten persons lay under it and knew not of it till they rose in the morning."

Though Hooper's Medical Dictionary says catarrhus a contagio, (p. 176—7) yet etymology requires, that contagio should be contagione.

‡‡ Serjeant Porter and Mr. Keniston are chosen to see, that the

\* Mass. Hist. Coll. † T. R. ‡ Qt. Ct. R. § Col. R. || Reg. R.

¶ Mass. Hist. Coll. \*\* Winthrop. †† Winthrop. ‡‡ T. R.

Strong Water bridge and the Butts bridge and the bridge at great-pond, are all completed within May 17, 1647.

### 1647.

\* June. About this date "a barn at Salem was set on fire with lightning and all the corn and hay consumed suddenly. It fell upon the thatch in the breadth of a sheet."

### 1648.

† Wm. Hathorne was Speaker of the Representatives for 1648 up to October.

‡ The sons, left by J. Balch (p. 179) were Benjamin, John, and Freeborn.

### 1649.

Wm. Walton (p. 180) was of Seaton, Devonshire, Eng. 1632, and of Hingham, N. E. 1635. His wife was Elizabeth.

Among those set off from Salem to Marblehead, 1649, was Lt. Francis Johnson. His wife, Joane, and he were of the Church here, 1635. He was granted 200 acres, two miles off from Salem at Brooksby, Jan. 25, 1637. His age was 82 in 1686.

§ Oct. 17th. The custom of thatching houses in Mass. still continues.

### 1650.

|| Wm. Perkins (p. 183) had a mother, Jane Perkins, widow, living in London, 1672.

### 1651.

¶ O. Holmes (p. 184) was b. at Preston, Lancashire, Eng. He had moved from Salem before 1649, when he left the Congregational Church at Rehoboth and with others set up a separate meeting and soon joined the Baptist Church at Newport. Of this Church he became minister after Mr. Clark's death, 1676.

\*\* The land, mortgaged by Ned (p. 185) lay between the lands of his brother Humphrey and his uncle William.

### 1652.

Jan. 16th. The last time Emanuel Downing is mentioned as living in Salem. He seems to have returned speedily after this date to London, his former residence. Aug. 12, 1656, he was in England and his wife, Lucy, and family were in this town, but appear to have soon joined him. He and his wife united with the Church here Nov. 4, 1638. Though be believed, that Gorton and his associates, in 1644, ought to suffer death for their opinions, yet, in 1646, he was for a more lenient policy, as to the Anabaptists and for greater liberty, as to terms of freemanship. Mr. Downing was

\* Winthrop.

† Col. R.

‡ Qt. Ct. R.

§ Col. R.

|| Reg. Rec.

¶ Benedict.

\*\* Reg. Rec.

very respectable for his abilities and for his attainments in knowledge. He was often usefully employed in the business of this town and of the Colony.—One of his daughters was the first wife of Anthony Stoddard of Boston, and mother to the Rev. Solomon Stoddard of Northampton.

### 1653.

The following letter was written to Gen. Ct., 1653, immediately after the law (p. 188) forbidding any person to preach without consent of neighbouring Churches or County Court.

\* Honored and beloved in the Lord, etc.,—We humbly crave leave to represent unto you the ioynt desyres and requests of the Church of Christ here at Salem in a matter of great and general concernment to them and so all other the Churches of Christ in this wilderness. That whereas lately there hath an order passed the Courte and is confirmed for a law, that no gyfted man (be he never soe orthodox or godlye) shall be permitted (though chosen by the people) to exercise his gyft in publyck for continuance unless the approbacion of the fower next adjoineing Elders or Countie Courte be first had but in default thereof shall be subjected to penaltie as the civil magistrates and Courtes of justice shall determine (for soe much the lawe in substance and intention will beare, there being no exception of any more than other in the condition thereof) That the Honored Courte would be pleased to take this matter into consideration againe and to weigh the inconveniences of such a course in this case; for altho wee question not the sincere intention and meaning of any, that might have a chief hand therein to prevent all erroneous opinions and unsound doctrines to be vented in the Country (a case most needfull in these times and for which wee have cause to bless God in any of his servantes and to thanke them) yet in this waye of doing it, wee are not cleere nor can iudge it to be right and according unto the rules of Christ;—first, because it intrencheth upon the liberties of the severall churches, who have power (as is confessed by all the orthodoxe) to choose and sett up over them, whom they please for theyr edificon and comfort without depending on any other power and yf a breach be once made into these liberties, we knowe not howe farre it maye proceed in time, there being such a leading example as this:—secondly, there being in this order not only a caution against the unsound and corrupt in iudgment to suppress them (which is the maine reason pretended) but a peremptorye prohibition of any whatsoever (tho never so orthodoxe and godly, as hath bene expressed) to medle or undertake without such leave or approbation, which hath the nature of a universall denyall of all such liberties of the servants of God in that greate case:—thirdly, because those companies of people in these parts requiring such healpes are most of them (yf not all) branches of churches, who watch over theyr members and have power to reforme any such doctrinall evils among them without

\* Col. Papers.

calling upon theyre eldersor Courtes of justice to suppress them and make a stoppage of all togyther in that behalfe, soe making the remedye worse than the disease.—These are but some of the groundes wee have to intreat the repealing of this order for the present till better consydered and, further, that lawes made concerning churches in generall and theyre liberties might be with the consent of the churches first had and known therein. Thus craving leave for this boldness on such an occasion as this, and beseeching the Lord to direct you aright in all yr determinacons there, we humble take leave and remaine yr servants in the Lord,

EDWARD NORRICE,  
SAMUEL SHARPE,

*in the name and by the vote of the Church.*

#### 1654.

As to seven men (p. 189) the first Town Records mention 13 men, as rulers of Salem, Jan. 26, 1637, and 12 men June 20th, and March 31, 1638 ;—then mention 7 men up to Dec. 31st,—then 12 men, March 30, 1640,—and then 7 men up to Jan. 13, 1649,—and thence the Records sometimes call such rulers the Seven Men and Selectmen to Feb. 20, 1654,—and afterwards call them entirely Selectmen.

\* Capt. Thomas Lathrop was of Salem's quota of men at the capture of St. John's fort and Port Royal, 1654.

#### 1655.

† May 17th. Messrs. Curwin and Gedney are to get materials and workmen to repair the Town's House for the school and the watch.

For the article under Nov. 10, (p. 192) insert the following, "Capt. Hathorn chosen to marry persons and to be presented to General Court for confirmation. Capt. Hathorn, Wm. Brown and Edmund Batter are chosen Commissioners for ending small causes for the year ensuing."

Nov. 10th. John Marsh and John Kitchen are chosen searchers and sealers of leather.

Dec. 3d. Wheat 4s 6d, peas 4s, barley 4s 6d, pork 3d. lb., beef 20s. hund.—24th. Gregory Gibbs granted half acre of land at Claybrook to enclose for making bricks.

#### 1656.

March 13th. Richard Veren is appointed inspector of beef, pork and mackerel.

July 4th. "Ordered, that Wm. Brown shall make a foote bridge at the heade or near the heade of Forest River where Mr. Humphrey's bridge stood and mayntayne the same for a common foote bridge."

\* Q<sup>t</sup>. Ct. R.

† T. R.

\* Mr. Sharp (p. 194) "died about decimal years ago," before Nov. 27, 1666.

As Mr. Curwin had bought a house for Mr. Whiting (p. 195) the town agree, Aug. 22, 1657, to pay Mr. C. for his purchase.

### 1657.

† Jan. 16th. Hilliard Veren is chosen Clerk of writs.

Feb. 3d. "It is voted and agreed by the town, that they voluntarily yeald upp themselves to be rated by those whome they shall choose for the raysing of mayntenance for the ministry when wee shall requier."

Aug. 22d. "Chosen for an eighth man to joyn with the Selectmen, for making of the Rates, Mr. Henry Bartholomew." The town are rated for "a new bell and hanging" £18.

† Sept. 3d. Mr. John Alderman's will is proved. He bequeathed to each of the following persons a cow: Messrs. Norris, Elliot, Thatcher, Whiting of Lynn, Walton of Marblehead, Cobbit of Ipswich, and John Horn of Salem. He gave another cow for the Indians, to whom Mr. Elliot preached. Mr. Alderman joined the Church here Feb. 17, 1637.

§ Oct. 12th. "A bill came to hand to make a rate for the College for £5 6; also a bill for the County £7 15."

### 1658.

Feb. 17th. Mrs. Sharp (widow of the Elder) for her relief, is granted £10.

|| The information of the Friends' meeting, (p. 197) was given by letter from Hilliard Veren.

¶ March 8th. "Edmund Batter is chosen to meet with the County Commissioners for the carrying of the voates," (for the nomination of magistrates.)

\*\* July 5th. Thomas Oliver, of Salem, Calendrer, sells John Bradstreet of Marblehead, 10 acres of upland "on Marblehead neck butting upon Forest River and having in the South end an *Old Indian Fort*."

Mr. Norris (p. 200) was admitted to the first Church of Boston, 1639.

†† Liberty for a grist mill (p. 205) was granted Nov. 29th.

### 1659.

Nov. 29th. "Voted, that there shall be a house built for the ministry."

J. Whiting (p. 205) was afterwards settled in Hartford and there died.

‡‡ In reference to Mr. Higginson (p. 207) Rev. Mr. Ruggles says, that he was not ordained at Guilford, because the Church there did not admit their ministers to be ordained.

\* Qt. Ct. R. † T. R. ‡ Qt. Ct. Papers. § T. R. || Col. P.

¶ T. R. \*\* Reg. R. †† T. R. ‡‡ Mass. Hist. Coll.

\* Dec. 14th. John Blackleach and wife Elizabeth had recently moved from Salem to Boston.

### 1661.

† " To the Hon. Gen. Court now assembled at Boston. The humble petition off Wm. Traske, off Salem, and some others, that served under him in the expedition against the Pequots, humbly sheweth :—whereas yr petitioners understand, that severall gentlemen have lands granted and layed out at the Pequots country that was, and others are likely to putt in for more, who it may bee never sweett soe much for it as som off vs bled on it and for ys service. These therefore humbly pray the Court to consider it and in yr wisdom to appoynt such a pportion of land and some meet man (or men) to lay it out as in your goodness shall thinke meet—and yr petitioners shall ever remayue yr ever obliged

WILLIAM TRASKE,

*for himselfe and other soldiers under him.*

" In answer to this petition, ye deputys thiinke meet to grant Capt. Traske 400 acres of land in the place desired with reference to the consent of our honored Majestys hereto." This was referred to next session.

‡ March 8th. " It is ordered, that all, that have killed wolves formerly, are to have 15s. a wolf and for the year ensuing £2 10 a wolf."

April 22d. " Ordered, that all swine above 2 months old shall be sufficiently ringed and yoked by 8th of May and so be kept, on penalty of 12d a day."

May 7th. " The Constables, to beegine their watch upon the next 2d day of the weeke and to have foure men appoynted to watch eury night soe long as the watch doth hould and to be sett at 8 o'clock at night at the watch house."

### 1662.

J. Higginson preached at the annual Artillery election.

§ June 6th. " Ordered that a beere be provided for caryinge of the corpses to buryinge and the chimney in the meeting house is the place appointed for it to stand in." As proof, that a chimney was in the meeting house at this date,—it is recorded, March 22, 1667, as follows,—" below the gallerie where the chimney was formerly."

L. Leach (p. 215) had two sons—John and Robert, who died before he did. Robert left a son Robert, who was alive 1695. R. Leach's son John (p. 216) was  $\text{Æ}$  48, in 1695. L. Leach's widow Elizabeth died about 1674.

Sept. 27th. Edmund Batter and Walter Price are chosen Deputies to stand till the Court of Election.—The Selectmen are desired to petition General Court for " Pennie Cook as a plantation and to engage for planting of the same."

|| S. Stileman, sen. (p. 216) came from England as early as 1629.

\* Reg. Rec. † Col. Papers. ‡ T. R. § T. R. || Hubbard.



## 1663.

\* Feb. 19th. Chimnies in town are ordered to be swept once a month from the beginning of 8th mo. to end of 1st mo. and once in two months from 1st of 2d mo. to the last of 7th mo., on penalty of 12d for every neglect. John Milke is appointed town chimney sweeper. If by neglect of sweeping a chimney, it burn out of the top, a fine of 10s. is to be paid.

March 2d. The town intended to grant leave for another mill to be set upon South River; but John Trask so engaged for his father to grind the corn of the inhabitants or have it ground at Lynn, as to have such intention suspended.

† June 6th. The following is the substance of a letter of this date, written by Rev. John Higginson to General Court. Having preached before the Legislature, he wished to present a few more things for their consideration. He considered, that the Civil Government, published by Cotton, was erroneous, because it did not notice the Patent,—did not speak of allegiance to the King, and represented persons, who were not members of the Church, as the unbaptized Corinthians were in Paul's day.—Mr. H. proposed, according to His Majesty's letter, that persons be made freemen, "provided they be orthodox in religion and of unblameable conversation;" that the Common Prayer book might be cited against the wicked as the Heathen Poets were by an Apostle;—and that presents to Kings were proper and a sign of allegiance.

In a P. S., Mr. H. has the following:—"I doe further entreate yt ye how'd Court will please to consider what course may be taken for ye dissolueing of ye Quaker meetings here, which we have frequent and constant, without interruption a long time, strange Quakers often repaireing hither yt occasion may be given for others abroad to looke upon Salem, as a nest of Quakers, from hence to infect ye rest of ye country."

‡ Aug. 22d. Liberty is granted for building a mill on South River near Mr. Ruck's.

25th. John Ruck is chosen to keep a house of entertainment.

Nov. 9th. John and Samuel Gardner had leave to build the aforesaid mill.

Dec 5th. Paid for killing seven wolves £17 10.

22d. A committee to treat with the Selectmen of Marblehead about building a bridge over Forest River.

Josselyn, under 1663, says of Salem, "It hath two harbours, Winter and Summer, which lye within Darbie's Fort. They have store of meadow and arable. In this town are some rich merchants." He gives the following account of contributions in Mass. Churches. "On Sundays, P. M. when sermon is ended, the people in the galleries come down and march two abreast up one ile and down another until they come before the desk, for *pulpit they have none*. Before the desk is a long pue where the Elders and Deacons sit, one of them with a money box in his hand, into which the people

\* T. R.

† Ess. Hist. Soc. Coll.

‡ T. R.

as they pass, put their offerings, some 1s., some 2s. or a half crown, or 5s., according to their ability and good will, after this they conclude with a psalm."

### 1665.

\* March 6th. "It is voted, that whoever kill any wolves within the precincts of this town, shall have 40s. each wolf, *provided they bring the heads and nayll them on the meeting house.*"

† Aug. 18th. Gen. Ct. confirm Henry Bartholomew as Cornet of the Troop at Salem.

### 1666.

‡ April 21st. "The meeting house is to be the watch house until another be built." An agreement is made between Salem and Marblehead to have a country road leading from one of these towns to the other, to be laid out 24th. This road was altered from the old way.

The letter, containing the answer of General Court, as to the invasion of Canada, &c., (p. 228) was dated Sept. 11th.

### 1667.

§ Feb. 12th. As "John Norman hath reserved greate losses at sea, being taken by the Dutch, his rates are remitted."

|| In the beginning of 1667, some Dutchmen of war came to Virginia and plundered 18 or 19 sail of merchantmen and burnt a Frigate. John Brown, son of Elder Brown, was in one of the vessels so plundered. A Dutch captain told the said John, that, if they had not gotten so much booty at Virginia, they should have visited N. England, but that they should return.

¶ July 26th. Ordered "that the great gunns be caryed down to the fort with convenient speed."

Sept. 21st. Persons "to agree with a man to be a whipper for the year ensuing." Constables had done this service before.

### 1668.

June 10th. "The next Lecture day, what is given for the freight of the masts for his Majesty, is to be brought to the Selectmen."

### 1669.

Feb. 8th. Voted that each Deputy to General Court shall in future have 2s. 6d. a day while there.

April 19th. Several persons are fined for entertaining Thomas Maule and he is warned to depart.

\*\* Sept. 16th. The Ketch Providence, Capt. John Grafton, from Salem to W. Indies, was cast away on a rock in a dark and rainy night. The whole crew were ten, of whom six were drowned. The master, mate and a seaman, who was badly wounded, remain-

\*T. R. †Col. R. ‡T. R. § T. R. ||Cobbett's Narrative. ¶T. R. \*\*Mather.

ed on the rock till morning. In the morning they arrived, with difficulty, to an island about half a mile off, where they found another of their company. There they continued eight days, sustained by salt fish, and also, the last four days by cakes made of a barrel of flour, which washed ashore. "After four days they found a peice of touchwood, which the mate had formerly in his chest and a peice of flint, with which, having a small knife, they struck fire." They framed a boat with a tarred mainsail and some hoops and then fastened pieces of boards to them. With a boat, so made, they sailed ten leagues to Anguilla and St. Martins, where they were kindly received. \* Joshua Ward was one of these sufferers.

The meeting house to be built, (p. 238) was 50 feet wide and 60 long.

### 1670.

April 5th. "Ordered that if any house holder shall entertayne any stranger to dwell, as an inmate, from any other parts, above one week and not give notice to the Selectmen for the tyme beinge, he shall forfeite 20s. a weeke for the tyme afterwards."—"Thomas Oliver is chosen to goe from house to house aboute the towne once a month to inquire what strangers doe come or have privily thrust themselves into the town and to give notice to the Selectmen."

July 5th. Persons "to agree with Mr. Daniel Eppes for our schoolmaster, not exceeding £20 for one year, half pay from the inhabitants besides and whole pay from strangers."

Nov. 23d. Wm. Lord is appointed corder of wood and to have 3d. a cord, to be paid by the buyer.

† The annuity of Gov. Endicott's widow had expired and was renewed at the time mentioned on p. 239.

### 1671.

Jan. 6th. College money, £6, is mentioned.

### 1672.

Nov. 13th. "Ordered that the Lecture shall be begun at 11 o'clock in the morning every Lecture day throughout the year."

### 1673.

Jan. 23th. "Expenses for the French women brought into town by Mr. Pipon in his ship."

March 14th. Eight persons presented themselves in town meeting and took the oath of fidelity. This was a practice afterwards.

May 8th. In addition to 12 persons, there are 5 more prohibited by the Selectmen from frequenting the ordinaries.

† 18th. Mr. Newman of Wenham being dead, Mr. Higginson preached for the bereaved people. The afternoon service being closed, Mr. H. returned to the house of the deceased pastor. Then a thunder storm began. Lightening struck the house. A ball of fire, about the size of the bore of a great gun, went up chimney.

\* T. R.

† Col. R.

‡ Mather.

It struck Richard Goldsmith, who was there with several others, and killed him and a dog, under his chair, in the same room, where Mr. H. was conversing.

\* Nov. 18th. Edmund Batter is chosen Deputy to General Court for the rest of the year.

### 1674.

† May 28th. Mr. Higginson is on a Council in Boston, which advised the South Church there to receive some female members of the Old Church, who had secluded these females from their communion, because they had communed with the South Church.

‡ Nov. 10th. "Agreed that the Towne House shall be sett up by the prison and Wm. Dounton to raise it with what speed he can."

§ J. Brown, (p. 248) soon after T. Shepard's death, received another call from Charlestown Church. After some time, he negatived this call and soon moved to Boston. He had another call to settle at Charlestown and appears to have died before he gave his answer. || He was a fellow of Harvard College and died May 9th.

¶ The fine of Capt. Haskett (p. 250) was abated to £20.

### 1676.

\*\* April 20th. "Ordered by ye Selectmen yt the three Constables doe attend att ye three great doores of ye meeting house every Lord's day att ye end of sermon, boath forenoone and afternoone and to keep ye doors fast and suffer none to goe out before ye whole exercise bee ended, unless itt be such as they conceive have necessary occasion and to take notice of any such as shall presume to goe forth as above said and present their names as ye law direct. Ordered that all ye boys of ye towne are and shall bee appointed to sitt upon ye three paire of staires in ye meeting house on the Lord's day and Wm. Lord is appointed to look to the boyes yt sitt upon ye pulpit staires and for ye other staires Reuben Guppy is to look to and order soe many of ye boyes as may be convenient and if any are unruly to present their names as ye law direct."

†† The fine of Capt. Curwin (p. 253) was remitted Feb. 4, 1680.

‡‡ Nov. 10th. "Agreed with Arthur Hughes to bee bellman for ye towne from this present time to ye first of May next; viz— that ye said Hughes shall begin to take his walk about 10 o'clock att night from ye bridge to Henry Moises his house, passing through all ye streets and lanes within the circumference of ye towne to give notice of ye time of night, what weather, &c. according to custome and take special care to prevent fire and any disorder in ye night by giving timely notice thereof and to continue ye said perambulation until break of day. In consideration whereof ye Selectmen have agreed to pay ye said Hughes £5 out of ye towne rate and, in case yt hee manage ye business to satisfaction, it is left to ye Selectmen to give him more not exceeding 20s.

\* T. R. † Wisner. ‡ T. R. § Mass. Hist. Coll. || Hobart's Jo.

¶ Col. R.

\*\* T. R.

†† Col. R.

‡‡ T. R.

\* J. Porter (p. 255) belonged to Hingham in 1643, when he bought Elder Sharpe's farm. He was called Farmer Porter.

### 1677.

Jan. Sixty-one families here, having 295 souls, are assisted by an Irish Charity—141 families, having 620 souls, and belonging to the County of Essex, were assisted with £92 19 of said charity. The whole amount of this charity, expended in Essex and elsewhere, was £363 3.

† About this time "disbursements by several of the inhabitants of Salem on the man of war Ketch, Capt. (Nicholas) Manning."

The earliest records of the Colony and Towns have "clapboards and clappboards." The alteration of this word took place so as to be written "claboards and clayboards," as on p. 257.

June 16th. Voted to raise £254 for disbursements on the Fort.

28th. Selectmen "agreed with D. Eppes, jr. to teach all such scholars, as shall be sent to him from persons in town in ye English, Latin and Greek tongue soe as to fit them for ye Vniuersity, if desired and they are capable;—alsoe to teach them good manners and instruct them in ye principles of Christian Religion;—he to receive for each scholar 20s. a year and if this is not enough to make £ 60, the Selectmen will make up this sum;—or, if more than enough, to have it and the price of tuition for scholars out of town and a right to commonage,—and be free from all taxes, trainings, watchings and wardings."

Aug. 25th. "Agreed with John Snelling to finish ye Towne house, viz,—to shingle, claboard, floares, windoes, staires and all other things needful with respect to carpenters worke, in consideration whereof he is to have £20—one third in money and two thirds in provisions."

Oct. 10th. John Putnam is chosen for Deputy to General Court for the rest of the year.

Nov. 9th. "Voted yt there shall bee a constant contribution for ye poore euery Lord's day, which shall bee committed into ye hands of ye deacons and by them deliuered to ye Selectmen or their order for ye relief of ye poore."

### 1678.

May 1st. "Agreed that the Constables watch shall be sett of six men every night with arms and ammunition according to law, and that they begin at Dea. Prince's corner and so goe downe Eastward."

Dec. 12th. The Rates for the County and Country to be paid one third in money and two thirds in grain.

### 1679.

Aug. 6th. "Wm. Lord to ringe the bell att fve o'clock in the morning for one tyme, att which time the watch shall break up."

9th. "The Constable of Salem; you are hereby required in

\* Reg. Rec.

† T. R.

His Majesty's name to warne 13 men eury night to watch and bee exact to see the full number appeares and attends; the one halfe att least to bee sober honest men and householders, to one of which you shall commit the charge and care of the watch and warne them to bee very carefull to examine any night walkers, strangers or others, who are abroad att unreasonable houres and to secure any suspicious persons, that cannot giue a good account of theere business and to the vtmost of theere endeavor to bee carefull to prevent fires being made or sett unto the towne by euell instruments, that may seek our ruin."

Nov. 3d. As "Edmund Batter formerly had libertye to sett a warehouse upon the town's land att the Coue neere the meeting house, the same libertye is yett granted him."

Dec. 25th. "The Selectmen being informed yt Wm. Lord, jr. is visited with the small pox at his father's house, do order, that Wm. Lord, sen., his wife and children, yt live with him, doe keepe within their house, and yt they doe not ofer to sayle any of their ware, viz. bread, cakes, gingerbread and the like, and that they suffer none to come to their house but what necessity requires upon penalty of 20s."

\* The Synod, (p. 263 l. 4th) began Sept. 10th.

† The rate as to cattle (p. 267) was repealed "in favour of our confederates."

### 1681.

† Oct. 1st. E. Batter and John Hathorne are chosen Deputies to General Court for the rest of the year.

### 1682.

Jan. 24. "Lt. John Putnam is desired and is hereby empowered to take care yt the law, relating to the Chatechising of children and youth, be duly attended at the Village."

27th. He "is desired to have a diligent care, that all the famylies doe carefully and constantly attend the due education of their children and youth according to law."

June 23d. "Lt. John Pickering is desired to agree with John Marston to make a pair of stocks."

### 1683.

Jan. 27th. Sam'l Gardner is chosen Deputy for the rest of the year.

Feb. 26th. "For preuention of the prophanation of the Sabbath by boys playing in or near the meeting house and disorderly runninge downe ye stairs before the blessing is pronounced,"—four men are appointed.

§ Mr. John Haskell moved from Salem to Rochester, Mass.

|| Oct. 6th. E. Batter and H. Bartholomew, sen., are chosen Deputies to Gen. Ct. for the rest of the year.

\* Hobart's Jo. † Col. R. ‡ T. R. § Mass. Hist. Coll. || T. R.

**1684.**

March 31st. The Town's Island in South River is granted to Thomas Gardner. This Island was before Joseph Hardy sen'r's door.

\* Elizabeth Curwin (p. 279) was the widow of Eleazer Hathorne, merchant, who died at Barbadoes, before she married J. Russel. She had children by her first husband, William, Samuel, and Abigail Hathorne, who lived at Charlestown, 1702.

**1685.**

† John Wareing loaned £5 for his spinners.

May 20th. E. Batter and John Ruck are chosen Deputies to General Court.

Sept. 8th. As the small pox raged at Barbadoes, the Selectmen order, that all cotton wool imported thence, shall be landed at Baker's Island till further order.

E. Batter's widow, Mary, (p. 281) died 1703.

Oct. 3d. H. Bartholomew is chosen Deputy to Gen. Ct. for the rest of the year.

Nov. 2d. £200 are voted for town charges.

**1686.**

March 19th. Voted that a high way be laid out over Mr. Ruck's creek.

As to the copy of the Salem Indian Deed, in 6th vol. 1st series of Mass. Hist. Coll., there are some mistakes. The sum paid was £20 not £40. One John signed, not two. Sarah did not sign. Jama not on the original deed. Yacoataw should be Yawataw. Thomas Hunt should be Thomas West.

**1687.**

Feb. 21. "Disbursements on the French people £1 17 5.—1 pot 47 lbs. at 4d. for the Indians,—paid for the Irish women 1s."

Gov. Winthrop, (p. 288—9,) was of Connecticut.

‡ Mr. Lawson (p. 289) preached a sermon,—“Christ's fidelity the only shield against Satan's malignity,”—at Salem Village,—on the examination of some persons, charged with witchcraft, March 4, 1692.—He preached another sermon,—“Duty and prosperity of a religious householder,”—at Charlestown Dec. 25, 1692.—Both sermons were printed.

**1689.**

§ April 17th. John Bishop of the Village was killed by Indians.

|| June 5th. Daniel Andrews was deputy from the Village to General Court.

The article, “a vessel is ordered,” (p. 293) should be as follows,—“first to scour our coast of pirates and then to carry soldiers

\* Reg. R. † T. R. ‡ American Library. § N. Dan. Ch. R. || Col. R.

on the Eastern expedition and protect our fishing vessels on the coast of Acadie."

\* Mr. Parris' Church (p. 296) was embodied Nov. 19th, and Nathaniel Ingersoll was chosen its Deacon Nov. 24th, and was ordained June 28, 1691.

### 1690.

July 3d. Godfrey Sheldon of Village was killed by Indians.

16th. Thomas Alsob, Edward Crocker, and Geo. Ingersoll, of the same part of Salem, were killed at Casco.

† Aug. 5th. Two single county rates are assessed on the town for £187 10, "for present supplies against the common enemies, French and Indians and other emergencies."

Dec. 18th. "The owners of the ship *May Flower* are allowed £8—for entertayning aboard said ship the sick people, who came from Canada."

‡ Gov. Wm. Shirley says in his speech of 1746, that the expedition against Canada in 1690, "cost the single Province of Mass. about £50,000, with loss of abundance of their young men by a malignant fever, that raged in the camp and several distempers that happened in their way home, and gave this Province so deep a wound, that it did not recover itself in many years after."

Hannah, the widow of J. Swinnerton (p. 300) was daughter of Henry Bartholomew and had been the widow of Bartholomew Brown. The children by her first husband were Bartholomew, Elizabeth, Hannah and James Brown.

### 1691.

§ June. Thomas Dean was living aged 95.

|| Oct. 21st. Rev. J. Higginson sends a letter of thanks to Cotton Mather for one of his publications,—called *Quakerism displayed*.

Mary Sibly (p. 303) was wife of Samuel S.

Town (p. 308 line 1,) was named William of Topsfield.

Martha Cory, (p. 309) was aged 52 at her death.

H. Bartholomew (p. 310) died Nov. 22d. He arrived at Salem Nov. 7, 1635.

### 1696.

Henry Skerry was living aged 89.

### 1697.

¶ Sept. 25th. As previously customary, a Committee order particular seats in the meeting house for women and the same for men, according to their repute in community.

— \*\* The fire (p. 331) was June 28th. Maj. B. was named William.

### 1698.

†† Nov. 2d. A general contribution through the province for persons in captivity.

\* N. Dan. Ch. R. † T. R. ‡ Col. R. § Reg. R. || Ess. Hist. So. Coll.

¶ T. R.

\*\* Lynde's Notes.

†† Pem. M. S.



\* Wm. Kidd (p. 332) was sent from England to suppress pirates in the India seas, but instead of attacking them he joined them. Pursued, he came to America and hid his booty on Long Island and elsewhere. He was executed May 23, 1701, in London. Queen Ann gave, in 1705, Kidd's effects, amounting to £6,472 1, to Greenwich hospital.

**1699.**

† Sept. The woods are much infested with bears and many of them are killed.

‡ Besides the law (p. 334) about Jesuits, there was another passed, May 1647, which forbid their coming to Massachusetts, and if found here, to be banished, and, if returning, to suffer death.

**1700.**

§ Oct. There is a continuance of the fashion for a man and woman of all ranks, to ride on one horse.

**1701.**

May 2d. Many cattle lost in a storm of rain and hail of three days.

**1702.**

Jan. 1st. Bray Wilkins died in his 92d year.

2d. Wm. Buckley died, aged 80.

E. Weld (p. 336) died Oct. 3d; his widow died Oct. 25, 1712.

July 13th. "Fever and flux mortal at Salem."

Dec. 30th. Mr. Green attended the ordination of Mr. Symmes at Boxford.

**1703.**

March 31st. Mr. Green attended ordination of Mr. White at Gloucester.

Aug. 21st. "Capt. John Turner went to Andover to hunt Indians with his troop."

24th. Eight men are impressed at the Village.

Sept. 6th. Some men went to scout beyond the River at Andover, having heard, that Indians were seen there.

Oct. 27th. Mr. Noyes aided in the ordination of Mr. Fitch at Ipswich.

|| Dec. 26th. Mary, wife of Benjamin Brown, died, aged 35. Her father, who had a brother George Hicks, D. D. of a yorkshire family, and Dean of Worcester, was executed at Revington Green, April 13, 1686, on the charge of being concerned in Monmouth's rebellion.

**1705.**

¶ July 5th. Mary, daughter of Caleb and Mary Buffum, is born. She died at Swansey Nov. 14, 1805.

\* Noble's Hist. of Eng.

† Pem. M. S.

‡ Col. R.

§ Green's Diary

|| Noble's Hist. of Eng.

¶ T. R.

Sept. 18th. Samuel, son of Bartholomew Gedney, dies. He was a physician.

### 1708.

\* July 11th. "Our Soldiers, troop and foot, went out to Haverhill, the Governor having heard that 700 French and Indians had come over the lake."

29th. Mr. Green states, that when he heard that Haverhill was surprized by the enemy, he went thither and joined in pursuit of them.

31st. He was a bearer to Mrs. Rolf killed there by the Indians. Wm. Coffin of Salem was killed in Haverhill battle.

### 1712.

June 25th. Mr. Green took part in the ordination of Mr. Brown at Reading.

### 1713.

March 5th. The custom of having a roast Turkey for visitors and partaking of it about 9 o'clock, as a supper, in respectable families, is continued.

### 1714.

April 17th. Gilbert Tapley, sen., died aged 80. His wife Tamison died Nov. 4. 1715, aged 83.

† May. The custom of rigging vessels, as schooners, now begins.

‡ June 30th. Mr. Green was at the ordination of Mr. Tufts of Newbury.

### 1715.

March 16th. Ministers, met in Salem, choose Mes<sup>rs</sup>. Gerrish of Wenham and Curwin to visit Boston in April, to consider about sending an agent to England.

§ June 6th. "A warrant for the town to consider of raising about £100 for purchasing corn to sell out for the supply of the inhabitants in their necessity, in this time of scarcity and the stock to continue for said use, till the town shall otherwise order."

|| Nov. 16th. Ichabod Plaisted, member of the Council and a resident at Salem, died in his 52d year. Gloves and rings were given at his funeral.

¶ Rebecca, widow of Wm. Brown, (p. 361) died June 1736.

The wife of J. Higginson (p. 369) was buried June 26, 1713.

### 1722.

\*\* July 3d. The crew of the schooner Mary, testify before Josiah Wolcott and Stephen Sewall, that they were boarded at Cape Sables on 14th, 15th and 16th of June and taken prisoners by

\* Green's Dia. † Pem. M. S. ‡ Green's Dia. § T. R.

|| Pem. M. S. ¶ N. E. Week. Jo. \*\* Bost. News Letter.

Capt. Edward Low, a pirate, and that he had taken several other fishing vessels and detained four young men.

\* D. Eppes deceased, (p. 375) was a chaplain in the expedition against Port Royal in the Spring of 1707.

† Dec. 3d. As funerals had been exceedingly late, the Select-men order, that "the corpse shall be interred at the setting of the sun at the farthest."

### 1724.

May 18th. It becomes a law here, "that muscles shall not be used for making *lime*, or for any thing else, except for food and bait to catch fish."

‡ June 15th. "Great drought, every thing burnt up."

### 1725.

§ Feb. 18th. Abigail, wife of Hon. Samuel Brown, d. in her 39th year. She was only daughter of John and Abigail Keach, of Boston. She was a pious, excellent woman. She left three sons and one daughter.

|| March. Capt. Dove takes Phillip Ashton, of Marblehead, from a desolate Island, in the West Indies, and brings him to Salem. Ashton was one of the four, taken by the noted pirate, Low, as related under 1722. Ashton suffered much and was often in danger of losing his life, while among the pirates. They watched him so narrowly, he could not escape from them, till March 9, 1723, when he went on shore of the said Island with a boat's crew for water. He improved this opportunity to hide in the woods, so that his shipmates could not find him. He continued on the Island, suffering much from hunger, from want of clothing and sickness, till found by Capt. Dove.

¶ "Ordinarily the Psalm is read (in worship) line after line by him, whom the Pastor desires to do that service; and the people generally sing in such grave tunes, as are most usual in the Church of our nation. The afternoon benediction is preceded by the phrase,—'Blessed are all they that hear the word of God and keep it.'"

Mehitable, widow of T. Robie (p. 392) was daughter of Stephen and Margaret Sewall,—b. May 21, 1695, m. to him Jan. 17, 1723.

\*\* Salem has 5 companies of foot, 1 of horse, besides the fort company. The regiment comprises soldiers of this town, Lynn, Beverly, Manchester and Middleton, and contains 12 foot companies. Salem has about 30 fishing vessels, much less than formerly, and the same number, which go on foreign voyages to Barbadoes, Jamaica and other W. I. Islands; some to the Wine Islands; others carry fish to Spain, Portugal and the Streights. The duties on rum and wine in Salem, 1701, were £60 10, and now, 1732, from 8 to £900.

\* Barnard's Diary.

† T. R.

‡ Smith's Jo.

§ C. Mather's sermon.

|| Alden's Coll.

¶ Ratio Disciplinæ.

\*\* Lynde's Notes.

The assessment (p. 403) on each seaman was 6d. a month, as well as on each fisherman, according to act in 10th year of Queen Ann.

### 1736.

\* Jan. 3d. Joshua Hicks is appointed Coroner of Essex.

March 23d. Last week two barns were burnt at Salem.

April 6th. Mr. Brown of Philadelphia is appointed Collector of the port of Salem and Marblehead in place of Benjamin Vining deceased.

Wm. Jennison (p. 413) married Abigail, daughter of James Lindall, May 15, 1730. † She survived him and died at Danvers about 1765, and left children,—William and Samuel Jennison, and Mary Giles.

Mr. Whitefield says in his journal, as to his visit here, (p. 419) "I preached to about 2000. Here the Lord manifested forth his glory. In every part of the congregation persons might be seen under great concern. Mr. C—k (Clark) a good minister seemed to be almost in heaven."

The following is a list of the original inhabitants of Salem, except those who were members of the Church, up to 1651,—so far as they are recorded. It is very probable, that some of them had resided here before the time, in which we have met with them, as first named.—The fact, that our Town Records up to 1635, are lost, and our Ecclesiastical Records, except those of members and baptisms, up to 1660, are destroyed,—shows how difficult it is for us to ascertain much about our primitive settlers.—The list will present names of persons alphabetically, according to the year, in which they appear, or are known to have begun their abode in this place.

Alford, Wm.	1635	Baker, Robert	1637
Adams, Richard	"	Burrows, John	"
Alby, John	1637	Bennett, Wm.	"
Aimedoune, Roger	"	Beere, Phillip	"
Adams, Robert	1638	Buxton, Anthony	"
		Beman, Wm.	"
Brown, Samuel	1629	Burstow, Anthony	"
Bennet, Henry	1630	Bushnell, John	"
Boggust, John	"	Brittall, John	"
Brown, Hugh	1631	Burton, John	"
Bennet, John	1633	Bridgeman, John	"
Burdet, George Rev.	1635	Bratley, John	1638
Bennet, Richard	1636	Blomfield, Henry	"
Bixby, Thomas	"	Baxter, Daniel	"

\* N. E. Week. Jo.

† Prob. R.

# APPENDIX.

549

Buffum, Robert	1638	Cock, Richard	1645
Bayley, Henry	"	Curtis Zacheus	1646
Blancher, (Widow)	"	Cromwell, Phillip	1647
Boren, John	"	Clad, goodwife	"
Best, John	"	Chilson Walsingham	1648
Burdsall, Henry	"	Cory, Gyles	1649
Bushnell, Francis	1639	Cole, Thomas	"
Buxton, Thomas	"		
Barber, Wm.	"	Danford, (Ensign)	1634
Bryan, (Widow)	"	Dike, Anthony	1636
Beaumont, John	1640	Devorex John	1637
Berry Christopher	"	Draper, Nicholas	"
Burwood, Thomas	"	Dodge, Wm.	"
Bryant, Thomas	1642	Daniels, Alice Mrs.	"
Bulfinch, John	1643	Dixy, Thomas	"
Bowditch, Wm.	"	Davis, Isaac	"
Bullock, Henry	"	Dresser, Samuel	1638
Bayley, Guydo	1644	Davis, Wm.	1639
Belknap, Joseph	"	Dill, George	"
Bowen, Thomas	1648	Daliber, Joseph	1640
Bond, goodman	1649	Downing Theophilus	1643
		Elston, John	1631
Cole, Robert	1630	Eborne, Samuel	1637
Clark, Wm.	"	Elford, John	"
Chubb, Thomas	1637	Easty, Jeffry	"
Comyns, Wm.	"	Edson, Samuel	1639
Cotta, Robert	"	Edwards, Rice	1643
Cary, Nicholas	"		
Chadwell, Thomas	"	Felton, Benjamin	1636
Codman, Robert	"	Foote, Pascha	1637
Charles, Wm.	"	Freeman, Mr	"
Chusmore, Richard	"	Fisk, John	"
Colbourne, Samuel	"	Flatman, Thomas	"
Cornish Samuel	"	Friend, John	"
Coite, John	1638	Fryar, Thomas	1639
Concklin, Ananias	"	Fuller, Robert	"
Cornish, Samuel jr.	"	Fairfield, Daniel	1642
Corwin, George	"	Flint, Wm.	1645
Ching, George	"	Franklin, goodman	"
Cook, Henry	"		
Canterbury, Wm.	1639	Gott, Charles	1628
Chickering, Henry	"	Gray, Thomas	1630
Convers, Allen	"	Grover, Edward	1637
Concklin, John	1640	Goodall, Robert	"
Cornhill, Samuel	1641	Gally, John	"
Clark Arthur	"	Grafton, Joseph	"
Collins, John	1643	Graves, Richard	"
Corney, Samuel	"	Granger, Bryam	"
Curwithen David	1644	Greenfield, Samuel	"

Gatchell, John	1637	Kenniston, Dorothy Mrs.	1636
Greenway, Richard	"	Knight, Wm.	1637
Gatchell, Samuel	1638	Kelham, Austin	"
Gardner, Richard	1643	Knight, Ezekiel	"
Gardner, John	"	Keene, Wm.	1638
Goldsmith, Thomas	"		
Guppy, Robert	1647	Leavit, Capt.	1630
Gerry, Henry	1648	Legge, John	1635
Gardner, Joseph	1649	Leech Robert,	1637
Gardner Samuel	"	Leech, John	"
Grafton, Joshua	"	Leech, John jr.	"
Getryell, John	"	Lambert, Richard	"
		Lockwood, (Searjeant)	"
Higginson, Francis Rev.	1629	Listen, Nicholas	"
Haughton, Henry	"	Luff, John	"
Huson, Wm.	1631	Leeds, Richard	"
Hollingworth Richard	1635	Lyon, John	1639
Harris, George	1636	Lovett, John	"
Holliman, Ezekiel	"	Leech, Richard	"
Hewlett, Mr.	"	Lathrop, Mark	1643
Haskell, Roger	1637		
Harbert, John	"	Manning,	1631
Hall, John	"	Marriott, Nichols	1636
Hull, Joseph	"	Marston, Wm.	1637
Hardy, John	"	Mason, Emma (Widow)	"
Hardy, John jr.	"	Moore, Ann (Widow)	"
Hackford, Wm.	"	Moulton, Robert	"
Higgins, Alexander	1638	More, Richard	1638
Haggett, Henry	1642	Moulton, Robert jr.	"
Hayward, Nicholas	1643	Mousar, John	1639
Herson, Christopher	1644	Moore, Wm.	"
Hawkes, Thomas	1648	Mason, Elias	1649
Hill, John	1650		
		Norman, Richard	1626
Ingersoll, Richard	1635	Noddle,	1632
Isabell Robert	1637	Norman, Richard	1636
Ingraham, Edward	1638	Norman, John	"
Ingersoll, George,	1639	Norton, John	1637
Ingersoll, John	"	Nichols, Wm.	1638
Ingersoll, Nathaniel	1644	Nixon, Matthew	1639
		Nicks, Matthew	"
James, Wm.	1637	Norris, Edward Rev.	"
Johnson, Richard	"	Norris, Edward jr.	"
James, Erasmus	"	Neal, John	1645
James, Thomas	1638	Olney, Thomas	1637
Jeggles, Daniel	1639	Oliver, Thomas	"
Jarrett, John	1640		
Jeggles, Thomas	1647	Peach, John	1630
		Peirce, Wm.	"
Knight, Walter	1626	Perry, Francis	1631

# APPENDIX.

551

Peas, John	1637	Smith, Samuel	1637
Perry, Roger	"	Sallowes, Benjamin	"
Pickworth, John	"	Singletary, Richard	"
Pickering, John	"	Seares, Richard	1638
Pearce, Anthony	"	Sams, Thomas	"
Pride, John	"	Stackhouse, Richard	"
Phillips, Mr.	"	Smith, Thomas	1639
Plaise, Wm.	"	Skelton, Benjamin	"
Payne, Thomas	"	Silaby, Henry	"
Percie, Marmaduke	"	Sandon, Arthur	"
Pach, Nicholas	"	Sawyer, Wm.	1643
Page, Robert	"	Small, John	"
Peas, Robert	"	Skelling, Thomas	"
Pester, Wm.	"	Scudder, Thomas	1648
Parminster, Benjamin	"	Simson, Francis	"
Penny, Robert	1638	Skelton, Nathaniel	"
Porter, Nathaniel	"	Scudder, Wm.	1650
Pryor, Matthew	"		
Pickton, Thomas	1639	Thorndike, John	1633
Pitman, Nathaniel (same as Pickman)		Turland, Ann	1635
Patch, Edmund	"	Thatcher, Anthony	"
Petford, Peter	1641	Talby, John	"
Porter, George	1647	Temple, Abraham	1636
Pauly, Benjamin	"	Tuck, Thomas	1637
Prince, Robert	1649	Taylor, Thomas	"
Patch, James	1650	Tracie, Thomas	"
		Tomkins, John	"
		Tidd, Joshua	"
Root, Thomas	1637	Thurston, Richard	"
Root, Joshua	"	Tomson, Archibald	1638
Ray, Daniel	"	Throgmorton, John	1639
Raymond, Richard	"	Thurston, John	1640
Ropes, George	"	Townde, Wm.	"
Russell, John	1638	Tompkins, Ralph	1643
Ruck, John	1639	Tuck, Robert	"
Reeves, John	1643	Turner, Charles	"
Rumball, Daniel	1644	Temple, Richard	1644
Rowland, Richard	1648	Tucker, John	"
Robins, Thomas	1650	Thomas, John	1646
		Thomas, James	1649
Skelton, Samuel Rev.	1629	Trew, Henry	"
Sweet, John	1631		
Smyth, George	1635	Verin, Joshua	1635
Smyth, James	"	Vicary, George	1637
Sallowes, Michael	"	Vanderwood, James	"
Scarlet, Robert	"	Vermaise, Mark	1638
Shepley, John	1637	Vassal, Wm.	1640
Smith, Mr.	"		
Stratton, John	"	Williams, Roger Rev.	1631
Smyth, Matthew	"	Wincoll, Thomas	"

Weston, Francis	1633	Wakefield, John	1638
White, James	"	Whitehaire, Abraham	"
Warren, Abraham	1635	Warren, Ralph	"
Waters, Richard	1637	Wheaden, Robert	"
Walker, Richard	"	Weeks, Thomas	1639
Watson, John	"	White, John	"
Webb, Henry	"	Wescot, Stukely	"
Wood, John	"	West, Thomas	1640
Wolcott, Wm.	"	Ward, John	1641
Waterman, Richard	"	Wallar, Wm.	1645
Waller, Matthew	"	Wheelar, Francis	1646
Williams, William	"	Wilson, Edward	1647
Wake, William	"	Wallar, Christopher	1649
Winthrop, Stephen	1638		
Woodbury, Nicholas	"	Young, Christopher	1637
Walton, William Rev.	"	Young, Joseph	1639
Wright, George	"	Young, John	1640
Webster, John	"		

The following is a list of the Members of the First Church up to 1651. Up to 1637, they are put down on the Records without any reference to the date, when they united with the Church. Prince informs us, that this Church began with thirty members. No doubt, a number of the names are omitted from among those, who joined the Church up to 1637. This mark (†) suffixed to the name of a man, denotes, that he was, or seems to have been, resident here at the year, before which such mark is placed. When this mark has no numerals following it, the year, immediately preceding, is to be understood. An account will be given of the members up to 1637,—and then the rest will be named under their respective years of professing religion.

Samuel Sharp,†	1629	John Balch,†	
John Endicott,†		Samuel Moore,†	1632
Phillip Veren,		John Holgrave,†	1633
Hugh Laskin,		Ralph Fogg,†	1634
^ Roger Conant,†	1626	John Horn,†	1631
Laurence Leach,†	1631	^ John Woodbury,†	1626
William Auger,†		Wm. Trask,†	1628
Francis Johnson,		Townsend Bishop,	
Thomas Elborn,†	1634	Thomas Read,	
George Williams,		Richard Rayment,	
George Norton,†		Jeffrey Massey,†	1631
Henry Herrick,†	1629	Edmund Batter,	
^ Peter Palfrey,†	1626	Edmund Giles,	
Roger Maurie,		Richard Davenport,†	1628
Thomas Gardner,		Elias Stileman,†	1629
John Sibly,			



John Blackleach,		Gertrude Ellerd.	
Thomas Scruggs,	1628		
William Allen,†	1626	1637.	
William King,		Hugh Peters.	
Richard Roote,		Edmund Marshall,	
John Moore,		Ann Moore,	
William Dixy,†	1629	John Humphrey,	
John Saunders,		Lydia Banks,	
Jacob Barney,		Mary Jeggles,	
Richard Brackenbury,†	1628	Frances Skerry,	
John Black,†	1632	Abigail Lord,	
Joseph Pope,		Ann Garford,	
Peter Wolfe,		John Alderman,	
Wm. Bownd,		Henry Bartholmew,†	1635
Samuel Archer,†	1630	Thomas Browning,	
Thomas Lathrop,†	1634	Susannah Goodwyne,	
Hannah Moore,		Agnes Brayne,	
Susannah Fogg,		Arabella Norman,	
Joanne Watson,		Mary Hart,	
Alice Auger,		Thomas Goldthwait,†	1636
Anne Ingersoll,		Wm. Hathorn and wife,	
Ellen Felton,		Moses Maverick and wife,	
Elizabeth Endicot,		Joan Amyes,	
Alice Hutchinson,		John Brown,†	1629
Elizabeth Leech,		Eleazer Williams,†	1635
Alice Sharp,		Wm. Goose,	
Joanne Johnson,		Mary Norton,	
Elizabeth Holgrave,		Bethiah Ray,	
Margaret Bright,		Joshua Holgrave,†	1636
Elizabeth Davenport,		Isabella Robinson,	
Mary Alford,		John Gedney,	
Sarah Conant,		Anne Robinson,	
Jane Alderman,		Elizabeth Turner,	
Agnes Woodbury,		Millesent Marshall,	
Judith Rayment,		Mary Gedney,	
Joanne Cotta,		Deborah Home,	
Dorcas Verin,		James Moulton,	
Sarah Batter,			
Edith Palfray,		1638.	
Edith Herrick,		Thomas Venner,	
Elizabeth Allen,		Henry Burdsall,	
Martha Wolfe,		Joseph Bacheldor,	
Ellen Brackenbury,		Henry Skerry,	
Anne Dixy,		James Hindes,	
Anne Bound,		Thomas Spooner,	
Anne Horn,		John Symonds,	
Margery Balch,		Mary Moulton,	
Presca Kendall,		Sarah Standish,	
Ann Skarlet,		Arabella Norman,	

Amy Spooner,		Mark Fermayes,	
Anna Barney,		Thomas Moore,†	1636
Mary Symonds,		and his wife Martha,	
Ruth Amyes,		Mary Batchelder,	
John Jackson,†	1636	Sicilla Harnett,	
Margaret Jackson,		Katherine Dixy,	
Elizabeth Blackleach,		Mary Skarlet,	
Wm. Robinson,		Ann Williams,	
Michel Shafflin,†	1637	Thomas Watson,	
Thomas Avery,		Prescis Walker,	
Anne Pickworth,		Mary Harbert,	
John Hart,†	1637	Thomas Trusler,†	1636
Triphene Marriott,		Thomas Gardner, jr.†	1637
Emanuel Downing,		Edward Norris,	
Lucy Downing.		Lydia Holgrave,	
		Catherine Barnardistone,	
	1639.	Miles Ward,	
Obadiah Holme,		Annaiias Concklin,	
Catherine Holme,		Edmund Tompson,†	1637
Lawrence Southwick and his		Wm. Woodbury,†	1637
wife Cassandra,		Widow Pease,	
Dorothy Keneston,		Wm. Stevens,†	1637
Elizabeth Shafflin,		Eleanor Trusler,	
Jervice Garford,†	1635	Edward Beacham,†	1637
Margaret Gardner,			
Mary Lemon,			1640.
Thomas Antrum,†	1637	Deliverance Peters,	
Widow Green,†		Samuel Corning† and wife,	1638
Mary Porter,		Jane Veren,	
Wm. Osborn,†	1608	Jonathan Porter,†	1637
Francis Higginson,		Deborah Moody,	
Joseph Kitcherell,		Thomas Ruck and wife,	
Alce Weeks,		Charles Glover,†	1639
Elizabeth Pickering,		Rose Howard,	
Job Swinnerton,†	1637	Wm. Rennolls,	
John Marsh,†	1637	Robert Moulton, jr.†	1638
Sarah Gascoyne,		Esdras Reed,†	
Henry Swan,		Elizabeth Sanders,	
Elizabeth Dunton,		"i. e. Kitchen,"	
Edwards,		Sarah Bowditch,	
Elizabeth Swinnerton,		Widow Eastwick,	
James Standish,†	1637	Elizabeth Curwin,	
John Batchelder and wife,		Alice Barnett,	
Elias Stileman, jr.		Elizabeth Woodbury,	
Wm. Lord,†	1636	Elizabeth Scudder,	
Lucy Page,		Richard Bartholomew,†	1637
Wm. Golt,†	1638	Jane Veren,	
John Fairfield,		John Marston,	
Richard Bishop,†	1635	Wife of Richard Graves,	
John Robinson,		Jane Reeves,	

## APPENDIX.

555

Wife of John Cook,		Wm. Fisk,†	1638
Abigail Good,		James Fisk,	
Sarah Hapcott,		Catherine Rabbe,	
Thomas Marston,		Elizabeth Maury,	
Francis Lawes and wife,		Arthur Cleark.	
Mary Beacham,			
Abigail Fermayes,		1642.	
George Byam,		Richard Prince,†	1639
Wm. Geere,†	1639	Mr. Kenniston,†	1638
goodman Bulfinch,		Wm. Brown,†	1637
Margaret Ward,		Richard Moore,	
good wife Barber,		Robert Button,†	1628
Alce Read,		Walter Price & wife Elizbeth,	
good wife Estick.		Benjamin Fermayes,	
		Margaret Scarlett,	
	1641.	Catherine Tomkins,	
George Gardner,†	1637	Thomas Putnam,†	1641
Rebeckah Bacon,		John Barber,†	1636
Phillip Veren, jr.		Robert Allen,†	1637
Ruth Monsall,		Samuel Shattuck,	
good wife Harwood,		Mary Ropes.	
Alce Ward,			
Abel Kelly,		1643.	
Susan Concklin,		Robert Elwell,	
Philemon Dickerson,†	1639	Joan White,	
Joseph Boyce,†		Thomas Edwards,†	1637
Sarah Read,		Henry Harwood,†	1638
Wm. Blanchard,		John Kitchen and	
Robert Lemon,†	1637	wife Elizabeth,	
Phineas Fisk,		Grace Corwithin,	
Elizabeth Wright,		Mary Goyte,	
Frezwith Osborn,		Mr. (Wm.) Bacon,†	1640
Priscilla Putnam,		Jane Bennett,	
Mary Hunt,		Eliza Putnam,	
Richard Pettingall,		Ann Blanchard,	
John Cook,†	1637	wife of Thomas Dixy,	
Robert Gutch,†	1638	Edward Harnett,†	1639
Thomas Devinlsh,†	1639	John Hathorn,	
Mary Devinish,		Robert Peas.†	1637
Ann Bnlfinge,			
Nathaniel Norcross,		1644.	
George Wathen,		Richard Dodge,†	1638
Catherine Pacy,		Mary Porter,	
Joyce Waters,		John Bourne,†	1637
Elizabeth Glover,		Sarah Hathorn.	
Jane Perry,			
Deborah Fenn,		1645.	
wife of Mr. Fairfield,		Catherine Vaile,	
Widow Shattack,		Edward Bishop.†	1630

Elizabeth Dodge,  
Bridget Skerry.

1646.

Robert Hibberd & wife Joan,  
Edward Gascoyne,† 1636  
Edward Harnett, jr.† 1639  
Margaret Grover.

1647.

Isaac Allerton,† 1639  
Mary Neal,  
Widow Neave,  
Mary Veren,  
Ralph Ellenwood,† 1637  
John Putnam,† 1641  
Richard Hutchinson,† 1637  
John Scudder and wife,† 1642  
Lucy Downing, jr.  
Jane Mason,  
Bridget Loofe,  
Sarah Charles,  
Abigail Montague,  
Ralph Smith.

1648.

Wm. Haines,† 1644  
Mary Dickerson,  
Susannah Marsh,  
Sarah Waller,  
Eunice Porter,  
Susannah Stackhouse,  
Joseph Hardy,† 1644  
Humphrey Woodbury,† 1629  
Catherine Eborne,  
Sarah Leech,  
good wife Ellenwood,  
good wife Towne,  
Nathaniel Felton,  
John Weston,  
Josiah Rootes,  
Elizabeth Putnam,  
Mary Prince,

Hilliard Veren,  
John Pickett,  
Alexander Field & wife,† 1642  
Doct. George Emery,† 1637  
Sarah Leech,  
Mary Wheeler,  
Wm. Brown and wife Sarah,  
Ellen Massey,  
Nathaniel Putnam,  
Wm. Jeggles,† 1637  
Bridget Giles.

1649.

Gertrude Pope,  
Hannah Gardner,  
Elizabeth Concklin,  
Rachel Scudder,  
Sarah Haynes,  
Mary Read,  
John Porter,† 1637  
David Corwithin.

1650.

Nicholas Pack,† 1639  
Mary Chichester,  
Sarah Curtis,  
Hugh Woodbury,  
Mary Smith,  
good wife Hardy,  
Wm. Payne,  
Thomas Rix,  
Robert Morgan,† 1637  
Elizabeth Payne,  
Elizabeth Gray,  
Ellen Maskall  
Francis Felmingham,† 1637  
Rebeckah Cooper,  
Mary Lovett,  
Christian Moore,  
Elizabeth Bridgman,  
Ann Cole,  
Mary Southwick,  
Wm Vinson and wife, 1635

*An Account of Churches formed out of the First Church of Salem.*

1667, July 4. Persons dismissed and recommended as a Church  
at Bass River, now Beverly.

Roger Conant,	Elizabeth Corning,
Richard Dodge,	Ede Herrick,
Wm. Woodberry, sen.	Anna Woodberry, jr.
Robert Morgan,	Mary Dodge, jr.
Hugh Woodberry,	Hannah Baker,
John Stone, sen.	Elizabeth Patch,
Eexercisc Conant,	Freeborn Black,
Ralph Ellingwood,	Wm. Dixey,
Bethiah Lathrop,	Henry Herrick,
Elizabeth Dodge,	Humphrey Woodberry, sen.
Elizabeth Woodberry,	Richard Brackenbury,
Ellen Brackenbury,	Josiah Rootes, sen.
Martha Woolfe,	Lott Conant,
Hannah Woodberry,	John Hill,
Sarah Leach,	Sarah Conant,
Lydia Herrick,	Mary Dodge, sen.
Thomas Lathrop,	Anna Woodberry, sen.
Samuel Corning,	Elizabeth Haskell,
Wm. Dodge, sen.	Mary Lovett,
Peter Woolfe,	Mary Woodberry,
John Black, sen.	Abigail Hill,
Nicholas Patch,	Mary Herrick,
John Dodge, sen.	Hannah Sallowes,
Edward Bishop,	Bridget Loofe.
Anna Dixey,	

1684, Aug. 13th. Individuals gathered into a Church at Marble-  
head, though they had worshipped there, while connected with  
the Church here.

Rev. Samuel Cheever,	Anna Sims,
Richard Reith,	Miriam Hanniford,
Wm. Bartoll,	Mary Rowles,
George Bonfield,	Mary Doliber,
Benjamin Gale,	Moses Maverick,
Elizabeth Legg,	Benjamin Parmeter,
Mary Bartoll,	Francis Girdler,
Sarah Dodd,	John Merit,
Miriam Pedrick,	John Sayward,
Abigail Merit,	Jane Pitman,
Abigail Hinds,	Elizabeth Watts,
Abigail Clark,	Mary Fortune,
Alice Darby,	Agnes Stacy,

Mary Merit,  
 Charity Pitman,  
 Sarah Henly,  
 Rebecca Carder,  
 Charity Sandin,  
 Joanna Hawly,  
 Mary Clattery,  
 Elizabeth Gatchell,  
 Ambrose Gale,  
 Edward Read,  
 Samuel Sandin,  
 John Stacy,

Eunice Maverick,  
 Mary Dixey,  
 Margaret Ellis,  
 Elizabeth Russell,  
 Mary Merrit,  
 Tabitha Pedrick,  
 Jane Blackler,  
 Elizabeth Conant,  
 Elizabeth Glass,  
 Grace Coes,  
 Deliverance Gale,  
 Mary Ferguson.

1689, Nov. 10th. Persons dismissed to constitute a Church at Salem Village, now North Danvers, where they had preaching for years before.

Bray Wilkins and wife,  
 Nathaniel Putnam,  
 John Putnam and wife,  
 Joshua Ray and wife,  
 Nathaniel Ingersoll,  
 Thomas Putnam,  
 Ezekiel Cheever,  
 Edward Putnam,  
 Peter Prescott,

Peter Cloyce,  
 John Putnam, jr. and wife,  
 Benjamin Putnam and wife,  
 Deliverance Wolcott,  
 Henry Wilkins,  
 Jonathan Putnam and wife,  
 Benjamin Wilkins and wife,  
 Sarah Putnam.

1713, June 25th. The following persons were dismissed so as to become a Church at the middle precinct, now South Danvers.

Samuel Gardner,  
 Abel Gardner,  
 John Gardner,  
 Samuel Goldthwait,  
 Samuel Goldthwait,  
 Eliezer Gyles,  
 Ales Shafflin,  
 Mary Tomkins,  
 Elizabeth Tomkins,  
 Susannah Daniels,  
 Sarah Gardner,  
 Elizabeth Gardner,  
 Elizabeth Gyles,  
 Abraham Peirce,  
 John Foster,  
 David Foster,  
 John Felton,  
 Wm. King,  
 Richard Waters,  
 Hannah Small,

Elizabeth Very,  
 Jemima Very,  
 Martha Adams,  
 Isabel Peirce,  
 Hannah Felton,  
 Deborah Goold,  
 Robert Peas,  
 Hannah King,  
 Elizabeth King,  
 Judath Mackintire,  
 Elizabeth Nurse,  
 Sarah Robinson,  
 Hannah Southwick,  
 Sarah Waters,  
 Elizabeth Waters,  
 Elizabeth Cook,  
 Hannah Foster,  
 Abigail French,  
 Elizabeth Goldthwait,  
 Hannah Goldthwait.

1718, Dec. 25th. Individuals set off to form the East Church.

Christopher Babbige,	Margaret Beadle,
Richard Prince,	Mary Collins,
Daniel Rogers,	Mary Collins, jr.
John Brown,	Dorothy Neal,
Silence Rogers,	Sarah Ward,
Elizabeth Bush,	Abigail Foot,
Elizabeth Dean,	Jonathan Webb,
Deborah Masters,	Joseph Hardy,
Mercy Swinnerton,	Josiah Willard,
Elizabeth Barton,	Mary Prince,
Abigail Punchard,	Abigail Andrew,
Mary Foot,	Sarah Hardy,
Simon Willard,	Mary Murray,
Benjamin Ives,	Elizabeth Gerrish,
Malachi Foot,	Hannah Pickering,
Martha Willard,	Priscilla Hillard,
Jane Willard,	Martha Pope,
Hannah Willard,	Abigail Foot, jr.

1734, Oct. Church Members still worshipping where the First Church had assembled, at the time it was excommunicated.

Benjamin Lynde, sen.	Samuel Giles,
Benjamin Lynde, jr.	Miles Ward, jr.
Henry West,	James Odel,
John Nutting,	Jonathan Gardner,
George Daland,	Benjamin Marston,
John Archer,	John Bickford,
John Bickford, jr.	Nathaniel Phippen,
Samuel Osgood,	Nathaniel Ropes,
James Lindall,	James Grant,
Thomas Barton,	Benjamin Lambert,
Samuel Ropes,	Joseph Hathorn.
Samuel West,	

Church Members adhering to Mr. Fisk at the same time.

Peter Osgood,	Charles King,
Nathaniel Osgood,	John Mascal,
Benjamin Gerrish,	James Ruck,
John Coles,	Samuel King,
John Gavet,	John Holliman,
Samuel Symonds,	Timothy Pickering,
John Giles,	John Mackmallin,
Edmund Batter,	Benjamin Young,
Ephraim Skerry,	Jonathan Woodwell,
Ahijah Estes,	Thomas Willis,
Edward Norrice,	Joseph Orne,
Ebenezer Felton,	Samuel Ruck.

1772, May 16th. Individuals set off from the First Church to form the North Church.

Benjamin Pickman,  
Joshua Ward,  
Samuel Holman,  
James Gould,  
Mary Grant,  
Elizabeth Nutting,  
Mary Pickman,  
Elizabeth Lunt,  
Hannah Gillingham,  
Mehitable Ward,  
Elizabeth Field,  
Mary Grafton,  
Elizabeth Holman,  
Ruth Holman,  
Mary Holman,  
Mary Cox,  
Abigail West,  
Wm. Brown,  
Samuel West,  
E. A. Holyoke,  
Elizabeth Archer,  
Mary Archer,  
Sarah Curwin,  
Eunice Crowninshield,  
Hannah Chapman,  
Sarah Langsford,

Jane Ropes,  
Susannah Grafton,  
Mary Gill,  
Ruth Ruck,  
Priscilla Ropes,  
Martha Morong,  
Abigail Blaney,  
Mary Blaney,  
John Nutting,  
Benjamin Pickman, jr.  
John Langsford,  
Love Pickman,  
Catherine Sargent,  
Hannah Symonds,  
Elizabeth Symonds,  
Mary Glover,  
Sarah Cook,  
Mehitable Cook,  
Priscilla Field,  
Sarah Gardner,  
Sarah Foster,  
Mary West,  
Hannah Watts,  
Mary West.  
Lydia Janes,  
Elizabeth Newhall.

1736, June 23d. Names of persons belonging to Episcopal Society

Wm. Brown,  
Phillip English,  
Jonathan Beadle,  
Peter Vindeat,  
John Shillaber,  
Benjamin Glover,  
Samuel Parrot,  
Jacob Manuing,  
David Britton,  
John Newcomb,  
Martin Vallay,  
Jacob Hawkins,  
Joseph Stevenson,  
Jonathan Lambert,  
Thomas Lisbrit,  
John Dampney,

Samuel Ghatman,  
Samuel Masury,  
Alexander Sloley,  
John Ellason,  
John Touzel,  
Phillip Saunders,  
Stephen Daniels, jr.  
Wm. Shillaber,  
Ephraim Ingalls,  
Samuel Luscomb,  
Clifford Crowninshield,  
Wm. Dove,  
Richard Palmer,  
Samuel Massey,  
Daniel Webb,  
Edmund Rose,



Wm. Gale,	Robert Williams,
John Clark,	John Pressen,
Josiah Knight,	Samuel Stoue,
Miall Bacon,	John Cabot,
John Crowninshield,	Joseph Hilliard,
Thomas MacElroy,	Jonas Adams,
John Williams,	Abraham Cabot,
Edward Hilliard,	Richard Bethel,
Philander Saunders,	John George.
Philander Saunders, jr.	

1773, Nov. 27th. Brethren adhering to Dr. Whitaker and petitioning to be admitted into the Presbytery.

Isaac Williams,	Miles Ward,
Benjamin Cox,	Jonathan Ross,
Francis Cook,	Nathan Brown,
Jonathan Phelps,	James Chapman,
Nathaniel Estes,	John Cloutman,
Archelaus Howard,	Stephen Bradshaw,
Edmund Bickford,	Samuel Thomas,
Benjamin Punchard,	Samuel Punchard,
Hubbard Oliver,	Wm. Gray, 4th.
Hubartus Mattoon,	Jonathan Ireland.
Joseph Ross,	

1775, Feb. 14th to 16th. Individuals, who had seceded from Dr. Whitaker, are constituted a Church, and afterwards settled Dr. Hopkins.

Benjamin Ropes,	John Waters,
Timothy Pickering, jr.	John Gardner,
Jonathan Very,	James Nichols,
Thomas Needham,	Stephen Abbot,
John Saunders,	Daniel Cheever,
Nathan Goodale,	Addison Richardson,
Robert Peele,	Samuel Symonds.



Persons who graduated from Harvard College, while residents of Salem, up to 1782.

George Downing,	1642	George Curwin,	1701
Joseph Brown,	1666	John Rogers,	1705
Nathaniel Higginson,	1670	Samuel Phillips,	1708
Peter Ruck, (?)	1685	John Tufts,	"
Benjamin Marston,	1689	Benjamin Marston,	1715
Walter Price,	1695	John Higginson,	1717
Timothy Lindall,	"	Daniel Putnam,	"

Benjamin Lynde,	1718	James Putnam,	1756
Mitchell Sewall,	"	Thomas Toppan,	1757
Theophilus Pickering,	1719	Benjamin Pickman,	1759
Joseph Green,	1720	John Pickering,	"
John Wolcott,	1721	Nathan Goodale,	"
Stephen Sewall,	"	Samuel Gardner,	"
Samuel Jeffords,	1722	George Gardner,	1762
John Gardner,	1723	John Barnard,	"
James Osgood,	1724	John Cabot,	1763
Marston Cabot,	"	Timothy Pickering,	"
John Cabot,	"	Jonathan Goodhue,	1764
Benjamin Browne,	1725	Henry Gardner,	1765
Samuel Browne,	1727	Joseph Orne,	"
William Browne,	"	Nathaniel Ward,	"
Nathaniel Lindall,	1728	Wm. Pickman,	1766
John Barton,	1730	Henry Gibbs,	"
Samuel Gardner,	1732	Thomas Barnard,	"
Wm. Lynde,	1733	Jacob Ashton,	"
Benjamin Gerrish,	"	Benjamin Goodhue,	"
Joseph Orne,	"	Jacob Diman, <i>James,</i>	1768
Samuel Curwin,	1735	Timothy Orne,	"
George Curwin,	"	Wm. Goodhue,	1769
Benjamin Prescott,	1736	Joshua Dodge,	1771
Peter Clark,	1739	Thomas F. Oliver,	1775
Samuel Orne,	1740	Joseph Blaney,	1778
Ichabod Plaisted,	1745	Samuel Williams,	1780
Andrew Higginson,	"	Samuel Orne,	1781
Nathaniel Ropes,	"	John Saunders,	"
Wm. Browne,	1755		

To afford some definite idea of Commerce as formerly—the following account of clearances from the ports of Salem and Marblehead, for about 11 months, between Jan. 1769 and Jan. 1770, is given. The vessels were chiefly schooners.

To Virginia,	29	To Europe,	7
Maryland,	12	Newfoundland,	6
W. Indies,	105	Barbadoes,	5
Lisbon,	6	Antigua,	1
Cadiz,	5	R. Island,	1
Nova Scotia,	4	Jamaica,	3
Grenada,	1	St. Lucia,	1
Bilboa,	23	Liverpool,	1
Dominica,	5	St. Johns,	1
Philadelphia,	9	Canso,	1
South Carolina,	13	St. Nichola,	1
North Carolina,	3	Surinam,	1
Gibraltar,	5	Gaspee,	1
Georgia,	1		

A list of mortality for Salem between January 1, 1769, and January 1, 1770.

Consumptions, 19—Fever, 13—Fluxes, 44—Jaundice, 3—Sudden, 5—Lock Jaw, 1—Dropsy, 2—Palsy, 2—Rheumatism, 1—Drowned, 1—Chronic diseases, 25.

Of the deceased,—under 2 years were 52—from 2 to 5 years were 8—from 5 to 10, 2—from 10 to 20, 6—from 30 to 40, 6—from 40 to 50, 7—from 50 to 60, 5—from 60 to 70, 7—from 70 to 80, 8—from 80 to 90, 4—from 90 to 100, 2.—Males 59—Females 55.—Whites 111, Blacks 3.

1773, June. A Committee, chosen by the town to name the Streets, make the following report.

From Danvers to Buffum's corner, to be called Town Bridge street.  
 Friend Hacker's to Sprague's Distillery, to be called North st.  
 Buffum's corner to West's corner, to be called Middle street.  
 South gate opposite to Alms house, to be called South street.  
 Metcalf's corner to South street, to be called Flint's lane.  
 Dean's corner to North river, to be called Dean's lane.  
 Cole's corner to North river, to be called Winter street.  
 West's corner to Alms house, to be called Broad street.  
 Clark's corner to Bridge, to be called North Bridge street.  
 North Church to School street, to be called Lynde street.  
 West's corner to Britton's corner, to be called Queen street.  
 Town house to Norman street, to be called Essex street.  
 Broad street to Essex street, to be called Norman street.  
 Alms house to the Mills, to be called Mill street.  
 Mill street to Norman street, to be called Fish street.  
 Town house to North river, to be called School street.  
 Centre School st. to St. Peter's Church, to be called Epes lane.  
 Town house to Capt. Jonathan Gardner's, to be called King st.  
 Fish street to Woodbridge corner, to be called Front street.  
 King's Arms to South river, to be called Hanover street.  
 Bottom of Hanover street round the wharves to Long wharf,  
 to be called Water street.  
 Osgood's corner to North River, to be called Prison street.  
 St. Peter's Church to the Elms, to be called Church street.  
 Lynde's corner to Water street, to be called Burying Point lane.  
 Lowder's corner to Water street, to be called Ward's lane.  
 George Pcal's corner to Water street, to be called Brown's lane.  
 Mr. Watson's corner to Long wharf, to be called Union street.  
 East end of King's street to Neck gate, to be called Bow st.  
 East end of Winter street to Rope walks, to be called Derby st.  
 Phippen's corner in Bow street to Derby street, to be called  
 Hardy lane.

From John White, junr's, in Bow street to Derby street, to be called Haskett's lane.

Capt. John Hodges, in Bow street to Derby street, to be called Bush lane.

Daniels' Bow in Derby street to South river, to be called Spring street.

East Church to South river, to be called Pope's lane.

Murray's corner in Bow street, to South river, to be called Turner's lane.

Lambert's corner in Bow street to South river, to be called Beckett's lane.

Touzel's corner to South river, to be called English's lane.

Pike's corner to Assembly hall, to be called Assembly Court.

1774, May 17th. As a Committee of Correspondence, the following persons were chosen.

George Williams,  
Stephen Higginson,  
Richard Manning,  
Jonathan Ropes,  
Timothy Pickering, jr.

Jonathan Gardner, jr.  
Joseph Sprague,  
Richard Derby, jr.  
Warwick Palfray.

1775, Oct. 16th. A list of the Committee of Safety and Correspondence, now elected.

Timothy Pickering, jr.  
Thomas Mason,  
Samuel Williams,  
Jacob Ashton,  
Samuel Webb,  
Richard Ward,  
Wm. Northey,  
Benjamin Ward, jr.  
Joshua Ward,  
Stephen Osborn,  
Abraham Gray,  
Warwick Palfray,  
John Pickering, jr.  
John Gardner, 3d.  
Joseph Hiller,

John Felt,  
John Hodges,  
Joseph Vincent,  
Joseph Sprague,  
David Felt,  
Bartholomew Putnam,  
George Williams,  
Jonathan Peele, jr.  
Abraham Watson,  
John Fisk,  
Samuel Ward,  
Nathan Goodale,  
Jonathan Andrews,  
George Osborn,  
Dudley Woodbridge.

The price Act, passed by General Court over two years before, to prevent monopoly and oppression,—having been of little avail,—it was resolved by a Convention at Concord, July 14, 1779,—that

after the 10th of August the following articles should be sold no higher than the prices hereafter affixed to them.

Rum W. I. by the hhd. at £5 5 a gall., by bbls. £5 15 6 a gall., by gall. £6 6.—Rum N. E. by the hhd. at £4 a gall., by bbl. £4 a gall., by gall. £4 16.—Molasses by the hhd. at £3 12 a gall., by bbl. £3 19 a gall., by gall. £4 7.—Coffee by the hhd. at 15s. lb., by the bbl. 16s. 6d. lb., by lb. 18.—Brown Sugar 50 to £60 cwt., 11s. to 14s. lb.—Chocolate by box 20s. lb., by dozen 22s. lb., by lb. 24s. Bohea Tea by chest £4 16 lb., by dozen £5 6 lb., by lb. £5 16.—Cotton by bag £1 10 lb., by dozen 33s. lb., by lb. 36s.—German Steel cwt. 30s. lb., bar 33s. lb., by lb. 36s.—Salt best £9 a bushel.—Indian corn £4 10.—Rye £6.—Wheat £9 a bushel.—Beef till Sept. 6s. and after, 5s.—Mutton 4s.—Lamb 4.—Veal 4s. lb.—Butter 12s.—Cheese 6s.—Foreign beef £60 bbl. of 2 cwt. and foreign Pork £70 bbl.—Milk 2s. 6d. qt. and hay 40s. cwt. in Boston, and in usual proportion in other towns.—Bloomery Iron £30 cwt.

N. B. "The above to be considered as the highest prices, at which produce and merchandise of the best quality are to be sold in sea ports free from all charge." "Persons demanding more to be deemed and treated as enemies to this country."



An enlistment, Aug. 15, 1777, to reinforce the American army till last of November, as one sixth of the able bodied militia of Salem, according to a resolve of General Court, Aug. 8th.

Capt. Zadock Buffinton,	Benjamin Tarbox,
Jonathan Southwick,	Nicholas Hopping,
Edmund Munyan,	Isaac Holt,
John Curtis,	Nathaniel Safford,
Ebenezer Tuttle,	Job Abbot,
Benjamin Hudson,	Nathan Skerry,
Elijah Johnson,	Samuel Cheever,
Joshua Moulton,	Benjamin Gardner,
Joseph English,	Joseph Twiss,
Stephen Barker,	Ephraim Skerry,
Wm. Holman,	James Austin,
Israel Burrill,	Benjamin Shaw,
Wm. Clough,	Joseph Flint,
Elisha Newhall,	Jeremiah Newhall,
Joshua Pitman,	Wm. Meak,
Josiah Gould,	Daniel Foster,
Thomas Cheever,	Samuel Lovejoy,
Abel Mackintire,	Edward Brown,
Nathaniel Holden,	Samuel Merritt,

John Ward,  
Ezekiel Duncklee,  
Cape Briton, (black)

Wm. Newhall,  
Thorndike Proctor,  
Joshua Cross.

List of men, drafted to help guard Burgoyne's troops at Winter hill in 1777.

Mansel Burrill,  
Benjamin Brown, jr.  
Asa Peirce,  
Samuel Skerry,  
Jonathan Very, jr.  
Timothy Welman,  
Nathaniel Osgood, jr.  
Stephen Cleaveland,  
Wm. Prosser,  
John Flint,  
Edward Barnard,  
Isaac Osgood,  
John Gardner, 4th.  
Stephen Webb,  
Benjamin Hathorn,  
John Carwick,  
Edward Britton,  
Samuel Masury,  
Wm. Young,  
Thomas Ruee,  
John Dove,  
Jonathan Ashby,  
Samuel Bond,  
Jesse Faison,  
Wm. Cook,  
David Mansfield,  
David Beadle,

Joshua Convers,  
Samuel Blyth,  
Nathaniel Perkins,  
Thomas Palfray,  
Benjamin Daniels,  
Littlefield Sibly,  
Joseph Ross,  
Benjamin Peters,  
James Andrews,  
Wm. Pyncheon, jr.  
Reuben Alley,  
Benjamin Cheever,  
Joseph Kempton,  
Gabriel Munyon,  
Edmund Henfield, jr.  
Joseph Bacon,  
Andrew Ward,  
Joseph Young,  
James Boardman,  
Nathaniel Lang,  
Stephen Orborn,  
John Wood,  
James Symonds,  
Nathan Kimball,  
Joseph Cook,  
James Gould,  
Joseph Cook, jr.

Soldiers in the Continental army, whose families received assistance in 1777.

Col. Samuel Carlton,  
Solomon Webber,  
Thomas Needham,  
Wm. Skeldon,  
Ephraim Ingalls,  
Wm. Joplin,  
Asa Whittemore,  
Samuel Oakman,  
Richard Maybory,  
Joseph Masury,

Douglass Middleton,  
Capt. Ebenezer Winship,  
Abraham Morse,  
Charles Vanderford,  
Cornelius Bingen,  
Wm. Bright,  
Thomas Keene,  
Samuel Murray,  
Wm. Bright,  
Gibson Clough,

Wm. Gray,  
Benjamin Latherby,  
Capt. Thomas Barnes,  
Joseph Millet,  
Samuel Crowel,  
Stephen Hall,  
James Gray,

Edmund Gale,  
Joseph Cook,  
John Masury,  
Joseph Metcalf,  
Nathaniel Needham,  
Samuel Bishop.

These two, Peter Pitman and Nath'l Knights were of the army 1776.

Besides the preceding, there were other soldiers of Salem in the army from 1777 to 1780, as follows.

George Ulmar,  
John Peirce,  
Timothy Dwyer,  
Thomas Richerson,  
Joel Chandler,  
Valentine Beron,  
John Darrago,  
Wm. Liscom,  
Spencer Thomas,  
Joseph Symmes,  
Samuel Askins,  
David Levit,  
Moses Chandler,

Abraham Bolton,  
John Gillard,  
Thomas Roche,  
Jephtha Ward,  
Wm. Lockhead,  
Clement Gunner,  
Samson Freeman,  
Wm. Graviel,  
Jonas Child,  
Wm. Woster,  
Richard Downing,  
George Venner.

In the records of Massachusetts quota in the army, the following were of Salem, 1780.

Nathaniel Hathorn,  
Alexander Baxter,  
Fortune Ellery,  
Capt. Nathan Goodale,  
Wm. Fitzael,

Brown Vellett,  
Edward Lee,  
Daniel Williams,]  
David Collins,  
George Tucker.

Men, hired by Salem to serve six months in the Continental army, according to resolve of General Court, June 5, 1780.

Joseph English,  
James Turner,  
Wm. Morgan,  
Noah Parker,  
Samuel Royal, (black)  
Benjamin Oliver, (black)  
Thomas Morse,  
James P. Bishop,  
Robert Thompson,

Edward Prize,  
John Gamgus, jr.  
Humphry Fears,  
John Tracy,  
Benjamin Knowles,  
Robert Stutson,  
John Ward,  
James Smith,  
Thomas Sheridan,

Charles Brien,  
John Burk,  
James Smith,

Wm. Long,  
Michael Condon,  
John Green.

These belonged here and 13 others, belonging elsewhere, were named with them.

Names of Soldiers, hired from Dec. 1780 to Feb. 1781, to serve three years in the Continental army.

John Hale,  
Peter Harris,  
Nicholas Wallis,  
John Smith,  
John Bryan,  
Wm. Tector,  
Joseph Liotier,  
Cesar, (negro)  
Wm. McLaughlan,  
Randal McFadin,  
James Kétwel,  
John Smith,  
Benjamin Daland,  
Jonathan Gardner,  
John Still,  
Samuel Payne,  
Wm. Gray,  
John Riley,  
Lawrence Vernes,  
Michael Alley,  
Edward Smith,  
John Jackson, (negro)  
Wm. Thompson,  
Nathan Williams,  
John Youans,  
Wm. Wetmore,

Michael Carvin,  
Benjamin Oliver,  
Alexander Smith,  
Wm. Ryan,  
Joseph Williams,  
Peter Mass,  
James Fitzgerald,  
Samuel Appay, (negro)  
London, (negro)  
Thomas Whiddick,  
Joseph Laroache,  
Edward Rudge,  
Samuel, (negro)  
John Ducture,  
Samuel Wardsworth,  
Paul Holbrook,  
Alexander Campbell,  
James Welch,  
Maurice Barrett,  
Patrick Swaney,  
John Dean,  
Eneas McDonald,  
Polydore, (negro)  
Charles Colley,  
Benjamin Peters.

1781. John Coolin, Wm. Cooper, Benjamin Webb and Thomas Lakeman were in the army.

Men detached to serve in R. Island according to resolve of General Court June 16, 1781.

Capt. Joseph Hiller,  
Francis Haynes,  
Wm. Orne,  
Lewis Hunt,  
John Dove,  
Edward Norris,  
Samuel Symonds, 3d.

Samuel Cheever,  
Joshua Pitman,  
Theophilus Batcheller,  
Simeon Brown,  
Wm. West, jr.  
Seth Ring,  
Joseph Millet,



Francis Cook,  
John Wiburt,  
Jonathan Gardner, 3d.  
Joseph Daland,  
Ebenezer Nutting,  
George Frazier.  
Joseph English,  
Thomas Symonds,  
James Masury,  
Nathan Prince,  
David Bickford,  
Benjamin Lang,  
Robert Hill,  
Cheever Mansfield,

Francis Boardman,  
Samuel Jones,  
Caleb Foot,  
John Emmerton, jr.  
Charles Britton,  
David Beadle,  
Nathaniel Brown,  
Richard Manning,  
Abel Lawrence,  
Wm. Thomas,  
Penn Townsend,  
David Ingersoll,  
James Carrel.

From May 25th to July 11th, 1782, enlistments to serve in the army  
three years.

Jacob Northrup,  
Josiah Phelps,  
Edward Bessley,  
John Adams,  
Peter Ingersoll,  
James Smith,  
David Jones,  
Wm. Leonard,  
Andrew Bulger,  
John Dorsey,  
John Taylor,  
Alanson Hanmer,  
Moses Hall,  
Wm. Tector,  
Eliphaz Spencer,  
Benjamin Johnson,  
John Fogarty,

Samuel Buckman,  
Joel Northrup,  
Daniel Weller,  
John Melony,  
Edward Rudge,  
Samuel Locke,  
John Coats,  
John Hubbard,  
Thomas Brown,  
James Slater,  
David Davis,  
Abraham Newport,  
Wm. Lamson,  
Wm. Taylor,  
Thomas Powars,  
Nathaniel Williams.

1781. List of Privateers fitted out and chiefly owned in Salem and  
Beverly, from March 1, to Nov. 1, which was found among the  
papers of the late James Jeffry, whose accuracy was well known  
to those by whom he is remembered. At that period, privateer-  
ing was the principal business of the town.

SHIPS.				Scourge,	20	6	110
<i>Ships Names.</i>	<i>No of</i>	<i>Wt. of</i>	<i>No. of</i>	Disdain,	20	6	110
	<i>Guns.</i>	<i>Metal.</i>	<i>Men.</i>	Congress,	29	9	130
Pilgrim	18	9 lb.	120	Royal Louis,	18	6	100
Essex,	20	6	110	Porus,	20	9	130
Franklin,	18	6	100	Grand Turk,	24	6	120

Rattle Snake,	20	4	95	Lion,	12	4	50
Rover,	20	4	95	Speedwell,	14	3	55
Cromwell,	16	6	100				
Jason,	16	6	100	16 brigs,	206		870
Marquis,	16	4	75				
Hendrick,	18	6	100				
Junius Brutus,	20	6	110	SCHOONERS.			
Rhodes,	20	6	110	<i>Schooners Names. Guns. Metal. Men.</i>			
Harlequin,	20	4	95	Greyhound,	8	3 lb.	35
Neptune,	16	4	75	Lively,	8	3	35
Mohawk,	22	6	110	Shackle,	6	3	30
Buccanier,	18	9	120	Pine Apple,	6	3	30
Cicero,	18	9	120	Languedoc,	6	2	25
Rambler,	16	6	95	Dolphin,	6	3	30
Defence,	14	6	85		6	3	30
Independence,	16	4	70	Panther,	4	3	20
Jack,	12	9	60				
				8 schooners,	50		235
26 ships,	476		2645				
				SLOOPS.			
				<i>Sloops Names. Guns. Metal. Men.</i>			
				Fish-hawk,	8	4 lb.	40
				Hazard,	6	3	30
				2 sloops,	14		70
				7 Shallops, names not mentioned.			
				RECAPITULATION.			
				<i>Vessels. Guns. Men.</i>			
				Ships,	26	476	2645
				Brigs,	16	206	870
				Schooners,	8	50	235
				Sloops,	2	14	70
				Shallops, men only			120
				Total,	52	746	3940

The following is an unfinished list of Privateers, fitted out from Salem during the Revolutionary war, which was lately found among the papers of the late Jacob Ashton, Esq., and is, with other documents relating to the Revolution, preserved in the library of the Essex Historical Society.

SHIPS.					
	<i>No. of Guns.</i>	<i>Wt. of Metal.</i>			
Black Prince,	18	6 lb.	Pickering,	16	6
Bunker Hill,	20	6	Renown,	14	4
Hector,	22	6	Roe Buck,	12	4
Jack,	14	4	Trenton,	12	6 & 4 lb
Hunter,	18	4			
				146 guns.	

# APPENDIX.

571

BRIGANTINES.		
	Guns.	Metal.
Brandywine,	6 lb.	3
Cutter,	10	3
Eagle,	12	4
Fame,	16	4
Hampden,	14	4
Hornet,	10	3
Lexington,	8	3
Lincoln,	12	4
Lion,	16	6
Macaroni,	14	4
Monmouth,	12	4
Pluto,	8	3
Rambler,	14	6
True American	10	4
Tyger,	10	3
Wild Cat,	14	4
<hr/>		
186		

SCHOONERS.		
Beaver,	10	swivels.
Black Bird,	10	"
Centipede,	6	2 lb.
Civil Usage, }	10	sw.
Civil Usage, }	each	
Congress,	8	3
Cutter,	8	sw.
Delight,	4	2 lb.
Dolphin, }	10	sw.
Dolphin, }	each	
Fly,	10	"
Fox,	10	"
General Gates,	8	2
Greyhound,	6	2
Hammond,	10	sw.

Hampden,	8	3
Harlequin,	10	3
Hawk,	10	sw.
Hornet,	14	"
Lark,	12	"
Lively,	14	"
Modesty,	8	3
Pompey,	6	2
Scorpion,	6	2
Shark,	10	sw.
Skulpion,	10	"
Swett,	12	3
Tatne Bush,	10	sw.
Warren,	10	3
<hr/>		
270 guns.		

SLOOPS.		
Black Snake,	12	3
Bowdoin,	8	3
Jack,	14	4
Bowdoin,	8	2
Morning Star,	8	3
Revenge,	10	3
Rover,	8	3&4
<hr/>		
68 guns.		

RECAPITULATION.		
	Vessels.	Guns.
Ships,	9	146
Brigantines,	16	186
Schooners,	29	270
Sloops,	7	68
<hr/>		
	61	670

## ADDITAMENTA AND ERRATA.



In the preceding work there are more inaccuracies, than a person unacquainted with the difficulty of compiling it, would expect. But individuals, who have experience, as to such historical productions, will charitably allow,—that these inaccuracies are consistent with the careful investigation and collocation of facts.—The writer of this work would remark, that he is answerable for its mistakes, except a small proportion of them—made by the printer.—Some typographical errors are unnoticed here, because a reader of them can easily perceive how they should be. Though part of the succeeding inaccuracies, &c. have been previously printed, yet it is thought best to give them a collected place here.

In the following, f. will mean for,—l. line,—o. omit,—and r. read.

## No. I.

- Page 8, l. 30, for purchased read had.  
 9, 47, 59, f. Fernando r. Ferdinando.  
 35 f. three ships, Lion Whelp and Talbot, r. two, Lion's Whelp and Talbot  
 35 l. 21 f. 20d. r. 20s.  
 47 o. Sir before J. Humphrey.  
 48 It is doubtful whether R. Williams of Salem was made freeman, though Prince says he was.  
 49 l. 5 to 11 o. the two sentences from "To prevent" to "a certain age," and supply the following: "Nov. 9th. Court of assistants order, that every Englishman, who kills a wolf within this Patent, shall have 1d. for every beast and horse and 1 farthing for every weaned swine and goat in every Plantation"  
 51 f. 18th r. 12th of April.  
 52 l. 5. Though several authorities make the fine of Mr. Endicott from 10s. to £10; yet it is really 40s.  
 55 l. 5 f. £3 r. £3 5.  
 56 l. 6 f. Graves r. Gray. The latter was of a character different from that of the former.  
 59 l. 5 f. 18th r. 17th.  
 62 l. 9 for orders r. order.  
 72 l. 5 f. £500 r. £600.  
 74 l. 6 f. town r. Crown.

- p. 76 l. 28 f. "if he wanted it, they should sell it to him," r. "if the inhabitants there wanted it, he should sell it to them."  
 76. Mr Holgrave was appointed to impress men June 3d.  
 76 l. 32 f. "all the Plantations," r. "several individuals."  
 77 l. 6. The levy of £200 was Joly 8th.  
 81 l. 11. The Deputies were ordered back to Salem, Sept. 3d.  
 88 l. 13 f. eighth r. first.  
 95, 98, 100, o. probably before T. Bishop.  
 98 l. 15 f. 3d r. 2d of May.  
 99 o. the article in the four first lines.  
 102 l. 15 f. Beade r. Reade.  
 102 l. 25 suffix side to Cape Ann.

## No. II.

- The references, on the first eight pages of the second number are placed at the end of what they refer to, instead of the beginning.  
 Page 104 l. 35 for respected r. reputed.  
 113, 114 f. Edward r. Edmund Bather.  
 115 l. 19 f. husbandmen r. herdsmen.  
 117 l. 6 f. 230. r. 230.  
 119 l. 22 f. daubings r. daubinge.  
 120 l. 4 f. John Holgrave r. Wm. Hathorn.  
 120 l. 17 f. John r. Thomas Gardner.

- P. 121 l. 4 f. Merrice r. Maurice.  
 123 l. 7 f. drank r. drank.  
 124 l. 8 f. Strawberry r. Strawberry.  
 124 l. 10 f. ordered r. allowed.  
 124 l. 11 f. 28th r. 5th.

By a document in Danvers Records, dated May 10th, 1686, it is evident that the Village on p. 124, was Danvers Village and not Topsfield Village.

- p. 125 l. 23 f. Perry r. Percy.  
 Wood's description of Salem on p. 126, was published 1639;—but he was here in 1633. It is very likely, that his description shows Salem to have been, as it was in 1633.  
 p. 126 l. 33 f. John r. Wm. Dixy.  
 127 l. 24 f. Newton r. Norton.  
 128 l. 23 f. proved r. presented.  
 129 l. 23 f. Nov. r. Oct.  
 129 l. 24 f. sold r. "granted to any man for any particular use."  
 137, 140, 142, 144 f. Witlock r. Whitlock.  
 139 f. Ruthworth r. Rushworth.  
 142 l. 12 f. May r. April.  
 143 l. 36 f. Friars r. Triers.  
 147 l. 19 f. Geo. II. r. III.  
 157 l. 19 f. 1676 r. 1677.  
 157 l. 31 f. 3d r. 10th of May.  
 166 l. 3 f. firres r. stirres.  
 167 l. 5 f. 3d r. 14th of May.  
 172 l. 18 f. Gotta r. Cotta.  
 172 l. 22 f. beaches r. breaches, an old French word, signifying female hunting hounds.  
 174 l. 5, 7 f. keep r. keeper.  
 174 l. 29 f. Woodbridge r. Woodbury.  
 178 l. 23 f. freemen r. freeman.  
 179 l. 23 f. 25th r. 16th.  
 179 o. the last sentence about an inquest.  
 180 l. 10 f. Feb. 1st r. March 12th.  
 180. Land was *laid out* and *not granted* to Mr. Walton.  
 181 l. 9 f. 10th r. 6th.  
 183 l. 9 f. 28th r. 26th.  
 184 l. 30 f. 1638 r. 1639.  
 186 f. T. R., r. Hazard.  
 191 l. 12 f. Low's r. Lawe's.  
 192 l. 16 f. June r. May.  
 193, 196, 199, 204, 208 f. Court of Assistants r. General Court.  
 195 l. 3. The article under March 1st should be under 1656.  
 195 l. 4 f. 8d. r. 18d.  
 195 l. 9 f. Hubbard r. Hobart.  
 195 l. 27 f. 10th r. 22d of Aug.  
 198 l. 12 f. Hannett r. Harnet.  
 202 l. 28 f. Mareh r. May.

- P. 205 l. 7 to 14. The three articles from "Joseph Miles" to "a strange woman" should be under April 3, 1660.

207. There is a mistake about Mr. Higginson's ordination. He was ordained August 29th. "The Church having no Elders, then our honored brother, Major Hathorne and the two Deacons imposed hands on the Pastor, and then the Pastor and the two Deacons imposed hands on the Ruling Elder." 1st Ch. Rec.

### No. III.

- p. 210 l. 1 to 4. The article, under March 3d, should be under 1662.  
 210 l. 31 f. April r. June 23d.  
 215 l. 33 L. Leach, as his will says, was aged 85.  
 216 l. 9 o. Rebeckah and Sarah.  
 219 l. 13 f. Edith r. Edith.  
 219, 226, 228, 231, 234, 242, 250, 259, 261, 267, 271, 272, 273, 278, 280, f. Court of Assistants r. General Court.  
 223 l. 3 r. were after "believed" and before "its" and o. were, 4 l. after "attraction."  
 224 l. 36 f. Gour r. Gover.  
 225 l. 14 f. Treasurer r. Trumpeter.  
 226 l. 33. R. Moulton, here mentioned, was son of the first R. Moulton, to whom the account after Mary, l. 35, to 1666, p. 227, applies. The first R. Moulton died 1655, and his children were Robert Moulton and Dorothy Edwards.  
 228 l. 38 f. Nov. 20th r. 22d.  
 230 l. 8 f. Sanders r. Sanderson.  
 231 l. 3 f. Hinghan r. Hingham.  
 232 l. 24 f. 635 r. 1635.  
 233 l. 33. N. Pickman was in Salem as early as 1639.  
 235 l. 21 f. Joshua r. Daniel.  
 238 l. 33 f. June 18th r. July 5th.  
 239 l. 20 f. John r. James.  
 241 l. 18 f. Edmund r. Edward.  
 242 l. 32 f. 89 r. 96.  
 243 l. 9 f. April r. March.  
 244 l. 33. After Dec. r. 27th.  
 245 l. 37 o. "deceased the succeeding," and r. survived till Nov. 11, 1688.  
 246. The sentence from "He was," l. 16, to "Salem," l. 18, is doubtful.  
 247 l. 30, 31 f. "four sons and three daughters" r. three sons and two daughters.

P. 248 l. 34 f. "sheep, wool," r. sheep's wool.

252 l. 19 f. "affirming" r. informing.

254 l. 4 f. Holten r. Felton.

256 l. 36 f. 3d r. 7th.

257 l. 37 f. June 11th r. May 9th.

258 l. 3 f. 8th r. 18th.

261 l. 28 f. 8th r. 2d.

264 l. 6 f. Council r. General Court.

266 l. 19 f. June r. April 23d—for inflicted r. afflicted.

266 l. 27 f. about r. above.

267 l. 9 f. Charlestown r. Cambridge.

267 l. 29 f. Ruth r. Elizabeth.

267 l. 31 f. 1660 r. 1667.

271 l. 13 f. from r. for.

272 l. 33. The recommendation for S. Beadle should be Feb. 26, 1683.

274 l. 11 f. daughter r. widow.

274 l. 12 o. Goodhue, "wife and."

277, 278, 280 f. Wm. r. Henry Bartholomew.

278 l. 8. Messrs Bartholomew and Higginson, jr. were chosen Deputies July 6th not 9th.

281 l. 1 o. seventy.

282 l. 20 f. Feb. r. March.

284 l. 26 f. 1629 r. 1639.

284 l. 32 f. £40 r. £20.

284 l. 39 f. Prov. R. r. Prov. P.

290 f. T. R. r. Friends' R.

291 l. 11 f. 8th r. 18th.

291 l. 19 f. magistrates r. persons.

292 l. 6 f. Thomas r. Joseph.

294 l. 23 f. Restitution r. Resolution.

296 l. 4 f. Twenty five r. twenty-four.

296 l. 12 f. Hampton r. Frampton.

298 l. 2 f. £208 l. 4 r. £248 14.

298. Doct. Weld was grandson of Rev. T. Weld.

302 l. 19 o. "and children" to the end of "deceased."

303 l. 16 r. 27th before Mary Sibly.

303 l. 22, 23 o. "T. Dudley" to the end of "five others," and r. six before "magistrates."

309 l. 2 f. M. r. A. Pudeator.

310 l. 9 f. 92 r. 85.

#### No. IV.

p. 324 l. 19. Between "Jurisdiction" and "because" r. "and to redress grievances."

324 l. 39 r. "† Jo of Ho." after Prov. R.

326. Though several authorities led to the statement, that Gov. Bradstreet was Secretary from the time of his coming to Mass. up to 1643,—yet the Colony Records inform us, that I. Nowell was Secretary 1636, 1637, 1639, 1640, 1641.

Gov. Bradstreet was chosen Dep. Gov. 1672 to supply the place of S. Symonds deceased.

p. 328 l. 39 r. †Qt. Ct. R.

329 l. 26. The town records say, that Hannah, wife of B. Gedney died 1696.

331 l. 2 f. Nov. 30th r. Dec. 6th.

334 l. 32. The act, as to Naval office was June 28th.

334 l. 34. The encouragement, as to Hemp, was June 19th.

335 l. 12 f. "Clark of S. Village" r. Blowers.

335 l. 30. B. Brown was present as an Assistant for the proprietors of Maine.

335 l. 34. Bills of Credit were issued 1690.

336 l. 13 f. June 9th r. 16th.

336 l. 17 f. 17th r. 19th.

336 l. 21 f. Sept 21 r. Oct. 16th.

338 l. 1. Act for manumission was passed in June.

338 l. 6 order, as to servants and slaves, was passed in Oct.

339 l. 8 r. May before 31st.

341 l. 8 f. heath r. beach.

354 l. 6 f. Dec 17th r. Feb. 11th 1712.

354 l. 34 f. 10th r. 16th.

355 l. 36 r. March 23d before "As B. Brown."

356 l. 6. The report was March 20th.

357 l. 11 f. Appleton r. Prescott.

358 l. 23 f. 1661 r. 1663.

360 l. 23. Town Records say, that J. Green died Nov. 26th.

361 l. 3. Lynde's notes state, that Wm. Brown died Feb. 23d.

363 l. 6 f. T. Cheever r. S. Cheever. Alden's Collections informs us, that Amos Cheever died Jan. 15th, 1756, aged 69.

373 l. 14 f. 4th r. 14th.

374 l. 2 r. Beverly after Marblehead, though omitted by Douglass.

375 l. 15 f. claim r. chain.

379 l. 22 f. 10s. r. 10s. 6d.

391 l. 29 f. 12th r. 17th.

391 l. 32 f. ordered r. added.

392 l. 15 f. 16th r. 25th.

392 l. 20 f. Noyes r. Boyes.

394 l. 12 after Feb. r. 2d.

396 l. 28 f. 8th r. 18th.

398 l. 6 after woman r. "and a boy."

399 l. 4 f. 1st r. 21st.

411 l. 23 before May put "

411 l. 37 put "Col. R.

411 l. 33 put § before 23d.

411 put § before Ep.Ch. R.

416 l. 5 f. Feb. r. March.

417 l. 21 f. Isaac r. Israel.

418 l. 37 r. "on" before "an expedition."

No. V.  
p. 451 l. 28, 29 o. " she b. Sept. 4,  
1686."  
461 l. 20 r. died before son.  
462 l. 35 r. of before fellowship.  
464 l. 13 r. males f. men.  
464 l. 31 r. Simon f. Susan.  
464 l. 34 r. at the Colonies f. at the  
Colonies.  
466 l. 32 f. of r. or.  
470 l. 2 f. what r. that.  
477 l. 10 f. 10th r. 3d.  
477 l. 34 r. 30th before R. Derby.  
485 l. 11 o. Doct.

p. 486 l. 23 o. d from rescued.  
509 l. 6 f. 1-2 r. 1-4.  
509 The articles under 20th and  
26th of Jan. should be under Feb.  
512 l. 25 f. party r. partly.  
512 l. 34, 35, 36 o. s after 1-4, 3, 4.  
522 l. 19 f. 25 r. 20.  
523 l. 9 r. he before used.  
525 Jacob Barney was Deputy to  
General Court Sept. 2, 1635.  
536 l. 1 r. 1660 over Dec. 14th.  
536 l. 45 f. S. r. E. before Stileman.  
544 l. 9 f. County r. Country.  
556 f. 1639 r. 1634.  
556 f. Pacy r. N. Patch.

## INDEX.

---

THE following Index contains most of the names, except the greater part of those in the lists, commencing page 548, and refers to most of the facts, comprised in the preceding Annals. When several pages, referring to the same person or subject,—are of the same ten or tens, hundred or hundreds, such figures will be expressed only once.—When a page is used without any subject before it, such page sometimes denotes the last subject mentioned and sometimes does not.—The subsequent abbreviations will be used:—f. for family,—d. for dead or dies,—and the word, here, will stand for Salem.

- |  |   |
|--|---|
| <p style="text-align: center;">A.</p> <p>Aberginian Indians, page 9.</p> <p>Acts of Trade, 259, 468.</p> <p>Act to prevent monopoly, 500, 4.</p> <p>Act, Stamp, 463, 4, 5, 6—<br/>repealed, 7.</p> <p>Adams, Thomas 437.</p> <p>“ Robert 198.</p> <p>“ Benjamin ordained, 447.</p> <p>“ John and Samuel 479,<br/>89, 97.</p> <p>Address to Gen. Ct. by clergy-<br/>men, 239.</p> <p>Addresses to Gov.—one of which<br/>disapproves benefiting Salem<br/>at the expense of Boston, 488,<br/>9—of Congress to the peo-<br/>ple, 505, 6—of the House to<br/>the people, 10.</p> <p>Adultry, punishment of it, 317.</p> <p>Agawam to be settled, 59.</p> <p>Agents for England, 130.</p> <p>Agriculture, 160.</p> <p>Alarm here, 495.</p> <p>Alarum, 264.</p> <p>Alby, O. charged with killing an<br/>Indian, 439.</p> <p>Alden, John 305, 11.</p> <p>Alderman, John's will, 535.</p> <p>Alexander, an Indian, 254.</p> <p>Alford, John 390.</p> | <p>Alford, Wm. 111.</p> <p>Allegiance to King omitted in<br/>the Magistrates' oath, 159—<br/>to King published, 225.</p> <p>Allen, Wm. 127, 268, 527.</p> <p>“ Mr. 219.</p> <p>“ Capt. 301.</p> <p>“ Thomas 348.</p> <p>“ Robert 469.</p> <p>Allerton, Isaac 64, 73, 5, 9,<br/>160, 94.</p> <p>Allowance for soldiers, 427.</p> <p>Almanack published here, 474.</p> <p>Alms house, 438, 9—preaching<br/>there once a month, 40—<br/>one to be built, 70, 7.</p> <p>American Academy incorporat-<br/>ed—members of it here,<br/>507.</p> <p>Ames, Wm. 133.</p> <p>Amesius, 133.</p> <p>Ammunition, 181.</p> <p>Ammunition house to be built,<br/>527.</p> <p>Amusements of boys not to be in<br/>public places, 474.</p> <p>Anabaptists, law against them,<br/>165, 73—and Friends not to<br/>be taxed for expenses of other<br/>denominations, 386, 7.</p> <p>Ancient for Lieutenant, 524.</p> |
|--|---|



- Andrews, Richard's donation, 66, 165, 72.  
 Andrew, Samuel 234.  
     " Capt. picked up at sea, 270.  
 Andrews, Nicholas 339.  
 Andrew, Jonathan to testify against dangerous townsmen, 501.  
 Andrews, Daniel Rep. 543.  
 Andros, Edmund, Gov. 285, 6—opposed to Congregationalism, 7, 8, 9, 90, 1, 4, 301, 18, 27, 42, 8.  
 Animals of the country, 30.  
 Ann proclaimed Queen—address to her, 336—her letter, 8—congratulated on union of England and Scotland, 45, 52—d. 8.  
 Antichrist prevails in Europe, 213, 6.  
 Antinomians to be disarmed, 111—banished, 3.  
 Appleton, Nathaniel, 413, 81.  
     " John 298.  
     " " 445, 518.  
 Arabella, ship arrives, 40, 1.  
 Archer, Samuel 127, 82, 90, 527.  
 Armine, Lady's donation, 176.  
 Armed force in Boston remonstrated against, 475.  
 Arms ordered for all persons, except magistrates and ministers, 51—to be brought to public worship, 158.  
 Articles not to be imported, 473.  
 Ashton, Phillip's escape from pirates, 547.  
 Ashton, Jacob d. 476, 7.  
     " " 477, 97, 507, 9, 12.  
 Assistance to the farmers, 335.  
 Association, clerical, meet here; their opinion about Councils, 341—of Salem and Vicinity formed 362, 9, 74—receive Leland's View, 462.  
 Aurora Borealis alarms, 368.  
 Avery, John and f. drowned, 80.  
 Ayers, (Obediah?) school master, 369.  
 Ayscue, George 185.  
     B.  
 Bachellor, Henry 206.  
 Bacon, Daniel 382.  
 Bailey, James preaches at the Village, 240, 2, 4—Gen. Court allow him to be settled, 59, 60, 2, 3—to be ordained, 4, 5, 325.  
 Bailey, John 361.  
     " Josiah ordained, 453.  
     " John and others take a vessel, 515.  
 Baker, John 282.  
     " Wm. and Mary jr. 311.  
     " Capt. and others drowned, 513.  
     " Robert, 529.  
 Baker and Misery Islands granted to Salem, 206.  
 Balch, John 6, 48, 9, 161—d. 79, 268, 525, 32.  
 Baldin, Mrs. 261.  
 Baldwin, Capt. 517.  
 Balls, coloured used in choice of Rep. 499.  
 Bandileers, 524.  
 Bank petitioned for, 284.  
 Bank, Land 419, 20, 1, 62.  
 Banks, Lydia 223.  
 Baptism, 173, 94, 214, 79, 436.  
 Baptist, John 383.  
 Baptists ordered to leave Boston, 233, 65.  
 Barberry bushes injurious to grain, 434.  
 Bark built here, 25.  
 Barker, Ebenezer and Abigail, 310.  
 Barker, Elizabeth daughter of H. Peters, 353.  
 Barnard, Thomas 323.  
     " " installed here, 447, 53, 9, 62, 71, 2, 6, 8, 80, 1—d. and f. 99.

- Barnard, John takes a school here, 354—ordained, 62, 3, 4, 86, 406, 47, 80.
- Barnard, Thomas jr. 478, 80, 1—ordained, 2.
- Barnard, Samuel d.—his bequests, 461.
- Barnes, Seth robbed by a privateer, 514.
- Barney, Jacob 115, 76, 88—d. and f. 243.
- Baron de Kalb, 508.
- Bartholomew, Henry 111, 61, 2, 7, 73, 80, 2, 3, 5, 6, 9, 97, 206, 14, 5, 7, 8, 29, 33, 7, 8, 9, 41, 2, 3, 5, 53, 77, 8, 80—d. 310, 535, 8, 42, 3, 4.
- Bartholomew, Henry 310.
- Bartholomew, Wm. of Ipswich, 190.
- Bartlett, Joseph d. and f. 441.
- “ Walter P. 481.
- Barton, John 264, 99—d. 329.
- “ Thomas 382, 6, 7, 94—d. and f. 441.
- “ John d. 492.
- Bass river people desire to be a town, 204.
- Basset, Sarah 304.
- “ Elizabeth 307.
- Batchelor, Stephen 75, 94, 5, 115.
- Batchelder, Joseph 161.
- Batter, Edmund 108, 10, 3, 4, 54, 5, 7, 91, 2, 203, 8, 10, 2, 5, 8, 21, 5, 33, 7, 8, 9, 47, 8, 9, 55, 7, 60, 1, 70, 2—d. and f. 81, 323, 535, 6, 40, 3.
- Batter, Edmund 281—d. and f. 450.
- Battery to be built here, 227.
- Baxter, Richard 136 44.
- Bay Psalm book, 230, 49.
- Beade, (Reade) Thomas 102.
- Beadle, Samuel 272.
- Beans to be used as votes, 159.
- Bears abound, 545.
- Beaver (not 20d. but 20s.) 35, 49, 75—trade in it farmed out, 100.
- Belcher, Andrew 335.
- Belcher, Jonathan 389, 90—Gov. 4, 418, 21, 2, 40.
- Belknap, Joseph, 164.
- Bell, 185, 321—new, 535—to ring in the morning, 41.
- Bells for N. and E. meeting houses arrive, 482, 597.
- Bellamy, Samuel 363.
- Bellingham, Rich'd, 124, 99, 211.
- Benediction how preceded, 547.
- Benson, Capt. 513, 7.
- Bentley, Wm. ordained, 519.
- Bequests of B. Brown, 346—of Wm. Brown, 61—of J. Brown, 8—of J. Gardner, 74—of S. Brown, 96—to the poor, 441, 2—to Society for promoting christian knowledge among the Indians, 58—of Wm. Brown, 62—of E. Kitchen and S. Brown, 8.
- Berry, Thomas 422.
- Bier, 215—put in chimney of meeting house, 536.
- Bibles freed from duties, 350.
- Bill of attainder for witchcraft, 351.
- Bills of credit issued, 300, 35—let at 5 per cent, 59, 63—sinking, 6—issued, 72—small ones to be struck off, 4, 8—not issued without the King's consent—excessively abundant, 402—those of N. H. forbidden to be taken, 9, 14, 5, 7, 22, 40, 96—new emission, 512—old emission fallen, to a vast amount, on Mass., 4.
- Births, 520.
- Bishop, Townsend, 95, 8, 100, 10, 27—baptist, 71, 200, 527.
- Bishop, Bridget 303, 4, 5—hung, 6. / GLAUGE - 195
- Bishop, Edward 303, 4, 6, 9.
- Bishop, Sarah 303, 4, 9.
- Bishop, John killed 543.
- Black, John 127.
- Black, Mary 303, 4.
- Blackleach, John and Elizabeth, 213, 525, 36.
- Blackstone, Wm. 9.
- Blaithwait, Mr. 280.
- Blake, Robert, 142.
- Blanchandin, Mr. 374.

- Bleigh, Thomas 225.  
 Blevin, John 227, 35, 7.  
 Blinman, Richard 162, 340.  
 Block houses, 336, 43.  
 Blomfield, Henry 530.  
 Blowers, Thomas ordained, 335, 62, 7, 86.  
 Boden, Robert d. 440.  
 Book of sports, 13—of Wm. Pynchon, 182—of Reeves and Muggleton burnt, 190.  
 Borland, Francis 456.  
 Boston Church ask advice 57.  
 Boston charged by Gov. as ruling other towns, 388—port to be shut, 487—this resolved by the House as threatening the liberties of British America, 9.  
 Botelar, Lady 530.  
 Bottomry, 470.  
 Boundaries of Salem and Topsfield, 221—of land to be recorded, 525.  
 Bounty for hemp, 334—on Linen, 77—on duck, 83—for hemp, 499.  
 Bounty for soldiers, 500, 2, 6.  
 Bourn, John 173.  
 Bowditch, Sarah 174, 200.  
 Bowditch, Wm. 262—d. 71.  
 Bowditch, Wm. 354, 73, 4, 84, —d. and f. 8.  
 Bowditch, Ebenezer 383, 8.  
 Bowdoin, James 489.  
 Boyce, Joseph 266.  
 Boys sent home, 35—to train, 167.  
 Boyes, (not Noyes) Robert 392.  
 Boylstone, Zabdiel 373.  
 Bracket, Thomas 198.  
 Brackenbury, Richard 232, 4 —testifies as to the settlement of Salem, 68.  
 Bradbury, Mary 308, 9.  
 Bradbury, Henry and Samuel 309.  
 Braddock, Gen. defeated, 446.  
 Bradford, Wm. Gov. 9, 27, 8— forbids corn to be taken from his jurisdiction, 55, 86, 194, 221.  
 Bradish, Joseph pirate, 332.  
 Bradshaw, Charles allowed to keep a dancing and French school, 416.  
 Bradstreet, Simon 47, 127, 30, 59, 63, 70, 214, 65, 81, 91, 325—d. 6, 56.  
 Bradstreet, Dudley 241.  
     " Simon 325.  
     " " 415.  
 Brainard, David 231.  
 Bratcher, Austin killed, 48, 9.  
 Brattle, Wm. 360.  
     " Gen. 487.  
 Bread, weight and price of it, 382.  
 Breadcake, Thomas has guns here for defence against the Turks, 531.  
 Breed hill fight, 495.  
 Brend, Wm. 197.  
 Brewer, John's son killed, 518.  
 Brick kiln set up here, 30.  
 Bridges, 213—towards Andover, 35—over the Creek, 382, 94, —over N. river, 423, 47.  
 Bridges, Robert 163.  
     " Sarah, Mary, John and Mary, jr. 311.  
 Briggs, Capt. 512.  
 Bright, Francis 13, 4—preaches at Charlestown, 20—of Council, 1.  
 British at Yarmouth not to be molested, 515.  
 British vessels cleared out, 518.  
 Britton, Edward d. 422.  
 Brock, John 217.  
 Brockholt, Anthony 288.  
 Brockwell, Charles 415, 31— preferred to King's chapel, 3.  
 Bromfield, Edward 367.  
 Brookhouse, Capt. 504, 13.  
 Brooks, John 517.  
 Brown, John and Samuel 19, 21—Episcopalians, 34—sent home, 6, 7, 8—return, 9, 46, 68—as to John, 185, 205—elder, 7, 10, 22, 67, 72—d. 82.  
 Brown, Hugh and others go against the Tarrentines, 269, 522.

- Brown, Wm. 189, 92, 202, 4, 5,  
 16, 25, 7, 30, 8, 43, 7, 8, 9,  
 61, 2, 3, 5, 7, 71, 3, 7, 85, 6—  
 d. and f. 8, 534.  
 Brown, Joseph sen. 263.  
 " " d. 248, 89, 540.  
 Brown, Benjamin 315, 8, 32, 4,  
 5, 7—d. and f. 46, 55, 545.  
 Brown, Wm. 321, 4, 30, 1, 2, 5,  
 42, 56,—d. and f. 61, 8, 96,  
 546.  
 Brown, Wm. 361, 96, 416, 7, 8,  
 21, 6, 34—d. and f. 61.  
 Brown, Samuel 328, 30, 4, 7, 9,  
 40, 2, 6, 57, 9, 61, 70, 1, 2, 9,  
 80, 4, 9, 93—d. and f. 96.  
 Brown, John 344, 6, 51, 6, 61—  
 d. and f. 8.  
 Brown, Bartholomew d. 364.  
 Brown, Benjamin 396, 8, 9,  
 404, 10, 1, 4, 5, 6, 8, 9, 23—  
 d. and f. 40.  
 Brown, Samuel d. and f. 424.  
 Brown, Wm. 424, 59, 62, 3,  
 4, 7, 8, 9, 70, 1, 87, 9, 90, 3.  
 Brown, John 440, 60.  
 Brown, Wm. B. 462, 8, 9.  
 Brown, Simeon Capt. to guard  
 British prisoners, 502.  
 Brown, John taken by the  
 Dutch, 538.  
 Brown, Mr. Collector, 548.  
 Buffinton, John 510, 5.  
 Buffinton, Nehemiah 514.  
 Buffum, Joseph sen. and jr. 198.  
 Buffum, Joshua 198, 9, 203, 20,  
 35.  
 Buffum, Robert's will disallow-  
 ed, because its witnesses would  
 not swear to its correctness,  
 237.  
 Buffum, Tamson 217, 37.  
 Buffum, Joseph's proposal as to  
 hay scales, 435.  
 Buffum, Mary 545.  
 Bulkley, Sarah 305, 10.  
 Bulkley, Wm. 310.  
 Bulkley, Wm. d. 545.  
 Bull, Abigail 323.  
 Bull, Dixey pirate 58.  
 Bullets poisoned, 447.  
 Bullock, John 264.  
 Burdet, George 82, 116.  
 Burges, Elizeus 360.  
 Burglary, death, 359.  
 Burial ground, 191.  
 Burials, 174, 85, 329.  
 Burnet, Wm. Gov. 383, 6, 7  
 —refuses pay to the House,  
 91—d. 3, 4, 403, 61, 2.  
 Burnet, Gilbert 393.  
 Burnet, George 393.  
 Burrill, Ezra runs the first stage,  
 514.  
 Burroughs, Edward 208.  
 Burroughs, George preaches at  
 the Village—his salary, 267,  
 9, 304—hung for witchcraft  
 and f. 7.  
 Burroughs, John 368.  
 Burton, John 197, 208, 13, 99.  
 Burton, Thomas 529.  
 Buttolph, John 317.  
 Bushnell, John 527.  
  
 C.  
 Cabot, John d. and f. 423.  
 Cabot, John Doct. d. and f.  
 438.  
 Cabot, Francis 504.  
 Cage to be erected, 229, 57, 89.  
 Calamities, 448, 52.  
 Calef, Robert 311.  
 Canada, 228—to be attacked,  
 98—cost and loss caused by  
 it, 544.  
 Candidates, clerical—rules as to  
 them, 188.—for church when  
 admitted, 239.  
 Cannon and stores for a fort, 15.  
 Canonicus, 86, 99.  
 Canoes to be marked, 526.  
 Cape Ann settlement, abandon-  
 ed, led to settlement of Sa-  
 lem, 5.  
 Cape Ann, 114—Fishing plan-  
 tation there, 21.  
 Capitulation broken by the  
 French, 452.  
 Captives, 340, 53, 74, 457.

- Cards & dice to be destroyed, 51.  
 Cargoes to be collected here,  
   11—arrive in England, 35.  
 Carlton, Samuel Rep. 499.  
 Carlton, Capt. 456, 500.  
 Carnes, John 510, 3.  
 Caroline, Queen's birth day  
   celebrated, 403.  
 Carrier, Martha hung 307, 8.  
 Carrier, Richard 311.  
 Carrier, Thomas 308.  
 Carson, John 282.  
 Cartel arrives, 504, 12, 6, 7.  
 Carter, Bethiah 304.  
 Cary, Nath'l and Elizabeth, 305.  
 Cary, Thomas to be ordained, 471.  
 Cash, Wm. 392.  
 Castin, Monsieur 380.  
 Catarrh prevails, 176, 92, 531.  
 Catechism, 131—to be taught in  
   families, 207, 36, 51.  
 Caterpillars abound, 225, 9.  
 Cathcart, John 508.  
 Cats, wild, 387.  
 Catshamekin, 99.  
 Cattle, price of them, 61, 102—  
   land for them, 29, 30—brought  
   to Mass. to be taxed 267—  
   price of them, 74—perished,  
   82, 545.  
 Cavaliers, 154.  
 Cavalry of Essex divided, 215.  
 Census ordered, 158, 73, 445, 64.  
 Cesar, sentence for poisoning  
   another, 322.  
 Champney, Joseph ordained,  
   394, 408, 82.  
 Chard, Hellen 294.  
 Charity scholars at College to be  
   aided, 187.  
 Charles I. 13, 50, 62, 3, 73,  
   114, 47, 9, 59—observance  
   of his death proposed, 226.  
 Charles II. 54, 99, 114, 45, 8,  
   69, 70, 203, 7, 9, 11—pro-  
   claimed, 12, 8, 25—orders  
   persons to meet him in Lon-  
   don, 8, 71—threatens the  
   Charter, 3, 5, 7, 8—d. 80, 8.
- Charlestown to be aided in build-  
   ing a meeting house, 517.  
 Chart to be on copper, 351.  
 Charter, 7,—demanded by King,  
   67—considered void by him,  
   108—demanded, 16—Coun-  
   cil and House differ about  
   throwing it on the King's  
   mercy, 275—proposal to the  
   towns for its surrender, 6—  
   declared, 8, 82—superceded,  
   3—new, 304—to be defended,  
   77—explanatory received, 81,  
   426—its privileges, 66—re-  
   stricted, 89.  
 Chase, Stephen to be dismissed,  
   440.  
 Chasteleux, Marquis de passes  
   through town, 517.  
 Chauncey, Charles 425, 52.  
 Cheever, Samuel 180, 258, 9,  
   64—ordained, 78, 335, 41,  
   62, 3.  
 Cheever, Ezekiel 235, 59.  
 Cheever, Ames ordained—sala-  
   ry, 363.  
 Cheever, Thomas 405.  
 Children of charity, 165—rebel-  
   lious to suffer death, 76—dis-  
   sipated not to be credited, 8—  
   to be baptized, 212—under  
   watch of the Church, 3—to  
   be bound out, 44.  
 Chimnies, wooden, 522—to be  
   swept, 37.  
 Chipman, John ordained, 361,  
   4, 406.  
 Choate, John 465.  
 Chocolate mill, first, 480.  
 Christison, Whenlock 222.  
 Christmas forbidden, 203—al-  
   lowed, 71.  
 Chronology, manner of its for-  
   mer records, 73.  
 Chubb, Pasco broken and killed,  
   325.  
 Church formed here, 27—on  
   Council at Saugus, 75—writes  
   to other Churches as to deal-

- ing with Magistrates and Deputies, 9, 95--trouble about Mr. Williams, 7--represented on Council at Concord, 104--in Synod, 10--not in Synod at first, 74--but afterwards, 7--its members at Bass River desire to be set off, 82--on Council about difficulty between Boston and Ipswich churches, 91--its Bass River members released, 5, 229, 30--on Council to advise first Church of Boston, 6--to form third church of Boston, 7, 8--to advise Newbury church, 8--to dismiss members to Marblehead church, 78--to Village church, 96--to form middle precinct church, 356--to dismiss members to the East church, 67--its organization commemorated, 92--called confederate, 427, 30, 54--recalled first church, 9--dismisses members to North church, 481.
- Church, another attempted to be formed here, 246.
- Churches here ineffectually try for reconciliation, 427.
- Church, East formed, 367, 8, 80.
- Church, third, 462--becomes Presbyterian, 76--some of them withdrawn, 85--seceders from Dr. Whitaker are called third church, 93--his church became congregational, 519, 20.
- Church, North set off, 481.
- Churches desired to form rules of discipline, 75--discussions of, 104--to deal with their members, who delay to become freemen, 58--dissensions, 75, 93, 9, 203--have power to settle their ministers, 322.
- Church and State, 129.
- Church members refusing to take oath of freemen, 177.
- Church, Benjamin 251, 94, 325, 38.
- Circular as to relieving general government, 516.
- Churchwell, Sarah 305.
- Clap, Roger 226.
- Clark, John 184.
- Clark, Wm. to keep an ordinary, 166, 8, 71, 2, 5.
- Clark, Peter, 362, 3--ordained--salary, 4, 85, 6, 408, 11, 6.
- Clark, Wm. 390.
- Clark, John 410, 5.
- Clark, Richard manufacturer of guns, 420.
- Clark, Peter 421, 5, 9 43, 7, 8, 51 and f. 62, 72.
- Clark, Gedney gives corn to the poor here, 439.
- Clark, Hannah aged, d. 477.
- Clayboards for clapboards, 256, 541.
- Clearances of vessels, 374, 436, 74, 6, 80, 2, 94, 520.
- Clergymen to be maintained at the common charge with exceptions, 47--they advise, that, if a Gen. Governor for N. E. be sent over, his authority be not allowed, 73--to be consulted about laws, 8--who had been settled in England not to be considered as ministers in Mass. until they have a call, 105--to be honorably maintained, 90, 206--freed from rates, 39--suffer from depreciation of paper currency, 436.
- Clock put up in E. meeting house, 483.
- Clothes, leather 22.
- Clothing, extravagant, 215.
- Cloyce, Sarah 303, and Peter, 8.
- Coates, Eliezer killed 256.
- Cobbit, Thomas 230--his relation, 521.
- Cockle, James Collector, 462.

- Coddington, Wm. 87, 9.  
 Coe, Curtis ordained, 506.  
 Coffin, Wm. killed, 546.  
 Coin, 155—current, 86, 7—not  
 to be transported, 90, 215, 25.  
 Cole, John and Sarah 311.  
 Colman, Benjamin 358, 62, 7,  
 95, 451.  
 Colman, John 378, 419.  
 College intended, 98, 112, 31—  
 its corporation, 56—contribu-  
 tion for it, 65, 6, 96, 248, 60,  
 5, 535, 9.  
 Colours without a cross allowed,  
 95—for the Province vessels,  
 498.  
 Comet, 223.  
 Commissioners to marry people,  
 192—of the King, 222—they  
 propose to abolish laws offen-  
 sive to him, 5—break with  
 Gen. Court, 6—recalled, 8—  
 to treat with Indians at Al-  
 bany, 432.  
 Committee, military for each  
 town, 230.  
 Committee of correspondence,  
 477.  
 Commonage, right of, 336, 53, 7.  
 Commoners, 356, 7.  
 Company of Mass. receive a  
 Charter, 12—agree that their  
 government be moved to N.  
 E. 35—their letters about  
 Messrs. Browns, 6, 7.  
 Company military to train once  
 a week, 51—to maintain its  
 Captain, 8—to train eight  
 times a year, 112—divided  
 into two here, 245—one form-  
 ed at Village, 59—two made  
 four, 97—one to be stationed  
 here, 497.  
 Company to trade with Indians,  
 131—of adventurers, 72—of  
 husbandmen, 523.  
 Companies, Bank 402, 19.  
 Conant, Roger, 6, 7, 48, 57, 65,  
 119, 220, 34, 68, 525, 6.  
 Conant, Roger jr. 127—first  
 born of Salem, 256.  
 Confession of faith, 177, 84, 266.  
 Congress of Colonies, 465, 89  
 —provincial formed here, 91—  
 who resolve that the people  
 prepare for war, 3, 5.  
 Consociation of Churches, 214.  
 Constables, chosen—to stand,  
 253.  
 Constitution of State to be con-  
 sidered, 502—disapproved,  
 3.  
 Contribution for ministry, 125—  
 for King's fleet, 230—for  
 King's masts, 3—for sufferers  
 by Indians, 50—for poor each  
 Sabbath, 9—for captives, 61  
 —for French Protestants, 83,  
 4—for captives, 302—by Con-  
 necticut for poor here, 330, 3,  
 8—for propagating the Gos-  
 pel, 67—for schooling poor  
 children, 436—for a captive,  
 45—for Boston—for sufferers  
 here by fire, 92—for poor  
 here by Friends, 7, 9,—for  
 ministry, 537, 41, 4.  
 Convention, clerical—send a  
 committee to General Court  
 about litigated land, 416—  
 divided as to revival of reli-  
 gion, 25.  
 Convention in Boston, 473—at  
 Ipswich advise non-compli-  
 ance with late infringements  
 on the charter, 90.  
 Cook, Mary admitted to the  
 church at her house, 369.  
 Cook, Elisha 370.  
 Cook, Capt. 505, 14.  
 Copeland, John 195, 6.  
 Copper mine, 180.  
 Corn not to be transported with-  
 out license, 48—to be current  
 for debts, 56, 76—brought  
 from Virginia, 523.  
 Cornhill, Samuel granted land  
 to sow hemp, 529.

- Cory, Giles, 303, 4—pressed to death, 8, 348, 54.  
 Cory, Martha 303, 8—hung, 9—her excommunication recalled, 37, 544.  
 Cotta, (not Gotta) Robert 172.  
 Cotton, John, 60, 3, 4, 94, 7, 102, 11, 24, 6, 53, 84, 207—preaches here, 526.  
 Council about Mr. Nicholet, 247—  
   —at Rowley, 51—at Salisbury, 5—at Rowley, 64—at Village, 321—at Boston, 69—at Reading, 81—at Ipswich, 5—at Lynn, 94—for part of first church, 400, 4—for ordaining Mr. Leavit, 9, 30—at Lynn, 40.  
 Council of Safety address Wm. and Mary, 293.  
 Council differ with the House, 390—their address rejected by the Gov. 438.  
 Counterfeiter punished, 302, 57, 8, 456.  
 Court of Assistants, 46—to try cases of life, limb and banishment, 131.  
 Court, General to be held, 54—meet, 7—lent money to poor here, 157—proposed to be held in every shire town, 72—decide that the English here have a good right to their land, 87—when to meet, 219—resolve to maintain their Charter—their address to the King, 22—decline obedience to his order, 8—vindicate themselves from charge of severity against other denominations, 346—meet in Salem, 87—prorogued—charged with disloyalty, 92—with attempts to set the Province against the King, 4, 5—refuse to supply the Treasury, 402—dissolved, 22—meet here, 88.  
 Court house to be built, 367.  
 Courts, Quarterly instituted, 97.  
 Courtship—rules for it, 177.  
 Court and Country, 457.  
 Cove near the meeting house, 542.  
 Covenants of Churches to be renewed, 280.  
 Craddock, Matthew 11, 2, 37, 48, 64, 7, 523, 4.  
 Criminals, 517.  
 Crisp, Grace 142.  
 Croad, John d. 239, 331.  
 Croad, Richard 261—d. and f. 96.  
 Crocker, Edward killed, 544.  
 Cromwell, 99, 116, 23, 40, 3, 4, 68, 9, 85, 7, 90, 4, 203, 9, 18.  
 Cromwell, Richard 169, 203.  
 Cromwell, John 243—d. and f. 334.  
 Cromwell, Phillip d. 315.  
 Crops, scanty 222.  
 Cross cut out of the Salem ensign, 72.  
 Crouch, Mary concerned in printing the Gazette, 509.  
 Crowel, Capt. 515.  
 Crowninshield, John d. and f. 468.  
 Cuffee, a negro killed, 410.  
 Cummings, Wm. 111.  
 Curreney to be valued, 505.  
 Curwin, George 177, 204, 5, 16, 25, 7, 9, 30, 1, 3, 4, 7, 8, 41, 3, 3, 50, 1, 3, 60, 2, 74—his house robbed, 6, 7 d. and f. 9, 95, 534, 5, 40.  
 Curwin, Elizabeth d. 233.  
 Curwin, George 306, 8, 23—d. and f. 7, 66.  
 Curwin, John 245, 8, 62—d. 74, 9.  
 Curwin, John 299.  
 Curwin, Jonathan 277, 9, 92, 5, 6, 7, 8, 300, 1, 5, 10, 5, 6, 21, 4, 30, 2, 5, 42, 54, 6, 8, 64—d. and f. 6.  
 Curwin, George 350, 3—ordained, 8, 60, 2, 3—d. and f. 4, 400.



- Curwin, George d. 432.  
 Cushing, Thomas 489.  
 Cutler, Timothy, 416.  
 Cyder not to be made Brandy, 501.
- D.**  
 Dallee, Peter 357.  
 Dalton, Timothy 180.  
 Dancing at Taverns forbidden, 183.  
 Dane, Francis 323.  
 Danford, ensign, 72, 111.  
 Danvers set off as a town, 451.  
 Darbie fort, 104, 26, 8—on Marblehead side, 299.  
 Dark day, 507.  
 Dasting, Lydia & Sarah, 304, 11.  
 Davenport, John 12, 4, 236.  
 Davenport, Richard 100, 2, 5, 8, 13, 21, 3—chosen to command the Castle, 64.  
 Davenport, Addington 416.  
 Davis, James 328.  
 Dauphin of France's birth celebrated, 515.  
 D'Aulnay, 160, 6, 73.  
 Deacons ordained, 285.  
 Dean, Capt. 500.  
 Dean, Thomas aged, 544.  
 Deaths, 474, 6, 9, 80, 2, 5, 520.  
 Declaration as to Brattle street church disapproved by Messrs. Higginson and Noyes, 333.  
 Declaration of Independence, 499.  
 Deer to be preserved, 418.  
 Deniers of the Gospel to be fined, 175—of the Scriptures to be punished, 86.  
 Delegates to meet here, 155, 6, 60—to Congress, 489.  
 Denison, Daniel of Ipswich, 199, 243, 50, 1, 4.  
 Deputies to General Court first chosen, 65—of Salem called to an account for letters of church here, 81—to be chosen annually, 152—their horses supported, 73, 8—of Salem dissent, 82, 3—to be orthodox, 90—to vote for greater liberty to those not church members, 218, 538.  
 Derby, Roger d. and f. 330.  
 Derby, Richard 437, 40, 5, 59—d. and f. 519.  
 Derby, Richard jr. 475, 7, 8, 9, 80, 1, 3, 8, 91, 4, 5, 8, 9, 501, 3—d. and f. 12.  
 Derby, Elias H. Rep. 496.  
 Deserter punished, 372.  
 Desire, ship, built at Marblehead, 100, 9, 20, 7.  
 Detachment for Canada, 496.  
 Device on seal of Mass. Colony, 12.  
 Devorix, John, 229.  
 Dewing, Josiah soldier, aided, 462.  
 Dexter, Thomas 52, 3, 174  
 Dickerson, Philemon has land for a Tannery, 122.  
 Difficulty about Mr. Nicholet, 248, 9—in first church, 400, 4, 5, 6, 7, 8, 9, 10.  
 Dike, Anthony 523.  
 Diman, James ordained, 413, 25, 62, 76, 80, 519.  
 Discount on rates, if paid in cash, 259, 63.  
 Dispatches, French, for Congress, 514.  
 Distilling, 180, 286, 414, 71, 80.  
 Dixy, Wm. (not John) 126, 68, 71, 232—his testimony, 68, 84.  
 Dodge, George jr. 504.  
 Dogs to be hung for killing sheep, 179.  
 Dogs and cats to be buried, 449.  
 Dolibar, Wm. and Ann, 305, 50.  
 Doty, Samuel and crew, 383.  
 Dover about to come under Mass. 124.  
 Dounton, Wm. 284, 310, 540.  
 Downing, Emanuel 59, 72, 113, 15, 21, 3, 7, 8, 9, 30, 51, 2, 3, 62, 3, 5, 6, 73, 8, 9, 80, 1, 2, 3, 5, 252, 356, 529—his letter about the Gortonists, 31.

- Downing, George 156—notice of him from 68 to 70, 531.  
 Downing, Ann 252.  
 Dowse, Joseph surveyor of port, 456, 63.  
 Drake, Francis schoolmaster, 350.  
 Dress, costly 117—laws about it, 23, 85—fines for it, 7—censured, 250.  
 Drinking healths forbidden, 123—health of King, 459, 60.  
 Driver, Wm. 286.  
 Droughts, 215, 29, 81, 436, 8, 52, 9, 547.  
 Drowned, five persons, 72—seven, 470—ten, 84.  
 Drunkards to be punished, 26—not to visit Taverns, 240, 539.  
 Drunkenness, means to lessen it, 484.  
 Dry dock, 231.  
 Duck coy, 115.  
 Dudley, Thomas 6, 39, 49, 95, 7, 123, 63, 7, 241, 326, 523, 6.  
 Dudley, Joseph 282, 3, 92, 326, 36, 43, 4, 60.  
 Duelling—punishment of it, 368—death, 87.  
 Dummer, Jeremiah 349, 59.  
 Dummer, Wm. 376, 7, 8, 81, 3, 4, 5, 6, 94.  
 Dunbar, Asa 480—ordained, 1—dismissed, 504.  
 Dunn, Capt. 514.  
 Dunton, John 346, 9, 65, 75.  
 Dustan, Hannah 327, and Thomas 98.  
 Dutch ship arrives, 78—fleet turned from the coast 226—ship lost, 519.  
 Duties on merchandise, 382—on Molasses unpopular, 456, 7—on Sugar, 63—on various goods, 4—new, 70—on Rum and Wine, 547.  
 Dyer, Mary 204, 6.  
 Dyer, Wm. 282.
- E.
- Eagle, ship named *Arabella* in honor of Mrs. Johnson, 25.  
 Eames, Rebeckah 306, 9.  
 Earl of Bellamont, 332—d. 5.  
 Earthquakes, 114, 217, 335, 6, 447, 57.  
 Easty, Mary 303, 4, 8—hung 9.  
 Eclipse of sun, 509.  
 Edson, Samuel moves away, 531.  
 Edwards, Thomas 161.  
 Eight Nations, 377.  
 Elder used for Rev. 28.  
 Elders meet with General Court as advisers, 228—to advise on public difficulties, 81.  
 Elders, Ruling chosen, 29, 207, 412, 44, 76, 81, 2, 98, 518, 9, 21.  
 Election day disorderly, 471.  
 Elford, John 122.  
 Elkins, Capt. vessel lost, 457.  
 Ellinwood, Benjamin punished for manslaughter, 460.  
 Elliot, John teaches Indians, 176, 87—encouraged to print Indian catechism, 9—his Christian Commonwealth, 211, 511.  
 Ellis Francis, 314, 35.  
 Elvins, Richard 427.  
 Embargo, 296, 8, 300, 39, 429, 45, 6, 53.  
 Emerson, John ordained, 219, 323, 38.  
 Emerson, John 323,  
 Emerson, John to keep the Grammar School, 332—d. 54.  
 Emigrants arrive, 6, 15, 41, 61, 9, 264.  
 Emory, George d. 286.  
 Endicott, John 7, 8, 9, 10, 1, 2, 3, 5, 7, 8, 9, 20, 1—to purchase Indian title to land, 2, 3, 5, 6, 7, 34, 6, 7, 40, 6—second marriage, 7, 9, 50, 2, 3, 4, 6, 7, 63, 4, 7, 8, 74,—

- to answer for defacing cross on Salem colours, 5, 7—arraigned for letters of the church here, 80, 1, 94, 8—commands expedition against the Pequods, 100, 2, 5, 8, 11, 3, 9, 20, 1, 4, 30, 52, 3—Deputy Governor, 54, 6, 7, 9, 60, 1—Governor, 2—Maj. General, 7, 8—Commissioner, 73, 4, 8, 9, 80, 1, 2, 3, 6, 8, 9, 91, 4, 5, 8, 9, 206, 11—leaves Salem for Boston—d. 23, 33, 4—his widow has an annuity, 39, 521, 2, 4, 5, 39.
- Endicott, John jr. 206.
- Endicott, Zerubabel 192, 223, 5, 61—d. and f. 76.
- Endicott, Elizabeth 261, 76.
- Endicott, John d. 334.
- Engine company excused from juries, 444.
- English, Mary 303, 4, 8.
- English, Phillips 303, 4, 8, 34, 9, 51, 403—d. 18.
- Enlistments, short, injurious, 509.
- Enon, 83—set off and called Wenham, 158.
- Epes, Daniel 238, 75, 6, 7, 331, 45, 57, 9, 60, 2, 72, 3—d. and f. 5, 539, 41—had been chaplain in the army, 47.
- Epes, Martha 357, 75.
- Epes, Daniel 375, 7, 8, 80, 2, 4, 6, 91, 6, 8, 9, 404, 10, 1, 9, 421, 3, 4, 6, 44, 6, 9—and f. 51.
- Epes, Wm. 458—d. 65, 6.
- Episcopal worship here, 34—church built here, 493—apply for a missionary, 11, 31.
- Episcopalians, 225—petition for relief, 397, 416.
- Essex, 158—thought of for seat of government, 63—voted by Deputies to be divided—but this vote was disallowed by the Governor, 315.
- Essex Lodge chartered, 504.
- Estates to be valued, 65—in England to be taxed, 121, 3—fell, 30—abroad not to be taxed, 1, 78.
- Estis Matthew, 272.
- Exchange, 337, 57, 63, 76, 89, 95, 414, 22, 37, 61, 502, 4, 7, 9.
- Excise, 382—on carriages, 414. 42, 4—on wine and spirits in families, 8.
- Excise bill unpopular, 444.
- Excommunicated persons ordered to reform and rejoin their churches, 116.
- Excommunication for witchcraft, recalled, 354—of the first church, 408—recalled, 430.
- Expedition against N. Scotia, 297—French and Indians, 338—Canada, 51—Port Royal, 2, 78—Cuba, 418, 9—Louisbourg, 28, 9—Canada—Crown Point, 32, 6, 46—Penobscot, 505—Tortula, 14.
- Experiments in Electricity, 479.
- Extortioners by threats, 438—Law against them, 9.
- Eyre, John 292.

## F.

- Factions as to Messrs. Winthrop and Dudley, 95.
- Factory of glass here, 152.
- Fairbanks, Richard Post master, 125.
- Fairbanks, Jonas charged with wearing great boots, 188.
- Fairfax, Wm. 403.
- Fairfield, Daniel's sentence, 154.
- Fairfield, Wm. d. 485.
- Fairs to be here, 115.
- Falmouth destroyed, 497.
- Family order and religion, 23.
- Families of soldiers to be aided, 501, 3.
- Famine threatened, 237, 83.
- Farms taxed as separate plantation, 131.

- Farmers desire to hire preaching,** 227.  
**Farrar, Thomas** 304.  
**Fashions—laws against them,** 70, 450, 74—for man and woman to ride on one horse, 545.  
**Fasts,** 70, 95, 103, 14, 8, 52, 4, 6, 7, 71, 5, 84, 7, 92, 9, 203, 10, 3, 5, 6—for suffering ministers in England, 21, 2, 3, 5—for trouble with the King's Commissioners, 6, 8, 31, 41, 2, 3—for Indian troubles, 9, 51, 6—that Charter privileges may be continued, 62, 3, 72, 3, 8, 80, 1, 2, 3, 92, 3, 4, 5, 7, 9, 301, 3, 8, 25, 6, 37, 8—for effusion of the Holy Spirit, 9, 40, 52, 3, 7, 65, 73, 5, 6, 7, 86, 402, 20, 1, 7, 8, 9, 33, 5, 6, 46, 8, 9, 52, 3, 9, 89, 94—Continental, 6, 8.  
**Faulkner, Abigail** 308, 9.  
**Felt, John** 514.  
**Felton, Benjamin** 237, 54.  
**Felton, Nathaniel d. and f.** 341.  
**Female fined for wearing man's clothes,** 443.  
**Fence—corn,** 60.  
**Feuwick,** 530.  
**Ferries—one from Neck to Cape Ann side,** 102—at N. point, 26—to Ipswich, 88—Winnismet, 352—South, 95—North, 414, 38, 518, 26, 7.  
**Fevers prevail,** 118.  
**Fields, south, have gates,** 335.  
**Fights, sea,** 500, 5, 8, 10, 5, 6.  
**Fines to be paid in corn,** 123—for cutting down trees, 54.  
**Fires,** 101, 66, 76, 228—orders to be observed at them, 63, 331—in Boston, 455, 69—at Montreal contribution for it, 72—here, 90, 1, 532, 44.  
**Fire club formed,** 426.  
**Firewards badge,** 427, 8.  
**Fire engine,** 437—given to the town, 40—another given, 1, 70, 4, 92.  
**Fish of the Colony,** 30—not to be used for manure, 120, 6—carried to W. I., 359—cod staple of Mass. 447.  
**Fishery—shallops for it,** 25—encouraged, 103, 20—its success, 76, 238—decayed, 353, 410, 37, 53, 60, 1, 71—an article of Treaty, 513.  
**Fish place at Winter harbour,** 528.  
**Fisher, John Collector,** 473, 4, 9, 82.  
**Fisher, Nathaniel officiates at Episcopal Church,** 513.  
**Fisk, John** 112, 56—preaches at Enon—notice of, 7.  
**Fisk, Samuel** 365—ordained, 7, 77, 85, 6, 90, 3, 4, 6, 400, 1, 4, 5, 6, 7, 8, 9—kept out of his pulpit, 10, 1, 2, 3—leaves his society, 429, 30—d. 77.  
**Fisk, Anna d.** 457.  
**Fisk, John** 500.  
**Fitch, Jabez** 454—ordained, 545.  
**Five Nations—present for them,** 375, 7.  
**Flag of truce for Canada,** 435.  
**Flag, Samuel Capt. of soldiers,** 503, 18.  
**Fleet of King relieved,** 242—French—dracaded, 327, 433.  
**Flint, Alice presented for wearing a silk hood,** 188.  
**Flint, Edward** 294.  
**Flint, John's sentence for manslaughter,** 256.  
**Flint, Thomas** 294.  
**Flint, Benjamin** 355.  
**Flint, Thomas Rep.** 421.  
**Flint, Joseph** 480.  
**Flucker, Thomas** 487, 8.  
**Fogg, Ralph** 127, 53, 66.

- Foot, Pasco d. and f. 240.  
 Ford, James school master, 462  
     —d. and f. 511.  
 Foreigners not entertained, 195,  
     539.  
 Forfeitures on Molasses, 456, 7.  
 Forgery—punishment of it, 339.  
 Forrest River's Indian name,  
     284.  
 Forrester, Capt. 500.  
 Fort at Boston worked on by  
     Salem men, 61—moveable, 4  
     —one to be on Winter Island,  
     191, 227—on Marblehead  
     side, 99, 343, 53—Ann, 8,  
     404—Lee, 500, 24—Indian,  
     35, 41.  
 Fortification, 264, 327, 419, 23, 6.  
 Fortune telling censured, 433.  
 Foster, Ann 308, 9.  
 Fowl abundant, 51.  
 Fowler, Abigail noted school  
     mistress, 479.  
 Foy, Wm. 390.  
 Franklin, Wm. executed, 164.  
 Franklin, Benjamin 479.  
 Freeman to aid in assessing  
     taxes, 178.  
 Freemen must be church mem-  
     bers, 54—all of them meet at  
     Court of Election, 65—pro-  
     posed that one tenth of them  
     elect the Rulers, 132—special  
     meeting of them, 72—no long-  
     er to meet at Court of Elec-  
     tion, 219—conditions of being  
     freemen less restricted, 22—  
     those desirous to become free-  
     men to hand in their names  
     to Gen. Court, 44.  
 French feared, 59, 398—exclud-  
     ed from N. America, 461.  
 French Protestants, 283, 7, 302.  
 French neutrals, 447, 8, 9, 50,  
     5, 64, 9.  
 Friends, 192—laws against  
     them, 3, 6—punished, 7, 8, 9,  
     200, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7, 8, 10,  
     3, 4, 6, 7—forbidden to vote,  
     20, 2, 5, 6, 9, 30, 2, 3,  
     5, 7, 9—laws against them  
     revived, 50—their question  
     as to wearing hats in pray-  
     er time, 2—prosecuted, 4,  
     7, 8, 66, 72, 89, 323, 42—  
     agree to have no tomb stones  
     or rails for their graves, 55, 7  
     —to aid in buying land for a  
     meeting house in Boston, 8,  
     63, 70, 86, 7, 425—to affirm  
     for an oath, 54, 537.  
 Friend, Capt. cast away, 510.  
 Frontiers threatened by enemy,  
     338.  
 Frost, John 451.  
 Frozen to Baker's Island, 474.  
 Fry, John and Eunice 311.  
 Fry, Joseph Collector, 440.  
 Fry, Peter keeps Grammar  
     School—salary, 440—Collec-  
     tor, 2, 70, 1, 90.  
 Fuller, Samuel comes to attend  
     the sick, 9.  
 Fuller, Daniel to be ordained,  
     476.  
 Fully, (p. 28) explained, 521.  
 Fund for two public vessels, 449.  
 Fund, ministerial—incorpora-  
     tion of it desired, 470.  
 Funeral solemnities for King  
     Wm. 336.  
 Funerals—order of them, 329,  
     36, 547.  
 Fur trade, 35.  

G.

 Gage, Gen. 487—comes hither, 8.  
 Gale, Wm. school master, 440.  
 Gallop, Benjamin 294.  
 Gamesters, forfeit, 176.  
 Gardiner, Christopher 55, 9.  
 Gardner, Geo. and Richard 198.  
 Gardner, Thomas Deputy, 110,  
     20, 61, 2.  
 Gardner, Ann marries Governor  
     Bradstreet, 265, 326, 56.  
 Gardner, Ebenezer d. 281.  
 Gardner, Joseph 241, 2, 5, 6, 8  
     —killed, 51, 326, 56.

- Gardner, John 246, 537.  
 Gardner, George 223, 46, 67, 81.  
 Gardner, Samuel 234, 6, 47, 70,  
   2, 80—d. and f. 95, 537, 42.  
 Gardner, Richard 246, 308.  
 Gardner, Samuel jr. 282, 301,  
   6, 17, 28, 30, 4, 7, 8, 40, 4,  
   52, 6, 60, 74—d. and f. 8.  
 Gardner, Thomas sen. 229—d.  
   and f. 46, 52, 95.  
 Gardner, Thomas jr. moves to  
   Nantucket, 229, 46, 543.  
 Gardner, Thomas d. and f. 322,  
   88.  
 Gardner, John 345, 62, 8, 70, 1,  
   2—d. and f. 4, 8.  
 Gardner, John 421, 3, 4, 6, 8,  
   35, 6, 76.  
 Gardner, Samuel 438—d. and f.  
   74.  
 Gardner, Daniel 440, 51.  
 Gardner, Sylvester, 466.  
 Gardner, Jonathan sen., d. and  
   f. 520.  
 Gardner, Jonathan jr. 499, 500.  
 Gardner, Henry Receiver Gen-  
   eral, 494.  
 Garford, Jarvis 155, 61.  
 Garrisons for women, children  
   and aged, 230—to secure far-  
   mers, 52.  
 Gazette issued here, 472—mov-  
   ed to Cambridge, 94—repub-  
   lished here, 509.  
 Gaskin, Samuel 198, 200, 5.  
 Gedney, Bartholomew 202, 60,  
   1, 5, 6, 7, 71, 7, 83, 5, 9, 91,  
   2, 4, 6, 7, 8, 9, 301, 5, 6, 9,  
   10, 5, 6, 7, 8, 21, 4, 5, 8—d.  
   and f. 9.  
 Gedney, Eli 265.  
 Gedney, John 282—d. and f.  
   9, 329, 528, 34.  
 Gedney, Eleazer and Ann, 326.  
 Gedney, Wm. d. and f. 394.  
 Gee, Joshua 405, 25.  
 George, Saggamore 180.  
 George I. proclaimed, 358—d. 84.  
 George II. proclaimed, 384, 425.  
 George III. proclaimed, 456.  
 German emigrants, 489, 40.  
 Gerrish Benjamin first naval of-  
   ficer here, 271, 2—Collector,  
   77, 81, 4, 5, 7, 93, 5, 8, 330—  
   d. and f. 56.  
 Gerrish, Joseph ordained, 247,  
   58, 87, 341, 58, 60, 2, 3, 7.  
 Gerrish, Wm. 247—d. 86.  
 Gerrish, Benjamin 356, 423, 6  
   —d. 43.  
 Gerrish, John school master,  
   424.  
 Gerry, Elbridge 497.  
 Ghatman, Francia' petition, 391.  
 Gibbon's, Edward 99, 123, 51,  
   2, 521.  
 Gibbs, Henry 305, 66, 451, 4, 8.  
 Gibbs, Henry 444, 5—clerk of  
   the House 6, 9, 53—d. 4.  
 Gibbs, Gregory granted land to  
   make bricks, 534.  
 Gilbert Thomas 193, 220.  
 Gingle, John 211.  
 Gloucester petition, 271—pas-  
   sage made by tide through the  
   beach there, 340, 1.  
 Glover, Jonathan 484.  
 Goats used commonly, 120, 528.  
 Goff, John 37.  
 Goff, Christopher 280.  
 Goldsmith, Richard killed, 540.  
 Goldthwait, Thomas 104.  
 Goldthwait, Samuel d. in service,  
   452.  
 Gold rings given at funerals, 441.  
 Good, Sarah 303—hung, 6.  
 Goodale, Nathan on parole, 506,  
   10, 4, 5.  
 Goodhue, Benjamin 498—d. and  
   f. 518.  
 Goodhue, Benjamin jr. 507, 9,  
   10, 4, 8.  
 Goodhue, Wm. d. 515.  
 Goods payable for debts, 129,  
   31—profit on, 55.  
 Goodman and good wife, 56.

- Gookin, Daniel 281.  
 Gorges, Ferdinando 9, 12, 47, 59, 109.  
 Gorges, Ferdinando 260, 6.  
 Gorton, Samuel's sentence, 161.  
 Gospel among the Indians, 365, 457.  
 Gospeller, wanton, 176.  
 Gott, Charles 27, 74, 113, 32, 221, 79.  
 Gott, Charles jr. 221.  
 Gould, James 482.  
 Governor and Assistants to be chosen by General Court, 67.  
 Governor to reside near Boston, 191—addressed by Gen. Ct. for the first time, 223—voted for first time by the people, 508.  
 Grafton, Joseph 121, 66, 85, 235—d. 74, 82, 528, 38.  
 Grain, price of, 50, 4, 9, 61, 9, 128, 30, 55, 68, 78, 90, 9, 216, 23, 31, 67, 71, 97, 316, 77, 9, 82, 4, 9, 94, 8, 9, 407, 10, 1, 4, 20—scarce, 38—not to be distilled, 501, 30, 1.  
 Grants of ten acre lots discontinued, 95.  
 Grasshoppers abound, 229.  
 Graves, Thomas 21, 2, 6, 48, 523.  
 Graving place, 215.  
 Gray, Robert imprisoned, 237.  
 Gray, Harrison not to receive taxes, 492.  
 Gray, Capt. lost some of his crew, 513, 4.  
 Green, Joseph ordained,—salary,—330, 1, 5, 57—d. 60, 5.  
 Greenwich hospital,—duties paid to it by fisherman, 474 and by seamen, 548.  
 Greenwood, John's sermon objected to by General Court, 396.  
 Grievances of the people, 466.  
 Groton inhabitants, who had been among the Indians thirty years, 416.  
 Guard to be left in each town while the freemen are at the Court of Elections, 96, 102.  
 Gun powder treason for observance, 225—commemorated, 470.  
 Guns carried to the Fort, 538.
- H.  
 Hacker, George 330.  
 Hadlock, Nathaniel 235.  
 Hair, long—forbidden, 181.  
 Hale, John 229—ordained, 30, 43, 58, 311, 5, 48.  
 Hall, Mr. 472.  
 Hall, Mr. 479.  
 Hamilton, Walter tried for murder, 410.  
 Hammered money, 439.  
 Hancock, John 479, 91, 7, 508.  
 Harbour to be fortified, 227—to be stopped against the British, 497.  
 Hardy, John 267, 72.  
 Hardy, Joseph sen. 543.  
 Harnet, Edward 198.  
 Harradan, Doct. 295.  
 Harradan, Jonathan's great bravery, 508, 16.  
 Hart, Elizabeth 304.  
 Hart, Benjamin advertizes the running of a coach, 479.  
 Harris, George 526.  
 Harvard, John 112.  
 Haskell, John moved to Rochester, 540.  
 Hasket, Elias 250—Gov. of Providence, 337, 540.  
 Hastie, James going to the British, 501.  
 Hathorn, Wm. 102, 4, 10, 1, 3, 4, 5, 9, 20, 1, 3, 7, 8, 9, 30, 1, 51, 2, 3, 4, 5, 7, 8, 62—Speaker, 3—Commissioner, 7, 8, 71, 2, 3, 8, 9, 80, 1, 2, 3, 5, 6, 8, 9, 90, 2, 5, 7, 9, 201, 2, 4, 6, 7, 8, 10, 1, 2, 4, 5—Assistant, 8, 25, 7—ordered to London by the King, 8, 9, 32—his

- victory over Indians, 55, 60,  
1—d. and f. 70, 532, 4.
- Hathorn, Eleazer 270—d. and  
f. 543.
- Hathorn, John 212, 55, 65, 73  
Assistant and Judge, 7, 82, 91,  
2, 5, 6, 7, 8, 301, 5, 6, 15, 6,  
7, 24, 5, 8, 30, 2, 3, 5, 6, 7,  
42, 53—d. and f. 63, 542.
- Hathorn, Ebenezer 353, 63.
- Hats, cornered—fashionable,  
399.
- Haughton, Henry Elder, 29—d.  
39, 52, 194.
- Hawkes, Hannah 310.
- Hawkes, Sarah 311.
- Haverhill surprised by enemy,  
345, 546.
- Hawkins, Thomas pirate, 294.
- Haynes, John 85.
- Hay cut short, 438, 59—pay for  
weighing it, 81.
- Hemp wild to be manufactured,  
131.
- Henchman, Daniel 253, 80.
- Henchman, Nath'l ordained, 371.
- Henfield, Edmund 270.
- Henfield, Lydia aged, d. 481.
- Hewson, Mr. 52.
- Hibbins, Wm. 130.
- Hibbins, Ann hung, 192.
- Hicks, Joshua Coroner, d. 452,  
548.
- Higginson, Francis 13, 4—sala-  
ry, 5—plea for planting N. E.,  
6, 21, 7—describes the Colo-  
ny, 30, 1—d. 42 to 6, 67,  
522.
- Higginson, Ann's letter, 525.
- Higginson, Francis, 46, 168.
- Higginson, John 99, 205—or-  
dained, 7, 11, 2, 4, 7, 8, 9,  
20, 30, 2, 5, 6, 8, 40, 3—tried  
about Mr. Nicholet, 5, 6, 7, 8,  
9, 51, 3, 8, 63, 5, 7, 72, 8, 9,  
81, 3, 4—his testimony about  
Gov. Andros, 90, 314, 5—his  
testimony about Salem, 8, 30,  
3, 43—d. and f. 6, 65, 9, 530,  
5, 6, 7, 9, 40, 4.
- Higginson, John jr. 248, 52, 78,  
90, 1, 6, 7, 8, 301, 6, 34, 8, 42,  
9, 51, 2, 3, 6, 7, 8, 9, 60, 5,  
6, 7—d. and f. 9, 546.
- Higginson, Nathaniel 343, 9.
- Higginson, Nathaniel 355, 7, 69.
- Higginson, John 3d, d. and f.  
365, 6, 78.
- Higginson, John 366, 79, 82, 6  
—d. and f. 427.
- Higginson, John 427, 35—d.  
and f. 91.
- Higginson, Stephen 482, 519.
- Higginson, Henry 507, 9, 10, 2.
- Highlanders, a Regiment of  
them, 452.
- Hiller, Joseph 377.
- Hiller, Joseph 509, 11.
- Hilliard, Joseph 415.
- Hilliard, Edward and David  
building a Rope walk, 438.
- Hirst, Wm. 315, 21—d. and f.  
64, 96.
- Hitchcock, Enos ordained, 480.
- Hoar, Dorcas 304, 8, 9.
- Hobart, Jeremiah and Joshua,  
231.
- Hobbs Abigail 303, 8, 9.
- Hobbs, Deborah 309.
- Hobbs, Mary 303.
- Hobbs, Deliverance 304.
- Hobbs, Wm. 303, 4.
- Hobbs, Wm. 309.
- Holden, Randal 161.
- Holder, Christopher 195, 6.
- Holgrave, John 65, 74, 5, 6,  
525, 6, 7, 8.
- Holliman, Ezekiel 88, 113.
- Holliman, Mary 122.
- Holman, Samuel 482.
- Hollingworth, Richard 299,  
529.
- Hollingworth, Richard 244, 5.
- Hollingworth, Wm. 219.
- Hollis, Thomas benefaction, d.  
395.
- Holmes, Obadiah baptist, 184,  
532.
- Holt, Nathan to be ordained,  
454.



- Holyoke, Edward ordained, 362, 406, 14.  
 Holyoke, E. A, 362, 500, 7, 18.  
 Hood, Hope 292.  
 Hooker, Thomas 60, 83, 132, 347.  
 Hooks and poles for fire, 333.  
 Hooper, Robert 488.  
 Hoops, worn—reduced 447.  
 Hope, Indian slave, 121.  
 Hopkins, Daniel 476, 92, 5, 6, 501, 2, 4.  
 Horn, John 132, 97—d. and f. 79, 527.  
 Horses used without leave, 176 —price of them, 257.  
 Herse racing forbidden, 240.  
 Hospitals, 484—one to be in great pasture, 5, 7, 501.  
 Hounds to be brought from England, 172.  
 House of correction to be built, 25—ordered in each County, 191, 277.  
 Houses to be built for ministers, 14.  
 House of Rep. charged with disobedience to her Majesty, 342 —ask for redress, 5—dissolved, 70, 3—disagree with Gov. 6—dissatisfied with their removal from Boston—memorial to the King, 88, 9—reproved, 90—invited to commencement dinner, 429—disallow a member of their body to be taken by a writ, 34—resolve as to their rights, 75—prorogued, 7, 8—remonstrates, 9—meet here—dissolved, 89.  
 How, Abigail 307.  
 How, Ephraim wrecked, 258.  
 How, Elizabeth hung, 306, 7.  
 How, James and Mary 307.  
 Hubbard, Wm. 157, 275, 8, 310, 48.  
 Hughes, Arthur bellman for the night, 540.  
 Hull, John mint master, 186, 215, 30.  
 Humphrey, John 7, 47, 66, 76, 93, 115, 21, 56, 60, 239, 525, 30, 4.  
 Hunt, Thomas 84.  
 Hunt, Mr. 322.  
 Huntingdon, John jr. ordained —salary, 462—d. 7.  
 Husbands, living in Mass. without their wives, ordered home, 178.  
 Hutchinson, Ann 87, 99, 108, 10—banished, 1, 8, 34.  
 Hutchinson, Richard plougher, 107.  
 Hutchinson, Edward 419.  
 Hutchinson, Thomas Gov. 479, 83, 7, 8.
- I.
- Idlers to be excluded from the Colony, 25.  
 Illumination—spiritual—forbidden, 175.  
 Immoralities, 238.  
 Impressment of men, 70, 6, 251, 2, 324, 37—of a man makes great excitement, as a violation of Provincial rights, 71.  
 Incendiaries, 259.  
 Incest punished, 270.  
 Independence celebrated, 519.  
 Indians to have the Gospel, 11, 2, 4—their claim to the soil to be purchased, 22, 4—an account of them, 31, 47, 51—feared, 8—small pox destroys them, 62, 4—troublesome, 104, 2—their plantation, 24—conspiracy, 55, 65, 71—forbid to powaw, 5, 87—war with them—some of them to be educated at College—catechism for them, 9, 206, 50—reward for them, 2, 4—when to visit the town, 63—where to live, 71, 92—war with them, 4—trade with them, 316—war, 8, 21, 7, 32—combine at Eastward, 3, 42, 53, 5—some sold, 60, 70, 1, 4, 7, 9, 81, 3, 5, 419, 23, 6, 8,

- 9, 32, 6, 40, 4—war with them, 6—design to attack Salem, 521.
- Indian town, 319.
- Indian Deed, 543.
- Influenza, 457.
- Ingalls, Ephraim 415.
- Ingersoll, Richard, 527—d. and f. 31.
- Ingersoll, John 265.
- Ingersoll, George 265—killed, 544.
- Ingersoll, Richard cast away, 273.
- Ingersoll, Nathaniel drowned, 273.
- Ingersoll, Nathaniel d. and f. 367, 544.
- Ingersoll, Capt's stratagem, 515.
- Inhabitants numbered, 257.
- Inhabitants, original list of them, 548.
- Innholders and retailers here, 510.
- Inoculation—excitement against it, 487.
- Insects devour, 438.
- Instructions to Rep. 280, 2, 92, 350, 70, 410, 5, 66, 75, 91, 9, 500, 2, 5, 13, 5.
- Instructions to Rep. to Congress, 497, 8.
- Instructors of schools to be of correct faith and conduct, 189.
- Insurance office, first, 505.
- Insurrection against Gov. Andros, 291.
- Interest at 6 instead of 8 per cent, 315.
- Irish settlement, 371—families fled hither, 3—emigrants, 92, 440.
- Iron and steel, 162.
- Iron works, 167, 245.
- Island in S. River, 543.
- Islands—Baker and Misery—sold, 395.
- Ives, Benjamin Lt. of Province Snow, 450.
- J.
- Jackson, John 101, 528.
- Jackson, George Doct. 395.
- Jacobs, George 304, 5—hung, 7, 8, 10.
- Jacobs, Margaret 304, 5, 10.
- Jacobs, Rebecca 305, 10.
- James, ship—arrives, 61.
- James II. proclaimed, 280, 1, 3—confirmed the title of the Colonists to their lands, 7—his kingdom invaded by the Prince of Orange, 9, 324.
- James, Wm. 122.
- James, Joseph a hostage, 458.
- Jeffries, Wm. 9.
- Jeffrey, James jr. 436, 8, 40—d. and f. 5.
- Jeffrie's Creek to be a village, 127—to be called Manchester, 67—road thither, 74.
- Jeggles, Daniel taken by the French, 295.
- Jeggles, Thomas 231.
- Jennison, Wm. ordained, 386—leaves his people, 413, 548.
- Jesuits, law against them, 334, 545.
- Jewett, Mr. Rev. 427.
- Johnson, Arabella, d. 47, 522.
- Johnson, Isaac 522.
- Johnson, Francis 532.
- Johnson, Edward 241.
- Johnson, Elizabeth 310.
- Johnson, Elizabeth jr. 311.
- Johnson, Stephen 311.
- Johnson, John 286.
- Johnson, Timothy 416.
- Johnson, Gen's victory, 446.
- Jones, John 83.
- Jones, Margaret hung, 179.
- Josselyn, John 523, 37.
- Journals of family employment, 24.
- Journal of Louisbourg siege, 434.
- Judgments on the land, 250.
- Judges having salary of the Crown are unpopular, 484, 6.

- Judicial business to be done in the King's name, 216.  
 Jury, no trial for life without it, 65.
- K.
- Keift, Wm. Gov. 160.  
 Kempe, John sold as a slave, 122.  
 Kempis, Thomas a to be printed, 237.  
 Kenniston, Allen 315, 531.  
 Kent, John taken by pirates, 294.  
 Kent, Richard 378.  
 Ketch going for prisoners, 317.  
 Kidd, Wm. pirate, 332, 545.  
 King, William 111, 204, 5—renounces his connection with the Friends, 11.  
 King, Samuel 494, 8—killed, 508.  
 King, Daniel 530.  
 Kirman, John 523.  
 Kitchen, Robert, 294, 8, 9—d. and f. 355.  
 Kitchen, Edward 452—d. 68.  
 Kitchen, John 534.  
 Knight, Wm. 183.  
 Knight, John sen. 531.  
 Knight, Walter, 268.  
 Knolles, Hanserd, 130.
- L.
- Lacy, Mary 308, 9 and jr. 11.  
 Ladder for each house, 162.  
 Lamb, Simon's son drowned, 464.  
 Lambert, Ezra captured, 295.  
 Land, price of it, 120—for use of ministry, 359.  
 Lang, Richard 498, 519.  
 Larkham, Thomas 130.  
 Larremore, Thomas 339.  
 Latham, James 484, 5—defends his practice, 7.  
 Lathrop, Thomas 128, 68, 74, 6, 7, 88, 216, 9, 20, 1, 34, 5 killed, 50, 534.  
 La Tour, 73, 161—his case tried here, 3, 6.  
 Lawe, Francis, 191.  
 Lawrence, Gov. 447.  
 Laws proposed, 78—towns and Elders to decide on them, 127, 52, 67, 73, 5—published by *beat of drum*—93, 208.  
 Lawson, Deodat to preach at the Village, 274, 5—salary, 6, 85, 9, 543.  
 Leach, Lawrence 119—d. and f. 215, 536.  
 Leach, John 216, 86, 440—set off with Royal side, 3.  
 Leach, Richard 248, 59—d. and f. 86.  
 Leach, N. a dwarf, 478.  
 Leader, Richard 180, 3.  
 Leather clothing, 464.  
 Leavit, Capt. 40, 59.  
 Leavit, Dudley's ordination, 429, 30, 6, 45, 7—d. and f. 59, 62.  
 Lectures, at Taverns, 61—excitement about them, 125, 7—fine for not attending them, 80, 400, 13—to be in the forenoon, 539.  
 Leddra, Wm. 197—hung, 210.  
 Lee, Thomas 416, 7, 8, 9, 20—d. 435.  
 Legalists and Antinomians, 101, 2, 8, 11.  
 Leighing, Robert much excitement about his impressment, 371.  
 Lenthall, Robert's trial, 120.  
 Leslie, Col's expedition hither, 493.  
 Letters, 229—of House to the Colonies, 471—vote for it ordered to be rescinded, but was not, 2—subversive of government, 83—to General Court by E. Norris and S. Sharp, 533, 4.  
 Leverett, John 186, 249, 62.  
 Leverett, John 345.  
 Lexington fight, 494.  
 Library here, 457.

- Liddal, John 218.  
 Light house first in Mass., 356  
   —to be petitioned for, 479—  
   cost, 80.  
 Lindall, Timothy 273, 328—d.  
   31.  
 Lindall, James 328, 31, 66—d.  
   and f. 443.  
 Lindall, Timothy 331, 64, 6, 7,  
   8—speaker of House, 70, 2, 3,  
   80, 2, 3, 4, 95, 415, 34—d.  
   and f. 56.  
 Lindall, Caleb d. 441.  
 Linen, premium for its manufac-  
   ture, 129.  
 Liquors not to be sold at military  
   musters, 263.  
 Lisbon destroyed, 447.  
 List of the original inhabitants,  
   548 to 52—of members of the  
   first church, 52 to 6—of its  
   members to form other  
   churches, 57 to 60—of Epis-  
   copal society, 60, 1—of Dr.  
   Whitaker's church, 1—of Dr.  
   Hopkins' church, 1—of gradu-  
   ates, 1, 2—of vessels cleared,  
   2—of committee of correspon-  
   dence and safety, 4—of Revo-  
   lutionary soldiers, 5 to 9—of  
   privateers from, 9 to 71.  
 Loadstone sent from England,  
   529.  
 Lord, Wm. 120, 8, 62, 77, 85  
   —d. 242, 539, 40.  
 Lord, Joseph 325.  
 Lord, Benjamin 462.  
 Lord's supper once a month,  
   207, 57.  
 Losses by Indians, 258, 61.  
 Lotteries forbidden, 368—for ex-  
   pedition to Cape Breton, 431  
   —to aid Mass. forces, 503.  
 Louisbourg taken, 429.  
 Lyford, John 6, 10.  
 Lynde, Benjamin 337, 42, 3, 6,  
   53, 4, 5, 6, 8, 9, 63, 7, 70, 2,  
   5, 7, 8, 84, 91, 6, 404, 12—  
   d. and f. 28.  
 Lynde, Benjamin jr. 386, 7, 91,  
   2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7, 414, 5, 8, 21,  
   4, 41, 4, 6, 9, 54, 7, 67, 81—  
   d. and f. 511, 8, 22.  
 Lynde, Wm. d. 442.  
 Lynde, Joseph d. of wounds, 510.  
  
 M.  
 McGregor, James 371.  
 McKeen, James 371.  
 McSparran, 412, 6.  
 McGilchrist, Wm. 434, 80—d.  
   507.  
 McDaniel, Capt. 502.  
 Macay, Margaret aged, d. 476.  
 Magistrates chosen for life, 96,  
   128—and Deputies sit apart,  
   62—their travelling expenses  
   paid by the Colony, 237, 396  
   —and their children have a  
   right to Gospel ordinances,  
   526.  
 Maine called Yorkshire, 187.  
 Males taxed, 261—in town, 500.  
 Mandamus—Counsellors to be  
   treated as enemies, 495.  
 Man of war for Salem station,  
   464.  
 Manly, Capt. 497.  
 Manning, — 52.  
 Manning, Jacob 415.  
 Manning, Richard 491, 2.  
 Manning Nicholas Capt. of an  
   armed ketch, 541.  
 Manufactures domestic, 167—  
   foreign discouraged, 464, 70.  
 Map of the Colony, 225.  
 Marblehead, 30—to be a planta-  
   tion, 76—neck, 9, 96, 8—to  
   fortify itself, 162—to be set  
   off, 80—distressed, 477.  
 Market weekly, 70, 525.  
 Marine Society formed, 467.  
 Marriage to a wife's sister unlaw-  
   ful, 238—clandestine, 322—  
   by magistrates, 530.  
 Marsh, Rumney James 284.  
 Marsh, John 534.  
 Marston, John 254, 65, 85, 542.

- Marston, Mary** 310.  
**Marston, Manasseh** 301, 17, 34—d. 40.  
**Marston, Benjamin** 324—d. and f. 68.  
**Marston, Thomas** captured, 328.  
**Marston, Benjamin** 368, 84, 6, 92, 5, 435, 58.  
**Marston, Elizabeth** d. 458.  
**Martin, Susannah**, 304—hung, 6.  
**Massacre in Boston**, 479.  
**Mascoll, Capt.** killed, 500.  
**Mason, John** 59, 260, 8, 9.  
**Mason, Robert T.** his claim for land from N. River here to Piscataqua, 232, 73, 83.  
**Mason, Thomas** pilot, 321.  
**Mason, Thomas** coroner, 472.  
**Massachusetts Bay** did not formerly include Salem and vicinity, 34—divided into four counties, 158—its annual expence in resisting French and Indians—fort taken, 432—suspected by the King as intending to be independent of him, 74.  
**Massasoit**, 254.  
**Massey, Jeffery** 120, 8, 62—d. 256, 352, 525.  
**Massey, John** 256—d. 352.  
**Masts for the King**, 538.  
**Match used for flints**, 522.  
**Mather, Increase** 105, 25, 289, 360.  
**Mather, Cotton** 264, 348, 9, 58, 62, 5, 8, 73.  
**Mather, Nathaniel** d. 289.  
**Mather, Samuel** 405, 9.  
**Mattapan or Dochester**, 47.  
**Mattakeese or Yarmouth**, 115.  
**Matthews, Marmaduke** fined, 183.  
**Matthews, Mary** to be sold, 379.  
**Maul, Thomas** sentenced, 236, 66, 90, 323, 5, 55, 63, 4—d. 79, 538.  
**Maverick, Samuel** 41.  
**Mayhew, Jonathan**, 381—ordained, 435.  
**Measures to be proved**, 77.  
**Mechanics' work**, 48, 51, 81.  
**Meeting houses**—one to be built, 119, 77—its seats distributed, 95—to be erected, 238—one raised for Mr. Nicholet, 48—none to be built without leave of the County Court, or of Gen. Ct., 63, 6—one to be at the Village, 334, 66—new one for Mr. Fisk, 411—for Dr. Whitaker, 500, 27, 8, 9.  
**Memorabilia to be published**, 241.  
**Men impressed**, 545.  
**Menzie, John** 383—expelled, 4.  
**Merchandize to be valued**, 233.  
**Merchants to sell liquor**, 282.  
**Middle precinct** have a grant of land for their ministry, 352, 5, and the Village becomes a District, 441.  
**Middletown incorporated**, 387—church formed and minister ordained there, 93.  
**Miles, John** fined, 205.  
**Military stores seized**, 290—articles, 525, 6.  
**Milke, John** sweeper, 537.  
**Mill erected**, 100—on S. River, 205—to be on Forrest River, 409, 535, 7.  
**Miller's toll** 97.  
**Miller, Ebenezer** 416.  
**Mines**—search for them, 131.  
**Ministers to be called by the churches**, 234—meet here about sending an agent to England, 546.  
**Mint house**, 230.  
**Minute men**, 494.  
**Miser, d.** 412.  
**Mishawum or Charlestown**, 9.  
**Missionaries for Indians**, 176, 372, 98.  
**Mob release two prisoners**, 486—do damage here, 501.

- Mohawks feared, 51.  
 Money and beaver not to be exported with a permit, 56.  
 Money to be raised for soldiers, 450, 4, 5, 70, 502, 3, 7, 9, 11.  
 Moody, Deborah disciplined 160, 239, 530, 1.  
 Moody, Samuel missionary, 372.  
 Moody, Major discharged, 370.  
 Moore, John to have a half peck of corn from every family, 161.  
 Moorehead, Benjamin 415---d. 24.  
 More, Richard 272, 99.  
 Morrison, Jonathan captive, 452.  
 Mortality---bill of, 563.  
 Morton, Thomas sent to England, 8, 24---sentence, 47, 53, 9, 131, 65, 521.  
 Morton, Nathaniel's Memorial, 236.  
 Morton, Charles 346.  
 Moses, Eliezer tide waiter, 459.  
 (V) Moses, Henry 540.  
 Moulton, Robert overseer, 25, 105, 11, 71.  
 Moulton, Robert jr. (not sen.)---d. and f. 226.  
 Mourning to be disused, 464, 92.  
 Mr. and Mrs.---titles, 56, 523.  
 Murphy, Capt. 513.  
 Murrell, Sarah imprisoned, 304.  
 Muscles not to be made into lime, 547.  
 Mutineers, 301.
- N.
- Narragansets---expedition against them, 171.  
 Narraganset soldiers petition for land, 398, 536.  
 Naumkeag or Salem settled, 6, 27---its condition, 33.  
 Naval office---one in Mass., 259 in each sea-port, 334.  
 Naval stores for the King, 318---made in Mass., 40.  
 Neal, Francis sen. and jr. 265.  
 Neal, Jeremiah marshal, 298.  
 Neck not to be used for goats, 74.  
 Ned---Indian, 185, 532.  
 Needham, Anthony 198.  
 Needham, Capt. 517.  
 Negative vote yielded to the Assistants, 70, 159, 66, 86.  
 Negro slaves imported, 109.  
 Neill, Capt. 515.  
 Nelson, Thomas aged, 452.  
 Newhouse, Thomas 219.  
 Newman, Antipas, 220, 30, 58, 347.  
 News that the government here were accused in England, 59---that its charter was demanded by the King, 67---that its form was to be altered, 71, 8---that emigrants from England were stopped, 108, 21---that the Scots were at war with the English, 9---that there was civil war, 57.  
 New Style, 442.  
 Newton for seat of government, 49---its inhabitants desirous to move to Connecticut, 69.  
 Newton, Thomas chosen Attorney General, 360.  
 Nicholson, Joseph 205, 8.  
 Nicholson, Edmund 207.  
 Nichols, Robert 265, 6.  
 Nichols, Mr. 480.  
 Nicholet, Charles preaches here, 240, 1, 3, 5, 6, 7, 8, 9---leaves, 53, 63, 348.  
 Noddle, --- drowned, 523.  
 Non-intercourse with Britain voted here till the port of Boston is opened, 498---advised by the House, 9.  
 Norman, John 242, 538.  
 Norman, Richard 268.  
 Norris, Edward ordained, 127, 55, 73, 7, 84, 5, 8, 93, 6, 7---d. 200 to 2, 534, 5.  
 Norris, Edward jr. 127, 97, 202, 38---d. and f. 77.  
 Norris, Edward jr. 473, 501.  
 Norris, Edward jr. 474.

- Norton, (not Newton) George 72, 127.  
 Norton, John 166, 84, 91, 9, 201, 2, 7, 14.  
 Nowell, Increase 47.  
 Noyes, Nicholas—salary, 272—ordained, 5, 9, 302, 15, 28, 30, 3, 5, 45, 6, 8, 50, 3, 8, 62—d. 5, 400.  
 Nurse, Rebecca 303—hung and f. 6, 9, 54.  
 Nutting, John 369, 89, 93, 412, 24, 40, 4, 7, 56, 63, 73, 5, 81, 2.

O.

- Oath of fidelity, 64—of freemen, 5—of fidelity, 74, 186, 232—of allegiance, 61, 539.  
 Occum, Samuel Indian preacher, 465.  
 Odel, Sarah deaf and dumb received into the Church, 397.  
 Offley, Thomas Collector, 291.  
 Officers here, 102—under late government to cease, 496.  
 Oldham, John 6, 9, 27, 99, 347.  
 Oliver, Mary 117—prosecuted, 8, 528.  
 Oliver, Thomas 117, 535.  
 Oliver, Bridget accused of witchcraft, 265, 303.  
 Oliver, Andrew sen. 465, 83, 6.  
 Oliver, Andrew jr. 459, 62, 3, 4, 7, 9, 90, 507.  
 Olney, Thomas banished, 122.  
 Onslow, Arthur 426.  
 Order in the meeting house as to boys, 540, 2.  
 Orders to be published on Lecture days, 525.  
 Ordinaries—prices of their fare, 70.  
 Ordination at Lynn End, 369.  
 Organ first here, 425.  
 Orms, Capt. missing, 353.  
 Orne, (same as Horn) Joseph d. 437.  
 Orne, Timothy d. and f. 443.

- Orne, Timothy 443—d. and f. 70.  
 Orne, Samuel d. 491.  
 Orne, Joseph 507.  
 Osborn, Sarah imprisoned, 303.  
 Osgood, John and wife, 311.  
 Osgood, Peter 358, 9, 64, 6, 7, 70, 3, 7, 8, 93, 4, 407, 13—d. 43, 4.  
 Osgood, James ordained, 393.  
 Otis, James 457.  
 Overseers to employ the poor, 277—of land, 525.

P.

- Page, Margaret to be transported, 177.  
 Page, Samuel Rep. 518.  
 Pain, Wm. and Robert 159.  
 Pain, Wm. and Co. for taking porpoises, 418.  
 Pain, Thomas d. and f. 530.  
 Pain, Wm. 484.  
 Pain, Robert T. 489.  
 Palatines granted aid, 397.  
 Palfrey, Peter 6, 7, 48, 70, 4, 162—d. 219, 68.  
 Palfrey, Warwick d. and f. 450.  
 Palfrey, Warwick 499, 502.  
 Palmer, John 290.  
 Palmer, Walter indicted, 48, 9.  
 Pamphlets burned, 342—on instrumental music in public worship, 480.  
 Paper currency much depreciated—causes great distress, 426—improved, 44.  
 Papillon, Peter 374.  
 Parish first recommended, 414.  
 Parker, Thomas settles at Ipswich, 66.  
 Parker, Alice 304, 8—hung, 9.  
 Parker, Mary 308—hung, 9.  
 Parkman, Deliverance, 275, 95—d. 360.  
 Parliament not to be declared against, 163—its right to tax Massachusetts denied, 463.

- Parris, Samuel's salary, 293, 6, 303, 13, 5, 6, 7, 21, 4. .  
 Parris, Elizabeth 303.  
 Parsonage house, 269, 535.  
 Parsons, Mary tried for witchcraft, 184.  
 Party spirit, 457. .  
 Passage at Gloucester, 528.  
 Pastoral visits, 232.  
 Pasturage on the neck, 359, 86.  
 Patrick Daniel, 48.  
 Paupers to be relieved by their own towns, 424.  
 Pay signifies produce, 297.  
 Pay of Justices, 323—of Rep. and Council, 404, 14.  
 Peace declared, 329, 55, 7, 438, 9, 44, 61, 518.  
 Peach, John 299.  
 Pear tree of Gov. Endicott, 528.  
 Peas, Lucy a Gortonist, 161.  
 Peas, John moved to Enfield, 273.  
 Peas, Samuel killed, 294, 6.  
 Peas, Sarah 305.  
 Peel, Jonathan 505.  
 Pemberton, Thomas 461.  
 Pemberton, Ebenezer, 462.  
 Pen, James 77.  
 Penuicook granted to a company here, 220, 358, 536.  
 Pence to be imported, 337.  
 People fled hither from Indians, 252—many move hence, 495  
 Pequods—expedition against them, 99, 105—captives sent to Bermuda, 9.  
 Percy, (not Perry) Marmaduke, 125.  
 Perkins, Wm. 183, 532.  
 Perkins, Capt. 515.  
 Persecution in France, 331.  
 Persons—baptized in infancy—disciplined by the Church, 240—  
 —if pious and unable to attend public worship, may become members of the Church, 369, 70.  
 Pest house to be built 435.  
 Peters, Hugh 12, 83, 94, 5, 101, 2, 11—overseer of the College, 2, 3, 7, 9, 20—letter to Dorchester church, 1, 7, 30, 1—notice of him from 132 to 51, 200, 79, 526, 7, 8.  
 Peters, Andrew ordained, 393.  
 Petition, 228, 99, 315—for fort soldiers, 45—for damages of witchcraft, 51—for bridge over Noddle's Island to main land, 2—for a township, 68—to King on grievances, 482.  
 Petitioners in behalf of John Wheelright to be disarmed, 111.  
 Pew tax in Episcopal church, 469.  
 Phelps, Hannah admonished, 204.  
 Phelps, Nicholas 197, 9, 203, 12.  
 Philip—Indian King, 90—alain, 254.  
 Phillips, Mr. 119, 527.  
 Phillips, George's wife buried here, 522.  
 Phillips, Samuel 275, 338.  
 Phillips, Mary d. 338.  
 Phillips, Samuel ordained, 338.  
 Phippin, Joseph 265.  
 Phipps, Wm. 298, 9, 304, 18, 27, 32, 403.  
 Phipps, (not Phillips) Spencer Lt. Gov. 439, 47.  
 Pickering, John 104, 19.  
 Pickering, Wm. to command a Province vessel, 344, 53.  
 Pickering, Jonathan's ship yard, 235.  
 Pickering, John 248, 65—d. and f. 317, 542.  
 Pickering, John 358, 62—d. and f. 74.  
 Pickering, Sarah aged d. 435.  
 Pickering, Timothy 374, 410, —d. and f. 502.  
 Pickering, John jr. 475, 7, 80, 1, 2, 3, 8, 91, 2, 5, 7, 9, 500, 2, 4, 7, 9.



- Pickering, Timothy jr. 493, 4, 7, 8, 9, 501.  
 Pickman, Nathaniel d. and f. 233.  
 Pickman, Caleb killed, 404.  
 Pickman, Benjamin 426, 7, 8, 9, 31, 2, 4, 49, 61, 5, 70, 1—d. and f. 85.  
 Pickman, Samuel d. 482.  
 Pierce, Wm, 40, 51, 100, 9—his almanack printed, 20, 1.  
 Pierce, James wounded, 438.  
 Pierce, Benjamin killed, 494.  
 Pierce, John 248, 52, 62.  
 Pierson, Abraham 529.  
 Pike, Robert 255.  
 Pilgrim, John d. 344.  
 Pilots for Salem, 519.  
 Pipon, John 291, 539.  
 Piracy prevails—death, 244.  
 Pirates, 278, 80, 1, 93, 4, 332, 9, 63, 74, 7, 8, 83, 5, 460, 543, 6, 7.  
 Pistareens become current, 442.  
 Pitt, Wm. honored—thanked, 467.  
 Places assigned for curriers, chandlers and butchers, 354.  
 Places for shops, 525.  
 Plague in London, 226.  
 Plaisted, Ichabod 368, 78, 82, 6, 446—goes to Crown Point, 7, 9, 53, 5, 8—d. and f. 60.  
 Plaisted, Ichabod d.—no gloves nor rings given at his funeral, 546.  
 Plaistow, Josiah loses his Mr. 523.  
 Plan of military exercise, 499.  
 Plantation desired by persons here, 204—at Casco, 66.  
 Platform—church, 182—approved by Gen. Ct. 4, 266.  
 Pledge for not buying Tea, &c. 477.  
 Plot to destroy the Royal family, 376.  
 Ploughing set up, 107.  
 Pneumatics lectured on, 476.  
 Poem by a young slave, 478.  
 Poland, Jacob stabbed, 460.  
 Polygamy—punishment of it, 317.  
 Poor house, 289, 331, 56.  
 Poor here granted land, 359—aided, 541.  
 Poor of Boston come hither, 496.  
 Pope, Joseph 198.  
 Popish plot, 262.  
 Porter, John 220, 33—d. 55, 530, 1, 41.  
 Porter, John jr. 226.  
 Port Royal to be attacked, 337.  
 Ports where vessels must unload, 273.  
 Portion—double—common for the first son, 246.  
 Posse comitatus summoned to rescue prisoners, 486.  
 Possession of property by "Turffe and Twigg," 322.  
 Post offices—one in Mass. 124, 260—proposed to be independent of parliament, 487—of Mass. under P. Congress, 95.  
 Post-day, 346.  
 Post-man's charges, 245.  
 Post, Hannah, Susannah and Mary 311.  
 Povey, Tho's proclamation, 339.  
 Powars, Gregory 516.  
 Powder and guns granted to Salem, 230.  
 Powder kept in every house, 449.  
 Powder house to be built, 499.  
 Powell, Michael 188.  
 Powell, Wm's petition, 497.  
 Pownal, Thomas, Gov. 452, 5.  
 Poynton, Thomas' petition, 450.  
 Pratt, Capt. 512.  
 Prayer, at town meeting, 448.  
 Presbyterianism, 161, 73.  
 Prescott, Benjamin ordained, 357, 62, 408, 25, 9, 35, 51.  
 Present for the King, 259.  
 Price, Walter 166, 204, 5, 16, 23, 5, 30, 6, 8, 9, 41—d. and f. 5, 86, 301, 536.

- Price, John 246, 62, 92, 4, 5, 6,  
7—d. and f. 301.  
Price, Theodore d. 241.  
Price, Walter 301, 45, 64, 78—  
naval officer, 92—d. and f. 5.  
Price, Roger Commissary of  
Episcopal churches, 397.  
Price Act, 565.  
Prices of articles, 385, 435, 69,  
503, 5, 6, 9.  
Prince, Richard 197, 210—d.  
49, 514.  
Prince, Thomas annals, 413.  
Prince, Jonathan Doct. d. 446.  
Prince, Jonathan Doct. d. 455.  
Prince, John ordained, 506.  
Prince of Wales' marriage cele-  
brated, 411.  
Printing press 120, 223.  
Printing office—first one here,  
472.  
Prison to be built, 219, 33, 74.  
Prisoners, French 429, 35.  
Prison ship where Americans  
suffer, 517.  
Privateers lost, 506, 8, 9, 11, 3,  
4, 5, 6, 7.  
Prize ship, 321.  
Prizes arrive, 497, 500, 1, 2, 3,  
4, 5, 6, 7, 8, 9, 10, 1, 2, 3, 4,  
5, 6, 8.  
Probate business performed by  
Gov. in Boston, 286.  
Procter, Benjamin 304, 7.  
Procter, Sarah 305, 7.  
Procter, John 303, 4—hung and  
f. 7.  
Procter, Elizabeth 303, 7.  
Procter, Thorndike an Elder,  
476.  
Produce abundant, 462.  
Profit allowed on goods, 62, 82.  
Project for emitting bills of  
credit, 402.  
Property valued here, 504.  
Proposals as to choice of Assist-  
ants and Governor, 48.  
Protestants—French and Ger-  
man naturalized, 395.  
Province loan, 373.  
Provincial affairs very critical,  
452, 4.  
Provisions scarce, 9, 42, 50, 8,  
9, 96, 438.  
Provisions not to be exported,  
250—price of, 389, 94, 8, 9,  
407, 10, 1, 4, 20.  
Psalm—how read and sung, 547.  
Publishment of intended mar-  
riages, 123.  
Pudeater, Ann 304, 8—hung 9.  
Pve, Jonathan d. 455.  
Punishment of boring the tongue,  
196—for blasphemy—for de-  
nying the Scriptures, 328, 9.  
Putnam, Ann 303.  
Putnam, John 245, 65, 82, 301  
—d. and f. 75, 529, 41, 2.  
Putnam Thomas 216, 69—d.  
and f. 332.  
Putnam, Jonathan 266.  
Putnam, Nathaniel 298, 300, 3,  
4, 5—d. and f. 34, 529.  
Putnam, Jonathan Rep. 352, 6.  
Putnam, Daniel to be ordained,  
370, 7, 81.  
Putnam, Israel (not Isaac) Gen.  
417.  
Putnam, Nathaniel Dea. d. 444.  
Putnam, Ebenezer Doct. 492.  
Purchase, Oliver 225.  
Pyncheon, Wm. 37, 182, 4, 525.
- Q.
- Quarantine for vessels, 177.  
Quebeck taken, 455.  
Queen's arms to be in the Court  
house, 337.  
Quelch, John pirate, 339, 91.  
Quit rents required of the Colon-  
ists, 287.  
Quota of men for Crown Point,  
446.
- R.
- Radcliff, Phillip 54, 9.  
Ralle, Sebastian to be seized,  
372—killed, 9.

- Randell, Anthony Doct. d. 339.  
 Randolph, Edward 262, 8, 71, 3, 6, 87, 8, 348.  
 Rates, 8, 48, 55, 6, 61, 70, 2, 5, 7, 82, 96, 100, 10, 2, 3, 20, 8, 54, 68—for College, 220—high for Indian war, 50—paid partly in produce, 9, 96, 7, 8, 300, 38, 44, 73, 82, 5, 6, 92, 9, 410, 1, 23, 4, 7, 44, 58, 81, 99, 501, 2, 3, 4, 5, 10, 5, 24, 7, 8, 35, 43, 4, 541.  
 Rates on cattle of Confederates repealed, 542.  
 Rawson, Edward 212, 81.  
 Rea, Daniel d. and f. 216, 35.  
 Read, Thomas Col. d. 218.  
 Reasons for Independence of Britain, 498.  
 Reasons for taking Pequod country, 527.  
 Records of wills, marriages, births and deaths to be kept, 123, 76.  
 Records, public—burnt, 435.  
 Recruits for Pequod war, 527.  
 Redford, Charles, d. 302.  
 Redington, Thomas sick soldier, 450.  
 Reed, Wilmot, 308—hung, 9.  
 Reves, Jane, 122.  
 Refugees to be treated as enemies, 496—their property to be under overseers, 7—not to return, 503—their estates to be sold, 6, 9—measures to prevent the restoration of their estates, 18.  
 Regal Style altered, 345—to be abolished 495.  
 Regiments—three in Mass. 152—to parade, 91—one of Essex to be divided, 267—becomes three, 97.  
 Register of deeds to be in each County, 360.  
 Reimbursement to Mass. for expenses in war, 439, 53.  
 Rejoicings public to be no longer paid for, 370.  
 Rejoicing for capture of Quebec, 455—of Montreal, 6—of Havanna, 9.  
 Religion low in the world, 216.  
 Rents for Grammar School, 333.  
 Repeal of Stamp Act commemorated, 469.  
 Representatives not chosen for Gen. Ct. 495—chosen for Congress, 7.  
 Resolves of American and Provincial Congress to be executed, 492.  
 Rests, 524.  
 Retreat for women and children, 155.  
 Revival of religion, 422, 5.  
 Reyner, John 189.  
 Rice, Nicholas and Sarah 305.  
 Richardson, Addison commands soldiers in the army, 507.  
 Riots on account of Stamp Act, 465, 6, 8, 9.  
 Roads—one from Salem to Andover, 229—to Marblehead, 538—over Ruck's Creek, 43.  
 Robbery to be death, 458.  
 Robinson, — hung, 204.  
 Robinson, John fined, 254.  
 Robinson, Capt. 510.  
 Robie, Thomas d. and f. 392.  
 Rogers, Ezekiel 181.  
 Rogers, John marshal 298.  
 Rogers, Nathaniel 328.  
 Rogers, John 328, 42.  
 Rogers, John 342, 80.  
 Rogers, Nathaniel 385.  
 Rogers, Daniel to be installed, 436.  
 Rogerson, Robert to be ordained, 415.  
 Roland, Capt. 501.  
 Rolfe, Benjamin killed, 345.  
 Roofs thatched, 522, 32.  
 Rootes Susannah imprisoned, 304.

- Rope walk erecting, 438.  
 Ropes, Samuel Deacon, 412.  
 Ropes, Benjamin Elder 476, 98.  
 Ropes, Jonathan jr. Rep. 488.  
 Ropes, Daniel treated severely by the British, 506.  
 Ropes, Benjamin jr. Lt. 501.  
 Ropes, David d. of wounds, 514, 5.  
 Ropes, Nathaniel 445, 56, 7, 9, 67, 81, 4—d. and f. 7. 9.  
 Ross, James captive, 382.  
 Roundheads, 161, 81.  
 Routh, Richard collector, 480.  
 Rowell, Thomas fined for not attending lecture, 180.  
 Row, ——— tarred and feathered, 473.  
 Royal, John 266.  
 Ruck, Thomas 205—d. 38.  
 Ruck, John 239, 45, 6, 98, 300, 7, 22—d. and f. 31, 537, 43.  
 Ruck, James 410, 76.  
 Ruck, Samuel 331, 406.  
 Russell, Richard 178.  
 Rust, Henry Rep. 518.  
 Ryall side people and others to have a meeting house built, 354.  
 Ryall-side set off, 443.  
 Rye first raised, 524.
- S.
- Sabbath—rules for its observance, 22—its violaters to be watched, 164—fine for profaning it, 89—not to be travelled on, 234—not to be violated by Taverners, 454.  
 Sack, 111.  
 Sagamores, John, 234, 319—James, 319 and George, 234, 319.  
 Sailors cleared from the charge of the murder of Lt. Panton, who tried to impress them, 475.  
 Sakers, 525.  
 Salary of Gov. 337, 87, 94, 5, 7, 9, 414.  
 Salaries of ministers to be made up, 380.  
 Sale of boards and timber limited, 103.  
 Salem's quota for Pequod expedition, 105—its population, 7—to obtain two drums, 71—bounds, 199—its land paid for to the Indians, 284—its houses—its taxable polls and inhabitants, 399—granted a township, 409—divided into four wards, 49—cleared from the charge of favouring the British and of cowardice, 96—depressed, 7—vote that Gen. Ct. form a Constitution, 500—some account of it 537, 47.  
 Salem Village's claim to Topsfield land, 284.  
 Salmon, Samuel fined, 207.  
 Salter, Theophilus fined for attempting to marry a young woman without consent of her friends, 189.  
 Salter, John pirate, 280.  
 Salt Petre to be made, 154.  
 Salt to be contracted for and made, 191.  
 Salt works at Ryall side, 114.  
 Saltonstall, Richard 155, 6, 200.  
 Sanderson, (not Sanders) Robert, 230.  
 Sargent, Epes 424—d. 60.  
 Sargent, Paul D. 502.  
 Sassacus, 106.  
 Savage Thomas 228, 369.  
 Scalps, 379—bounty for them, 434, 46.  
 Scarcity of wheat and flour, 215—of bread, 357, 530, 46.  
 Scarfs not to be given at funerals, 379.  
 Schooling for poor children, 161.

- Schools**—public, 177—a new one, 354, 5—donations to them, 389, 404, 13. 424—  
—scholars in them, 41, 82—  
what taught in Grammar school, 541.
- School house** to be built, 455, 6.
- Scolds** fined, 181—and railers to be gagged or ducked, 241.
- Scotland Society** for sending Gospel to the Indians, 398.
- Scott, Margaret** 308—hung, 9.
- Scouts**, 301—after Indians, 545.
- Scriptures** to be read in public worship, 413.
- Scruggs, Thomas** 95, 8, 100, 2, 11, 527.
- Sealers of Leather**, 534.
- Seal of the Colony**, 496.
- Seamen** assessed for Greenwich hospital, 403, 10, 548.
- Searchers of Coin**, 237.
- Seats** appointed in the meeting house for persons according to their repute, 544.
- Sedgwick, Robert** 235.
- Seirs, Ann** imprisoned, 304.
- Seizures**, 466, 9.
- Selectmen** to oversee disorderly families, 154—fined if absent, 210—accompany constables to prevent violation of the Sabbath, 57, 534.
- Sermon** condemned by Gen. Ct. 396.
- Servants** released, 42.
- Seven men**, 534.
- Sewall, Stephen** 281, 94, 5, 301, 29, 30, 9 52, 4, 6, 66, 71—d. and f. 81.
- Sewall, Mitchell** 382—d. and f. 437. & + 196, 206.
- Sewall, Stephen** 381. 247, 210
- Sewall, Joseph** 459, 70. 203
- Sexton's fee**, 195—to call for the minister on the Sabbath, 243.
- Shafin, Michael** 171.
- Sharp, Samuel Elder** 21, 48, 81, 104—d. 94, 525, 30.
- Sharp, Alice d.** 231, 535.
- Sharp, Thomas** 49.
- Sharp, Nathaniel** 231. 316.
- Shattock, Samuel** 196, 8, 9, 203, 13, 20, 35.
- Shawmat**—Boston, 27.
- Sheehen, Bryan** hung, 480.
- Sheep** to be increased, 167—not to be transported, 90—infected, 350.
- Sheldon, Godfrey** killed, 544.
- Shepard, Thomas** 83, 267.
- Shepard, Jeremiah** 251, 67, 302, 57,
- Shepard, Thomas** 540.
- Shimmin, Charles** schoolmaster, 481.
- Ship** built here, 130.
- Ship building**, 231—place for it, 5.
- Ship timber**, 529.
- Shirley, Wm. Gov.** 422, 43, 9.
- Shoes**, square toed going out of fashion, 415.
- Shoe strings** used, 415.
- Shuffling board**, 172, 6.
- Shute, Samuel** 365, 8, 71, 6, 7, 8, 81.
- Sibly, Mary** 303, 544.
- Sickness**—mortal, 9, 39, 49, 50, 210, 3, 5, 42, 63, 97, 316, 8, 57, 65, 77, 545.
- Sick** from Canada, 544.
- Signers** off, 441.
- Sign manuel of the King**, 475.
- Simpson, Frances**, fined, 205.
- Simmons, Thomas** his great bravery, 516.
- Six nations**, 432, 6.
- Skelton, Samuel** 11, 3, 4, 21, 8, 40, 8, 50, 2, 3, 7—objects to an association of ministers, 62, 4—d. 7, 164, 94—his servant lost—his children, 524.
- Skelton, Mts. d.** 51.
- Skerry, Henry** marshal, 227, 47, 544.
- Skinner, Walter** bell-man, 318.
- Slander** fined, 167.
- Slaves and servants**—laws about them, 338.

- Slaves duty on them, 340, 87.—  
advertized, 476—not to be im-  
ported, 83.
- Slavery forbidden, 175—abolish-  
ed in Mass. 508.
- Slaves or culprits, 113.
- Sloops of War to be built, 498.
- Small, John apprehended, 197.
- Small pox prevails 118, 229, 60,  
1, 2, 6, 82, 97, 301, 37, 53,  
72, 3, 94, 5, 432, 42, 3, 63,  
85, 500, 1.
- Smith, Ralph 14, 5—preached  
at Plymouth and Manchester,  
9, 20, 50.
- Smith, James 205—fined, 7.
- Smith, John 198—disturbs an  
assembly, 207, 54.
- Smith, Margaret 204, 6, 8.
- Smith, James (not John) 239.
- Smith, Mary 217.
- Smuggling, 463.
- Snelling, John 541.
- Snow, great, 323, 40, 436, 64.
- Soames, Abigail 304.
- Society for sending the Gospel  
to the Indians, 458, 68.
- Soldiers, disorderly to be pun-  
ished, 155—billeted, 298, 9—  
their families aided, 300—to  
be impressed, 33—to be levied,  
71—those in service 1690  
desire compensation, 403—  
for Cuba, 22—to be raised,  
95, 7, 8—raised as guards for  
Burgoyne's army, 501—for R.  
Island—for army—for Boston,  
3, 5—for Penobscot—to join  
D'Eating, 6, 7, 8, 9—for R.  
Island—for army, 11, 3—  
march to Haverhill, 46.
- Southwick, Cassandra 193, 6,  
7, 9, 203.
- Southwick, Daniel 197, 8—to  
be sold, 202, 4, 6, 27.
- Southwick, John 197, 8, 205.
- Southwick, Josiah 197, 9, 203.
- Southwick, Josiah 212, 27, 32,  
5, 54, 8.
- Southwick, Lawrence 193, 6, 7,  
9, 203.
- Southwick, Provided 198—to be  
sold, 202, 4, 6.
- Sow case, 159.
- Spanish vessels to be captured,  
417.
- Sparhawk, Nathaniel 384, 94.
- Sparhawk, John ordained, 412,  
3—d. and f. 45.
- Sparhawk, John 445, 70.
- Speaker of House confirmed by  
Lt. Gov. 382.
- Spinners ordered in all families,  
192.
- Spirituuous liquors ruinous, 419.
- Spooner, Thomas fined, 205.
- Sprague, Ralph, Richard and  
William settle Charlestown,  
9, 26.
- Sprague, Joseph 498.
- Squib, Capt. his dispute, 41.
- Stackhouse, Richard 188.
- Stagg, Capt. captures a vessel,  
163.
- Stage through Salem from Bos-  
ton to Portsmouth, 479.
- Stamps—for bills, 344.
- Stamp papers, 465.
- Standish, Miles 8.
- Stanley, Thomas 98.
- Stanley, Matthew of Lynn, fined  
for gaining the love of a young  
woman without consent of her  
parents, 181.
- Stanton, Thomas 189.
- Stanton, Robert 367—ordained,  
8—d. 84.
- Stares, black for Constables,  
248.
- Steel, 143.
- Stevenson—hung, 204.
- Stevens, Capt. 456.
- Steward, Antipas schoolmaster,  
482.
- Stileman, Elias sen. 216, 536.
- Stileman, Elias jr. 216, 40.
- Stockholders—their privileges,  
35.

- Stocks to be built, 195, 289, 384, 528, 42.  
 Stock proposed for buying and selling corn in time of scarcity, 546.  
 Stoddard, Anthony and Solomon, 533.  
 Stone, John 126, 526.  
 Stone, Robert 208.  
 Stone, Robert taken by the Dutch, 244.  
 Stone, Nathan ordained, 396.  
 Stone, Samuel 415.  
 Store house, 25.  
 Storm great, 79, 120.  
 Story, Isaac ordained, 480.  
 Stoughton, Israel 87, 105.  
 Stoughton, Wm. 310, 36.  
 Strangers not to be freely entertained, 110—suffering, 300, 539.  
 Streets laid out, 467, 9, 71—main to be paved, 83—names of them, 563, 4.  
 Strong water sent over, 26—not to be sold without license, 60 not in an ordinary, 111—persons to sell it, 3.  
 Students to be employed, 175.  
 Suicides to be buried in the high way, 208.  
 Supper evening, 546.  
 Supplies for the army, 495, 6, 7, 503, 5, 7, 8, 9, 11.  
 Suttonian method, 434.  
 Swearers to be punished, 26.  
 Swine keepers, 127.  
 Swine not to be fed on good corn, 61, 76—to be ringed and yoked, 536.  
 Sminnerton, John d. 300, 544.  
 Symmes, Zechariah, ordained, 274.  
 Symmes, Wm. to be ordained, 453.  
 Symmes, Mr. ordained 545.  
 Symonds, Samuel Lt. Gov. 159, 219, 338.  
 Symonds, Francis 480.  
 Symonds, John 501.  
 Synod first, 110, 60, 73, 4—result, 81, 4, 93, 214, 5, 7, 63, 4—allowed, 360—forbidden, 80, 542.
- T.
- Talbot ship—arrives, 15, 35.  
 Talby, Dorothy, 109—hung, 17.  
 Talby, John 122.  
 Tanners only had traded in hides, 241.  
 Tapley, John 459.  
 Tapley, Gilbert d. and wife, 546.  
 Tarrentines excite alarm, 55—attack Ipswich, 522.  
 Tavern set up, 110.  
 Taxes, 175.  
 Taxable persons, 261, 72, 99.  
 Taxation without consent of Gen. Ct. resisted, 287.  
 Taylor, Mary 311.  
 Tea licensed, 459—ordered away, 90—licensed, 513.  
 Temple, (Thomas ?) 212.  
 Temple, John 463.  
 Tempests, 231.  
 Thanksgiving, 42, 51, 7, 60, 9, 109, 10, 5, 51, 90, 3, 204, 11, 6, 26, 8, 31, 2, 7, 43, 54, 9, 87, 96, 301, 6, 16, 23, 4, 8, 31, 67, 77, 85, 429, 32, 55, 9, 60.  
 Thatcher, Anthony, 79.  
 Thatcher, Thomas 236.  
 Thatcher, Peter's installation, 369.  
 Thaxter, Joseph 294.  
 Theatres forbidden, 440.  
 Thief sold, 334.  
 Thirteen men, 527.  
 Thomas, James ship seized, 287.  
 Thomson, Maurice (not Merrice) 121.  
 Thomson, Archibald drowned, 529, 30.  
 Thornton, James his premium, 377.  
 Throat distemper, 411.  
 Throgmorton, John, 122.

- Tide remarkable, 378.  
 Tide waiters, 459.  
 Tithingmen, 257.  
 Title of Mr. and Mrs. 523.  
 Tituba, an Indian, 303.  
 Tobacco cultivated here, 12—  
   forbidden, 8, 54, 8, 70, 4.  
 Tomkins, Mary 222.  
 Tonnage, 167, 264, 449.  
 Tookey, Job 310.  
 Topsfield, 179, 83.  
 Toppan, Bezaleel d. and f. 461.  
 Torrey, Joseph 416.  
 Town to be built and fortified, 22.  
 Townsmen to attend meetings  
   in person or by *proxy*, 189.  
 Townsman factious,—disfranchised, 265.  
 Town house for a school and the  
   watch, 534, 40, 1.  
 Town agree to be taxed for the  
   ministers, 535.  
 Towns voluntarily without min-  
   isters, to be prosecuted, 360.  
 Townships—conditions on which  
   they are granted, 409—one at  
   Narraganset had been set off to  
   Salem, 11.  
 Town, Wm. 308, 544.  
 Trade with England free, 153—  
   with ports of the King forbid-  
   den, 83—articles of it, 5, 92  
   decayed—illicit, 343, 53, 7,  
   66—to be stopped with Canso,  
   71—of Province, 97, 410—  
   illicit, 46.  
 Training field, 357.  
 Trask, Wm. 48, 70, 80, 2, 95,  
   8, 100, 2, 5, 8, 20, 1, 7, 61, 71,  
   9, 99—d. and f. 227, 523, 5—  
   petition for Pequod land, 36.  
 Trask, Mary imprisoned, 204, 8.  
 Trask, Henry 198, 254.  
 Trask, Samuel captive, 380.  
 Trask, John 537.  
 Treasury public, 397, 9, 400, 2  
   —much trouble about sup-  
   plying it, 3, 17, 8, 9—of State,  
   510.  
 Trial by jury in Admiralty Court  
   not allowed to Mass. 468.  
 Troops to aid against the Dutch,  
   222—of N. E. their part in  
   the capture of Louisbourg mis-  
   represented in England, 431,  
   4—for eastern frontiers, 40—  
   British come hither, 89—  
   march to Court house to pre-  
   vent choice of delegates, 90  
   march to Boston, 1—come  
   hither from Marblehead to  
   seize military stores, 3.  
 Truck masters, 386.  
 Truth held forth, 323.  
 Tucker, Samuel 511.  
 Tufts, John 334, 406, 546.  
 Turner, Nathaniel of Saugus, 98.  
 Turner, Robert 185.  
 Turner, John 280 and f. 7,  
   302.  
 Turner, John 267, 335, 9, 45,  
   56, 63, 72, 4, 8, 84, 95, 6, 8,  
   414, 8, 9, 21—d. and f. 2,  
   40, 545.  
 Turner, John Rep. 451, 3.  
 Turner, John 510.  
 Twelve men, 527.  
 Tyler, Mary and Hannah, 310.  
  
 U.  
 Underhill, John 48, 84.  
 Uniform for Province vessels,  
   498.  
 Union of Colonies proposed, 156  
   —formed, 8—of Provinces vot-  
   ed, 435, 45.  
 Usher, John 288.  
  
 V.  
 Vane, Henry 95, 7, 99, 108, 525.  
 Vans, Wm. 491, 514.  
 Veils left off, 64.  
 Venison—its sale restricted, 111.  
 Venner, Thomas executed, 209.  
 Veren, Jane prosecuted 118.  
 Veren, Hilliard 197—officer of  
   customs, 220, 64, 5—d. and  
   f. 75, 535.



- Veren, Hilbard jr. 246, 75, 380.  
 Veren, Phillip 275, 526.  
 Veren, Phillip 219, 20.  
 Veren, Nathaniel 331.  
 Veren, Richard 534.  
 Version of Tate and Brady, 431  
     —to be sung, 42.  
 Very, Jonathan 439.  
 Vessel goes hence to Fayal, 156.  
 Vessels—foreign—to pay for ton-  
     nage, 229—taken by French,  
     95—must have a pass from  
     the Fort, 328—captured, 455,  
     6, 8—armed against the Bri-  
     tish, 97—overset 523—sprung  
     aleak, 8—rigged as schooners,  
     46.  
 Victory over French, 425, 53—  
     over Gen. Burgoyne, 501.  
 Village granted, 119—enlarged,  
     24—another granted, 59—  
     called New Meadows, 71—  
     called Topsfield, 9.  
 Violators of non-importation  
     pledge, 478.  
 Virginia's Resolutions against  
     the Stamp Act, 482, 3.  
 Voters qualifications, 450.  
 Voting with Corn, 267.  
  
     W.  
 Wadsworth, Benjamin ordained-  
     ed, 482.  
 Wait, Richard, 225.  
 Wake, Wm. presented for living  
     away from his wife, 184.  
 Walcott, John, 525.  
 Walcott, William 122.  
 Walcott, Henry 301.  
 Walcott, John to go against the  
     enemy, 298.  
 Walcott, Jonathan 269, 94.  
 Walcott, Jonathan Rep. 394.  
 Walcott, John Rep. 414—d. and  
     f. 34, 5.  
 Walcott, Josiah 322, 32, 5, 9,  
     42, 5, 51, 73, 4, 6—d. 91.  
 Waldo, John killed, 460.  
 Wales, John and Nathaniel 265.  
 Walter, William 459.  
 Walter, Nehemiah 407.  
 Walton, Wm. 127, 80, 232.  
 Walton, Shadrach, 376.  
 Wampom—its trade farmed out,  
     100—its price, 28, 31—cur-  
     rent, 79—not to be received  
     for rates, 81, 99.  
 Wanton, Wm. 402.  
 War—against French, 228—  
     against Dutch, 41—Phillip,  
     9—French, 96, 318, 24, 36—  
     Indians, 75, 7—vote that it  
     be carried on with less cruelty,  
     408—against Spain, 18, 21—  
     French, 4, 5, 6, 7—Indians,  
     9, 36, 46, 9, 53—Spain, 9.  
 Ward, Nathaniel 73, 124, 52.  
 Ward, Samuel 227.  
 Ward, Joshua 434, 64, 82.  
 Ward, Miles jr. 447.  
 Ward, Miles 457—d. 64:  
 Ward, Nathaniel d, 478, 4.  
 Ward, Benjamin jr. 94, 500.  
 Ward, Richard 498.  
 Ward, Daniel 499.  
 Ward, Samuel 502, 4, 7, 9, 10,  
     2, 8.  
 Ward, ——— drowned, 580.  
 Ward, Joshua 539.  
 Wardwell, Samuel 308—hung, 9.  
 Wardwell, Mary and Sarah 811.  
 Wareing, John's spinners, 543.  
 Warren, Mary 308, 4.  
 Warren, John ordained, 398,  
     408.  
 Warren, Admiral 432, 3.  
 Washington, George 497.  
 Watch house, 102.  
 Watchmen, 99.  
 Watch in meeting house, 129—  
     against Indians, 233—against  
     thieves, 76, 372, 4—to keep  
     order at Election here, 91,  
     536, 41, 2.  
 Watches and wards, 128, 55, 71.  
 Waterman, Richard to be ban-  
     ished, 113, 526.  
 Way, Wm. and Aaron 325.

- Way, Henry 523.  
 Webb, Francis, 37—his mill, 100.  
 Webb, John 290.  
 Webb, John's widow aged d. 485.  
 Webster, Samuel 452.  
 Weights and measures to be uniform, 174.  
 Weld, Thomas 130, 5, 7.  
 Weld, Daniel Doct. d. and f. 298.  
 Weld, Edward Doct. d. and f. 336, 545.  
 Wells—public, 481, 92.  
 West, John 286.  
 West, Benjamin killed, 495.  
 Westcoat, Stukely 113, 22.  
 Weston, Francis, 65—to be banished, 113—his wife, 4, 61.  
 Wetmore, Wm. Rep. 500.  
 Wharton, Edward 198, 200, 4, 10, 8, 21, 2, 6, 33—d. 60, 7.  
 Wharton, George 260.  
 Wharton Richard 350.  
 Wharves to be built at Winter Island, 276.  
 Wheat likely to be a staple commodity, 152.  
 Wheelock, Ebenezer 465.  
 Wheelright, John banished, 111, 255.  
 Whig and Tory, 457—used in Mass. 63.  
 Whipper, 538.  
 Whipping post, 195, 481.  
 Whitaker, Nathaniel 465, 75—settles here, 6, 8—engaged in making Salt Petre, 99—separated from his people, 520.  
 White, John 5, 6, 7, 12, 39, 100, 33.  
 White, Elizabeth d. 233, 79.  
 Whitefield, Geo. 419, 22, 7, 9, 31—d. 78—medals of him, 80, 548.  
 Whitefield, Henry 205, 347, 9.  
 Whites forbidden to marry coloured persons, 340.  
 Whiting, John preaches here, 195, 200, 2, 5, 535.  
 Whiting, Joseph ordained 267.  
 Whiting, Samuel 218, 31, 67.  
 Whitman, Samuel to keep the Grammar school, 331, 2.  
 Whittingham, John 159.  
 Whitwell, Wm. ordained 459.  
 Wickendon, Mr. 528.  
 Wildes, Sarah 303—hung, 6.  
 Wigglesworth, Samuel 399, 406.  
 Wilkins, Bray 211—d. 545.  
 Willard, John 304—hung 7.  
 Willard, Simon, 293, 4, 5, 7, 317, 67.  
 Willard, Samuel 315, 48.  
 Willard, Josiah 390—moved to Winchester, 415.  
 Willard, Samuel 427.  
 Willard, Joseph 482.  
 Will Hill to belong to Salem, 211—people to form a Society, 376, 7.  
 William an Indian, 206.  
 William and Mary proclaimed, 293—his letters, 6, 9, 304, 24—d. 36.  
 Williams, Roger 17, 20, 8—prevented from being minister here, 50—returns from Plymouth, 61, 2—his treatise, 3, 4, 7, 72, 4—cited, 6, 8, 9—refuses to commune with Bay Churches, 80—to be banished, 1, 2, 3, 4—notice of him, 5, to 94, 6, 7, 8, 113, 22, 34, 44, 5, 94, 525, 6.  
 Williams, John executed, 110.  
 Williams, Samuel 275.  
 Williams, John ransomed, 342.  
 Williams, John 482.  
 Williams, Samuel 495.  
 Williams, Mascoll's Insurance office, 505.  
 Williams, George 499, 500, 2, 3, 4, 5, 12.  
 Willoughby, Nehemiah d. and f. 336.  
 Willoughby, Francis 336, 56, 62.  
 Wilson, John 63, 218, 41.  
 Wilson, Lambert Doct. 18.

- Wilson, Lambert 237.  
 Wilson, Robert's wife carried  
     through town, 217.  
 Window, Richard 180.  
 Winnacunet—Hampton, 115.  
 Winslow, Edward 86, 138.  
 Winslow, Josiah 249, 79.  
 Winslow, John 419, 22.  
 Winslow, Joshua 440.  
 Winslow, Isaac 445.  
 Winslow, Isaac 458.  
 Winter severe, 450.  
 Winter Island for curing fish,  
     124.  
 Winthrop, John Gov. 39, 40, 1,  
     6, 9, 55, 6, 61, 85, 7, 95, 7,  
     108—guarded, 9, 17, 8, 52,  
     60, 1, 3, 7, 80, 4, 221, 41,  
     327, 522, 3, 5.  
 Winthrop, John jr. 113, 4, 21,  
     7, 44, 5, 51, 62, 7, 80—to  
     make salt 191, 258, 85, 529.  
 Winthrop, Stephen 123.  
 Winthrop, Wait S. 268, 91,  
     346.  
 Winthrop, John S. 456.  
 Winthrop, Thomas L. 456.  
 Wise, John 275.  
 Wise, Jeremiah 391, 407.  
 Witchcraft, 179, 84, 92, 303, 4,  
     5—advice of clergymen on it,  
     6, 7, 8, 9, 10, 1, 2, 5, 6, 21,  
     4, 51, 416, 25.  
 Withered, Mary 305, 10.  
 Witherel, Joshua d. 485.  
 Witter, Wm. presented, 185.  
 Wolf, James Gen. 455.  
 Wolf hooks, 525.  
 Wollostan, Mount 8, 23.  
 Wolves destructive, 49—reward  
     for them, 128, 62, 215, 528,  
     36, 7—their heads to be nail-  
     ed on the meeting house, 8.  
 Woman tried for murder, 476.  
 Wood, Anthony 125, 36.  
 Wood, John baptist, 172.  
 Wood, Wm. describes Salem,  
     126.  
 Wood and timber reserved for  
     the town, 104.  
 Wood, price of it, 450.  
 Woodbridge, Benjamin 444.  
 Woodbridge, Dudley 471.  
 Woodbury, John 6, 48, 80, 111,  
     4, 5, 9, 20, 8—d. 153, 268,  
     525.  
 Woodbury, Wm. 161, (not Wood-  
     bridge,) 74.  
 Woodbury, Humphrey's testimo-  
     ny, 232, 69, 84.  
 Woodbury, Isaac taken, 295.  
 Woodcock, Wm. allowed to dis-  
     til, 215.  
 Woodwell, David's captive  
     daughter, 440.  
 Workmen not to have wine or  
     strong liquors, 241.  
 Worms abound, 225, 83, 345,  
     478.  
 Wormwood, Wm. Lt. 297.  
 Worship—one fined for not at-  
     tending it, 394.  
 Wreck, 229.  
 Wright, George 527.  
 Wyeth, John ordained, 467, 70.  

Y.

 Yellow fever, 316.



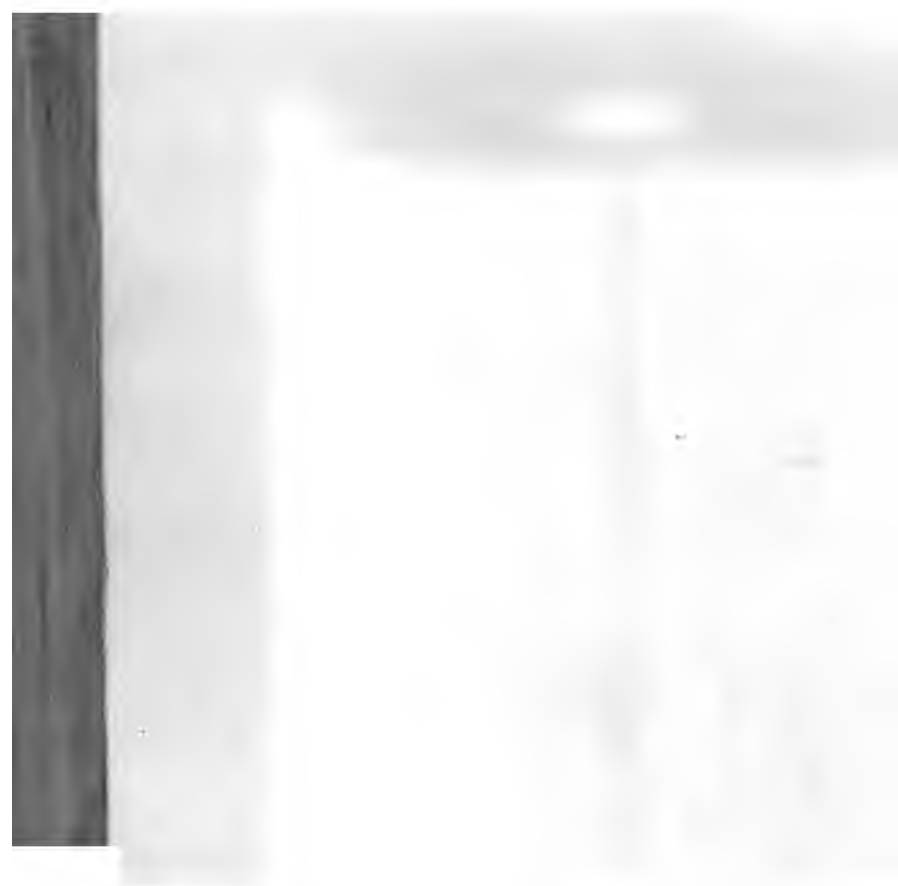


323-9

552-7







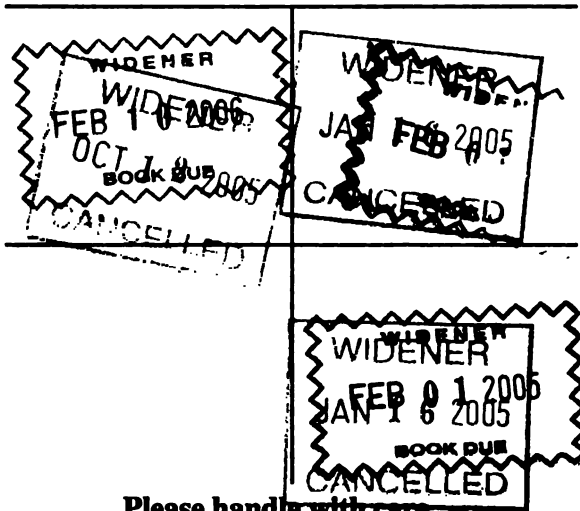




The borrower must return this item on or before the last date stamped below. If another user places a recall for this item, the borrower will be notified of the need for an earlier return.

*Non-receipt of overdue notices does not exempt the borrower from overdue fines.*

**Harvard College Widener Library**  
**Cambridge, MA 02138 617-495-2413**



**Please handle with care.**  
**Thank you for helping to preserve**  
**library collections at Harvard.**

